

# MAHĀBHĀRATA

English Translation From Original Sanskrit Text

M.N. DUTT



धर्मे चार्थे च कामे च मोक्षे च भरतर्षभ।  
यदिहास्ति तदन्यत्र यन्नेहास्ति न तत्त्वचित्॥

*Adi Parva 62/53*

**MAHĀBHĀRATA**  
**OF**  
**VYASA**

Translated into English from Original  
Sanskrit Text

**VOL. IV**  
**DRONA PARVA**





Parimal Sanskrit Series No. 28

# MAHĀBHĀRATA

TRANSLATED INTO ENGLISH FROM ORIGINAL SANSKRIT TEXT

VOL. IV

DRONA PARVA

*Translated By*

**M. N. DUTT**

New Revised Edition



PARIMAL PUBLICATIONS

DELHI (INDIA)

*Published by:*  
**PARIMAL PUBLICATIONS**  
27/28 SHAKTI NAGAR  
DELHI- 110007 (INDIA)  
Ph. 744 5456 : Fax : 786 2183  
E-mail : parimal@ndf.vsnl.net.in  
Website : www.parimalpublication.com

All Rights reserved with Publisher  
Revised Edition. 2003

ISBN : 81-7110-072-4 (Vol. IV)  
81-7110-068-6 (Set)

Complete in 7 Vols.  
Price Rs. 4500/- per set

*Printed at:*  
Himanshu Laser System  
46, Sanskrit Nagar, Rohini Sect. 14  
Delhi 110085



# Drona Parva

## CONTENTS

### Dronabhiseka Parva

1-17

Vaishampayana describes the condition of Dhritarashtra and his sons. Bhishma's death. Karna comes to the Kauravas and consoles them. Karna comes to Bhishma and obtains permission for fight. Karna advises Duryodhana to make Drona their General. Drona's installation as the General. Drona's arrangement of the Kuru army. The fight between Drona and Dhrishtadyumna and a great slaughter of both the armies ensues. Drona is met by Dhrishtadyumna and Sanjaya gives a short account of it to Dhritarashtra. The fight between Sakuni and Sahadeva. Abhimanyu fights with Jayadratha. The fight between Shalya and Bhima. Kumara fights with Drona. Arjuna comes to the battle-field and defeats the Kurus.

### Samsaptakavadha Parva

17-67

Drona becomes dispirited. Arjuna fights with Trigarttas and kills Sudhanva. The Samsaptakas challenge Arjuna. Arjuna defeats them. Satyajit protects Yudhishtira and is killed by Drona. The fight between Drona and Shatanika. Bhima defeats Duryodhana and kills the king Anga. Bhagadatta defeats Bhima and kills the Dasharna king. Arjuna defeats and kills the Samsaptakas. The fight between Bhagadatta and Arjuna. Krishna kills Naraka. Bhagadatta is discomfited by Arjuna. Sakuni comes to fight and is defeated by Arjuna. Nila is killed by Ashvatthaman. Arjuna kills the three brothers of Karna and Satyaki defeats him who is rescued by Duryodhana and Drona. The battle ends in the evening.

### Abhimanyu-vadha Parva, Pratijna Parva

and Jayadratha-vadha Parva 67-141-299

Drona proceeds to battle and arranges the Kuru army. Abhimanyu goes to the field and makes a great slaughter. Abhimanyu fights with various leaders of the Kuru army and defeats

them. An account of Jayadratha's strength who checks all the Pandavas. Abhimanyu kills Rukmaratha, defeats Jayadratha and others. Karna enquires of Drona about the means of slaying him. According to his advice six warriors simultaneously attack him. Abhimanyu is killed by Dusshasana's son and the grief of the Pandavas. Vyasa consoles Yudhishtira and recites the story of Akampana. The story of Death. The story of king Shalya and sixteen other kings. Yudhishtira is consoled and Vyasa goes away. Arjuna bewails and is consoled by Krishna. Arjuna promises to kill Jayadratha. Krishna consoles Subhadra. Arjuna sees a dream and obtains Pasupata weapon from Shiva. Arjuna tells Yudhishtira of his dream. Arjuna asks Satyaki to protect. Yudhishtira and proceeds to battle. Arjuna defeats Dusshasana and enters into the midst of the Kuru army. He passes by Drona and approaches Jayadratha. He defeats Kritavarman. The conversation between Drona and Duryodhana. Drona fights with Dhrishtadyumna and Satyaki. Arjuna kills Vinda and Anuvinda. Arjuna makes a tank in the battle-field and Krishna got his horses bathed there. Arjuna goes to meet Jayadratha. Drona and Duryodhana are defeated by Arjuna. Both the armies fight and the death of Kshemamurti. Somadatta's son fight with Draupadi's son. Arjuna kills Jayadratha. Yudhishtira eulogises Krishna. Drona promises to kill all the Panchalas. Duryodhana suspects Drona's sincerity.

### Ghatotkacha-vadha Parva

299-376

The fearful fight between the Panchalas and Kurus. The wonderful heroism of Duryodhana who makes a great havoc. The Pandus proceed against Drona. Drona kills Sivi. Bhima kills the prince of Kalingas, Dhruva, Jayarata, Drumada and Dushkarna. The wordy battle between Somadatta and Satyaki. The fight between

Ghatotkacha and Ashvatthaman who makes the former insensible and he is carried away by Dhrishtadyumna. Bhima kills Balhika, the ten sons of Dhritarashtra. Vrikaratha, the seven brothers of Sakuni, the five prices of Gandhara. The fight between Yudhishtira and Drona who could not kill the former. Karna promises to kill Arjuna. The fight between Karna and Arjuna and the discomfiture of the former. The fight between Dhrishtadyumna and Ashvatthaman. The fight between Satyaki and Somadatta. The latter is killed by the former. Krishna asks Yudhishtira not to fight with Drona. The fight between Yudhishtira and Kritavarman and the former is worsted by the latter. The fight between Ghatotkacha and Ashvatthaman and the former is made insensible. The fight between Bhima and Duryodhana. The fight between Karna and Sahadeva. The fight between Virata and Shalya - that between Alambusha and Arjuna, Chitrasena and Nakula, Vrishasena and Drupada. Dussahasana defeats Prativindhya. The fight between Sakuni and Nakula. Dhrishtadyumna fights with Drona. Dhrishtadyumna kills Drumasena. Sakuni is sent to the battle-field by Duryodhana and is discomfited by Arjuna. The fight between Alambusha and Ghatotkacha and the former is killed by the latter. The fight between Karna and Ghatotkacha. Alayudha comes to the battle-field. Ghatotkacha meets. The fight between Bhima and Alayudha. The fight between Alayudha and Ghatotkacha and the latter cuts off the former's head. Ghatotkacha makes a great slaughter of Duryodhana's army. Ghatotkacha is slain and the grief of the Pandavas. Vasudeva's joy and he explains the cause to Arjuna. Yudhishtira's grief at the death of Ghatotkacha and Vyasa consoles him.

#### **Drona-vadha Parva**

**376-399**

The Pandava leaders all proceed against Drona and the fight between the two parties. Arjuna's permission to the soldiers to sleep. Drona promises to kill all the Panchalas and describes Arjuna's strength to Duryodhana. The

fierce encounter between the Kurus and Pandavas. Drona kills the three grandsons of Drupada. Drupada and Virata fall upon Drona who kills them both. Dhrishtadyumna's promise to kill Drona on that very day. Bhima and Dhrishtadyumna attack Drona's army. The fierce fight between the leaders of both the parties. The encounter between Karna and Bhima and that between Drona and Arjuna. Dussahasana is defeated by Dhrishtadyumna. The fight between Kritavarman and his three brothers and Dhrishtadyumna, Nakula and Sahadeva. Dhrishtadyumna attacks Drona and Duryodhana proceeds to the rescue of the latter. Satyaki attacks Duryodhana. Arjuna falls upon the Kurus and Drona upon the Panchalas. Krishna advises Pandavas to kill Drona by unfair means. Arjuna does not accept the advice. Bhima kills an elephant by name Ashvatthaman and informs Drona of the death (of his son) Ashvatthaman. Drona does not believe him. Drona kills the Panchalas by means of Brahma weapon. Drona asks Yudhishtira about the truth of the report. Krishna requests Yudhishtira to save his army by speaking an untruth. Bhima also requests him to do the same. Yudhishtira does the same and Drona's dejection. The fight between Drona and Dhrishtadyumna. Dhrishtadyumna urged by Bhima cuts off Drona's head. The Kurus fly away at the sight of Drona's death. Kripa informs Ashvatthaman of Drona's death who promises to kill the Pandavas and Panchalas. An account of the Narayana weapon. Yudhishtira's address to Arjuna who speaks of their unrighteousness and Bhima vindicates it.

#### **Narayanastra-Mokshana Parva 399-432**

Dhrishtadyumna ridicules Satyaki and the latter falls upon him. A reconciliation is brought about with great difficulty by Krishna and Yudhishtira. Ashvatthaman kills the Pandava army and invokes the Narayana weapon. Krishna advises the Pandavas to throw down their arms-that being the only means to pacify the Narayana weapon. They all agree except

## VII

Bhima who promises to fight with Ashvatthaman. Bhima is stupefied. Arjuna and Krishna get down from the car and make Drona to give up his arm. The Narayana weapon is pacified. Duryodhana asks Ashvatthaman to use the same weapon again but he expresses his inability to use it for the second time. The fight between Ashvatthaman and Satyaki. Kripa, Karna, Duryodhana, Dusshasana and Vrishasena all proceed against Satyaki. Satyaki is rendered insensible by Ashvatthaman. A

dreadful combat between Bhima and Ashvatthaman. Ashvatthaman invokes the fiery weapon. Arjuna fables it. Ashvatthaman asks Vyasa about the cause of the failure of his weapon. He recounts the history of Narayana. Ashvatthaman bearing it, retires from the battle-field. Arjuna meets Vyasa and enquires him about the invisible person who helped him on the day of Jayadratha's death. Vyasa says that he was Mahadeva. Mahadeva's spoiling Daksha Yajna. An account of Mahadeva.

\* \* \*





# THE MAHĀBHĀRATA

## DRONA PARVA

### CHAPTER 1

#### (DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)

##### The questions of Dhritarashtra

Having saluted the Supreme Deity (Narayana) and the highest of all male beings Nara and also the Goddess of Learning (Sarasvati), let us cry "Success"!

##### Janamejaya said

1-2. Hearing that his sire Devavrata of unequaled might, energy, sturdiness, prowess and vigour, had been slain by Sikhandin the son of Panchala. O Brahmanical sage, what did the very powerful monarch Dhritarashtra with eyes blinded with fast-falling tears, do?

3. His son, O worshipful one, desired to obtain monarchy after having defeated the mighty warriors, the sons of Pandu, through the assistance of Bhishma, Drona and other such heroes.

4. O illustrious ascetic, tell me all that the foremost of the Kuru dynasty did, when that chief of all bowmen (Bhishma) had been killed.

##### Vaishampayana said

5. Having heard that his sire (Bhishma) had been slain in battle, that ruler of men, Dhritarashtra of the Kuru dynasty knew no rest of mind, being worn out with anxiety and sorrow.

6. When that foremost of the Kurus had been thus brooding over his grief, there came again to him the pure-souled son of Gavalgani.

7. O great king, Dhritarashtra, the son of Ambika, then thus questioned Sanjaya who had that night returned from the camp of the city named after the elephant.

8. Hearing of the death of Bhishma, he became exceedingly cheerless and longing for

the victory of his sons, he broke out into lamentations like one sorely distressed.

##### Dhritarashtra said

9. O son, having bewailed the high-souled Bhishma of terrific might, what did the Kurus, goaded by Destiny, do?

10. When that unconquerable and high-souled hero was slain, what, for sooth, did the Kurus, deep down into the sea of sorrow, do?

11-12. Verily, O Sanjaya, the innumerable and excellent army of the high-souled sons of Pandu, can strike the worlds with keenest apprehension. In this terrific battle, was any great car-warrior in the troop of Duryodhana who was fearless?

##### Sanjaya said

13. Therefore, O Sanjaya, recount to me what the kings did, when Devarata, the foremost of the Kurus, had been slain.

14. Hear, O monarch, with singleness of mind, the words, falling from my lips, regarding what your sons did when Devavrata had fallen.

15. O monarch, when Bhishma of invincible prowess had been slain, your own warriors and also those of the Pandava host, began to think of the duties of the Kshatriya sect; and,

16-17. O lord of men, at the thought, they wondered and were delighted; and in obedience to their sectarian duties, they bowed down to the illustrious Bhishma. Then those foremost of men prepared for Bhishma of infinite energy a bed furnished with a pillow, made of close-knotted arrows.

18-19. Having arranged for Bhishma's safety and having greeted one another, and with the permission of the son of Ganga and having circumambulated him and looking at each other with eyes coppery with anger, those Kshatriyas, goaded by Destiny, again issued forth for fighting with one another.

20. Then to the voice of the trumpets and to the roar of the drums, the army of your sons and that of their adversaries, formed in battle-array.

21-22. When, O greatest of kings, the son of Janhavi (Bhishma) had fallen and when the greater part of the day had worn out, these foremost of the Bharata race, overpowered by the influence of their wrath, and having their reasons bewildered through fate and neglecting the salutary counsel of the illustrious son of Ganga, came out in haste grasping their weapons.

23. Owing to your own foolishness and that of your sons and owing to the death of the son of Shantanu, the descendants of the Kuru race together with all the (assembled) kings, appeared to be summoned by the God of death.

24. Like a herd of goats without a herdsman in wood infested with beasts of prey, they were exceedingly oppressed with fear, being deprived of Devavrata.

25-26. On the fall of that foremost of the Bharata race, the army of the Kurus resembled the heavenly dome stripped of the stars or the sky deprived of the atmosphere; or the earth with her crops blighted; or a discourse teeming with unrefined expressions; or the army of the Asuras when in the days of yore, Bali had been (thoroughly) humiliated.

27-28. Or a charming lady deprived of her lord; a stream the waters of which had been dried up; or a doe deprived of her mate, surrounded by wolves in the forest or the wide, extended, mountain-cave having its lion slain by the fabulous Sarabha. Or the slaughter of Janhavi's son, O foremost of the Bharata race, the army of the Bharatas.

29. Resembled a tiny bark thrown up and down on the bosom of the mighty main, driven by the gale rushing from all sides. It was then greatly harassed by the powerful Pandavas heroes of infallible aims.

30. Then that host, with its elephants, horses and car-warriors, was much distressed and exceedingly jeopardised and rendered helpless and terror-stricken.

31. Then, in that army, bereft of Devavrata, the kings and the (common) soldiers,

individually struck with panic, seemed to be sinking into the nethermost regions.

32-33. Thereafter the Kauravas remembered Karna, who was equal to Devavrata himself and who was the foremost of all wielders of weapons and resplendent like a guest. Then like the heart of a distressed person looking for a friend, their hearts turned towards him (Karna); and, O Bharata, the kings then broke out into exclamations saying, "O Karna, O Karna."

34-36. That son of Radha, that benefactor of ours, that progeny of Suta, he that will sacrifice his life in battle, that one of illustrious renown with his followers and friends, has refrained from fighting these ten days; summon him without delay. That foremost of men, that hero of mighty arms, Karna, had been reckoned by Bhishma as only an Ardharatha, in the presence of all the Kshatriyas, during the tale of car-warriors of valour and prowess, in spite of his being equal to two Maharathas.

37. Indeed in that enumeration of Rathas and Atirathas, Karna was thus reckoned-Karna who is the foremost (of all fighters), who is held in high respect by the heroes and who would dare give battle even to Yama, Kubera, Varuna and Indra.

38-39. Out of wrath (excited by this classification of himself) he had thus addressed, O king, the son of Ganga - 'O Kaurava, I will not fight so long as you live; if you shall slay in battle the sons of Pandu, O you of Kuru's race, I will retire into the woods with the permission of Duryodhana.

40. If, O Bhisma, on the contrary, you, being slain by the Pandavas, are transported to heaven, then will I, riding on a single car, slay those whom you consider to be the mightiest of all car-warriors.

41. Having thus spoken, the mighty-armed Karna of illustrious renown, refrained, with the permission of your son, from taking part in the battle for these ten days.

42. O Bharata, Bhishma of immeasurable prowess, displaying his might in battle, slew a large number of warriors of the Pandava host in that (sanguinary) engagement.



43. On the fall of that most powerful hero of unerring aim, your sons remembered Karna, like persons desirous of crossing (the ocean) remembering a raft.

44. Your sons and the warriors of your party, together with the (assembled) monarchs then, began to bewail saying 'Karna' they also said 'It is time for you to come.'

45. Thus all the warriors endued with great prowess, bewailed on the dead body of Karna, the son of Suta and Radha.

46. As during emergencies the heart flies to a friend, so our hearts then flew to Karna of irrepressible manhood who had acquired his knowledge of weapons from the son of Jamadagni.

47. O monarch, he only was capable of saving us from the great dangers of battle, like Govinda protecting the celestials from all calamities.

**Vaishampayana said**

48. Thereupon breathing (heavily) out like a snake, Dhritarashtra spoke these words to Sanjaya who had been thus repeatedly extolling Karna.

**Dhritarashtra said**

49. As your heart then were drawn towards Karna, the son of Vikartana, you surely saw that son of Radha, that descendant of Suta, who was ever-ready to lay down his life for you.

50. Did that Karna, of infallible prowess in battle, disappoint Duryodhana and his brothers, who had been all exceedingly distressed, panic-struck and anxious for being extricated from their difficulties?

51. Was that foremost of bowmen in battle capable of filling up the void created by the fall of Bhishma, the shelter of the Kurus?

52. Supplying the gap, was Karna successful in striking terror into the hearts of the enemy? Therefore, it is said, O Sanjaya! he is the lion among the men.

53. Renouncing his breaths in battle field, for protecting the helpless, distressed and roaring our relatives, did he also succeed in fructifying the hopes of victory cherished by my sons?

## CHAPTER 2

### (DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)-Continued

#### The setting out of Karna

**Sanjaya said**

1. Then Adhiratha's son of the Suta caste, knowing that Bhishma had fallen, became desirous of saving, like a brother, the army of your son from the calamity it was in, like a boat split in the midst of the unfathomable deep.

2. Having heard that the son of Shantanu, that foremost of men, the never-dropping one and the best of all car-warriors, had been slain, O king, Karna the repressor of enemies and the foremost of all bowmen, speedily arrived at the field of battle.

3. When that excellent of car-warriors, Bhishma had been slain by the enemy, Karna soon (came at the battle field), desirous of saving the army of your son resembling a boat sunk in the deep, like a father anxious for rescuing his sons.

**Karna said**

4-5. When that Bhishma, who was endued with resoluteness, intelligence, prowess, energy, truthfulness, self-control and with all the other attributes of a hero; who was proficient in the use of celestial weapons; in whom there were humility, bashfulness, sweet speech and harmlessness; who was always grateful, the slayer of the enemies of the twice-borns; in whom there resided all these virtues for ever that Bhishma the destroyer of hostile heroes had obtained his quietus, I consider the remaining warriors as already slain.

6. Owing to the constant connection with action, there is nothing in this world that is eternal. When that one of illustrious vows (Bhishma) has been killed today, what man can say with certitude that today, what man can say with certitude that tomorrow the sun will rise?

7. When that one of prowess equal to that of the Vasus, when he that was born of the energy of the Vasus, when that ruler of earth has gone back to the Vasus, do you then lament for your wealth, your sons and this army?

**Sanjaya said**

8. When that giver of boons, that most puissant hero, that lord of men, that one of great vigour had been slain, and when the Bharatas had been vanquished, Karna, with a sorrowful heart and shedding copious tears, began to comfort (the Kurus).

9. Having heard, O monarch, these words of the son of Radha, your sons and your soldiers, out of grief, broke out into loud lamentations and shed tears from their eyes, which were as copious as their wails were loud.

10. When the sanguinary engagement waged anew and the Kaurava host led by kings once more roared forth (their battle-cry), then that foremost of all Maharathis (Karna) addressed these words to the mighty car-warriors, that imparted joy to their hearts.

11. This transient world is ever flying (towards death); considering this I always regard everything as unsteady. When you were all present here, how could that foremost of the Kurus (Bhishma), who resembled a mountain in steadiness, be slain in battle?

12. When like the sun dropping down on the earth, that foremost of car-warriors, the son of Shantanu has fallen, the monarchs (of the Kuru army) are hardly capable of withstanding Dhananjaya, like trees unable to withstand the hurricane that uproots even the hills.

13. As that high-minded one did, so today will I protect, in this dreadful battle, this army of the Kurus, whose appearance is cheerless and whose zeal has been destroyed by the enemy, which is helpless and whose best warriors have already been slain.

14. This heavy burden now devolves on myself; I see that this world is transitory. That most excellent of warriors has also fallen in battle. Why shall I then entertain any apprehension for fighting?

15. Coursing (swiftly) in the battle-field, I shall send, by means of my straight-going shafts, to the abode of Death, the foremost descendants of Kuru's race (Pandavas). Considering fame to be the best of all worldly possessions, I shall kill them in the engagement or myself lie on the field being slain by them.

16. Yudhishtira is endued with resoluteness, intelligence, piety and vigour; Vrikodara equals a hundred elephants in might; Arjuna also is youthful and the begotten son of the foremost of celestials; so the army belonging to them is not to be easily vanquished even by the immortals.

17. As no one ever returns alive from the jaws of death, so no coward ever returns (alive) after having confronted that hostile army to which belong the twins (Nakula and Sahadeva), each resembling death himself in battle and in which are Satyaki and the son of Devaki.

18. Great power, begot of austerities, should be opposed by ascetic wealth. So should the wise oppose might with might. My mind is decided upon withstanding the enemy and it is resolutely fixed upon ensuring the safety (of my own troops).

19. For certain, O charioteer, I shall today oppose their force and shall defeat them by simply going to the field. This conflict of friends (internecine war) ought not to be tolerated by men. He that helps in rallying a routed army is the true friend.

20. I shall either achieve this pious act of manliness or shall follow Bhishma, renouncing my vital breaths. I shall either slay in battle my myriad enemies or slain by them I shall attain to the posthumous regions of the heroes.

21. I regard, indeed, this to be my bounden duty, O charioteer, when women and infants wail aloud for assistance and when Dhartarastra's pride has been humiliated. So I shall this-day conquer the enemies of the monarch (Duryodhana)

22. Preserving the Kurus and massacring the sons of Pandu even at the cost of my very life in this dreadful fight and dispatching to Death my myriad enemies in this battle, I shall bestow this monarchy on the son of Dhritrashtra.

23. Fasten on me this magnificent, golden and resplendent armour radiant with gems and jewels. Let also my helmet lustrous like the sun and my bows and arrows resembling fire, poison or serpents, be donned.

24. Fasten sixteen quivers (to my chariot); fetch strongest bows and also arrows, spears, heavy maces and my conch with its body variegated with gold.

25. Procure also my standard, variegated, beautiful, magnificent, made of gold, burning with the luster of a lotus, bearing the emblem of the elephant's girth, after having cleansed it with a fine piece of cloth and having decorated it with festoons of flowers and a net-work of fine wires.

26. O son a charioteer, bring me also, in all haste, fleetest horses, of the colour of tawny clouds, stout, washed with water hallowed by mantras and decorated with rich caparisons made of effulgent gold.

27. Procure, in all haste, a chariot, most magnificent, festooned with garlands of gold, adorned with gems resembling the Sun and the Moon, furnished with all necessary objects and offensive weapons and yoked with lusty horses.

28. Bring me also beautiful bows of great toughness and bow-strings of finest make, capable of throwing (arrows at great distances) and some large quivers well-stuffed with shafts and several cuirasses (to cover my person).

29. O hero, bring speedily all auspicious articles required at the time of setting ours (for battle) and brass and golden vessel filled with curds. Bring garlands of flowers and decorate my person with them; strike up, also, kettle-drums for victory.

30. Drive, O charioteer, quickly thither where Kiritin (diadem-decked), Vrikodara, the virtuous Yudhishtira and the twins are. Confronting them either I shall slay them or being slain in battle by the foes, I shall follow Bhishma.

31. That host to which belongs, Yudhishtira, firm in truth, in which are Bhima and Arjuna and which contains the son of Vasudeva, Satyaki and the Srinjayas, that host I consider to incapable of being vanquished by these monarchs.

32. Even if all-devouring Death were to guard Arjuna in the encounter, with the utmost heed, still would I slay him, confronting him in

battle; or myself die to the regions of Death following the trail of Bhishma.

33. It is not that, I say, that I shall not go amidst those heroes. Those that sow dissension's among friends, that are of veering devotion and of impious souls those are not my allies.

**Sanjaya said**

34. Karna then drove out for victory, mounting on an excellent chariot, most lavishly furnished, invulnerable, with a magnificent pole, adorned with gold, auspicious, with (fluttering) penons and to which were harnessed steeds fleet like the wind.

35-36. Worshipped by the best of the car-warriors of the Kuru party, like Indra by the immortals, that high-souled and most terrible of all wielders of bow, endowed with immeasurable vigour like the sun himself, - riding on his chariot decorated with gold, gems and jewels, mounted with a magnificent standard, to which were harnessed finest animals and the rattle of which resembled the rumbling of clouds, went, attended by a mighty host, to the battle-field where that foremost of the Bharata race (Bhishma) had obtained his quietus.

37. Then that son of Adhiratha, the mighty bowman and warrior Karna, blessed with a handsome appearance and effulgent like fire, riding on his own auspicious chariot resplendent like fire, shone like the monarch of the celestials himself riding on his own heavenly chariot.

### CHAPTER 3

#### (DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)-Continued

#### The eulogy of Karna

**Sanjaya said**

1-8. Seeing the most worshipful champion, the high-souled grandsire Bhishma of immeasurable prowess, the death of all Kshatriyas, lie on a bed of arrows and resemble the mighty main dried by violent storms, the seeing that hero dragged down from his car by the celestial weapons of Savysachin, (Arjuna), the hope your sons cherished for victory was



gone as also their armours for victory was gone as also their armours and peace of mind. Seeing that one who was always like an island to persons going down into the unfathomable deep in their attempt to cross it; seeing him pierced with shafts that had flown in an uninterrupted stream like that of the Yamuna, him who appeared like the unbearable Menaka hurled on the earth by Mahendra; seeing that hero fallen on the surface of the earth like the sun dropped down from the heavens; seeing him who resembled the unconquerable Vritra when he had been vanquished in the days of yore by Vasava; seeing that stupifier of the consciousness of all heroes, that most excellent of champions, that foremost of all bowmen; seeing that hero an foremost of men, your father Bhishma of illustrious vows, that grandsire of the descendant of the Bharatas thrown down and lying prostrate on the field, pierced through and through by the arrows of Arjuna; seeing that hero resting on a couch worthy of a hero—the son of Adhiratha dismounted from his chariot, greatly distressed and overwhelmed with grief and with his consciousness well-nigh clouded.

9. He (Karna) walked towards him (Bhishma) on foot, distressed and with eyes blinded with fast-falling tears. Then saluting him and folding his palms and having paid his respects, Karna thus spoke.

10. I am Karna; good betide you; speak to me, O Bharata, in auspicious and sweet language; turn your eyes on me.

11. None can except to reap the fruits of his meritorious deeds here, since you, O venerable pious old man, lie prostrate on the ground being slain (by your enemies).

12. In replenishing the treasury, in matters of counsel, in arranging troops for battle and in the handling of arms, I do not, O foremost of the Kurus, find any one else among the Kurus equal to you.

13. I do not see any one else that endued with a pure intelligence, will save the Kurus from their terror. Having slain numerous

warriors, you are now repairing to the regions of the Pitris.

14. O foremost of the Bharatas, from this day forward, the sons of Pandu possessed with ire, will slay the Kurus, as tigers slaughter deer.

15. Today the Kurus will realise the vigour of Savyasachin, who produces the twang of the Gandiva bow; today they will be frightened by him as the Asuras were frightened by the wielder of the thunderbolt.

16. Today the whizz, resembling the rumble of thunders, of arrows shot from the Gandiva, will strike terror into the hearts of the Kurus and other rulers of earth.

17. O hero, today the shafts of the diadem-decked Arjuna, will burn down the sons of Dhritarashtra, just as a swelling forest-conflagration of terrible flames burns down the trees.

18. Fire and wind coursing together, consume numerous copses, creepers and trees in that part of a forest through which they pass.

19. There can be no doubt that the son of Pritha is like a raging fire; and, O foremost of men, without doubt Krishna resembles the strong wind (that accompanies fire).

20. Hearing the sound of the conch *Panchajanya* and the twang of the bow *Gāṇḍīva*, all the soldiers will be terror-stricken.

21-22. O hero, bereft of you, the monarchs will not be able to bear the rumble of the advancing chariot mounted with the banner having for its emblem the (terrible) ape, that belong to that repressor of foes (Arjuna). What other monarch, except yourself, is capable of combating with Arjuna, all whose super-human deeds the wise extol. Superhuman was indeed the combat he had with the high-souled Tryambaka (the three-eyed god).

23. From him did he (Arjuna) secure a boon which is difficult of being obtained by the mean-minded. That son of Pandu ever boastful of his prowess is protected by Madhava. What other person can overcome him in battle who could not be vanquished even by you before.

24. You who, endowed with great prowess, had defeated in battle, Rama, that terrible destroyer of the Kshatriya race, held in high honour by the celestials and the Asuras.

25. With your permission I as I am unable to tolerate him any longer, can today slay, with the dint of my weapons, that son of Pandu, that foremost of warriors in battle who is like a serpent of virulent venom and is terrible, heroic and capable of slaying his enemies even by his very glances.

#### CHAPTER 4

#### (DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)-Continued

#### The consolation afforded by Karna

#### Sanjaya said

1. When he had been thus speaking, the venerable grandsire of the Kurus, pleased with him, addressed to him these words suitable to season and place.

2-3. May you be the refuge of your friends, even as the ocean is the refuge of the rivers, the sun of the other planets, the pious of the truth, fertile soil of the seeds and Parjanya of the created beings. May your relations depend on you even as the immortals depend upon the thousand-eyed Indra.

4. May you be the humiliator of the pride of your enemies; and may you be the enhancer of the delight of your friends, the Kaurvas, as Vishnu is of the denizens of heaven.

5. O Karna, ever anxious to perform the pleasures of the son of Dhritarashtra, you, with the strength and vigour of your arms, did defeat the Kambojas, having gone to their country, namely Rajapura.

6. You also vanquished the monarchs who was stopping at Girivraja and who was headed by Nagnajit, as also the Ambasthas, the Videhas and the Gandharvas.

7. O Karna, in days gone by, you brought under the authority of Duryodhana the Kiratas obstinate in battle and peopling the strongholds of the Himavat.

8. The Utkalas, the Mekhalas, the Paundras, the Kalingas, the Nishadhas, the Trigarttas and the Valhikas, were also worsted in battle by you.

9. O Karna, desirous of doing good to Duryodhana, you defeated in battle in various lands, O hero, numerous highly vigorous clans.

10. May you, O son, be the shelter of all the Kauravas, even as Duryodhana is, with his friends, relatives and kinsmen.

11. I do bid you farewell in benedictory language; go and fight with enemy; command the Kurus in battle and secure victory for Duryodhana.

12. Like Duryodhana, you are to us our grandson. Therefore, by the ordinances, we are the same to you as we are to him.

13. O foremost of men, the intelligent hold that in this world the connection of the pious with the pious is more closer in respect of relationship than that through the uterus.

14. Therefore being faithfully united with the Kurus and believing their army to be your own, do you, like Duryodhana himself, protect it."

15. Having heard these words of him (Bhishma) and having bowed down to his feet, Karna, the son of Vikartana, went to the place where all the bowmen were assembled.

16. Beholding that matchless and extensive encampment of the innumerable army, Karna encouraged that host of well-accoutered and broad-chested soldiers.

17-18. All the Kurus, having Duryodhana at their head, were greatly delighted; and seeing that mighty-armed and high-souled Karna come with the intent of battle and place himself at the command of the whole host, the Kurus welcomed him, with sounds produced by the striking of the arm-pits, with rending shouts, twang of bow-strings, roars like that of lions and diverse other kinds of sounds.

**CHAPTER 5****(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)-Continued****The counsel of Karna****Sanjaya said**

1. O monarch, seeing that foremost of men Karna seated on his car, Duryodhana highly enraptured, spoke these words.

2. I consider this army, protected by you, to have found a suitable commander in you. Do you now decide that which will be beneficial (to this army) and which is practicable.

**Karna said**

3. O foremost of men, yourself speak to us, since you are the wisest of kings. A third person cannot so well descry as to what should be done, as he who is interested in any affair.

4. All these rulers of men are desirous of hearing your words; and I am sure you will never speak unjust words.

**Duryodhana said**

5-6. Owing to his prowess, seniority, knowledge of the Srutis and the support he obtained from all the warriors, he (Bhishma) was the leader of our host. In the fair battle of these ten days that highly glorious one of generous soul, O Karna, slew a large number of my foes and protected my own army.

7. When that one, who accomplished many difficult acts, is gone to heaven, O Karna, whom do you consider capable of leading (this host into battle)?

8. Like an unmanned boat in waters, the army cannot stand in battle even for a short while without a leader, O Karna, O you who are foremost in battle.

9. An army without a commander is like a boat with none to steer her through or like a chariot without a driver, going any where.

10. Just as a foreign trader in an unknown country reaps all distress, so an army without a commander is exposed to all dangers.

11. Therefore do you look among all these high-souled warriors of ours and find out a proper person who may, as a commander, fill the place of Shantanu's son.

12. The person, whom you will consider to be fit to lead our army, in battle, will undoubtedly be chosen to be so unanimously.

**Karna said**

13. All these foremost of men of high soul are worthy of the leadership (of this host). There is no necessity for making any selection.

14. All of them are perfectly acquainted with the genealogies (of princes) and with the vital parts of the body; they are possessed of prowess, might and intelligence; they are grateful, highly intelligent and ever unretreating from battle.

15. But all of them cannot at the same time assume the leadership; therefore only one among them is to be chosen, in whom there reside superior qualities.

16. If you promote one among several contending rivals, the rest, it is clear, being depressed, will not fight with a desire for doing your good.

17. But this foremost of all the wielders of weapons, this preceptor and teacher, of all the warriors, this Drona who is venerable in years, is worthy of being elected generalissimo.

18. When the indomitable Drona, who is foremost among those conversant with Brahma and is equal to Shuka and Angirasa in learning, is here, who else is worthy of being selected as a leader?

19. O Bharata, there is not even a single warrior among this mighty host of kings, who will not follow Drona when he goes to fight.

20. O monarch, this one is the foremost of all leaders of warriors; he is the foremost of all wielders of arms, as also of all intelligent persons and he is also your preceptor (in arms).

21. As the immortals desirous of defeating the Asuras in battle made Kartikeya their leader, so, do you, O Duryodhana, soon elect this one (Drona) as the leader of your army.

**CHAPTER 6****(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)-Continued****The request of Duryodhana****Sanjaya said**

1. Thereupon having listened to the words of Karna, king Duryodhana thus addressed Drona who was standing in the midst of the soldiers.

**Duryodhana said**

2-4. Amongst all this numerous host of kings, there is none who can be as good a protector as you, owing to the superiority of the order to which you belong, to the nobility of your birth, to your knowledge of the Shastras, your age, your intelligence, prowess, skillfulness, invincibility, perfect acquaintance with worldly matters, moral purity, self-control, asceticism, seniority and gratefulness, as also owing to your being endued with all desirable qualities. Like Indra protecting the celestials, do you protect ourselves, O foremost of the twice born ones, being led by yourself, we desire to obtain victory over our enemies.

5-7. Like Kapala amongst the Rudras; like Pavaka amongst the Vasus; like Kuvera amongst the Yakshas; like Vasava amongst the Marutas; like Vasistha amongst the Vipras, like Bhaskara (sun) amongst the lustrous bodies, like Yama amongst the Pitris, like Varuna amongst the creatures of the waters; like the moon amongst the stars, like Usanas amongst the sons of Diti, you are the foremost amongst all commanders of armies; therefore be you our leader.

8. Like Indra slaying the Danavas, do you slay our enemies, O sinless one, by arranging in battle-array this eleven Akshauhini of soldiers which will be placed under your complete disposal.

9. Like the son of Pavaka proceeding before the celestials, do you proceed at the head of this our army; we will follow you in battle like a herd of bulls following the leader.

10. That fierce bowman, that mighty champion, Arjuna, stretching his celestial bow, will not strike us seeing you go before us.

11. O foremost of men, if you accept our leadership, then I am sure to conquer in battle Yudhishthira with all his friends and followers.

**Sanjaya said**

12. When Duryodhana had finished his address, the kings, imparting great delight to your sons by their loud defiant shouts, exclaimed Victory to Drona.

13. Then the soldiers also filled with delight and desirous of earning fame, began to extol that foremost of regenerate ones, with Duryodhana at their head. Thereupon, O monarch, Drona spoke these words of Duryodhana.

**CHAPTER 7****(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)-Continued****The display of Drona's prowess****Drona said**

1. I am versed in the Vedas and in their six auxiliaries; and in the science of practical life concerning itself with men. I know the weapons of Tryambaka and various other weapons and mantras.

2. Those qualities, which, you, desirous of victory, have ascribed to me, bringing them to play, I will offer battle to the sons of Pandu.

3. But, O monarch, I shall never slay the son of Prisata in battle; O foremost of men, he has been created to kill me.

4. I shall encounter the hostile array and kill the Somakas. In battle, the Pandavas will not meet me with delightful hearts.

**Sanjaya said**

5. O monarch, then your son, with the permission of Drona, made him the commander of his troops, with ceremonies enjoined by the ordinances for such occasions.

6. As in days of yore, the gods with Indra at their head, invested Skanda with their leadership, so now did the monarchs headed by Duryodhana, invest Drona with the command of the troops.

7. Thereupon on Drona's investiture with the command, the delight (of troops) was manifest by the sound of musical instruments and the deafening blare of the conchs.

8-9. Then honouring Drona with shouts the like of which fill the ear during a holy day, with sounds of benedictory utterances, with eulogies, songs and cries of bards, minstrels and panegyrists, with the cries of victory uttered by the foremost of regenerate ones and with the frolics of mimes, the Kauravas considered the sons of Pandu as already worsted in battle.

10. Then having been installed on the command of the army, that mighty car-warrior, the son of Bharadvaja, arranging the troops in battle-array, marched out, accompanied by your sons, from a desire of giving battle.

11. Donning their armours, the king of the Sindhus and the Kalingas and Vikarna, your son, stationed themselves in the right wing of Drona.

12. Then accompanied by a numerous and picked cavalry recruited from men belonging to the Gandhara tribe and armed with lustrous lances, Shakuni marched out as their support.

13. Then Kripa, Kritavarman, Chitrasena and Vivinsati, having Dushasana at their head, proceeded, covering the left wing.

14. Then riding on horses of great fleetness, the Kamvojas headed by Sudakshina and the Shakas with the Yavanas, marched forth, forming the support of the last mentioned party.

15-17. Then the Madras, the Trigartas, the Ambasthas, the warriors from the West and the North, the Malavas, the Shivas, the Surasenas, the Sudras with the Malavas, the Sauviras, the Kitavas, the warriors from the East and the South, all these with your son Duryodhana at their head and the son of Suta at their rear, cheering the hearts of their own partisans, marched forth and increased the strength of the (advancing) troops. Karna, the son of Vikartana, then marched at the head of all bowmen.

18. His mighty standard, huge and resplendent and marked with the device of the elephant's girth, imparting delight into the hearts of his own soldiers, burned with effulgence equal to that of the sun.

19. All the kings and the Kurus, seeing Karna, did pay no heed to the calamity that had befallen them in the shape of Bhishma's death and they all were shorn of their sorrow.

20. Numerous warriors, highly delighted, forming into groups, thus began to talk, "Surely the Pandavas, seeing Karna in the field, will not stay a while in battle.

21. Truly, Karna is powerful enough to gain victory in battle over the celestials led by Vasava himself, not to speak of the sons of Pandu, who are devoid of prowess and energy alike.

22. The sons of Pritha were tenderly treated by the mighty-armed Bhishma in battle. But Karna shall slay them in the encounter with sharpened arrows.

23-24. O lord of people, thus talking to one another with joyful looks and honouring and eulogising the son of Radha, they marched along (in battle-array). Our own army, O monarch, was arrayed in the form of a *Sakata* (or car).

25. The army of our high-souled enemies was formed in the shape of a *Krauncha* (crane). O Bharata, by the very virtuous Yudhishtira with a delighted heart.

26. At the head of their array stood the two foremost of men, Vishvakshena (Vishnu) and Dhananjaya, with their banner, bearing the emblem of the ape, uplifted.

27. That banner of Partha of immeasurable prowess, the hump of the whole army and the refuge of all wielders of bow, that banner which reached the orbit of the sun, seemed to illumine the whole army of Yudhishtira of high soul.

28. That banner of the most intelligent Partha appeared like the burning sun when at the end of a Yuga, it rises to consume the earth.

29. Of all the warriors Arjuna is the foremost; of all the bows Gandiva is the best. Vasudeva is the foremost of all created beings and Sudarshana is the best of all kinds of discus.

30-31. The chariot, to which were harnessed white horses, carrying these four kinds of energy incarnate, stood at the head of the hostile array, like the discus of Kala raised (for being

hurled). Thus those two high-souled heroes stood at the head of their armies. Karna stood at the head of your army and Dhananjaya at the head of the hostile troops.

32. O king! in that battle, the Kauravas and the Pandavas, looked at each other possessed with ire and each desirous of slaying the other.

33. Thereafter when the mighty car-warrior, the son of Bharadvaja, flew suddenly to the fight, the earth began to shake with the sound of terrible wails.

34-35. Then thick clouds of dust, blown up by the storm and resembling heaps of tawny silk, intercepted from the view the welkin in and the sun. Though the sky was cloudless yet a shower of flesh bones and blood fell on the earth.

36. O king, vultures, hawks, cranes, kanakas and crows, by thousands swooped on your army, over and over again.

37. The jackals yelled forth and many dreadful and fierce rangers of the sky repeatedly placed your army to their right, being desirous of devouring flesh and thirsting for blood.

38. On the field of battle, illuminating the welkin, dropped many a burning meteor accompanied with thundering sounds and vibrating motions and covering with their tails large areas.

39. Then, O monarch, when the commander of the host (Drona) set out for battle, the wide circumference of the lustrous orb of day, emitted flashes of lightning and thundering sounds.

40. These and many other terrible portents appeared indicating a great loss of life of many heroes in the ensuing encounter.

41. Thereafter the fight between the Kurus and the Pandus, both desirous of killing one another, commenced; and the terrible din rising therefrom filled the whole world.

42. Then, burning with wrath, the Pandavas and the Kauravas, all first-class smiters, began to pierce one another with sharpened weapons, ardently longing for victory.

43. Then that mighty champion (Drona) of great effulgence, charged, with headlong speed,

the army of the sons of Pandu, shooting hundreds of sharpened shafts.

44. Beholding Drona charge, the Pandavas along with the Srinjayas received him, O monarch, with showers of shafts in distinct sets.

45. That mighty host (of the Pandavas) along with the Panchalas agitated and routed by Drona, was shattered like rows of cranes by the wind.

46. In the encounter, invoking various celestial weapons Drona, in a moment, sorely oppressed the Pandavas and the Srinjayas.

47. The Panchalas having Dhrishtadyumna at their head being slaughtered by Drona, like the Danavas by Vasava, began to quake.

48. Thereupon that mighty car-warrior, the heroic Yajnasarma versed in the knowledge of the celestial weapons, produced by his showers of arrows many a breach, in the columns of Drona.

49. Then that powerful son of Prishata, checking the showers of Drona's arrows with those of his own, slew many a Kuru warrior.

50. Thereupon Drona of mighty arms, again rallying his soldiers and re-arranging them, charged the son of Prishata in battle.

51. Then towards the son of Prishata he directed a close shower of arrows, like Meghavat exceedingly enraged shooting his shafts towards the Danavas.

52. Thus, agitated by Drona with his arrows, the Pandavas and Srinjayas, again and again, broke their lines, like a herd of inferior beasts attacked by a lion.

53. Then, O monarch, like a circle of fire-brands, the mighty Drona careered through the army of the Pandavas; and that was a wonderful sight.

54. Riding on his own excellent cars, that resembled a city careering through the skies; that was well supplied with the implements of war according to the military science, the banner of which was fluttering on the air, the rattle of which was resounding all round the field, the steeds of which were well-driven and the flagstaff of which was shining like a rod of

crystal-riding on such a chariot. Drona inspired the hostile army with terror and massacred (right and left).

## CHAPTER 8

### (DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)-Continued

#### The audition of the account of Drona's death

Sanjaya said

1. Seeing Drona thus destroy their horses, drivers, cars and elephants, the Pandavas were greatly afflicted and could not check his career.

2. Thereupon king Yudhishtira said to Dhristadyumna and Dhananjaya, 'Check the carrier of the pot-born Drona by surrounding him with great heed.

3. Thereupon the mighty car-warriors namely Arjuna and the son of Prishata together with their followers, encompassed Drona, as he was rushing at them.

4-6. The Kekayas, Bhimasena, the son of Subhadra, Ghatotkacha, Yudhishtira the twins Nakula and Sahadeva, the king of the Matsyas the son of Drupada and the five son of Draupadi greatly delighted and Dhristaketu along with Satyaki, the wrathful Chekitana, the Yuyutsu the mighty car-warrior and, O monarch, all the other rulers of earth who followed the Pandavas in battle, achieved many feats (of valour), in accordance with their prowess and nobility of birth.

7. Seeing the Pandavas protect their army in battle, the son of Bharadvaja, rolling his eyes in anger, cast his glances (on the army).

8. Working himself up with ire, that one (Drona), indomitable in war, seated on his chariot, blew the Pandava host off like the storm blowing thick clouds off.

9. Charging cars, steed, men and elephants on all sides, Drona roamed in the field like one insane and though grown up in years, he resembled one endued with the energy of youth.

10. O monarch, his horses, of chestnut colour, of excellent breed, of wind-like speed, and of indefatigable energy, assumed a

beautiful appearance being bespattered with blood.

11. Beholding that one of regulated vows rush at them like the god of Death enraged, all the warriors of the Pandavas sped on all directions.

12. As some fled and some rallied and some looked at Drona, and some stood on the field, the noise (of the confusion) they caused was dreadful and deafening.

13. That noise that imparted delight to the heroes and enhanced the terrors of the cowards, filled the whole interval between the earth and the skies.

14. And again did Drona, shouting forth his own name, made himself terrible in battle by piercing his enemies with hundreds of arrows.

15. O sire, then the mighty Drona careered fiercely amid the army of the sons of Pandu, like the god of Death himself; and he appeared like one young, though bearing the weight of years.

16. Severing down many heads as well as arms decorated with ornaments and rendering the seats of many a car empty, he sent up terrific roars.

17. In consequence of his rapturous roars and of the fleetness of his arrows, O master, the warriors began to shake in battle, like kine shivering with cold.

18. A terrible sound caused by the rattle of Drona's chariot, by the contraction and stretching of his bow-string and by the twang of his bow, filled the conclave dome.

19. Thousands of arrows not shot from his bow fell, covering cardinal points, upon the elephants, steeds, chariots and foot-soldiers (of the hostile array).

20. Then the Pandavas along with the Panchalas, rushed at Drona wielding a bow of great strength and resembling a blazing fire in consequence of his weapons.

21. Then he began to dispatch them with their elephants, steeds and foot-soldiers to the regions of Death; and within a short while Drona made the earth muddy with blood.

22. A net-work of arrows, woven by Drona who had been scattering celestial weapons and



shooting shafts on all sides, was seen to over shroud the cardinal points.

23. Like flashes of lightning amid dense masses of clouds, his standard could be seen whirling amongst foot-soldiers, chariots, horses and car-warriors.

24. Afflicting with arrows the five foremost among the Kekayas and the king of the Panchalas, Drona, of irrepressible vigour, armed with a bow and arrows, charged the division commanded by Yudhishtira.

25. Thereupon, Bhimasena and Dhananjaya and the grandson of sini and the sons of Drupada and the son of Saibya, the ruler of the Kasis and Sibi himself, greatly delighted and sending up loud shouts, covered Drona with a stream of shafts.

26. Then numerous arrows shot from the bow of Drona and adorned with golden wings, piercing through the bodies of elephants and young steeds, stuck themselves on the ground, with feathers crimson with blood.

27. Then the field of battle, being covered over with fallen bands of warriors, (shattered) chariots and carcasses of elephants and horses mangled with arrows, appeared like the firmament overhung with dense masses of black clouds.

28. Then Drona desirous of the prosperity of your sons, having in battle trampled down the divisions led by the grandson of Shini, Bhima and Arjuna and having crushed the son of Subhadra and the king of the Panchalas and the ruler of the Kasis and many other warriors.

29. And having achieved these and other wondrous feats in battle, O foremost among the Kurus, that high-souled one, Drona, left this world for heaven, after having consumed this earth like the sun that rises at the time of the world's annihilations, O monarch.

30-36. Having achieved these great feats of valour, that chastiser of hostile armies, that possessor of a golden car, that hero, who had killed in battle hundreds of thousands of the soldiers of the Pandavas, was himself slain by

the son of Prishata. Having slain more than two Akshauhini of unreturning heroes, that Drona of (unrivaled) intelligence, at last attained to the highest state of existence. O monarch, having achieved these most difficult feats, that one of a golden car was slain by the Pandavas and the Panchalas of inauspicious and heartless of deeds. When the preceptor was slain in battle, O king, a loud roar of all creatures as also of the warriors filled the sky. The loud cry of 'O fie' uttered by creatures arose in the welkin resounding through the earth, the heavens and the interval between them and the cardinal and the subsidiary quarters. Then all the celestials and the Pitris and the friend of the mighty car-warrior Bharadvaja (Drona), saw him slain in battle. The son of Pandu having obtained victory gave forth roars resembling those of a lion; and the (foundation of) the earth shook with those loud leonine roars of theirs.

## CHAPTER 9

### (DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)-Continued

#### The grief of Dhritarashtra

##### Dhritarashtra said:-

1. What was Drona doing when the Pandavas and the Srinjayas slew him in battle,- he who was so skillful in the use of weapons amongst all wielders of arms?

2. Did his chariot give way? Did his bow snap in two in the act of smiting? Did Drona go mad and for the reason met with his death?

3-5. O son, how was it that the son of Prishata, the prince of the Panchalas, slew that invincible hero, who scattered thick shower of arrows decked with golden wings, who was (wonderfully) light-handed; that foremost of the regenerate who was proficient in everything, thoroughly familiar with all modes of warfare and capable of shooting his shafts to a long distance; who was self-controlled, skillful in the use of weapons and blessed with the possession of celestial weapons, that mighty warrior who performed many dreadful feats and who was ever heedful in fight?

6. Since that heroic Drona was slain by Parshata of illustrious soul, it is evident, I think, that Destiny is more powerful than exertion.

7. In that mighty warrior, the knowledge of all the four kinds of weapons was present. Do you say to me that Drona, that preceptor of all wielders of arrows and weapons is slain?

8. Hearing the death that hero of golden car covered over with tiger-skins, whose effulgence was like that of gold, I cannot today discard my grief.

9. Surely, O Sanjaya, no man ever dies through sorrow caused by another's calamity; since, I, unfortunate as I am, am still alive having heard of Drona's death.

10. I do consider Destiny to be, by far, the superior; and exertion is of no avail. Surely my heart is so hard as if it were made of adamant.

11-13. Since it does not break into hundred pieces, although I have heard of the slaughter of Drona. How could he had been struck by death, on whom the Brahmanas and the princes danced attendance being desirous of receiving lessons in the Vedas and in divination and in the use of bows. I cannot even conceive the fall of Drona which is like the drying up of the ocean, the removal of the Meru mountain and the dropping of the lustrous orb from the heavens. He was the repressor of the wicked and the protector of the pious.

14-15. That afflicter of enemies, who has sacrificed his life for the pitiable Duryodhana, on whose prowess rested the hope of victory of my wicked sons, who was equal to Brihaspati and Ushanas in intelligence, how could he have been slain? His stout chestnut-coloured steed, decked with golden trappings.

16. Fleet as the wind, yoked to his car, beyond the reach of all weapons in battle, endued with great strength, emitting neigh (in joy), well-trained, of the Sindhu breed, excellently dragging the chariot.

17. Of great sturdiness, were exhausted in the very midst of the fight? Unmoved in battle by the sight of the elephants as those huge monsters roared out with the sound of conchs and kettledrums.

18. By the twangs of bow-strings and showers of arrows and other weapons,

foretelling victory over enemies (by their mere appearance), of inexhaustible breath and indefatigable.

19. Those fleet horses harnessed to the car of the son of Bharadvaja, were they over-powered? Even such steeds were yoked by that foremost of human heroes to his golden car.

20. Why could he not cross the ocean of the Pandava army, mounted on his own best of cars effulgent like gold?

21. What feats did that son of Bharadvaja achieve in battle, who made all the heroes, cry and on whose knowledge of weapons all the bowmen in the world depend?

22-23. What feats did Drona perform in battle, Drona who was endued with great strength and was ever devoted to truth? What car-warriors felled in battle Drona of fierce deeds, that foremost of bowmen, that foremost of commanders who was like Shakra himself in heaven? Did the Pandavas fly on all directions seeing him of the golden car.

24-25. Him endued with great might who invoked in that battle many celestial weapons? Did the very virtuous king Yudhishtira, with his younger brothers and his army having the prince of the Panchalas for its reins, encompass Drona on all sides? Surely Partha checked the career of other car-warriors with his straight going arrows.

26. Then, of course, the son of Prishata, that perpetrator of evil deeds, assaulted Drona. Indeed I do not see any one capable of bringing about the death of Drona.

27-29. Save the fierce warrior Dhrishtadyumna supported by Arjuna himself. I think that when these heroes namely the Kekayas, the Chedis, the Karushas, the Matsyas and the other rulers of earth, encompassing the preceptor hemmed him in on all sides, like ants pressing upon a serpent and that when he was occupied in the achievement of some difficult feat, then the vilest among the Panchalas must have slain him. He who, having studied the four Vedas along with their auxiliaries and the Histories constituting the fifth Veda.

30-31. Became the refuge of the Brahmanas as the ocean is that of the rivers, that afflicter of enemies who led the life both of a Brahmana and a Kshatriya, how could that Brahmana, venerable in years meet his death through weapons. Intolerant in spirit, he was ever humiliated and had to undergo troubles for my sake.

32-33. Through the son of Kunti he reaped the fruits of his own actions however undeserving he might have been of them. How could that one, on whose feats of valour depends the world of bowmen, who was ever devoted to truth and of pious deeds, who was foremost like the Shakra in heaven, who was endued with great vigours and strength, how could that one be slain by persons hankering after prosperity?

34. How could that one of great lightness of hand, endued with might, a firm wielder of bow and the grinder of his foes, how could that one be slain by the sons of Pritha like a *timi* slain by the smaller fishes?

35. He, meeting whom no person desirous of victory, ever returned with life, he whom when alive the following two sound never left, namely.

36. The sound of the recital of Vedic verses, by those desirous of acquiring Vedic knowledge and the twang of the bowstrings, caused by those wishing to acquire skill in bowmanship; he who was never depressed, who was the foremost among men and was ever attended with prosperity and was invincible.

37-38. He who was equal to the elephant and the lion in prowess, even he has been slain! I cannot even tolerate the thought of Drona's death. How, O Sanjaya, the son of Prishata, slew in battle that most invincible hero whose might was never checked and whose fame was never soiled even before the very eyes of the foremost of men? Who were those persons who fought in Drona's front and protected him from near?

39. Who were they who brought up his rear and obtained that end which is so difficult to

being attained? Who were they that covered the right and the left wings of that high-souled one?

40. Who went before him when that hero fought in the battle? Who were they that courted death stood face to face to them regardless of their body?

41-44. Who were those heroes that attained the highest state of existence, in the battle with Drona? Did those vile Kshatriyas entrusted with the protection of Drona, out of apprehension, abandon him in (the thick of) the fight? Was he slain by the foe while there helpless? Out of fear Drona would never turn his back on the field of battle, though the danger might be very great. How could he have been slain by the enemy? O Sanjaya, although in a very critical situation, an illustrious person should do this, namely, display his prowess to the best of his might; all this was in Drona. O son, my mind is loosing consciousness; refrain for a while from this discourse. O Sanjaya, regaining my consciousness, I shall again question you.

## CHAPTER 10

### (DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)-Continued

#### The words of Dhritarashtra

#### Vaishampayana said

1. Thus having questioned the son of Suta, Dhritarashtra, sorely oppressed with the sorrow of his heart and despondent of the victory of his sons, dropped down on the ground.

2. Seeing him unconscious and fallen down on the ground, the attendants sprinkled him with very cold and holy-scented water, fanning him all the while.

3. Beholding that great king fallen down, the Bharata ladies surrounded him on all sides and began to chafe him (gently) with their hands.

4. Then those beautiful ladies, with their voices choked up with the vapour of grief, gently raised the monarch from the surface of the earth and placed him on his throne.

5. Placed on the throne, the monarch overwhelmed by the influence of the swoon, remained motionless, while he was fanned from all sides.

6. Slowly regaining consciousness, that ruler of earth began to quake and he again questioned the son of Gavalgani, of the Suta tribe, regarding the events of the battle, as they occurred.

**Dhritarashtra said**

7-9. That Ajatasatru (Yudhishtira) who like the rising sun drives awake darkness by his own radiance, who (charges an enemy), like a tremendous and infuriated elephant in rut, incapable of being defeated by a rival leader of herds, charging a rival proceeding with cheerful face towards a female of the species, what great warrior of my host faced that Ajatasatru, as he charged, in order to keep him away from Drona? That foremost of men, that hero, who has slain in battle many brave warriors.

10. That mighty-armed, intelligent and brave hero of invincible might, who, singled-handed, can consume the whole host of Duryodhana by means of his terrible glances.

11. That destroyer by his glances, that one ever inclined to gain victory, that wielder of bow, that hero of eternal renown, that self-controlled warrior held in high respect by the whole world—what warriors of my army did surround that hero?

12. Who were those warriors of my host that encountered that irrepressible prince, that wilder of bow, that hero of unfading glory, that foremost of men, that son of Kunti?

13-14. That hero who rushing with headlong speed charged Drona, who achieves grand feats at the expense of the enemy, that most puissant one of gigantic stature and great vigour, who equals ten thousand elephants in strength, what warrior surrounded that Bhimasena as he charged my army?

15. As that mighty car-warrior of excessive energy, Vibhatsu, resembling a dense mass of rain-clouds, came, creating terrible sounds like the clappings of the thunder-bolt, like Parjanya itself.

16. Showering torrents of arrows like Indra showering rain and causing the cardinal quarters to reverberate with the sound of his palms and rattle of his chariot-wheels.

17. (When that terrible hero) whose bow was effulgent like a flash of lightning, whose chariot resembled a cloud having for its thunder the rattle of its wheels, (that hero) the whizz of whose arrows made him all the more fierce.

18-20. Whose ire is like a dreadful cloud, who is fleet like the mind or the wind, who always pierces the enemy to the very core of his heart, who, armed with shafts, is dreadful to gaze at, who profusely fills all the cardinal quarters with human blood like Death himself, who, with a terrific roar and a dreadful countenance, wielding the Gandiva, pours, in one continuous shower, on the head of my warriors led by Duryodhana, shafts whetted on stone and decked with the feathers of vultures—when that intelligent Vijaya came, what became the state of your mind.

21. When that son of Pritha bearing the device of the foremost of apes on his banner, came, overspreading the sky with his shower of shafts, what became the state of your mind at the sight of him?

22. Did Arjuna rush to battle, killing your warriors by the very twang of his bow Gandiva and achieving dreadful feat (as he advanced).

23. Did Dhananjaya deprived you of your lives with his arrows, like the hurricane scattering masses of gathering clouds or felling forest of reed by blowing through them?

24. What man is powerful enough to encounter the wielder of the Gandiva bow in battle? Even hearing him to be on the head of the (hostile) array, all ranks of soldiers give way.

25. In that battle, in which soldiers trembled and even heroes were inspired with fear, who were they that did not forsake Drona and who were those mean fellows that fled out terror?

26. Who were they that battle, shuffling this mortal coil, courted Death standing before them in the shape of Dhananjaya who had obtained victory even over superhuman combatants?

27. My warriors cannot withstand the impetus of that one having white horses harnessed to chariot, nor can they bear to twang of the Gandiva, that resembles the rumbling of clouds in the rainy season.

28. I consider that chariot which has Vishvaksena for its driver and Dhananjaya for its warrior, to be unconquerable even be the celestials and Asuras united together.

29. Delicate, youthful, brave, of a handsome appearance, that son of Pandu who is intelligent, skillful, accurate in his memory, of prowess incapable of being thwarted, in battle.

30. When that Nakula giving forth a loud roar and afflicting the whole army, rushed upon Drona, what warriors tried to check his career?

31. When Sahadeva, resembling an infuriated snake of mortal poison, rushed at Drona, afflicting his enemies, when that one owning white horses and incapable of being conquered in battle.

32. When that one of illustrious vows, of never-failing aim, of bashful nature and invincible prowess, when that Sahadeva charged, who were those heroes that withstood him?

33. That hero who having completely crushed the army of king Sauvira, took for his consort the desirable princess of the Bhojas and graceful in limbs of the body.

34. That foremost of men Yuyudhana who is ever endued with truthfulness, resoluteness, bravery and Brahmacharya.

35. That warrior possessed of great physical strength, who always does what is true, who is never depressed and who is invincible and equals Vasudeva in battle and is considered to be a second Vasudeva.

36. Who, by the teachings of Dhananjaya has become foremost in the act of using arrows, who is equal to the son of Pritha in the use of weapon, what warrior of my army kept him away from Drona?

37. That foremost hero among the Vrishnis that bravest among all wielders of bow, who is equal to Rama himself in the use of weapons, in glory and in prowess.

38. That one of the Satvata race in who there are truth, firmness, intelligence, prowess, the knowledge of the Vedas and the most excellent weapons, as the triune world is in Keshava himself.

39. That mighty champion who is endued with all virtues and who is incapable of being opposed even by the celestials, what warriors (of my army) approaching him, surrounded him on all sides?

40. That foremost among the Panchalas, that hero of noble extraction and a favourite of all high-born person, always achieving excellent feats in battle, namely Utiamanjaya.

41. That one ever intent on doing good to Dhananjaya and born for doing evil only to me, who resembles Yama or Vaishravana or Aditya or Mahendra or Varuna.

42. That prince renowned as a great car-warrior and ever ready to sacrifice his life in the everything of battle, what heroes of my army surrounded him?

43. That one who alone deserting the Chedis had sided with the Pandus, namely Dhrishtaketu, what heroes surrounded him when he advanced towards Drona?

44. That heroic Ketumat, who slew the Prince Durjaya when the took shelter in Girivraja, what hero of my army kept him (Ketumat) away from Drona?

45-46. What warriors of my army encountered Sikhandin when he rushed at Drona—Sikhandin, the foremost of mean, who has realised the pleasures (in himself) of manhood and femininity, that son of Yajnasena, who is ever cheerful in battle and who became the cause of the death of the high souled Devavrata in battle?

47. That most excellent hero among the Vrishnis, that foremost of all wielders of bow, that hero, in whom reside all virtues even in a greater degree than in Dhananjaya himself.

48. In whom always exist truth, (the knowledge of) the best weapons and Brahmacharya, who is equal to the son of Vasudeva in prowess and to Dhananjaya in strength.

49. Who resembles Aditya in effulgence, Brihaspati in intelligence—namely, the high-souled Abhimanyu who is like Death himself with a gapping mouth.

50. What heroes surrounded him when he advanced towards Drona? That youthful hero of unripe understanding, that slayer of hostile heroes, namely Subhadra's son.

51-52. When he charged Drona, what became the state of your mind then? When those foremost of princes, the son of Draupadi, in battle rushed at Drona like streams flowing towards the ocean, what heroes obstructed them? Those boys, who having abandoned all boyish sports, for twelve years. And observing excellent vows danced attendance on Bhima in order to receive lessons in the use of weapons.

53. Those boys, namely - Kshatranjaya, Kshatradeva and Kshatravarma and Manada. Those heroic sons of Dhrishtadyumna, what warriors kept them away from Drona?

54. That one whom the Vrishnis consider superior in battle to hundred warriors. That mighty warrior Chekitana, what hero of my army tried to keep him away from Drona?

55. Anadhrishti, the generous son of Vriddhaksema had kidnapped the daughter of Kalingaraja, who had prevented him to make an access to Drona?

56-57. The five Kekaya brothers, virtuous and endued with prowess incapable of being thwarted. Resembling the Indragopakas (in complexion), furnished with red armours and weapons and banners, those heroes who are the sons of the sister of the Pandavas' mother and who ever long for the victory of the Pandavas. What heroes of my army surrounded them when they assaulted Drona with a view to kill him?

58-59. That lord of battles, desirous of slaying whom the enraged Monarchs united together for six months in Varanavata could not defeat, that best of all wielders of bows, that hero of great strength and unerring aim, that foremost of men, Yuyutsu, tried to keep him away from Drona?

60-62. Who in a battle in Varanasi, everthrew from his car with a broad-headed shaft, the great warrior the son of Kashiraja, desirous of seizing a maiden, what hero kept him away from Drona? That mighty warrior

Dhrishtadyumna, that principal counsellor of the sons of Pritha. Who is ever engaged in doing harm to Duryodhana, who has been created to slay Drona, what warriors of my side surrounded him, when consuming in battle all warriors and shattering all the ranks of my soldiers, he advanced towards Drona?

63. That foremost of all men conversant with the weapons, who has been reared, as it were, on the very lap of Drupada. That Sikhandin, guarded by Arjuna's weapons, what warriors of my army kept him away from Drona?

64-66. That one who, as if with a leathern belt, encompassed this extensive earth. With the deafening rattle of his chariot, that foremost of warriors, the chief of all slayers of enemies, who in lieu of other sacrifices accomplished ten horse-sacrifices with ample food, drink and Dakshina, that one who ruled his subjects, as if they were his own sons, that son of Ushinara who in his sacrifice gave away kine as numerous as the sand that over-spread the banks of the Ganges-stream, whose this deed no man has been or will be able to imitate.

67. After the accomplishment by him of this feat, the very gods had exclaim saying, We do not see in the three worlds with all their mobile and immobile creations,

68-69. A second person save Ushinara's son, who has attained to regions, after death, which are unattainable by human beings'- who amongst my warriors, opposed that Shaivya, that grandson of the Ushinara's son, while he assaulted Drona?

70. Shaivya, the grand son of that king was when approaching to Dronacarya with widely opened mouth like the death god (Kala), who had prevented him marching that time?

71. What warriors of my host obstructed that squadron of cars, belonging to Virata, the king of the Matsyas, the slayer of his enemies, as it careered towards Drona?

72-73. That one endued with great strength and prowess, born of Vrikodara in the course of a single day, that heroic Rakshasa of potent illusive powers, of whom I entertain great

apprehension. Who is always desirous of victory for the sons of Pritha, who is a thorn in the sides of my sons, what hero of my army kept that Ghatotkacha of gigantic body away from Drona?

74. O Sanjaya, what cannot be vanquished by them for whose interests these and other such numerous (heroes) are ever ready to sacrifice their lives in battle?

75. Those sons of Pritha, whose well-wisher and refuge is that wielders of Saranga bow, those sons, how could they suffer defeat in battle?

76. The son of Vasudeva in the supreme preceptor of the worlds, the Lord of all and the Eternal; that master Narayana, that one of divine soul is the refuge of men in battle.

77. His divine achievements and extolled by the wise; I shall also recite them with reverence, regaining my equanimity.

## CHAPTER 11

### (DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)-Continued

#### The lamentation of Dhritarashtra

##### Dhritarashtra said

1. Hear, O Sanjaya, of the celestial feats of the son of Vasudeva,- feats which Govinda achieved and which no other person.

2. While he was being reared in the family of the cowherds, the illustrious one, even in his early years, made the might of his arms, O Sanjaya, known to the three worlds.

3. (Even then) he slew the Asura *Hayaraja* (prince of steeds) who was equal to the *Uchchaishravas* in might and the wind itself in fleetness and who infested the woods on the shores of the Yamuna.

4. In his early years, he killed with his two arms only, the Danava in the form of a bull, of terrible deeds and born as Death himself to the cows.

5. He of eyes resembling lotus petals, also slew the great Asuras, named, Pralamba, Naraka, Jamva, Peeta, as also, Mura of god-like nature.

6. Also Kansa of great vigour who was protected by Jarasandha himself, was slain with his followers, in battle, by Krishna with his prowess alone.

7-8. The mighty sovereign of the Shurasenas, by name Sunamana, of great prowess in battle, the master of a complete *Akshauhini*, endued with activity and the second brother of Kansa the ruler of the Bhojas, with all his soldiers, was consumed in battle by that slayer of enemies, viz., Krishna with Baladeva as his second.

9. That highly passionate Brahmanical sage, by name Durvasa, was adored by him (Krishna) along with his wives. The sage (pleased with him) accorded boons to him.

10-11. That one eyes resembling lotus petals, that most puissant hero, (Krishna), carried away the daughter of the king of the Gandharas, after having defeated, at a *Svayamvara* (Self-choice) all the rulers of the earth. Like horses, those exasperated kings were harnessed to his bridal chariot and lacerated with the cut of his whip.

12. That Janardana, through the instrumentality of another, slew Jarasandha of mighty arms, the lord of a complete *Akshauhini*.

13. That puissant one, slaughtered, like a beast, the king of the Chedis, that powerful leader of kingly hosts, when the latter disputed with him about the (sacrificial) *Arghya*.

14. Madhava, by his prowess, hurled into the bosom of the sea, the fortress of the Danavas known as Soubha, situated in heaven, protected by Shalva and considered to be invulnerable.

15. He obtained victory in battle over the Angas, the Bangas, the Kalingas, the Magadhas, the Kasis, the Koshalas, the Vatsyas, the Gargas, the Karushas and the Poundras,

16-18. The Avantiyas, the Southerners, the Mountaineers, the Daserakas, the Kashmirakas, the Auroshikas, the Pishachas, the Samudgalas, the Kambojas, the Vatadhanas, the Cholas, the Pandavas and, O Sanjaya, the Trigarttas, the Malavas, the Daradas incapable of being defeated. The Khasas and the Shakas, comform

various directions and the Yavanas with their followers, that one of eyes resembling the petals of a blue lotus, conquered all these tribes in battle.

19. In days gone by, entering into the abode of the sea-monster Makara, he defeated in battle Varuna, surrounded by all kinds of sea-animals and hidden underneath watery depths.

20. Hrishikesha obtained the celestial conch called Panchajanya, after having slain in battle Panchajana, who lived in the nether regions.

21. That puissant hero, obtained his indomitable weapon of fire, the discus (Sudarshana), by propitiating Hutashana (Fire) by helping it to burn down the Khandava forest, in which act he was assisted by the son of Pritha (Arjuna).

22. Riding on the son of Vinata and creating quite a panic in the city of the Immortals, that hero carried away the Parijata tree from the abode of the great Indra.

23. That act Shakra submissively brooked, for he was perfectly acquainted with the prowess of Krishna. We have never heard of a king who has not been worsted by Krishna (in battle).

24. That most marvellous act, which he achieved in my assembly hall, O Sanjaya, who else, save that one of eyes resembling lotus petal, is capable of doing?

25. Since inspired by reverence I have been able to recognise Krishna as the Lord, everything in the Vedas is well-known to me and is before my eyes.

26. Verily, O Sanjaya, none can reach the end (of the account) of achievements or Hrishikesha who is endued with prowess and intelligence.

27-30. Then also Gada, Shamva, Pradyumna, Viduratha, Agaboha Anirudha, Charudeshna along with Sarana, Ulmuka, Nisata, the powerful Jhilihobhru, Prithu, Viprithu, Somika and Arimejaya. These and other most puissant Vrishni heroes, skilled in the art of smiting, will, standing on the field, betake to the ranks of the Pandava host. Being called to do so by that foremost of Vrishni warriors, viz., Keshava of high soul; then me-

seems, everything (on my side) will be in great dangers.

31. The heroic Rama, decked with garlands of wild flowers, equal in strength to two thousand elephants, resembling the peck of the Kailasa mountain and armed with the plough, will be there where Janardana is.

32. That son of Vasudeva, whom all the regenerate ones call the Father of all, O Sanjaya, will battle for the interests of the sons of Pandu?

33. When that one, O son, O Sanjaya, clothes himself in mail for the interests of the Pandavas, none will come forth as his antagonist.

34. If, per chance, the Kurus obtain victory over the Pandavas then that one of the Vrishni race, for the interests of these latter will take up his excellent weapon (the discus).

35. Then that foremost of men, that mighty-armed hero, having slain in battle the Kauravas and the (assembled) monarchs will offer the whole earth of Kunti.

36. What other car can encounter in battle, that car of which the driver is Hrishikesha and the warrior is Dhananjaya?

37. In any way, I do not see victory for the Kurus, Recount to me then, all as to how the battle raged.

38. Arjuna is the soul of Keshava and Krishna is the soul of the diadem-decked (Arjuna). In Arjuna victory ever resides and eternal glory is in Krishna.

39. In all the regions, Vibhatsu is unconquerable. All virtues are in Keshava in an extraordinary degree.

40. Duryodhana, through foolishness cannot recognise Krishna or Keshava; he is befooled by Destiny and the noose of Death hangs over him.

41. Duryodhana knows not Krishna of the Dasharha race and Arjuna the son of Pandu; they both are supreme divinities, of high soul, know on earth as Nara and Narayana.

42-44. On earth they appear to men as two different persons, though in reality they are of one and the same soul. That highly-renowned invincible pair, can with the flat of their will



slay this host, if only they wish it. But for humanity's sake, they do not wish it. O son, the slaughter of Bhishma and Drona, of high souls, appears to be like the over-turning of the Yuga and the stupefaction of the senses. In this world neither by Brahmacharya, nor by the study of the Vedas.

45. Nor by the performance of rites or by the dint of weapons, can any one be saved from Death. Those two heroes, held in high honour by the worlds, accomplished in the use of weapons and invincible in battle.

46. Namely, Bhishma and Drona, hearing of their death, why do I, O Sanjaya, still live? That prosperity, seeing which attend Yudhishtira before, we were so jealous.

47. Today, deprived of that prosperity, we shall have to live, in consequence of the death of Bhishma and Drona. This complete annihilation of the Kurus has come consequent upon my actions.

48. For the destruction of those, O you of the Suta caste, who are ripe for it, even the straw behave like a thunder-bolt. In this world Yudhishtira is going to obtain prosperity which is infinite.

49. Yudhishtira, through whose wrath Bhishma and Drona have met their ends. Righteousness had naturally attached itself to Yudhishtira, while it is hostile to the cause of my sons.

50. Time so cruel, that has come for destroying every one, cannot be overcome! O son, things calculated in one way even by intelligent persons.

51. Result in an altogether different way, through the agency of Destiny; this is my belief. Therefore relate to me truly all that occurred, on the advent of that dreadful but inevitable calamity (the death Drona, generating most grieving thoughts and incapable of being crossed over by us).

## CHAPTER 12

### (DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)-Continued

#### The granting of a boon by Drona

Sanjaya said

1. Alas! I shall relate to you everything, as I saw with my own eyes, how Drona fell being slain by the Pandus and the Srinjayas.

2. The mighty car-warrior, the son of Bharadvaja, having been installed as the commander of the army, said these words to your son, in the very midst of the soldiers.

3. "O monarch, in as much as, today you have honoured me with the generalship of this army, immediately after that foremost of the Kauravas, the son of the river (Ganga).

4. O Bharata, reap the adequate fruit of that act of yours. What desire of yours shall I fulfill now? Ask whatever boon you may like?"

5. Thereupon king Duryodhana, accompanied by Karna, Dushasana and others thus spoke to the invincible preceptor, the foremost of all victors.

6. If you would at all accord me a boon, then having captured that foremost of car-warriors, Yudhishtira alive, do you bring him to me.

7. Thereupon the preceptor of the Kurus hearing these words of your son, spoke the following words, thereby imparting great delight to the troops.

8. Fortunate is the king, the son of Kunti, whose capture only you desire. O invincible one, you do not ask for any other boon, such as his slaughter.

9. Why, O foremost of men, do you not desire his slaughter? For what reason do you not allude to his death? Surely O Duryodhana, you are not wanting in policy.

10. It is wonderful that the virtuous king Yudhishtira should have none deadly inimical to him. As you desire him to live, either you intend to preserve your own race.

11. Or, O foremost of the Bharatas, having defeated the Pandavas in battle, you desire to

re-establish brotherly feelings (with them), by giving them back their kingdom.

12. Praised be that king the son of Kunti. The birth of that intelligent one was auspicious. The fact of his being Ajatashatru (having no enemy) is verified today, in as much as even you are affectionate towards him.

13. O Bharata, when your son had been thus addressed by Drona, the feeling that was then present in his heart, suddenly round vent.

14. Even beings like Brihaspati himself cannot suppress the outward manifestations of internal feelings. Therefore, O monarch, your son, transported with joy, spoke these words.

15. On the event of the death of the son of Kunti in battle, O preceptor, victory cannot be mine. If Yudhishtira were to be slain, Partha is sure to slay all of us.

16. Even the immortals cannot slay all of them in battle; so he that will survive the rest of them is sure to extirpate us all.

17. If Yudhishtira, ever truthful to his promises, be brought here alive, he being once more defeated at dice, the Pandavas obedient to him, will again repair to the woods.

18. In this way, it is obvious, that my victory will endure for a long time. It is for this that I do never desire the death of the virtuous king Yudhishtira.

19. Being apprised of his crooked intentions, Drona of keen intellect and conversant with the science of polity, accorded the boon to him after a little reflection, modifying it thus.

#### **Drona said**

20. "If in battle, the heroic Arjuna does not protect king Yudhishtira, then you may already regard the foremost of the Pandavas, brought under your control.

21. Even the celestials with Indra at their head and united with the Asuras themselves, cannot cope with Partha in battle; for this reason, O son, I do not venture to advance against him.

22. No doubt, he is my disciple and I am senior to him in the use of weapons. But he is youthful, blessed with a good fortune and assiduous in (the execution of) his intents.

23. Moreover, he has obtained weapons from Indra and Rudra; besides he has been, O king, incensed by you. It is for these reasons, that I venture not to perform what you ask me to do.

24. Withdraw Arjuna from the battle by what means so ever that can be done. On Partha being removed, the righteous Yudhishtira is as good as vanquished by you.

25. O foremost of men, victory depends on his capture and not on the death; and his capture can be brought about by this artifice.

26. I, having seized that king devoted to truth and righteousness, will, O monarch, no doubt, bring him under your control today.

27. Provided, he remains even for a moment before me in battle of course, if that foremost of men the son of Kunti Dhananjaya be removed from the field of battle.

28. But, O king, before the eyes of Phalguna, Yudhishtira cannot be captured in battle, even by the celestials and the Asuras exerting jointly with Indra at their head.

#### **Sanjaya said**

29. When under these circumscription's, Drona had promised the capture of king Yudhishtira, your greatly-foolish sons regarded the latter as already seized.

30. Your son was perfectly aware of the partiality Drona cherished for the Pandavas; so to make Drona strictly redeem his promise, Duryodhana gave publicity to that counsel.

31. Thereafter, O grinder of your foes, Drona's promise regarding the seizure of amongst the eldest of the Pandavas, was proclaimed all his soldiers by Duryodhana himself.

**CHAPTER 13****(DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)–****Continued****The solemn declaration of Drona to capture Yudhishthira****Sanjaya said**

1. When Drona had promised the capture of the king under these limitations your soldiers, hearing of the probable capture of Yudhishthira.

2-3. Uttered many loud shouts like the roars of lions, accompanying them with the noise of their (flying) shafts and the sound of their conchs. The virtuous king Yudhishthira, O Bharata, was soon apprised, in detail, of everything regarding the purposes of the son of Bharadvaja, by his trusty emissaries. Thereupon having summoned together all his brothers and the other monarchs of his host.

4. The very righteous king addressed these words to Dhananjaya - "O foremost of men today you have heard of the design of Drona.

5. Adopt such course of action, as will prevent the execution of that design. True it is that Drona the destroyer of his foes, has pledged his troth with certain limitations.

6. But those limitations, O mighty warrior, have been all made dependent on you, by him (Drona). Therefore, O mighty-armed one, do you this day fight by my side, so that Duryodhana may not secure the fruition of his desire through the agency of Drona."

**Arjuna said**

7. As, the slaughter of my own preceptor can never be perpetrated by me, so, also, O monarch, I can never agree to abandon you.

8. Rather, O son of Pandu, I would give up my life in battle, than be antagonistic to my preceptor, at any time.

9. Having captured you in battle, the son of Dhritarashtra, desires to possess the kingdom; but in this world of living beings, he will never obtain the fruition of his desire.

10. The conclave dome with the stars may drop down; the earth itself may be shattered to

pieces; yet Drona will never capture you, so long as I live.

11. Even if the wielder of the thunderbolt himself or Vishnu accompanied by the celestials, assists him in battle, still, he shall never capture you in battle.

12. O foremost of monarchs, so long as I am alive, you need not entertain any apprehension from Drona the foremost of all wielders of weapon or any body else.

13. Moreover, O foremost of kings, I say that my resolution is decided. I never think of perjuring myself; I never think of my defeat. I never think of keeping the least part, of any vow I may take, unredeemed.

**Sanjaya said**

14. Thereupon, O monarch, in the camp of the Pandavas, conchs and drums and Mridangas together with the Anakas, were simultaneously sounded.

15-16. There arose also loud shouts, like the roar of lions, uttered by the high-souled Pandavas; and the deafening sound resulting from the twang of their bow-strings and the striking of their palms against their arms, reached the very skies.

17. Hearing that blare of the conchs sounded by the highly-puissant sons of Pandu, your soldiers in their camp struck up various instruments.

18. Thereafter, O Bharata, your, as well their, divisions were formed into battle-array; and slowly then advanced desirous of encountering one another in battle.

19. Then raged a dreadful and hair-stirring battle, between the Pandavas and the Kurus, as also between Drona and the Panchalas.

20. Struggling to the best of their endeavours, to slay the division of Drona, the Srinjayas could not accomplish their purpose, as the divisions were protected by Drona himself.

21. So also the car-warriors of your son's host, skilful in smiting down the enemy could not vanguish the Pandava division led by the diadem-decked Arjuna himself.

22. Protected by Drona and Arjuna respectively, the two armies, appeared to stand

still like two blossoming forests, in the silence of the night.

23. Then, O monarch, that one (Drona) riding on the golden car like the sun himself in radiance, crushing hosts of the Pandavas, carried at will through its various divisions.

24. Then the Pandavas and the Srinjayas considered, through fright, that single car-warrior mounted on a swift-moving car and of great activity in battle, as multiplied in to many.

25. Dreadful shafts shot by him, whizzed in all directions, terrifying, O monarch, the army belonging to the son of Pandu.

26. Drona then appeared like the midday sun burning with a hundred light rays that drew out the perspiration from the body.

27. O Bharata, as the Danavas were unable to look at the great Indra, so none among the army of the sons of Pandu, was able to look at his wrathful self (Drona) in battle.

28. Then that most puissant son of Bharadvaja, stupefying the whole host, speedily blew off the division of Dhrishtadyumna with his sharpened arrows.

29. Obstructing the points of the compass and overspreading the whole welkin with his straight-going shafts, Drona commenced crushing the division of the Pandava host, even at the place where the son of Prishata was.

## CHAPTER 14

### (DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The prowess of Abhimanyu

#### Sanjaya said

1. Then Drona creating great confusion among the ranks of the Pandava host, trampled it under foot, like a forest-conflagration burning down trees.

2. The Srinjayas began to tremble with fear, seeing that enraged hero of the golden car (Drona), consume their division like a raging conflagration.

3. In that battle, they heard the twang of the constantly stretched bow of that warrior of great activity, twang that resembled the rumbling of the thunder.

4. Terrible shafts shot by that one of great lightness of hands, completely crushed car-warriors and cavalry and elephants horses and infantry.

5. At the expiration of the summer, like the rain-cloud, assisted by the strong gale, showering its contents, Drona, pouring streams of iron-tipped arrows, struck terror into the hearts of his enemies.

6. Then, O king, that puissant one careering through the troops of the enemy and agitating them, aggravated their fears.

7. Like flashes of lightning traversing dense masses of clouds, his bow of golden effulgence, was repeatedly seen to flash in his whirling car that resembled a mass of cloud itself.

8. That hero, ever devoted to truth, endowed with intelligence and ever firm in righteousness, then caused a dreadful river with swelling currents, to flow there, that appeared like the one seen at the end of a Yuga.

9. That had its origin in the flow of Dronas wrath; that was infested with numerous carnivorous animals; that was filled with waves consisting of the troops; the ate away the trees (standing on its banks) consisting of heroic warriors.

10. That had blood for its waters, cars, for its eddies, elephants and horses for its banks, armours for its rows of lotuses and flesh for the mire filling its bed.

11. That had, fat, marrow and bones, for its beaches and excellent head-gears for its froth; that had the raging encounter for the cloudy canopy over its surface and the split lances for the fishes that abounded in it.

12. That was inaccessible in consequence of the corpses of large number of men, elephants and horses; that flew in strong currents constituted by the impetus of the shafts; that had the slain bodies for logs of timber floating on it; that swarmed with tortoises constituted by cars.

13. That had heads for pebbles scattered on its banks; that had scimitars for the fishes abounding in it; that had elephants and chariots for its lakes; that was adorned with my ornaments.

14. That had mighty car-warriors for its hundred little whirlpools; that was ornamented with little wavelets constituted by the dust of the earth; that was capable of being crossed over in battle by those endued with great prowess and incapable of being crossed by the cowards.

15. That had heaps of corpses obstructing its navigation; that was haunted by Kankas, and vultures; that carried, by thousand, mighty car-warriors to the regions of Death.

16. That was infested by snakes consisting of the (broken) spears; that abounded in aquatic fowls consisting of living fighters, that had torn umbrellas for its large swans and (fallen) diadems for its smaller birds.

17. That had wheels (or discs) for its turtles and maces for its sharks and arrows for its smaller fishes; that was resorted to by fearful swarms of crows, vultures and jackals.

18. And, O foremost of kings, that bore in hundreds to the regions of the ancestral manes, beings slain by the powerful Drona in that battle.

19. That was choked up with heaps of dead bodies; that had hair for its mosses and weeds. O monarch, such a river Drona caused to flow, that enhanced the apprehension of the cowards.

20. Then all those divisions having Yudhishtira at their head, assaulted on all sides that mighty car-warrior Drona who had been uttering loud shouts.

21. Then all your heroic troops endued with steady prowess received (unflinchingly) that rushing army on all sides; the result was horripilating.

22. Shakuni conversant with hundred kinds of deceitful practices, encountered Sahadeva, piercing the latter's charioteer, chariot and flag-staff with sharpened shafts.

23. Thereupon the son of Madri, wrought up with ire, cut down with his arrows, the standard, bow, charioteer and steeds of the son of Subala and then pierced the latter with sixty shafts.

24. Thereupon the son of Subala, grasping a mace, jumped down from his best of cars; then

with the stroke of his mace, he felled, O king, the driver of Sahadeva, from his chariot.

25. Then, O monarch, those two heroic mighty warriors deprived of their cars, armed with their clubs, began to roam in the field of battle like two mountains adorned with peaks.

26. Drona, having pierced the king of the Panchalas with ten swift-going (shafts), was in return, pierced by him with many shafts; and he then again pierced the latter with a still larger number of arrows.

27. Bhimasena pierced Vivinsati with twenty keen-pointed shafts; but being so pierced, he did not tremble; and that was indeed marvelous.

28. But O mighty sovereign, Vivinsati suddenly deprived Bhimasena of his horses, standard and bow; and then the troops highly applauded him.

29. But the latter did not tolerate that act of prowess achieved by his adversary in battle; and then with his mace he felled the excellently trained horses of Vivinsati.

30. Then like an infuriated elephant rushing at an infuriated rival, the puissant Vivinsati, grasping a buckler, jumped down from his car the steeds of which had been slain and assaulted Bhimasena.

31. The heroic Shalya, pierced, smilingly, his own dear nephew Nakula, as if in dalliance, with arrows, in order to excite the latter's wrath.

32. But the mighty Nakula, cutting down, in the battle, Shalya's steeds, umbrella, standard, charioteer and bow, blew his conch.

33. Dhristaketu having sundered in twain various shafts shot by Kripa, pierced the latter with seventy arrows; and then with three more cut-off the device on Kripa's standard.

34. Thereupon Kripa encompassed him with a mighty shower of arrows; thus holding Dhristaketu in check, the Vipra fought on with him, in battle.

35. Satyaki pierced Kritavarman in the middle of his breast with a Naracha; then again piercing him with seventy arrows, he dove many more inside the latter's body laughing all the while.

36. The warrior of the Bhoja race, then pierced Satyaki with seven and seventy keen pointed arrows; but he failed to move the latter like the fleet wind failing to move the mountain.

37. Senapati sorely pierced Susarman to the very quick. The latter also struck the former on the shoulder-joint with a Tomara (or lance).

38. King Virata, with the highly puissant Matsyas, opposed in battle the son of Vikartana. And there raged a wonderful combat.

39. Then a great feat was achieved by the son of the charioteer, when he held the whole force (of Virata) in check with (a shower of) his shafts of close-joints.

40. King Drupada himself was engaged with Bhagadatta. O mighty monarch, the combat between them was indeed marvellous.

41. Bhagadatta, the foremost of men, pierced with close-jointed shafts, king Drupada, his charioteer, flag-staffs and chariot.

42. Thereupon, wrought up with ire, king Drupada, swiftly struck the mighty car-warrior Bhagadatta on the chest with a close-jointed shaft.

43. Those two foremost of warriors on earth, both conversant with the use of weapons, namely, Sikhandin and the son of Somadatta, fought with one another in a combat that inspired terror into the hearts of all creatures.

44. Bhurisrava endued with great prowess, O king, covered in battle with a great stream of arrows, the mighty car-warrior, the son of Yajnasena.

45. O ruler of men, Sikhandin, filled with rage, pierced the son of Somadatta with ninety shafts and, O Bharata, caused him to tremble.

46. The two Rakshasas of fierce deeds, viz., Hidimba and Alambusha, desirous of vanquishing each other, were engaged in a terrible combat.

47. Capable of creating a hundred illusions, inflamed with arrogance and each desirous of vanquishing the other, they fought a wonderful battle assailing one another with their power of illusions.

48. The dreadful Chekitana fought with Anuvindha; they careered through the field of battle, disappearing at times and exciting great wonder.

49. Lakshmana was engaged in a terrible combat with Kshatradeva, as, O monarch, Vishnu was, in days of yore, engaged with the Daitya Hiranyakashipu.

50. Then, O king, Paurava, uttering a loud roar and mounting on a car, to which were yoked fleet steeds and which was properly furnished, rushed at the son of Subhadra.

51. Then desirous of battle, Paurava possessed of great might assaulted Abhimanyu. Then that grinder of foes (Abhimanyu) battled fiercely with his antagonist.

52. Then the son of Puru covered the son of Subhadra with a thick shower of arrows. Then the son of Arjuna cut down on earth the standard, umbrella and steeds of the former.

53. Then the son of Subhadra having pierced Paurava with seven swiftly-flying arrows, pierced with five shafts his charioteer and horses.

54. Thus imparting delight to his own troops and repeatedly uttering leonine roars, Arjuna's son quickly took in his hand a shaft that was sure to cause Paurava's death.

55. The son of Hridika seeing that shaft of dreadful sight fixed on the bow-string (of Subhadra's son) cut it down, along with the bow, with two arrows.

56. Thereupon throwing aside that severed bow, the son of Subhadra, that slayer of inimical heroes, grasping a sharp sword and a buckler jumped down (from his car).

57. Then whirling that buckler bearing the devices of many stars which seemed to be identified with his hands as also the sword, he careered through the field of battle displaying his prowess.

58. O king, whirling the weapons by his sides and whirling them on high and shaking them and himself jumping up he made the distinction between the sword and shield to be imperceptible.

59. Then with a loud shout he suddenly leapt upon the shaft of Paurava's car; then ascending the car he dragged Paurava by the hair.

60. Then with a kick of his leg he killed the latter's charioteer and with his sword cut down the standard; then he threw off Paurava, like the son of Tarkhya throwing aside a snake that he had seized having agitated the waters of the ocean.

61. Then all the rulers of earth saw Paurava with disheveled hair resembling an ox deprived of his senses, while on the point of being felled by a lion.

62. Then beholding Paurava at the mercy of the son of Arjuna and dragged like one helpless and fallen on the ground, Jayadratha did not tolerate it.

63. Grasping a sword and a shield decorated with the emblem of a peacock and furnished with a row of hundred small tinklers and uttering a loud roar, he jumped down from his chariot.

64. Thereupon the nephew of Krishna beholding the prince of the Sindhus, left Paurava alone and like a hawk suddenly jumped down from the latter's car.

65. The nephew of Krishna, severed down with his sword or warded off with his shield, the Prasas (lances) Pattishas (axes) and scimitars directed to him by his enemies.

66-67. Then displaying to the troops the might of his own arms, that puissant hero again uplifting his heavy sword and his shield, advanced towards the son of Vriddhakshatra, the eternal enemy of his father, like a tiger rushing at an elephant.

68. Then having encountered each other as if out of delight, they began to strike each other with their swords, like a tiger and a lion attacking each other with teeth and claws.

69. Between those two foremost of men no person could notice any distinction regarding the whirl, the strokes and the descent of their swords and shields.

70. There seemed no distinction between them as regards the descent and the whirl of

their swords and the warding off of each other's blows.

71. Then those two high-souled ones, careering inward and outward, in most excellent tracks, appeared like two mountains furnished with wings.

72. Then when the high-famed son of Subhadra was on the point of bringing down his sword on the head of Jayadratha, the latter struck him on his shield.

73. Then that mighty sword, struck into the gold plate of Abhimanyu's buckler, O Bharata, broke (in twain) as the king of the Sindhus tried to take it off with force.

74. Beholding his own sword break, Jayadratha receded six steps and within an wink of the eye, was seen to be mounted on his own car.

75. Then all the kings in a body encompassed on all sides the nephew of Krishna, who had been then disengaged from the combat and had been sitting on his excellent chariot.

76. Then the highly puissant son of Arjuna looking at Jayadratha, whirled his sword and buckler.

77. Subhadra's son, the slayer of hostile heroes, having vanquished the king of the Sindhus, consumed the troops led by the latter like the Sun scorching the world.

78. Thereupon, at him (Abhimanyu) Shalya hurled, in battle, his dreadful dart made of all iron, decked with gold and resembling a flashing flame of fire.

79. Then like the son of Vinata catching hold of a mighty falling snake, the nephew of Krishna, leaping up caught hold of the dart; and having caught it, he drew his sword out of its sheathe.

80. Thereupon all the monarchs in a chorus uttered a shout resembling the roar of a lion, having seen the lightness and prowess of that one of immeasurable energy (Abhimanyu).

81. There after the son of Subhadra, that slayer of hostile heroes, let go, charging with the might of his arms, the self same dart of

Shalya of great resplendence and decked with lapises.

82. Then that dart, the resembled a snake that had recently cast off its slough, reaching Shalya's chariot, slew its driver and felled him down from the car.

83-84. Thereupon Virata, Drupada, Dhristaketu and Yudhishtira, Satyaki, Kaikaya, Bhima, Dhristadyumna and Sikhandin, the twins Nakula and Sahadeva and the sons of Draupadi, all exclaimed "Well-done" "Well-done." Whizzing sounds produced by the discharge of various arrows and ample leonine roars.

85. Arose there, imparting delight to the unreceding son of Subhadra. But your sons could not tolerate these indications of victory of their adversaries;

86. And so, suddenly there covered him from all sides, with showers of sharpened shafts, O monarch, like the clouds pouring their contents on the mountain.

87. Then Artayani, the slayer of foes, desirous of doing good to your sons and remembering the overthrow of his charioteer, rushed in rage at the son of Subhadra.

## CHAPTER 15

### (DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The defeat of Shalya

**Dhritarashtra said**

1. O Sanjaya, you have described to me various wonderful accounts of single combats; hearing them I envy those who are blessed with eyes.

2. In this world, all men will speak of this battle between the Kurus and the Pandavas, resembling that between the celestials and the Asuras, as very wonderful.

3. I am never satiated with the audition of this excellent fight; therefore do you recount to me the (details of the) combat between Atrayan and the son of Subhadra.

**Sanjaya said**

4. Seeing his charioteer overthrown, Shalya uplifting a mace wholly made of iron and in

rage uttering a loud shout, jumped down from his excellent car.

5. Thereupon Bhima also grasping a mighty mace speedily encountered him (Shalya) who then resembled the all-destroying fire in effulgence and also the God of death wielding his bludgeon.

6. The son of Subhadra also grasping a huge mace that looked like the thunderbolt itself, called out to Shalya saying 'Come, Come'; but Bhima, with great efforts, prevented him (from joining in the fray).

7. Then having dissuaded the son of Subhadra, the puissant Bhimasena, meeting Shalya in battle, stood immovable like a mountain.

8. Also the mighty-powerful king of the Madras, beholding Bhima, rushed at him with impetuosity, like a tiger attacking an elephant.

9. Then there arose the blare of trumpets and conchs by thousands, as also leonine roars and deafening sounds of drums.

10. Loud shouts of 'Well-done' 'Well-done' were uttered by hundreds of Kuru and Pandava warriors who had been looking on and rushing against one another.

11. O Bharata, none among host of kings, except the ruler of the Madras, could withstand in battle, the impetuosity of the attack of Bhimasena.

12. Also, in this earth, none except Vrikodara, could bear the vehemence of the mace wielded by the king of the Madras, of illustrious soul attack of Bhimasena.

13. Then that huge mace, covered over with a net-work composed of hempen strings and gold wires, imparted great delight into the hearts of the troops and being wielded by Bhima it seemed to blaze forth.

14. Similarly, the mace was getting grace like lightening in the hands of king Shalya when it was being played in orbits, circles and several trends as prescribed for truncheon-war.

15. The both Shalya and Vrikodara, whirling their maces and moving in various orders, began to course in various circles.



16. Whether as regards their circular movements and whirling motions or their wielding of the maces, the fight between those two foremost of men as equal in every respect.

17. The prodigious mace of Shalya being struck against that of Bhimasena, emitted dreadful flashes of fire and then quickly fell into fragments.

18. Similarly the mace of Bhimasena being struck against that of his adversary, resembled a tree lighted by fire-flies during the rainy season at night-fall.

19. The mace hurled by the king of the Madras in battle, O Bharata, illuminating the welkin, frequently emitted flashes of fires.

20. Similarly the mace hurled by Bhimasena at his foe, consumed the latter's troops like a dreadful meteor shooting down.

21. Then those two excellent of maces, clashing against each other, appeared like two fiercely breathing she-snakes and emitted flashes of fire.

22. Then like two mighty tigers attacking one another with their claws or like two infuriated elephants doing the same with their tusks, those two heroes, coursed (in the field), having grasped their two excellent maces.

23. Then both of them being simultaneously struck with those excellent of maces, were soon besmeared with blood and they resembled two Kinshuka trees decked with blossoms.

24. Then in all the points of the compass was heard, like the rumbling of Shakra's thunder, the sound generated by the clash of the maces wielded by those two foremost of men.

25. Struck with the mace of the ruler of the Madras both on the left and on the right side, Bhima did not tremble, even like a mountain cleft open (by the thunder-bolt).

26. Also the puissant king of the Madras being struck by impetus of the mace of Bhima, patiently stood immovable like a mountain riven by the thunder-bolt itself.

27. Upraising their maces, they assaulted one another with great impetus; they then again began to course in shorter circles.

28. Leaping over space measuring eight steps and falling upon one another like two rival

elephants, they began to strike with vehemence, one another, with their iron bludgeons.

29. In consequence of their great impetus and being struck sorely with each other's mace, those two heroes simultaneously fell down on earth like two poles raised in honour of Indra.

30. Thereupon the mighty car-warrior Kritavarman speedily came to Shalya's rescue who was deprived of his senses and was breathing quickly.

31. Seeing Shalya crushed with the stroke of the mace and writhing like a snake and overwhelmed with a swoon, O monarch.

32. The mighty car-warrior Kritavarman, speedily taking up the ruler of the Madras on his car carried him away from the field of battle.

33. Though unconscious like one drunk the mighty-armed and heroic Bhima rose up in a twinkling of the eye and was seen standing with his mace in his grost.

34. Thereupon your sons-seeing the king of the Madras turn back from the field of battle, O Sire, began to tremble supported though they were by elephant, infantry, cavalry and cars.

35. The warriors of your army being crushed by the Pandavas desirous of victory and struck with fear, fled in all directions like clouds driven by the storm.

36. The mighty warriors, O king, of the Pandava host having vanquished, in battle, the army of Dhritarashtra, appeared effulgent like blazing fires.

37. Transported with joy, they blew their conchs and gave forth roars resembling those of the lions and struck up their drums along with Mridangas and cymbals.

## CHAPTER 16

### (DRONABHISHEKA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The victory of Arjuna

#### Sanjaya said

1. Seeing that army of yours thoroughly routed in battle, O monarch, Vrishasena endued with prowess, single-handed, began to protect it by means of the illusion of this weapons.

2. In that battle numerous shafts discharged by Vrishasena flew in all the ten directions of the compass, piercing men, horses, cars and elephants.

3. Like the rays of the sun, O king, mighty arrows of blazing effulgence shot by him, began to fly (on all sides).

4. O monarch, pierced by him car-warriors and cavalry began to fall down suddenly on the ground, like trees broken by the hurricane.

5. That mighty car-warrior felled in battle, O monarch, large divisions of steeds, car-warriors and elephants, by hundreds and thousands.

6. Seeing him career along through the field of battle, like one fearless, all the monarchs uniting together encompassed him on all sides.

7. The son of Nakula by name Shatanika charged Vrishasena and pierced the latter with ten Narachas that could penetrate into the very vitals.

8. The son of Karna, in return, sundered his bow and cut down his standard. The sons of Draupadi desiring to rescue their brother, rushed towards him.

9. Soon with their arrowy showers they made the son of Karna disappear from the view. Thereupon car-warriors headed by the son of Drona charged them, removing the shower of their arrows.

10. O monarch, these warriors (headed by Drona's son) speedily covered over the mighty car-warriors namely the sons of Draupadi, with arrows of various description like clouds pouring their contents on a mountain.

11. Prompted by their affection for their sons, the Pandavas quickly encountered them (assailants), being followed by the Panchalas, Kaikayas, Matsyas and Srinjayas, with their arms uplifted.

12. Then commenced a fierce and sanguinary and hair-stirring engagement between your army and the army of the sons of Pandu like that between the celestials and the Danavas.

13. Thus the heroes among the Kuru and the Pandava hosts, wrought up with wrath,

fought with one another looking furiously at one another and nourishing (deadly) hatred for one another.

14. The bodies of those warriors of immeasurable prowess in consequence of their being inspired with wrath, appeared like those of the feathered chief (Garuda) and of the mighty serpents fighting in the skies.

15. The scene of action with Bhima, Karna, Kripa, Drona and Drona's son and Parshata and Satyaki, appeared effulgent like the all-destructive sun that rises (at the time of the universal annihilation).

16. Then there ensued a dreadful battle, like that between the celestials and the Danavas, in which mighty warriors engaged with mighty antagonists smote down one another.

17. Thereafter the host of Yudhishtira, setting up a noise loud as that of the (agitated) ocean, fell to slaughter your host, of which the mighty car-warriors have fled.

18. Then seeing the (Kaurava) host thoroughly shattered and excessively mutilated by the enemy, Drona exclaimed - 'You need not fly, O heroes.'

19. Thereafter that hero owning chestnut steeds, inflamed with rage, like an elephant bearing four tusks, penetrated into the Pandava ranks and rushed at Yudhishtira.

20. Thereupon Yudhishtira pierced him with shafts, keen-pointed and furnished with feathers of the Kanka bird, Drona also cutting his bow in two charged him with great impetus.

21. Thereat the protectors of Yudhishtira's car-wheels namely Kumara, the glory of the Panchala races, resisted the rushing Drona, like the beach opposing the swelling sea.

22. When Drona the foremost of the regenerated ones was seen to be held in check by Kumara, there were heard sounds of car-cries and exclamations of 'Excellent, excellent etc.

23. Then in that battle, fierce Kumara, wrought up with ire, pierced, with a shaft, Drona on the chest; and then repeatedly uttered roars like those of the lion.

24. Then that highly puissant and indefatigable Kumara of great lightness of hands, having held Drona at bay in that battle, pierced him with thousands of shafts.

25. Thereafter the foremost of the twice-born one (Drona) slew Kumara that protector of Yudhishtira's car-wheels who was brave, of illustrious vows and well-versed in the use of weapons and *mantras*.

26. Then that foremost of the regenerate ones, the son of the Bharadvaja, became the protector of your army, having penetrated into the centre of the Pandava host and coursing on all directions.

27-28. Piercing Sikhandin with twelve arrows, Uttamaujas with twenty, Nakula with five and Sahadeva with seven. Yudhishtira with twelve and the sons of Draupadi each with three, Satyaki with five and the ruler of the Matsyas with ten arrows.

29. And rushing at the foremost warriors of the Pandavas in due order, he (Drona) agitated the warlike host in that battle. Then desirous of capturing the son of Kunti namely Yudhishtira, he (Drona) charged him.

30. Thereupon, O monarch, Yugandhara opposed the mighty car-warrior, the son of Bharadvaja, who was inflamed with rage like the ocean swelling with the tempest.

31. But Drona, having pierced Yudhishtira with close-jointed shafts, overthrew Yugandhara from his niche in the car with a broad-headed arrow.

32-33. Thereupon Virata and Drupada, Kekaya and Satyaki and Shini and Vyaghradatta, the prince of the Panchalas and Sinhasena endued with prowess. These and many other warriors, desirous of rescuing Yudhishtira, impeded Drona's path by scattering innumerable arrows.

34. Vyaghradatta, the prince of the Panchalas, pierced Drona with fifty whetted arrows; thereupon, O monarch, the Pandava host uttered a loud shout.

35. Sinhasena also having quickly pierced the mighty car-warrior Drona, suddenly, out of delight, broke out into a laugh, inspiring terror into the hearts of the mighty car-warriors.

36. Thereupon expanding his eyes and twanging his bow-string and making a loud sound by striking his arms with his palms, Drona rushed upon him (Sinhasena).

37. Then Drona of great prowess putting forth his energy, severed the head of Sinhasena decked with ear-rings as also that of Vyaghradatta, with a pair of broad-headed shafts.

38. Then with the shower of his arrows having crushed the mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host, he stood near the chariot of Yudhishtira like the all-destroying Death himself.

39. When Drona of regulated vows reached the vicinity of Yudhishtira, O monarch, loud cries of 'The king is slain' were uttered by the warriors of Yudhishtira's army.

40. Then the soldiers, beholding the prowess of Drona said, 'Today the royal son of Dhritarashtra will attain the fruition of his desire.'

41. This very moment Drona, having captured in battle the son of Pandu, will, being transported with joy, surely return to us and to the son of Dhritarashtra.

42. When your soldiers had been thus conversing, the mighty car-warrior, the son of Kunti (Arjuna) rushed there with impetuosity, resounding the welkin with the rattle of his car and

43. Creating, by the carnage he caused, a river, of which the water consisted of blood and the eddies of cars; which was stagnant with bones and corpses of brave warriors and which conveyed creatures to the regions of the departed.

44. Having crossed that river having the myriad shafts for its forth and abounding in fishes consisting of lances the son of Pandu came there crushing the Kurus with his speed.

46. Thereafter the diadem-decked Arjuna suddenly charged Drona's division, covering it with net-work of mighty arrows and stupefying therewith the warriors that followed Drona. Nobody was able to perceive any interval between the swift placing of the arrows on the

bow-string and their discharge by the well-renowned son of Kunti.

47. Neither the cardinal quarters, not the welkin, nor the conclave dome, nor the earth, could be seen any longer, O monarch; everything then appeared to be a continuous mass of arrows.

48. Then when the wielder of the Gandiva had caused a 'palpable darkness' in the field of the battle with his shafts, nothing, O monarch, could be distinguished.

49. At the setting of the sun at that moment, and at the enveloping of the earth with dusk, neither foe nor friend could be distinguished any longer.

50. Thereupon Drona and Duryodhana and others began to withdraw their forces. Considering his enemies to be inspired with terror and unwilling to carry on the fight.

51-53. Vibhatsu also slowly withdrew his own divisions; then the Pandus and the Srinjayas and the Panchalas highly delighted began to praise the son of Pritha (Arjuna), with agreeable words, like the Rishis praising the Sun. Thus having vanquished his foes Dhananjaya, filled with rapture and accompanied by Keshava, retired to his own camp, bringing up the rear of his whole army.

54. Seated in the terrace of his excellent chariot adorned with emeralds and rubies and diamonds of the first water and with the costliest specimens of gold, silver, corals and crystal, the son of Pandu shone like the moon in the heavens adorned with the stars.

## CHAPTER 17

### (SAMSHAPATAKA-VADHA PARVA)

#### The departure of Dhananjaya

##### Sanjaya said

1. O lord of men, the troops having retired to their camps, duly took up their quarters, according to the divisions and ranks to which they belonged.

2. Having withdrawn his soldiers, Drona, with a dejected heart, seeing Duryodhana, spoke these words in shame.

3. 'I have told you before, that when Dhananjaya stays by the side of Yudhishtira,

even the celestials will not be able to capture the latter in battle.

4. You all assaulted Partha in battle, but he defeated all of you; do not doubt my words; Krishna and the son of Pandu are incapable of being vanquished in battle.

5. If however by any means Arjuna owning white steeds can be taken away from the side of Yudhishtira, then, O king, even today may Yudhishtira be brought under your sway.

6. Let some one challenging him (Arjuna) in battle take him to another part of the field. The son of Kunti will not return without having vanquished him.

7. O monarch, during that interval when Yudhishtira will be deprived of the help of Arjuna, I, penetrating through the Pandava hosts, will capture the very virtuous king, even before the very eyes of Dhrishtadyumna.

8. Thus, O monarch, I will today with certitude bring under your control Yudhishtira, the son of Dharma, with all his followers.

9-10. If, in battle, that son of Pandu stays only for one moment (before me) then I will bring him (a captive) from the field; surely that achievement will be more advantage than victory over the hostile army.'

##### Sanjaya said

11. Thereat, having listened to these words of Drona, the ruler of the Trigarttas united with his brothers, spoke these words, O monarch.

12. 'O monarch, we have been very often humiliated by the wielder of the Gandiva bow; O foremost of the Bharatas, though we have done him no harm yet he bears malice against us.

13. We, remembering those various occasions of humiliation, are ever consumed with the fire of wrath and at night can never enjoy sleep.

14. By good fortune it is that Arjuna bearing arms, will become the object of our sight; so we will achieve that feat which our hearts long to accomplish.

15. This act will be agreeable to you and shall redound to our renown. Drawing him out of the field of battle we shall slay him.

16. Today the earth will be relieved of the burden of Arjuna or that of the Trigarttas. Truly we resolve this before you and this our resolution will never be falsified?

17-18. Satyaratha, Satyavarman, Satyavrata, Satyashu and Satyakarman, O Bharata, having spoken in the same manner. Those five brothers, with their ten thousand cars, retired, O monarch, having taken that oath on the field of battle.

19-20. The Malavas and the Tundikeras, with thirty thousand cars and that foremost of men Susharman of the Trigartta race, the ruler of Prasthala together with the Mavelakas the Lalithyas and the Madrakas and with ten thousand cars and accompanied by his brothers.

21. And with another ten thousand excellent cars come from various kingdoms, came forward to take the oath.

22. Then bringing fire, and every one having separately kindled one for himself, they took up mats of *kusa grass* and excellent mail-coats.

23. Then having donned their armours and having smeared themselves with clarified butter and wearing those mattresses of *kusa grass* and with their bow strings as their belts, those heroes, who had given away hundreds and thousands as Dakshina.

24. Who had accomplished many sacrifices, who had been blessed with sons, who deserved regions of bliss hereinafter, who had done what ought to be done, who were ready to lay down their bodies, who had devoted their souls to the acquirement of fame and victory.

25. Who were intent speedily on going to the regions, by being killed in a fair fight, that are attained by means of sacrifices attended with profuse Dakshinas, and by means also of many such other rites, the foremost of which are Brahmacharya and the study of the Vedas.

27. Those heroes having gratified the Brahmanas by giving them golden coin separately and also kine and garments and having addressed one another in loving words, and having kindled the fire, took that oath in the field of battle; then in the presence of that fire

they took that oath with a great firmness of resolution.

28. Having formed that firm resolution for the death of Dhananjaya they said these words aloud in the hearing of all present.

29-34. Those regions that are for the liars, those that are for the Brahminicides, those that are for the drunkards, those that are for a person who has illicit intercourse with the wife of his preceptor. Those that are for him who robs a Brahmana of his property or for him who enjoys the king's allowance (without fulfilling the conditions thereof) or for him who forsakes one seeking shelter in him or for him who slays one asking for favours. Those regions that are for the incendiary, or for the slayer of the kine, or for him that does injury to others or for him that nourishes ill-will against the Brahmanas. Those regions that are for him who, out of foolishness, does not hold sexual intercourse with his wife during her season, those also that are for men who indulge in sexual intercourse on the day they have to perform a *Shraddha*, those that are for people who injure their own soul; those that are for men who appropriate things deposited with them out of trust or for those who destroy knowledge or for those who fight with the eunuchs or for those that follow the mean; those regions that are for the atheists or those that are for people who abandon the Fires and their own mother or those that are for the sinful,- those regions shall be ours.

35. If we return from the field of battle without having slain Dhananjaya or if afflicted by him we, out of terror, turn away our faces from the field.

36. If, on the other hand, we can accomplish in battle that feat difficult of achieving, then, for certain, today we shall attain to the most desirable regions.

37. O monarch, having thus spoken, they then proceeded to the fight summoning Arjuna to the southern part of the field.

38. That foremost of men, that conqueror of hostile fortresses, namely the son of Pritha, being summoned by them, said these words without delay to the very virtuous king Yudhishtira.

39. 'Challenged, I will never turn back. This is my firm resolution. These Samshaptakas (those who are sworn to die or to conquer) O king, are calling me to meet them in battle.

40. This Susarman with his brothers is summoning me to battle. It behoves you to permit me to slay him and his followers.

41. O foremost of men, I cannot brook this challenge; I do tell you truly, know these hostile heroes to be already slain in battle.

**Yudhishtira said**

42. O child, you are perfectly aware of what Drona is intent on doing. Act in such a manner so that his intention may be frustrated.

43. Drona is endued with prowess and he is heroic, accomplished in the use of weapons, and indifatigable (in battle). O mighty car-warrior, even he has resolved to bring about my capture.

44. This Satyajit, O monarch, will protect you in battle today; and so long as the prince of the Panchalas lives, the preceptor will not attain the fruition of his desires.

45. If, on the other hand, O master, this foremost of men, Satyajit, be slain in battle, then you shall not stay in the field even if surrounded by all (our warriors).

**Sanjaya said**

46. Then king Yudhishtira gave Phalguna the permission he sought; and embraced him and cast affectionate glances on him and pronounced numerous benedictions on him.

47. Having made these arrangement, the puissant son of Pritha went to meet the Trigarttas, like a hungry lion falling upon a herd of deer, for assuaging its hunger.

48. Thereafter the army of Duryodhana highly delighted at the absence of Arjuna from Yudhishtira's side, became infuriated at the thought of the capture of the virtuous monarch.

49. Thereupon both armies clashed against each other with great vehemence, like the conflux of the rivers Ganga and Sarayu in the rainy season, when they are both swollen with water.

## CHAPTER 18

### (SAMSHAPTA-KA-VADHA PARVA)- Continued

#### The slaughter of Sudhaman

**Sanjaya said**

1. Then, O monarch, the Samshaptakas, filled with joy, stood on the level plain, having, with their chariots, formed an array figuring the moon.

2. O Sire, seeing the diadem-decked Arjuna rush at them, those foremost of men, highly delighted, gave out deafening roars.

3. Those roars filled the subsidiary and the cardinal quarters and also the conclave dome. There were produced no reverberations owing to the field being covered over with men.

4. Then Dhananjaya, ascertaining them to be excessively delighted, said these words to Krishna, smiling the while.

5. Behold, you who have Devaki for your mother, these Trigartta brothers, who are about to fall in battle today, are transported with joy at the time when they really ought to weep.

6. Or surely, this is the time for joy for the Trigarttas, as they shall, ere long, attain to those excellent regions which cannot be obtained by the cowards.

7. Having thus spoken to the mighty-armed Hrishikesha, Arjuna encountered in battle the ranks of the Trigartta soldiers disposed of in battle-array.

8. Thereafter taken up his conch known as Devadatta of the effulgence of gold, he blew it with great force, filling the points of the compass with the blare.

9. Terrified at that blare, the car-host of the Samshaptakas stood motionless in the field of battle as if turned into adamant.

10. All their steeds stood with their eyes expanded and their ears, necks and lips paralysed and their legs motionless; and they discharged urine and vomited blood.

11. However, regaining consciousness and rallying their forces, the Samshaptakas

discharged simultaneously, at the son of Pandu, shafts furnished with the feathers of the *Kanka* bird.

12. Thereupon Arjuna, capable of manifesting with lightness his prowess in battle, severed those thousand arrows before they could reach him, with fifteen swift-coursing shafts of his.

13. Thereat they pierced Arjuna with ten whetted shafts separately; and the son of Pritha also pierced them separately with three shafts each.

14. Then, O monarch, each of them separately pierced the son of Pritha with five shafts; and the puissant Partha in return pierced them each with a couple of arrows.

15. Wrought up with ire, they once again quickly filled Arjuna and Keshava with arrows, like the rains filling up a lake.

16. Then those thousands of arrows fell upon Arjuna like hosts of bees falling, in a forest, on trees decked with blossoms.

17. Thereafter Subahu deeply stuck on the diadem of Savyasachi (Arjuna) thirty shafts made of the hardest adamant.

18. Having those straight-going shafts furnished with wings of gold stuck on his diadem, Arjuna, as if adorned with ornaments of gold, shone like the rising Sun.

19. Then in that battle the son of Pandu, with a broad-headed arrow cut-off the finger-guard of Subahu and also covered him over with arrowy showers.

20. Thereafter Susarman, Suratha, Sudhaman and Subahu, pierced the diadem decked Arjuna with ten arrows each.

21. Thereat, that one bearing the foremost of the monkeys as a device on his banner, pierced them all with several arrows in return and he cut down their golden flag-staffs with broad-headed shafts.

22. Having severed the bow of Sudhaman, Arjuna slew his horses with his shafts. Then Arjuna severed from the trunk, the head of the former furnished with a head-gear.

23. At the fall of that brave warrior, his followers, were inspired with terror; and seized

with panic they ran to where the army of Duryodhana was.

24. Then the son of Vasava, (Arjuna) wrought up with rage, began to destroy that mighty host with his continuous network of arrows, like the rays of the sun destroying the darkness (of night).

25. When that host was shattered and scattered in all directions and when Savyasachin was inflamed with wrath, panic seized the Trigarttas.

26. Then they, slaughtered with the close joined shafts of Partha, were over-whelmed with swoons, in that field, like a terrified herd of deer.

27. Thereupon, excited with rage, the sovereign of the Trigarttas addressing those mighty car-warriors said, 'Fly not, you heroes, it behoves you not to be seized with panic.

28. Having taken dreadful oaths before the eyes of the entire troops, what shall you say to the leaders of Duryodhana's army if now you go back to them?

29. Will we not be the objects of derision in this world, for this (cowardly) act of ours in battle? United together, do you again repair to your own divisions?'

30. Thus being spoken to, O monarch, they uttered continuous roars and those heroes blew their conchs imparting delight to one another.

31. Thereafter that Samshaptaka host once more rallied themselves; and with the Narayana cow-herds, they were determined even to encounter Death himself.

## CHAPTER 19

### (SAMSHAPTAKA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The fight of Arjuna

#### Sanjaya said

1. Beholding the host of the Samshaptakas once more return to battle, Arjuna thus addressed the high-souled son of Vasudeva.

2. 'O Hrishikesha urge my steeds against this host of the Samshaptakas. I think they will

not give up the battle so long life will be extant in them.

3. Behold, today, the terrible prowess of my two arms as also that of my bow. This day I will slay them, like Rudra slaying creatures (at the time of the universal annihilation).'

4. Thereupon Krishna smiling and greeting the invincible Arjuna with auspicious words, pushed in the chariot where-so-ever the latter desired it to go.

5. That chariot, borne in that battle by white steeds, appeared excessively effulgent, like a celestial car borne through the firmament.

6. O monarch, like the chariot of Shakra in the battle between the gods and the Asuras in the days of yore, that car moved in circular, backward and forward motions.

7. Then the Narayana soldiers inflamed with rage and holding various weapons in their hands, encompassing Dhananjaya, covered him with showers of arrows.

8. O foremost of the Bharata, in a moment they, in that battle, made the son of Kunti namely Dhananjaya, together with Krishna, disappear from the sight.

9. Wrought up with wrath, Phalguna, doubling his energy in that battle, rubbed his bow Gandiva and quickly grasped it.

10. Causing a frown indicative of wrath to gather on his brow, the son of Pandu charged his mighty conch called *Devadatta* with his breath.

11. Thereafter Arjuna discharged the weapon called *Tashtra* that is capable of slaying large divisions of the enemy. Thereupon thousands of separate forms (of Arjuna and Vasudeva) started into existence there.

12. Confounded by the various images of Arjuna's self, they fell to slay one another each considering the other to be Arjuna himself.

13. 'This is Arjuna, this is Govinda, these two are the son of Pandu and the descendant of Yadu', uttering these exclamations, and stupefied, they slew each other in that fight.

14. Confounded by virtue of that weapon, they courted destruction through one another's

agency. In that battle those warriors shone like flowering *Kinshuka* trees.

15. Then that weapon, consuming the thousands of shafts discharged by the enemy, conveyed those heroes to the regions of Death.

16. Thereafter Vibhatsu, with a smile, crushed with his arrows the war-like Lalithyas, the Malavas, the Mavelakas and the Trigarttas.

17. Those Kshatriyas, doomed by fate to die, being smitten by the heroic son of Pritha, discharged at him a net-work of diverse arrows.

18. Thereupon, neither Arjuna, nor his car, nor Keshava was to be seen on the field, being covered over by that terrible arrowy showers.

19. Then finding their arrows strike the aim, they exclaimed to one another saying 'Krishna and Arjuna are both slain'; and out of delight they waived their garments in the air.

20. Then those heroes sounded, by thousands, drums and *Mridangas* and conchs; and, O sire, they also gave forth war-cries resembling the roars of lions.

21. Then Krishna greatly perspiring, addressed Arjuna covered with sweat, saying 'Where are you, O son of Pritha, I do not see you, do you live, O slayer of your foes.'

22. Hearing those words of his (Krishna's), Dhananjaya quickly dispelled that arrowy shower poured by the enemy, by means of the *Vayabha* weapon.

23. Then the almighty Vayu blew away hosts of the Samshaptakas consisting of steeds elephants, chariots and weapons like heaps of dry leafs.

24. Borne away by the god Vayu, they appeared highly beautiful like flights of birds, O sire, flying up from trees at the hour of dawn.

25. Thus causing great anxiety in them, Dhananjaya with great lightness of hands slew, with keen pointed shafts, hundreds and thousands of the enemy.

26. He struck their heads and arms hearing weapons, with broad-headed shafts; and with his arrows he cut down on the ground their thighs resembling the trunks of elephants.

27. Some had their backs lacerated, some were deprived of their legs, some were hit on



the arms, backs and eyes; thus Dhananjaya made his enemies deprived of their various limbs.

28. Shattering into pieces with his arrows, chariots resembling a real castle and equipped according to rule, he deprived them of their steeds, warriors and elephants.

29. At places several crowds of chariots, having their flag-staffs severed, looked like forests of palmyra trees deprived of their heads.

30. Elephants furnished with excellent weapons, banners, hooks and standards fell down like woody mountains rent asunder by the thunder-bolt of Indra.

31. Smitten with the arrows of Partha, steeds, graced with tails like those of the yak, protected with coats of mail and with their entrails, eyes and vitals dragged out, rolled on the ground along with their riders.

32. Dropping from their grasps the swords that had served the purposes of their nails, having their armours torn and the joints of their limbs smashed, foot soldiers, with their vital parts cut open, helplessly laid themselves down (on the field) being slain (by Partha).

33. The field of battle assumed an awful aspect in consequence of those warriors slain or in course of being slaughtered fallen and falling, wheeling round or staying motionless.

34. The cloud of dust that had arisen was now cleared away by means of the shower of blood. The ground became slipper and was strewn with numerous headless trunks.

35. Then the chariot of Vibhatsu shone fierce and dreadful in that battle, like the chariot of Rudra himself when at the end of a Yuga he slays all creatures.

36. Thus being slaughtered by the son of Pritha, those warriors, with their steeds, cars and elephants in distress and their ranks thinned, rushed at him and thus were made the guests of Shakra (i.e. were transported to the regions of Indra).

37. O foremost of the Bharatas, that field of battle then strewn with many a slain car-warrior of renown, shone like the region of Death swarming with the spirits of the departed.

38. During this period when Savyasachin was furiously engaged (with the Samshaptakas) Drona, at the head of his divisions formed in battle-array, charged Yudhishtira.

39. Many a warrior, arranged in order of battle and accomplished in striking quickly formed Drona's support, out of a desire for capturing Yudhishtira. Thereupon a dreadful fight ensued.

## CHAPTER 20

### (SAMSHAPATAKA-VADHA PARVA)

#### Continued

#### The fierce fight

#### Sanjaya said

1-3. O monarch, the mighty car-warrior, the son of Bharadvaja, having passed the night, thus addressed Suyodhana saying - 'I am yours.' Having made arrangements for Partha's encounter with the host of the Samshaptaka, (you have done well). When the son of Pritha had gone out to slay the Samshaptaka. Drona, having formed his soldiers in battle-array, charged the mighty host of the Pandavas, O foremost of the Bharatas, with the desire of capturing the very virtuous king Yudhishtira.

4. Beholding the son of Bharadvaja, form his forces in an array figuring the appearance of *Suparna*, Yudhishtira disposed his forces in counter-array in the shape of a semi-circle.

5. The mighty car-warrior, the son of Bharadvaja himself formed the mouth of the *Suparna*; and king Duryodhana along with his uterine brothers and his followers formed its head.

6-8. Kritavarman and the effulgent Gautama formed its two eyes; Bhutasharman, Kshemasharman, the puissant Karakasha, the Kalingas, the Singhalas, the Easterners, the Sudras, the Ahiras, the Kambojas, as also the Hansapathas. The Surasenas, the Madras, the Kekayas, the Dronas, with hundreds and thousands of elephants, steeds chariots and foot-soldiers, formed its neck.

9. Bhurisrava, Shalya and Somadatta as also Vahluka, these heroes surrounded by a Akshauhini of soldiers stationed themselves in the right flank.

10. Vinda and Anuvinda of the kingdom of Avanti and Sudakshina, the ruler of the Kambojas, took up their positions in the left flank placing themselves in front of the division of Drona's son.

11. The Kalingas, the Ambasthas, the Magadhas, the Paundras, the Madrakas, the Gandharas, the Sakunas, the Easterners, the highlanders and the Vasatis were stationed in the back of that Suparna.

12. In the tail was stationed Karna the son of Vikartana, supported by his sons, relatives and friends and surrounded by a large force recruited from various regions.

13. Jayadratha, Bhimaratha, Sampati, the Rishabha, the Jaya, Bhuminjaya, Vrishakratha and the ruler of the Nishadhas of great prowess. O monarch, these, surrounded by mighty hosts, accomplished in fighting and keeping the region of Brahma before their view, stationed their selves in the bosom of that array.

14. That array formed by Drona and composed of foot-soldiers, horses, chariots and elephants, appeared to dance like the ocean lashed into fury by the tempest.

15. From the wings and flanks of that array, warriors, desirous of battle, began to rush out like clouds surcharged with thunder and lightning, rushing (in the welkin) from all direction of the compass during the season of summer.

16. In the heart of that array, the ruler of the Pragjyotisas, mounted on an elephant equipped according to rule, O monarch, shone like the sun at the time of its rising.

17. O monarch, adorned with garlands of flowers and having a white umbrella held over his head, he shone like the moon in all her digits, rising in conjunction with the constellation Krittika.

18. His elephant blinded with shedding ichor, appeared like a mass of black antimony and like a mighty mountain washed by the downpour of rain from thick clouds.

19. He was also surrounded by many war-like sovereign of mountain lands, armed with

various weapons; and he resembled Shakra himself encompassed by the celestials.

20-21. Beholding that superhuman array invincible in battle by the enemies, king Yudhishtira spoke these words to the son of Prishata, "O mighty warrior, O you who own steeds white as the pigeons, do you adopt such measures so that I may not this day be subjugated by the Brahmana (Drona)."

#### **Dhrishtadyumna said**

22. O you of chaste vows, you shall never be subjugating by Drona however much he may strive. Today I myself will resist Drona and all his followers.

23. O descendant of Kuru's race, it behoves you not to feel anxious so long as I am alive. Drona shall never be able to vanquish me in battle.

#### **Sanjaya said**

24. Having thus spoken, the highly puissant son of Drupada the owner of pigeon-white steeds, scattering arrows (on all direction) himself rushed at Drona.

25. Beholding evil omen in the person of Dhrishtadyumna stationed before him, for a while Drona became all but cheerful.

26. Seeing this, your son Durmukha that grinder of foes, desirous of doing an act agreeable to Drona, set himself to oppose Dhrishtadyumna.

27. Then, O Bharata, ensued a terrible and dreadful battle between the war-like son of Prishata and the heroic Durmukha.

28. The son of Prishata, speedily covering Durmukha with his net-work of arrows, checked the career of the son of Bharadvaja with a thick shower of shafts.

29. Seeing Drona covered, your son quickly came to his help and confounded the son of Prishata, with a downpour of arrows of various appearance.

30. When the prince of the Panchalas and the foremost of the Kurus were thus engaged in battle, Drona crushed, with his arrows, diverse divisions of Yudhishtira's army.

31. Just as masses of clouds are torn into pieces by the vehemence of the wind, so the army belonging to the son of Pritha was shattered at many places.

32. For a short while only, O monarch, that engagement was agreeable to look at; after which it became like the battle of demented persons in which no consideration was made in favour of any one.

33. The combatants were no longer able to distinguish between their own men and their enemies; and the battle raged, the warriors being guided by conjecture and watch-words.

34. On the gems embossed on their head-gears, on their necklaces ornaments and armours, rays of light, like the rays of the sun, were seen to be reflected.

35. Then in that battle, the car, the elephants and the horses, adorned with fluttering pennons looked like masses of cloud having rows of cranes ranging beneath them.

36. Men slew men and mettled steeds slew other steeds and car-warriors slew car-warriors and mighty elephants slew other elephant.

37. And in a moment a dreadful battle raged between elephants bearing raised standards and their powerful rivals rushing at them.

38. And in consequence of those prodigious creatures rushing against one another and tearing another with their tusks, fire and smoke were engendered there by such friction of bodies and clashing of tusks.

39. Deprived of the flag-staffs on their backs, those elephants, owing to the fire enkindled by the friction of their tusks, appeared like masses of clouds charged with lighting covering the skies.

40. The earth, over-spread with dragging (their rivals) and falling and roaring elephants, appeared like the autumnal clouds.

41. There arose a roar, emitted by those elephants when they were being slaughtered by showers of shafts and spears, that resembled the rumbling of clouds during a cyclone.

42. Some of those huge elephants being struck with arrows and some with lances, were

inspired with panic and others began to roar aloud.

43. Some elephants being struck by others with their tusks gave out fierce roars of distress that resembled the rumbling of all-destructive clouds (at the end of a Yuga).

44. Some elephants turned back by powerful rivals, being urged on by the strokes of the hooks, again returned to the charge, crushing the hostile ranks (in their march).

45. Elephant-drivers assaulted other elephant-drivers with shafts and lances; and they fell down on the ground from their respective elephants and lost hold of their weapons and hooks.

46. Many elephants, deprived of the riders on their backs, coursed wildly hither and thither resembling clouds torn from prodigious masses and they fell down, encountering one another.

47. Bearing on their backs slain and fallen warriors or those whose weapons had fallen off their grasps, huge elephant roamed in all direction as if deprived of their mates.

48. Then in that carnage, elephants fell down uttering distressful roars, being pierced or in the act of being pierced with lances, swords and battle axes.

49. Struck with the falling carcasses of elephants huge like large mountains, the earth suddenly quaked and emitted loud sound.

50. The ground, strewn with mangled elephants and their drivers and with broken standards appeared as if it were covered over with hills.

51. In that battle elephant-drivers riding on their respective beasts and their beasts torn with broad-headed shafts by car-warriors of might, fell scattering their lances and hooks on all sides.

52. Other elephants, smitten with long-shafts, gave forth crane-like cries and ran on all sides, crushing friends and foes alike.

53. Strewn with carcasses and corpses of elephants, horses, car-warriors and heroes, the field, O monarch, became miry with flesh and blood. Huge cars with wheels and without

wheels and having their riders on, were thrown up by elephants, being smashed with the point of their tusks.

54. A number of elephants threw the chariots of huge size either with or without wheels with charioteers and warriors rode on them by lifting upon the tusk and tossed through the trunk. All those were thus, splitted into pieces.

55. Cars without riders, steeds deprived of their riders and elephants having their drivers slain, ran in all directions being over-whelmed with panic.

56. In that battle, father slew his son and son slew his father; thus raged the fierce fight in which nothing could be distinguished.

57. In that gory mire men sank ankle-deep; and they looked like mighty trees the lower portion of which were enveloped in a forest conflagration.

58. Their garments and coats of mail and umbrellas and standards being steeped in blood, everything in that battle appeared to be crimson.

59. Large bodies of fallen steeds and car-warriors and men were again hacked into pieces by rolling car-wheels.

60. That sea of troops appeared vested with a terrible beauty, having elephants for its strong currents, slain warriors for its (floating) moss and (shattered) cars for its fearful eddies.

61. Warriors desirous of the wealth of victory launching into that sea on board the vessels consisting of their respective vehicles, produced stupefaction in their enemies instead of themselves sinking down to the bottom.

62. When all the warriors having proper individual devices (of heraldry) were covered over with showers of arrows, none among them lost heart, though every body was deprived of his particular badge.

63. When that fierce and panic inspiring battle was thus raging, Drona confounding the senses of his enemies, at last rushed at Yudhishtira.

## CHAPTER 21

### (SAMSHAPATAKA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The fight of Drona

Sanjaya said

1. Seeing Yudhishtira approach him, Drona received him with a continuous downpour of arrows, like one undaunted.

2. Thereupon a very great confusion arose in the army of Yudhishtira which resembled that which prevails in a herd of elephants when the leader is attacked by a lion.

3. Then the heroic Satyajit of prowess invincible, beholding Drona the preceptor desirous of capturing Yudhishtira, rushed at him with fury.

4. Then the war-like Acharya and the prince of the Panchalas fought with one another, agitating the armies hostile to each, like Indra and the son of Virochana.

5. Then the mighty warrior Satyajit of prowess invincible, displaying excellent weapons, pierced Drona with a keen-pointed shaft.

6. Thereafter he discharged at the charioteers of Drona, five arrows deadly as the venom of snakes and each resembling Death himself. (Struck by those arrows) the charioteer lost all consciousness.

7. Then he suddenly pierced Drona's horses with ten swift-going-arrows. Thereafter wrought up with ire, he pierced the two Parshni-drivers of Drona with ten shafts each.

8. Then at the head of his division he wheeled in circular motion riding on his chariot. Then filled with rage he cut down the flag-staff of Drona, the grinder of foes.

9. Then that crusher of foes, Drona, seeing these feats of his enemy in battle, thought in his mind that his (foe's) hour was come.

10. Then having severed the bow of his enemy Satyajit along with arrows placed on it, the preceptor Drona pierced him with ten whetted shafts capable of penetrating to the very vitals.

11. Thereupon that puissant hero (Satyajit), O monarch, having speedily grasped another bow, struck Drona with thirty arrows furnished with *Kanka*-feathers.

12. When the great warrior Vrika saw Satyajit badly gripped within the ambit of arrows shot by Dronacharya, he shot several hundred acute arrows and injured severally Dronacharya.

13. Beholding Drona thus resisted in that battle by Satyajit, O monarch, the Pandavas shouted forth and waived their garments.

14. Inflamed with wrath, the mighty Vrika pierced Drona on the chest with sixty shafts. O king, that feat appeared, indeed, marvellous.

15. Then that mighty car-warrior Drona endued with great speed, being completely covered by an arrowy downpour, put forth all his energy causing his eyes to expand with rage.

16. Thereafter Drona, having cut asunder the bows of Satyajit and Vrika, killed the latter along with his driver and horses, with six shafts.

17. Thereafter Satyajit having taken up a bow still tougher, pierced Drona, along with his steeds, drivers and standard, with several shafts.

18. Humiliated in battle by the prince of the Pandavas, Drona was no longer able to brook it; then for the destruction of his enemy, he speedily shot shafts at him.

19. Then pouring arrows by thousands, Drona covered the steeds, the standards, the handle of the bow and the two *Parshni* drivers of his enemy.

20. In spite of his bows being thus repeatedly cut-off, the prince of the Panchalas conversant with the knowledge of excellent weapons, continued to fight with him of the chestnut steeds (Drona).

21. Then beholding Satyajit swell with energy in that battle, Drona with a half-moon shaped arrow, severed the head of that one of illustrious soul.

22. When that mighty car-warrior the leader of the Panchalas was slain, Yudhishtira being afraid of Drona, fled away, being borne by fleet steeds.

23. The Panchalas, the Kekayas, the Matsyas, the Chedikas, the Karuasas and the Koshalas, desirous of rescuing Yudhishtira, rushed at Drona with delight.

24. Thereupon, the preceptor, the crusher of large bodies of foes, desirous of capturing Yudhishtira, consumed those troops like fire consuming heaps of cotton.

25. Then Shatanika the younger brother of the king of the Matsyas, seeing Drona repeatedly consume the divisions, rushed at him.

26. Then deeply piercing Drona and his charioteer and steeds, with six shafts effulgent like the rays of the sun and polished by the forgers, Shatanika uttered loud shouts.

27. Engaged in a heartless act and attempting to accomplish a difficult one, he covered the mighty car-warrior the son of Bharadvaja, with an arrowy down-pour.

28. Then Drona, with a shaft like a razor speedily severed from his trunk, the head graced with ear-rings, of Shatanika thus roaring at him. Thereat all the Matsyas took to their heels.

29. Having vanquished the Matsyas, the son of Bharadvaja obtained victory over the Chedis, the Karusas, the Kekayas, the Panchalas, the Srinjayas and the Pandus.

30. Beholding that one of the golden car, endued with bravery, excited with wrath, consume their divisions like fire burning down a forest, the Srinjayas trembled.

31. The twang of the bowstring of that one of great activity was heard in all directions when he stretched his bow to slay his enemies.

32. Fierce arrows, discharged by that one endued with great lightness of hands, crushed elephants and steeds and foot-soldiers, car-warriors and warriors riding on elephants.

33. As at the expiration of the winter, mighty masses of thundering rain-clouds assisted by violent winds, pour down showers of rain, so Drona pouring showers of arrows, struck terror into the hearts of his opponents.

34. That puissant hero, that mighty warrior, that giver of assurances of safety to his friends,

traversed in all directions, agitating the host of the enemy.

35. The bow of golden effulgence of Drona of immeasurable prowess was seen in all directions like flashes of lightning illuminating the clouds.

36. As he careered with speed in that battle, the device of an altar decorating his banner, O Bharata, appeared like the crest of the Himalayas.

37. Drona caused a dreadful carnage among the host of the Pandavas, like that which Vishnu the revered of all the celestials and the Asuras, caused among the host of the latter.

38-45. That hero of truthful speech endowed with great wisdom and strength, endued with invincible prowess, that Drona of generous heart, created a river on the field of battle, that was dreadful and capable of enhancing the fear of the cowards, Armours constituted its bellows and standards its whirlpools; and it carried away a large number of mortals as it flowed. Elephants and horses formed its great alligators and swords were its fishes and it was incapable of being tide over. It was terrible-looking and the bones of heroes formed the pebbles (in its bed) and drums and cymbals its tortoises. Shields and armours constituted its boats and the hair of warriors the moss and weeds that floated over it. Shafts constituted its wave-lets and bows its currents; and it abounded in snakes formed of the arms of warriors. It was of fierce current and carried away the Kurus and the Srinjayas alike. The heads of human beings formed its stones and their thighs its fishes and the maces its rafts; it was covered with froth formed of head-gears and was infested with reptiles formed of the entrails (of animals) of awful appearance; it carried away heroes (to the other world); its mire was constituted by flesh and blood. Elephants were its alligators and standards the trees (on its banks). It drew down in its bottom thousands of Kshatriyas. It was fierce, clogged with corpses and had horse-soldiers for its sharks; and it was extremely difficult of being crossed over; and it flowed to the regions of Death. That river swarmed with hosts of monsters and dogs and jackals. It was

haunted by cannibals of dreadful appearance on all sides.

46. Thereupon seeing that mighty car-warrior Drona consume their hosts like the god of Death himself, the Pandava warriors healed by the sons of Kunti, rushed at him from all sides.

47. Firmly united together, those heroes surrounded Drona on all sides who was burning down everything, like the sun scorching the world with his rays.

48. Then for supporting that heroic warrior, with upraised weapons, your warriors, princes and monarchs, rushed (into the thick of the fight).

49-51. Then Sikhandin pierced Drona with five straight-jointed shafts, Kshatradharma with twenty and Vasudeva with five. Uttamaujas in that battle, pierced him with three shafts, Kshatradeva with five, Satyaki with hundred and Yudhamanyu with eight. Yudhishtira pierced Drona with a dozen shafts and Dhrishtadyumna pierced him with ten the Chekitana with three shafts.

52. Then Drona of never-failing aim and resembling an elephant with rent temples, passing over the car host of the Pandavas felled Dhirasena

53. Then getting near king Kshema, who was fighting fearlessly, Drona pierced him with nine arrows and he fell down dead from his chariot.

54. Penetrating into the heart of the (hostile) host, resisted in all directions, he became the protector of all others and had no need of protecting himself.

55. He then struck Sikhandin with twelve arrows and Uttamaujas with twenty shafts. and with a broad-headed arrow he dispatched Vasudeva to the regions of Death.

56. With eighty shafts he pierced Kshemavarman and with twenty-six he struck Sudakshina. With broad-headed shafts he brought down Kshatradeva from the terrace of his car.

57. Having pierced Yudhamanyu with sixty-four shafts and Satyaki with thirty, that one

owning the golden chariot rushed at Yudhishtira with violence.

58. Then that foremost of kings Yudhishtira speedily fled away from the preceptor being borne by his fleet steeds. Then the prince of the Panchalas charged Drona.

59. Drona struck him along with his horses, charioteer and bow. Then from his car he fell down dead like a luminary dropped from the heaven.

60. Upon the death of that renowned prince of the Panchalas, loud cries of kill Drona, kill Drona were heard there.

61. Then that puissant Drona began to crush the host of the Panchalas, Matsyas, Kekayas, Srinjayas, the Pandavas, all burning with rage.

63. Satyaki, Chekitan, Dhristadyumna and Sikhandin, Vardakshemi, the son of Chitrasena and Senabindu and Suvorcha. These and numerous other rulers of different countries, were all defeated by Drona who was supported by the Kurus.

64. O monarch, your warriors having been crowned with victory in that dreadful battle began to slaughter the Pandavas as they were flying in all directions.

65. O Bharata, the Panchalas, the Kekayas and the Matsyas, thus slaughtered on all sides, like the *Danavas* by Indra, began to quake (with fear).

## CHAPTER 22

### (SAMSHAPTA-KA-VADHA PARVA)- Continued

#### The fight of Drona

##### Dhritarashtra said

1. When in that fierce fight, the son of Bharadvaja had shattered the host of the Pandavas and the Panchalas, did any one else approach him for battle?

2-6. Alas, seeing Drona stationed in battle, like an yawning tiger or an elephant with rent temples prepared to sacrifice his life in light, clad in coat of mail, proficient in all modes of warfare, that illustrious bowman, that foremost of men, that producer of apprehensions in his

enemies, grateful, devoted to truth, always desirous of doing good to Duryodhana, alas seeing him stationed at the head of his forces, did any one meet him with a praiseworthy determination for fight, determination that invests Kshatriyas with renown, that cowards cannot form and that distinguishes the foremost of men? Relate to me, O Sanjaya. Who were those heroic warriors, that encountered the son of Bharadvaja, seeing him stationed at the head of his army?

##### Sanjaya said

7-9. Seeing the Panchalas, the Pandavas, the Matsyas, the Srinjayas, the Chedis and the Kekayas, fly from the field having been broken in their ranks by the shafts of Drona. Seeing them thus routed by those thick showers of swift-falling arrows discharged from the bow of Drona, like frail barks driven adrift by the surging bellows of the mighty main. The Kauravas uttering many loud war-cries and with the sound of many other musical instruments, impeded the fight of the chariots, the elephants and the men (of the hostile host) on all sides.

10. Beholding them (the routed army), king Duryodhana standing in the midst of his own troops and surrounded by his own kinsmen greatly delighted, smilingly said these words to Karna.

##### Duryodhana said

11. Behold, O son of Radha, the ranks of the Panchalas shattered by the shafts of Drona, the resolute bowman, like a herd of wild deer frightened by a lion.

12. Meseems they will never again seek to fight, in as much as they are now broken by Drona like mighty trees broken by the tempest.

13. Afflicted by the gold-winged shafts of the illustrious Drona, they are flying away by diverse paths; and they seem to whirl round and round.

14. Impeded by the Kauravas and by the high-souled Drona, they are huddling together, like a herd of elephants encompassed in a conflagration.

15. Like a tree penetrated by a cluster of bees, they are being pierced by the keen-pointed

arrows of Drona; they are huddling together as they are hastening away from the field of battle.

16. O Karna, there the highly enraged Bhima, forsaken by the Pandavas and the Srinjayas and surrounded by my own warriors, affords great joy to me.

17. With certitude, that fool today beholds the world full of Drona. Surely that son of Pandu has today become hopeless of his life and his kingdom.

**Karna said**

18. Never will this mighty-armed hero abandon fighting so long life will remain in him; nor will this foremost of men brook the car-cries of others.

19. I think also, that the Pandavas, brave, endued with might, learned in the use of weapons and invincible in battle, will never be routed in battle.

20. Remembering the woes inflicted on them by our attempts at poisoning and burning them and by our defeating them at dice, as also bearing in mind the hardships they had to undergo in their exile in the woods, the Pandavas, I think, will never abandon battle.

21. Already the mighty-armed Vrikodara of immeasurable prowess, has turned back; this son of Kunti will now certainly slay many foremost of our car-warriors.

22. He will slay crowds upon crowds of our host, using his sword, bow, darts, iron mace and horses, elephants, men and chariots as implements for striking.

23. Car-warriors headed by Satyaki and the Panchalas, the Kekayas, the Matsyas and specially the Pandavas, are following him (in battle).

24. Those mighty car-warriors, brave, endued with strength and prowess, are again urged on to battle, by the wrathful Bhima.

25. Those foremost of the Kurus desirous of supporting Vrikodara and surrounding Drona on all sides, like the clouds surrounding the sun.

26. Inspired with a singleness of purpose, they will surely afflict the unprotected Drona of resolute vows, like flights of insects about to die afflicting a burning lamp.

27. Accomplished in the use of weapons, certainly they are capable of encountering the son of Bharadvaja. I consider the burden now devolving on him to be very heavy.

28. Let us then swiftly repair to the spot where Drona is stationed. Let not the Pandavas slay Drona, like a pack of wolves slaying a mighty elephant.

**Sanjaya said**

29. O monarch, hearing the words of the son of Radha, king Duryodhana, with his brothers rushed where the car of Drona was.

30. Then there arose a mighty uproar caused by the Pandava warriors, who actuated by the desire for slaying the unsupported Drona had all returned to the field, riding on best steeds of various colours.

## CHAPTER 23

### (SAMSHAPTA-KA-VADHA PARVA)- Continued

#### The description of standards

**Dhritarashtra said**

1. Describe to me, O Sanjaya, the distinctive marks of the cars of all those heroes, who, wrought up with rage and headed by Bhima, then rushed at Drona.

**Sanjaya said**

2. Seeing Vrikodara rush into battle, (on a car drawn by steeds of chappled hue) the heroic grandson of Sini advanced being borne by steeds of the colour of silver.

3. Inflamed with ire, the invincible Yudhamanyu proceeded towards the car of Drona, being borne by excellent steeds of variegated hue.

4. The son of the ruler of the Panchalas, namely Dhrishtadyumna, proceeded, being borne by steeds of great fleetness caparisoned with gold trappings and of the hue of pigeons.

5. Desirous of supporting his father (Dhrishtadyumna) and wishing his complete success, Kshatrada-man of regulated vows followed (in a car drawn by chestnut steeds).



6. Kshatradeva, the son of Sikhandin, himself urging well-trapped steeds of the hue of lotus-leaves and with pure white eyes, advanced towards Drona.

7. Steeds of Kamboja bred beautiful to look at the decked with the feathers of the *Shuka* bird, bearing Nakula, quickly made against your army.

8. O Bharata, delighted steeds of the colour of clouds, inflamed with rage, bore Uttamaajas to battle against the invincible Drona who was standing with arrows fixed (on the bow-string).

9. Steeds of the fleetness of wind and of variegated hue, carried Sahadeva with uplifted arms to that dreadful battle.

10. Steeds of the hue of the tusks of elephants, of the fleetness of wind, of black mein and of great impetuosity, carried king Yudhishtira, the foremost of men.

11. Riding on horses caparisoned with gold trappings and all fleet as the wind, many warriors followed Yudhishtira.

12. After king Yudhishtira, came Drupada, the ruler of the Panchalas, with a golden umbrella held over his head and himself protected by all those soldiers.

13. That mighty warrior among all monarchs, namely, Santabhi, advanced, borne by excellent steeds capable of putting up with every noise.

14. Accompanied by various mighty car-warriors, Virata speedily followed him. The Kekayas and Sikhandin and Dhristaketu.

15-17. Surrounded by their respective forces, followed the king of the Matsyas. Excellent steeds of the colour of trumpet-flowers bearing this latter, appeared very beautiful. Fleet steeds decked with golden chains and resembling turmeric in colour, appeared highly beautiful as they carried the son of that slayer of foes, namely, Virata the royal chief of the Matsya. The five Kekaya brothers were borne by horses of crimson colour.

18. All these heroes accomplished in battle, having complexions effulgent like god, owning

standards of red hue and be-decked with golden chains.

20. Were seen, clad in mail and showering arrows, like the clouds showering (torrents of) rain. Steeds of the hue of ivory and that of unbaked earthenware pots, carried Sikhandin, the Panchala prince of immeasurable energy. In all, twelve thousand mighty car-warriors of the Panchala race proceeded in battle.

21. Of these twelve thousands, six thousand followed Sikhandin. O sire, the son of Shishupala, the foremost of men.

22. Was borne by sportive steeds of the hue of antelopes, Dhristaketu, the foremost of the Chedis, endued with great prowess.

23-24. And invincible in battle, was carried by horses of Kamboja breed and of variegated hue. Excellent steeds of the Sindhu breed, of beautiful limbs and of the colour of the smoke emitted by burning straws, quickly bore the prince of the Kekayas, namely, Vrihatskshastra. Possessed of eyes of the hue of jasmine, of lotus hue, of Valhika breed and decked with gold trappings, such steeds.

25. Bore the heroic son of Sikhandin viz., Kshatradeva, decorated with caparison of gold and of the hue of silk, steeds.

26. Of quiet nature, bore into battle Senavindu, that chastiser of foes. Excellent steeds of the colour of cream, carried into battle the youthful.

27-28. Delicate and mighty car-warrior, the son of the king of the Kasis. White horses, having black necks and endued with the fleetness of the mind and obedient of the (reins of the) driver, O monarch, bore prince Prativindhya. Steeds of the hue of the *Masa* flower carried in battle Sutasoma, the son of Partha, whom the latter had obtained through (the favour of) Soma.

29. Of the radiance of a thousand Moons, he was born in the city of the Kurus, known as Udayendu. In as much as in an assembly of the Somas he won great renown, he came to be styled Sutasoma.

30. Steeds, resembling the flower of the Sala in hue and radiant like the rising sun, bore the glorious son of Nakula, by name Shatanika.

31. Decked with caparisons of gold and possessed of the hue of the peacock's neck, steeds bore in battle, that foremost of men Shrutakarman, the son of Draupadi (by Bhima).

32. Excellent steeds of the colour of the feathers of the king fisher, carried into battle, Shrutakirti, the son of Draupadi, who was equal to Partha in his knowledge of the Srutis.

33. Tawny-coloured steeds bore in battle prince Abhimanyu, who is said to be one and a half time superior in battle to both Krishna and Partha.

34-35. Huge-bodied steeds bore to battle Yuyutsu, who alone, among the sons of Dhritarashtra, had sided with the Pandavas, (deserting his own brothers). Steeds, plump, decked with golden caparisons and of the hue of the stalk of paddy, bore to that dreadful battle, Vardhakshemi of great activity.

36. Steeds, having black legs, caparisoned with golden breast-plates and obedient to the driver, bore to battle, the youthful Sauchithi.

37. Quiet steeds of the hue of red silk, decked with chains of gold and having their backs covered with armour of the same metal, bore Shreniman.

38. The gallant warriors with gold garland around their neck and the well decorated horses with golden back side brought the competitive king Kashiraja to the battle-field.

39. Crimson steeds bore the assaulting Satyadhriti, who was proficient in the sciences dealing with the use of weapons and the bow and also in the divine Vedas.

40. He that was the commander of the Panchala forces and that considered Drona to be the victim destined to fall by his hand, that Dhrishtadyumna was borne by steeds of the hue of pigeons.

41. Satyadhriti and Sauchithi both irrepressible in battle followed him, as also Shrenimat, Vasudana and Vibhu the son of the ruler of Kasis.

42. These were borne by fleet steeds of the best Kamboja breed, decked with chains of gold. Resembling Yama or Vaishravana, they proceeded striking terror into the hearts of his enemies.

43-44. The Prabhadrakas of the Kamboja country, six thousand strong, with uplifted arms, with excellent steeds of various hues, with gold-decked standards mounted on their cars. With their stretched bows discharging arrows that produced confusion in the hostile host and with a determination to die together, followed Dhrishtadyumna.

45. Excellent steeds of the hue of yellow silk, decorated with beautiful chains of gold cheerfully bore Chekitana.

46. Borne by excellent steeds of the best breed and of the colour of rainbow, came Kuntibhoja or Purujit the maternal uncle of Savyasachin.

47. Steeds of the appearance of the star-studded firmament, bore king Rochamana to battle.

48. Sahadeva, the son of Jarasandha was brought to battle-field by stripped horses having black hoofs and decorated by the gold gauze.

49. The best and excellent white colour horses like lotus stem, speedy as the bird eagle appeared in the battle-field with Sudama rode on the chariot driven by them.

50. Steeds of the colour of the red deer having white stripes all over their body, bore the prince of the Panchalas, the son of Gopati, by name Singhasena.

51. Excellent steeds of the hue of the mustard flowers belonged to that foremost among the Panchalas, who was well known as Janamejaya.

52. Fleet, huge-bodied steeds of the hue of *Masa*, decked with gold chains with backs white like the hue of curds and faces beautiful like the moon, speedily bore the ruler of the Panchalas.

53. Brave and gentle steeds resembling reed-stalks and of the hue of the palms of the lotus, bore Dandadhara.

54. Steeds, of the hue of donkeys, with backs of the hue of mice and with necks proudly drawn up, bore Vyaghradatta.

55. Dart-spotted steeds, decorated with beautiful garlands, bore that foremost of men Sudhanvan, the prince of the Panchalas.

56. Steeds of the impetuosity of Indra's thunderbolt, of the hue of the *Indragopakas* and variegated with patches, bore Chitrayudha.

57. Decorated with golden garlands and having bellies of the hue of the *Chakravaka*, steeds bore the son of the ruler of the Kosalas, by name Sukshatra.

58. Excellent and tall steeds, of huge bodies, variegated hue, exceedingly docile and caparisoned with golden chains, bore Satyadhriti accomplished in battle.

59. Shukla proceeded to battle with standards, armours, bow and steeds, all of the same white colour.

60. Ocean-bred steeds of the hue of the moon, bore Chandrasena of fierce energy, the son of Samudrasena.

61. Steeds of the hue of the blue lotus and decked with ornaments of gold and adorned with beautiful garlands of flowers, bore to battle Shaivya owning a beautiful chariot.

62. Excellent steeds of the hue of the Kalaya flower, covered with red and white stripes, bore to battle Rathasena difficult to be repressed in battle.

63. Steeds of the hue of the blue parrot, bore that king who had slain the Pattacharas and who was regarded as the best hero among all men.

64. Superior steeds of hue resembling that of the Kinshuka flowers, bore Chitrayudha, decorated with beautiful garlands and owning beautiful armour, weapons and standard.

65. King Nila proceeded to battle, with standards, armour, bow and steeds, all of the same blue colour.

66. Chitra advanced to battle, with car-fence and standard and bow, all set with various kinds of gems and with excellent steeds and beautiful banners and banner-staffs.

67. Excellent steeds that resembled in colour the hue of the *Puskara* flower, bore Hemavarna the son of Rochamana.

68. Mettled chargers of gentle appearance, possessed of vertebral columns erect like reed-stalks, having white testes and endued with the colour of the hen's eggs, bore Dandaketu.

69-73. The heroic Sarangadvaja endowed with the wealth of energy, the ruler of the Pandyas, mounted on chargers of the colour of the moon-beams and clad in coats of mail set with lapises, rushed at Drona stretching his bow of superior make. His dominions having been invaded and his relatives having escaped, his sire had been slain, O monarch, in battle by Krishna; securing weapons then from Bhishma, Drona and Rama and Kripa, he became, in the use of weapons, equal to Rukmi, Karna, Arjuna and Achyuta. He then became intent on destroying the city of Dvaraka and on subjugating the whole world. But his wise friends out of a desire to do good to him, prevented him from that course. Abandoning all thoughts of revenge, he is now ruling his own dominions.

74. Steeds of the hue of the Atarusha flower bore one hundred and forty thousand foremost car-warrior who followed that king of the Pandya.

75. Charges of various hues and appearance and stature and face, born the heroic Ghatotkacha, the device on whose banner was a car-wheel.

77. Setting at naught the opinions of the assembled Bharatas, that prince who alone out of his reverence for Yudhishtira had sided with him abandoning all his cherished hopes. That mighty-armed Brihanta of red eyes was borne by huge-bodied, greatly powerful steeds, as he sat in his chariot.

78. Excellent steeds of the gold followed behind the virtuous Yudhishtira, that foremost of kings, as he advanced on his car.

79. Hosts of the Prabhadrakas of divine appearance, proceeded to battle, on superior chargers of various beautiful colours.

80. All of them possessing golden standards, full of energy and accompanied by Bhimasena, appeared, O monarch, like the celestials, headed by Indra.

81. Dhrishtadyumna liked that assembled host very much. But the son of Bharadvaja, excelled the rest of the warriors in splendour.

82. O monarch, his standard, with a black deer skin fluttering from its top and bearing the

beautiful waterpot and made of the finest gold, appeared exceedingly beautiful.

83. The standard of Bhimasena bearing the device of a mighty lion in silver, with two eyes of the lapis lazuli, appeared highly resplendent.

84. The standard of Yudhishtira endued with great energy bearing the emblem of the golden moon surrounded by the planets, looked exceedingly charming.

85. Two prodigious *Mridangas* of celestial make called Nanda and *Upanandaka* were tied to it. Struck by mechanical arrangements, they emitted melodies that enhanced the joy of all.

86. For striking terror into the hearts of the enemy, we saw that tall and fierce standard of Nakula, mounted on his car, that bore the device of Sharabha having golden back.

87. On the standard of Sahadeva, was seen a charming swan of irrepressible might made of silver, decked with bells and banners and capable of enhancing the grief of the enemy.

88. The standards of the five sons of Draupadi bore as their device the beautiful images of Dharma, Maruta, Shakra and of the twin Ashvins of high-soul.

89. On the car of the youthful Abhimanyu, O monarch, there was a standard of best make, bearing the device of a golden peacock, which was as radiant as molten gold.

90. O monarch, the device of a vulture enhanced the beauty of the standard of Ghatotkacha; his steeds had the power of ranging everywhere at will, like those of Ravana in days of yore.

91. In the hands of Yudhishtira was the bow called Mahendra of celestial make; the celestial Vyavya was, O king, in the hands of Bhimasena.

92. For preserving the triune world Brahma had created a bow; that bow of celestial make and ever indestructible, was in the hands of Phalgun.

93. The *Vaishnava* bow was wielded by Nakula and the bow *Ashvina* by Sahadeva; the Paulastya of terrible appearance and celestial make, was held by Ghatotkacha.

94. O Bharata, these five jewels of bows, namely the Rudra and Agneya, the Kauberya, the Yamy and the Girisha were held by the five sons of Draupadi.

95. That foremost of bows of best make called Rudra which the son of Rohini had obtained, that bow was given, out of delight, to the high-souled son of Subhadra, by Rama.

96. These and many other standards, decked with gold, of heroic warriors were seen there, that enhanced the grief of the foes.

97. Then, O monarch, the host led by Drona, which abounded in myriad's of standards and which numbered not a single coward, looked like images painted on canvas.

98. Then in that battle we heard, O monarch, the names and lineage of various heroic warriors, as they rushed at Drona, like to what is heard at a Svayamvara.

## CHAPTER 24

### (SAMSHAPTA-KA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The words of Dhritarashtra

#### Dhritarashtra said

1. O Sanjaya, those heroic sovereigns who now returned to the charge, being headed by Vrikodara, were capable of crushing even the host of the celestials themselves.

2. Led by Destiny, man surely engages in any action and it is through the decrees of Destiny that his various acts are attended with various results.

3. That Yudhishtira, who wandered exiled in woods, for a long time, wearing matted locks and black deer-skin and who also had to wander incognito.

4. Even that very Yudhishtira is now leading this mighty host in battle! What else but evil, can befall my son through this adverse influence of Destiny?

5. Surely man is born subject to the decrees of Destiny; and so he is compelled by it to do what he does not at all desire.

6. Becoming addicted to the vice of gambling at dice, Yudhishtira reaped great

affliction; but now through the agency of Destiny, he has again been united to his supporters.

7. 'Today the Kekayas are rallying to me; the Kausikas, the Kosalas, the Chedis, the Vangas and others are all betaking to me.

8. All this extensive earth has taken my side, O sire and not that of the sons of Pritha.' O Suta, these were the words that were spoken to me by the wicked Duryodhana before.

9. Drona, guarded amidst this host of his warriors, as slain by the son of Prisata in battle; what can it be but there decree of Fate?

10. Amidst that royal host how could Death approach that mighty-armed Drona who ever delighted in battle and who was accomplished in the use of all sorts of weapons?

11. I am plunged in distress and a swoon overwhelms me. Oh, I cannot live hearing both Bhishma and Drona slain.

12. O Suta, that which the prophetic Khatva said to me, seeing me, infatuated with the affection for my son, O sire, everything of that has now overtaken me and Duryodhana himself.

13. It would have been very cruel had I saved the rest of my progeny by abandoning Duryodhana, but then the rest could have lived.

14. The monarch, that abandoning righteousness, pursues interest, is debarred from the enjoyment of felicity and imbibes meanness.

15. O Sanjaya, today, when the hump of this kingdom has been crushed, I see that nothing will be left of it, as it has lost all energy (by the death of Drona).

16. When those two foremost of men, viz. Bhishma and Drona of forgiving nature who used to be our primary support, when they both have been killed, how can any thing remain of this kingdom?

17. Relate to me, in detail, as to how that battle raged; who were they that fought, who assaulted (the enemy) and what mean fellows fled, out of terror?

18. Tell me also what that foremost of car-warriors, namely, Dhananjaya, did? We are

much afraid of him and of his brother, Vrikodara, who is our (implacable) enemy.

19. Tell me, O Sanjaya, of the terrible collusion that took place between the Pandava hosts and the remnant of my army, when the former returned to the charge?

20. What also, O sire, was the state of your mind when they returned to the attack. What heroes of our army withstood them on the field of battle?

## CHAPTER 25

### (SAMSHAPATAKA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The description of single combats

##### Sanjaya said

1. When the Pandava host returned to the battle, a mighty apprehension took possession of ourselves covered (by the arrows) like the lustrous rob covered over by a (continuous) mass of rain-clouds.

• 2. Thick clouds of dust raised by them covered over your army; and our sight being intercepted, we thought Drona to be slain.

3. Beholding those mighty and heroic warriors intent on the perpetration of a very heartless act (i.e., the slaughter of Drona), Duryodhana encouraged his troops without the least delay, saying-

4. "O rulers of men, do you check the Pandava host, according to your strength energy and prowess and according to the opportunities that may present themselves."

5. Thereafter your son Durmarsana beholding Bhima near him, fell upon him; and desirous of saving Drona's life, he covered the latter with a downpour of arrows.

6. Wrought up with ire, he assaulted Bhima with his arrows, even like Death himself in that battle. Bhima also pierced him with arrows and thus a fierce combat raged between them.

7. In that battle, heroic warriors endowed with prudence and accomplished in smiting, being commanded by their leaders withstood their adversaries, disregarding of their kingdom and the fear of death.

8. O majesty! The chivalrous and gracious Satyaki was prevented by Kritavarma who was marching ahead with an intention to suppress Drona.

9. Like one infuriate elephant resisting another, Kritavarman checked the grandson of Sini.

10. That fierce Bowman, the ruler of the Sindhus, with his keen-pointed shaft kept the mighty warriors Kshatravarman away from Drona, as the former advanced towards the latter.

11. Kshatravarman cutting down the bow and banner of the ruler of the Sindhus and excited with wrath, pierced him in his vitals with ten *Narachas*.

12. Thereupon the ruler of the Sindhus, with an admirable lightness of hand, taking up another bow pierced Kshatravarman in that battle with arrows, all made of iron.

13. With all his endeavours, Subahu kept away from Drona, his brother, the mighty and heroic car-warrior Yuyutsu, who was fighting for the Pandavas.

14. Yuyutsu cut-off with two whetted and well-tempered and razor-like arrows, the two arms of Subahu which were wielding the bow and the arrows and which resembled a couple of bludgeons.

15. The ruler of the Madras, resisted king Yudhishtira of righteous soul, that foremost of the Pandavas, like the banks resisting the agitated ocean.

16. Him the righteous king Yudhishtira covered with many shafts capable of penetrating into the very vitals. The lord of the Madras piercing Yudhishtira with sixty-four arrows uttered a loud war cry.

17. But while the former was still roaring, with two razor sharp arrows, the foremost of the Pandavas severed his bow and banner. At this the warriors shouted forth (in joy).

18. Then king Valhika also at the head of his army, resisted, with his arrows, king Drupada as the latter was advancing leading a formidable division.

19. Thereat between those two old men supported by their respective army, a fierce encounter raged. Which resembled that between

two mighty leaders, with rent temples, of two different herds of elephants.

20. Vindha and Anvindna of the Avanti country, at the head of their army, encountered Virata, the ruler of the Matsyas, at the head of his troops, like Indra and Agni encountering the Danava Bali, in the days of yore.

21. Then between the Matsyas and the Kekayas a confused combat raged in which the horses, warriors, the car-warriors and the elephant-warriors fought undauntedly and which resembled the encounter between the celestials and the Asuras.

22. Bhutakarma, the ruler of the Sabhas, kept away from Drona, Nakula's son, Shatanika, as the latter advanced discharging a net-work of arrows.

23. Thereat the son of Nakula with three well-sharpened Bhallas (broad-headed arrows). Made Bhutakarma headless and armless in that battle.

24. Vivinsati checked the heroic Sutasoma endued with prowess, as he was advancing towards Drona discharging innumerable shafts.

25. Sutasoma also excited with anger and clad in mail pierced his uncle Vivinsati with straight-going shafts and he desisted from attacking the latter.

26. Then Bhimaratha, with six swift-going shafts, made wholly of iron, dispatched Shalva together with his steeds and charioteer to the regions of Death.

27. O mighty monarch, the son of Chitrarsena resisted your grandson Shrutakarman, as the latter rushed at (Drona), being drawn by steeds resembling peacocks.

28. Those two grandsons of yours, of prowess difficult of being checked, desirous of slaying each other, fought admirable with each other for bringing about the success of their respective sire's purposes.

29. The son of Drona, seeing Prativindhya stand before him in that battle, checked him with arrows, in order to do honour to his sire.

30. Wrought up with rage, Prativindhya with whetted shafts pierced him who bore the device

of the lion's tail in his banner and who was anxious to serve his father's interests.

31. O foremost of men, like a sower sowing seeds in the sowing season. The son of Draupadi, covered the son of Drona with an arrowy downpour.

32. The son of Dushasana resisted the mighty car-warrior Shrutakirti, the son of Arjuna by Draupadi, as the latter was rushing at Drona.

33. But that son of Krishna equal to Krishna (in prowess), cutting off with three well sharpened Bhallas, the bow, banner and charioteer of the former (the son of Dushasana), advanced towards Drona.

34. Lakshmana checked that slayer of Pattachara who is regarded, O king, as the bravest among the two hosts.

35. But the latter, O Bharata, appeared resplendent, having cut-off Lakshmana's bow and banner-mark and showering myriad shafts on him.

36. The youthful Vikarna, endued with great intelligence, opposed, in that battle, the youthful Sikhandin, the son of Yajnasena, as he advanced.

37. Thereat the son of Yajnasena covered the former with a net-work of arrows. Your son endued with prowess appeared beautiful by defeating that shower of arrows.

38. Angada checked the heroic Uttamaujasa, with a down-pour of arrows, as the latter advanced in that battle against Drona.

39. The awful encounter between those two foremost of men enhanced the delight of all the soldiers as also of them both.

40. The mighty bowman Durmukha endued with prowess, resisted with shafts called Vatsadantas, the heroic Purujit was rushing at Drona.

41. As the latter struck Durmukha between his two eye-brows with a Naracha. Thereupon the countenance of Durmukha appeared charming like a lotus with its stem.

42. Karna checked with an arrowy shower the Kekaya brothers owning crimson standards, as they rushed towards Drona.

43. Greatly afflicted, they also covered Karna with a down-pour of arrows. Karna also covered them repeatedly with showers of arrows.

44. Neither they nor Karna was to be seen being covered over with (clouds of) shafts. Their steeds, drivers and standards and cars were all lost to sight being covered with thick arrowy showers.

45. Your three sons, viz., Duryaja, Jaya and Vijaya resisted the three, viz., king Nila, the ruler of Kasis and king Jayatsena.

46. Then the fierce combat between them afforded delight to the lookers-on like that between a tiger, a lion and a wolf on the one side and a bear, a buffalo and a bull on the other side.

47. Kshemadhuri and Vrihanta, these two brothers together wounded with keen-pointed shafts, him of the Satvata race, as he advanced towards Drona in all battle.

48. Then the battle between those brothers and Satyaki became exceedingly wonderful. Like that between a lion and a couple of leader-elephants with rent temples in the woods.

49. Excited with wrath the ruler of the Chedis, kept away, by discharging shafts, from Drona, king Ambastha who always delighted in battle.

50. Then Ambastha pierced him with a long shaft that penetrated into his very bones. Loosing hold of his bow furnished with arrows, he fell down from his chariot.

51. The generous son of Sharadvata namely Kripa, with arrows called *Kshudrakas*, resisted Vardhakshemi of the Vrishni race, whose very appearance reflected wrath.

52. Then those that saw Kripa and him of the Vrishni race—the heroes accomplished in various modes of warfare—engaged in battle with each other, became absorbed in that encounter and they could attend to no other action.

53. The son of Somadatta for adding to the glory of Drona, opposed the ever vigilant king Manimanta as the latter rushed towards Drona.

54. The son of Somadatta then with great activity, cut-off the latter's bowstring, banner, charioteer, umbrella and flag-staff and felled him from his car.

55. Then the slayer of foes, Yupaketu (owning the device of a sacrificial stake on his standard) jumping down, with lightness, from the car and cut-off with a best-tempered sword king Manimanta with his steeds, charioteer, standard and chariot.

56. Thereafter remounting his own chariot and grasping another bow and himself urging his steeds, he began to consume the host of the Pandavas.

57. Vrishasena, a worthy combatant, checked with an arrowy shower, king Pandya who was rushing to battle like Indra rushing after the Asuras for slaying them.

58-60. With maces, bludgeons, scimitars, axes stones and other weapons and with sort clubs, mallets, discs, Bhindipalas, battle-axes and with dusts, wind, fire, water, ashes, gravel's, straw, trees, afflicting, smiting, breaking, slaying, routing and throwing down and terrifying the hostile troops, came Ghatotkacha, desirous of getting near Drona.

61. Excited with wrath, the Rakshasa Alambusha began to strike that Rakshasa (Ghatotkacha) with various kinds of weapons and various implements of war.

62. The encounter that then took place between those two foremost of the Rakshasas, resembled that which took place between Sumeru and the king of the immortals, in days gone by.

63. Good betide you. Thus amidst that dreadful general engagements, hundreds of single combats were fought between the car-warriors, elephant-warriors, horse-warriors and foot-soldiers of your army and theirs.

64. Indeed the battle that then raged between the warriors that were intent on destroying and protecting Drona indeed such a battle was never seen or heard of before.

65. Many were the combats that were seen raging on that field; O lord, some of which were dreadful, some wonderful and some exceedingly terrible.

## CHAPTER 26

### (SAMSHAPTA-KA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The fighting of Bhagadatta

##### Dhritarashtra said

1. When the Pandavas returned and when division clashed against divisions, how did the warriors of my army and those belonging to the sons of Pritha, endued with activity, fight?

2. What also did Arjuna do to the car-warriors of the Samshaptaka host and what, O Sanjaya, did the *Samshaptakas* do to Arjuna in return?

##### Sanjaya said

3. When the Pandavas did return to the charge and when divisions clashed against divisions, your son (Duryodhana) himself at the head of the elephant division, rushed at Bhimasena.

4. Like an elephant challenged by another or like a bovine bull summoned by a rival, Bhimasena, challenged by the king himself, rushed against that elephant division.

5. And, O sire, that son of Pritha, accomplished in battle and endued with strength of arms, soon shattered that host of elephants.

6. Those elephants, prodigious like mountains and with ichor exuding from all parts of their bodies, were crushed and compelled to turn back by the Narachas of Bhimasena.

7. Indeed as a raging tempest tears away a net-work of clouds, so did the son of the Wind (Bhima) shatter that host (of elephants).

8. Scattering arrows on that herd of elephants, Bhima appeared beautiful, like the sun scattering his shining rays on all objects of the world.

9. Afflicted with the shafts of Bhima and bespattered with blood, those elephants looked beautiful like various masses of clouds in the heavens streaked with the rays of the sun.

10. Thereupon Duryodhana excited with wrath, approached and pierced with whetted shafts the son of the Wind who was afflicting his (Duryodhana's) own division of elephants.



11. Thereat, with blood-red eyes, Bhima within a while, desirous of dragging the king to destruction, began to pierce the latter with winged shafts.

12. Then Duryodhana, covered with arrows on all parts of his body and wrought up with rage, began to pierce the son of Pandu, viz., Bhimasena, with Narachas of the effulgence of the rays of the sun, laughing all the while.

13. Duryodhana had an (artificial) elephant embossed with gems and jewels as the device gracing his banner; this elephant together with the former's blow, the son of Pandu severed with two Bhallas in all haste.

14. Beholding Duryodhana afflicted by Bhima, O sire, the sovereign of the Angas, riding on an elephant, came with a view to afflict Bhima.

15. Seeing that best of elephants make towards himself with a roar resembling the rumble of the clouds, Bhima struck it sore with a Naracha between its two frontal globes.

16. That Naracha, penetrating through the body of the elephant at last struck on the ground. Then that elephant fell like a mountain struck with the thunder-bolt.

17. The Mlechha king who could not extricate himself from the dropping elephant was also falling with it; with an admirable lightness of hand, Vrikodara cut-off the head of that monarch.

18. At the fall of the heroic ruler of the Angas, his division fled in all directions. Horses, elephants and car-warrior, seized with panic, began to crush the foot-soldiers in their fight.

19. When that host had been thus broken and routed in all directions, the sovereign of the Pragjyotisas rushed at Bhima, riding on his elephant.

20. Bhagadatta attacked on Bhimasena by riding on the elephant of Airavata breed using which as vehicle, Indra had defeated the demons and monsters.

22. With its two forelegs and its trunk contracted and with its eyes rolling and inflamed with fury, the elephant seemed to

consume the son of Pandu. It then shattered to pieces the car of Vrikodara together with the steeds harnessed thereto. Thereat running on his legs Bhima hid himself underneath body of the elephant.

23. The son of Pandu did not really fly, for he was acquainted with the science called *Anjalikavedha*. Getting underneath the elephant's body, that elephant that was intent on slaying him; he began to strike it with his bare arms repeatedly.

24-25. He began to afflict that elephant that was intent on slaying him; Whereupon the elephant began to whirl round like a potter's wheel in rapid motion. Possessed of the might of ten thousand elephants, the glorious Vrikodara, having struck the elephant. Came out from underneath its body and stood before Supratika.

26-27. Holding down Bhima with its trunk, Supratika then struck him with its knees. And winding its trunk round the neck of Bhima, it really tried to kill him. Whirling round Bhimasena freed himself from the twine of the elephant's trunk.

28. Then once more Vrikodara got under the body of that elephant. Then when he saw a rival elephant of his own army make towards the one (underneath which he was standing).

29. Bhima issuing out from under the body of the elephant, ran away with speed. Thereupon a loud cry in whole army.

30. 'Alas, Bhima is slain by the elephant' was set up by all the troops, O sire. Frightened by that elephant, the Pandava army suddenly fled, O king, there where Vrikodara was standing.

31. Thereupon, considering Vrikodara to be slain, king Yudhishtira assisted by the Panchalas, environed Bhagadatta on all sides.

32. That foremost of car-warriors Yudhishtira, having surrounded Bhagadatta with cars on all sides, covered the latter with keen-pointed shafts by hundreds and thousands.

33. Baffling those myriad shafts with his iron hook, the Mountain-king, (Bhagadatta) agitated with his elephant the host of the Pandavas and the Panchalas.

34. Then, O ruler of men, we did indeed behold a wonderful feat achieved in that battle by the old Bhagadatta, through the instrumentality of his elephant.

35. Then the sovereign of the Dasarnas advanced against the ruler of the Pragjyotisas, mounted on a swift-coursing elephant exuding the temporal juice and moving in a tortuous motion.

36. Then the encounter that ensued between those two elephants of prodigious appearance, resembled the fight, in the days of yore, between winged mountains covered with trees.

37. Thereafter the elephant of the ruler of the Pragjyotisas, turning and wheeling round, slew the elephant of the king of the Dasarnas, by ripping open its flanks.

38. King Bhagadatta also, with seven Tomaras of the effulgence of the sun's rays, slew his adversary riding on an elephant just when the latter was about to slip down from his seat.

39. Thereupon Yudhishtira lacerating king Bhagadatta (with many shafts), surrounding him on all sides with a numerous host of car-warriors.

40. Mounted on his elephant and surrounded on all sides by the car-warriors, he (Bhagadatta) appeared beautiful like fire illumining a mountain surrounded by forests.

41. Then mounted on his elephant, he remained inside that compact circle of fierce bow-men riding on chariots and pouring showers of arrows.

42. Thereafter the king of the Pragjyotisas, poking his prodigious elephant, urged it towards the chariot of Yuyudhana.

43. Thereat the mighty elephant twining with its trunks the car of Sini's grandson, threw it violently to a distance; but Yuyudhana escaped.

44. His charioteer jumping upon the car, urged the mighty steeds of the Shindhu breed yoked thereto and stopped reaching the spot where Satyaki was standing.

45. Then that elephant, availing itself of that breach in the circle of cars, came speedily out of

it and began to overthrow all the rulers of the earth.

46. Those foremost of men being frightened by that swift-coursing elephant, regarded that single one to be multiplied into hundred elephants, in that battle.

47. The Pandavas crushed by Bhagadatta mounted on his elephant, appeared like the Danavas crushed by Indra mounted on the Airavata.

48. When the Panchalas were flying on all sides, a defending and dreadful din was created by their elephants and steeds.

49. Thus when the Pandavas were being afflicted by Bhagadatta in that battle, Bhima wrought up with wrath once more rushed against the ruler of the Pragjyotisas.

50. Then that elephant drenching with the water spouting from its trunk the horses of the advancing Bhima, frightened them and they carried away Bhima from the field.

51. Thereafter Ruchiparvan the son of Akirti speedily rushed at him, mounted on his chariot and pouring showers of arrows like Death himself.

52. Then that ruler of the mountain tracts possessed of shapely limbs, dispatched, with a straight shaft, Ruchiparvan to the regions of the son of Vivasvan (Death).

53. On the fall of that hero (Ruchiparvan), the son of Subhadra, the sons of Draupadi, Chekitana, Dhristaketu and Yuyutsu, began to afflict that elephant. Desirous of slaying it; and uttering dreadful roars, they began to pour on it their arrows like showers of rain.

54-56. Then that elephant urged with heels toes and the hook, by its skilful rider, rushed (at them) with speed, with its trunk stretched and eyes and ear fixed trampling upon the steeds of Yuyutsu, the animal crushed his charioteer.

57. O monarch, Yuyutsu fled, forsaking his car, in all haste. Then the warriors of the Pandava host out of a desire for slaying that foremost of elephants, speedily drenched it with the shower of their arrows, uttering loud shouts all the while.

58-59. At this juncture, your son with speed rushed, against the car or Subhadra's son. King

Bhagadatta riding on his elephant and discharging arrows at the foe appeared resplendent like the sun scattering his rays on the earth.

60. Then the son of Arjuna pierced him with twelve shafts and Yuyutsu with ten. The sons of Draupadi and Dhrishtaketu also pierced him with ten shafts.

61. With those arrows shot with great care stuck on its body, the elephant appeared beautiful. Like a mighty rain-cloud struck with the rays of the sun.

62. Urged on by the skill and vigour of its rider and smitten with the shafts of the enemy. That elephant began to throw down right and left, the warriors of the hostile host.

63. Like a cow-herd belabouring with his cudgel the herd in the forest. Bhagadatta began to smite the hostile troops repeatedly.

64. Like the cawing of the crows pounced upon by the hawks. A confused noise was heard among the Pandava hosts, as they fled with speed.

65. O monarch, then that foremost of elephants being struck with the hook resembled with winged mountains of yore. It struck panic into the hearts of the enemy, like to what the merchants (on board) experience when the (tempest-tossed) sea rushes against them.

66. O monarch, then in that battle, a loud din, was raised by the elephants, car-warriors steeds and kings, as they fled in fear; and that din filled the earth, the welkin, the cardinal and subsidiary directions of the compass.

67. That monarch (Bhagadatta) with that foremost elephant of his, thoroughly agitated the host of the enemy, like Virochana agitating in battle the celestial host well-protected by the immortals in the days of yore.

68. The friend of fire (tempest) then began to blow violently. A cloud of dust in a moment covered the firmament and the forces. People began to regard that single elephant at multiplied into many and careering in all directions.

## CHAPTER 27

### (SAMSHAPTAKA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The slaughter of the Samshaptakas

Sanjaya said

1. As you have enquired of me of the feats of Partha in that battle, hear, O you of mighty arms, what he achieved in that battle.

2. Seeing the cloud of dust and hearing the noise created by the troops when Bhagadatta was achieving feats of valour, the son of Kunti thus addressed Krishna.

3. O slayer of Madhu, as the ruler of the Pragjyotisas has advanced with impetuosity to the battle, riding on his elephant, this loud noise may be attributed to him.

4. Well-versed in the management of his vehicle the elephant, he is in no way inferior to Indra in battle; and I think, he is either the first or the second of all the elephant warriors on the face of this earth.

5. His elephant is also the foremost of the species, whom no rival dares encounter in battle; the animal is well accomplished in all tactics and indefatigable and beyond the reach of all weapons in battle.

6. O sinless one, that elephant capable of bearing the showers of all kinds of weapon and even the tongues of fire, will alone, this day, destroy all the troops of the Pandavas.

7. Save and except us two, there is none who is capable of resisting that animal. Therefore with speed do you drive where the ruler of the Pragjyotisas is.

8. I will, this very day, send, as a dear guest to the slayer of Bala (Indra), this my adversary who is proud of the prowess of his elephant and of his venerable age, in battle.

9. No sooner had Arjuna uttered these words than Krishna drove to the spot where Bhagadatta had been crushing and shattering the Pandava army.

10. As Arjuna winded his way towards Bhagadatta, the fourteen thousand mighty car-warriors, viz., the Samshaptakas summoned him delightfully from behind.

11. Of these fourteen thousand, ten thousand mighty car-warriors belonged to the Trigartta clan and the (remaining) four sand were the followers of the son of Vasudeva.

12. Beholding then the ranks of his own army broken by Bhagadatta and O sire, being summoned on the other-hand by the Samshaptakas, Arjuna was seen divided in his heart (purpose).

13. He began to reflect - 'Which of these two acts will now be beneficial for me viz., to turn back to the Samshaptakas or to repair to Yudhishthira.'

14. Then, O perpetuator of the race of the Kurus, deciding with the help of his understanding, Arjuna set his heart steadily on the destruction of the Samshaptakas.

15. Then that son of Vasava bearing the device of the money-chief on his standard, suddenly wheeled round with the intent of slaughtering, single handed, those thousands of car-warriors in battle.

16. Even this was what both Karna and Duryodhana had decided to be the means for bringing about the death of Arjuna; and for this they had planned the double encounter.

17. Then the son of Pandu wavered between his two purposes (of slaying the Samshaptakas and of meeting Bhagadatta). But he baffled the purposes of his enemies by slaying then the foremost among the Samshaptakas.

18. Thereat, O monarch, the mighty car-warriors, of the Samshaptaka host showered upon Arjuna hundreds and thousands of straight-jointed shafts.

19. Covered with those shafts, neither the son of Kunti, namely Partha, nor Krishna the assuager of the grief of men, nor horses nor chariots, O monarch, could be seen.

20. Then when Janardana was overwhelmed with a swoon and was covered with drops of perspiration, the son of Pritha tell to slaughter them in large numbers with his Brahma weapon.

21. Hundreds of arms with arrows, bow-strings and bows in their grasps, being severed and also, standards, horses, charioteers and car-warriors, all fell down on the earth.

22. Elephants, resembling in stature huge hills covered with trees or masses of rain clouds and furnished with trappings, having their riders slain, fell down on the ground being struck with the arrows of Partha.

23. Greatly afflicted with the shafts of Partha, steeds with riders on their backs, fell down dead on the ground, with their caparisons and reins severed and their Bandha rent.

24. Severed by Kiritin with his board-headed arrows, the arms of men, having swords, lances and rapiers for their nail and grasping bludgeons, mallets and battle-axes, fell down.

25. Heads, O sire, resembling the rising sun or the lotus or the moon, being severed by the arrows of Arjuna, fell down on the earth.

26. When the enraged Phalguna had been thus slaying his foes, the forces seemed to be on fire, being struck with beautiful but deadly shafts of various appearances.

27. Then all beings honoured Dhananjaya, who had been agitating the forces like an elephant crushing the lotus-stalks, by saying 'Well done,' 'Well-done.'

28. Beholding that feat of the son of Pritha, which was equal to the one achieved by Vasava himself, Madhava, highly amazed thus spoke to the former, with his hands folded.

29. 'I think, O Partha, the feat you have today achieved in battle is difficult of being performed even by Indra or Yama or Kubera himself.

30. I have seen today slay simultaneously in battle, hundreds and thousands of mighty car-warriors of the Samshaptaka host.'

31. Then completely slaying those Samshaptakas who stayed in battle, Partha said to Krishna, 'Now hasten towards Bhagadatta.'

## CHAPTER 28

### (SAMSHAPTA-KA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The fight of Bhagadatta

Sanjaya said

1. Upon Partha's desire for advancing against the division of Drona, Krishna urged his

steeds covered with golden caparisons, fleet as the mind and white in hue.

2. Beholding that foremost of the Kurus make towards his brothers afflicted sore by Drona, king Susarman with his brothers followed him, desirous of battle.

3. The invincible Arjuna owning white steeds then thus addressed Krishna saying:—'O Achyuta, this Susarman assisted by his brother challenges me (to fight).

4. O slayer of foes, on the other hand, the ranks of my troops are being shattered, (by Drona); today my mind is undecided in its purposes, which is caused by the Samshaptakas.

5. Shall I slay the Samshaptakas or shall I save my own army afflicted by the foe. Know this to be what I am thinking of; tell me what would be beneficial for me?

6. Thus spoken to, the descendant of the Dasharhas (viz., Krishna), turned the car and drove the son of Pandu to the spot whence the ruler of the Trigarttas was summoning Arjuna.

7. Thereat Arjuna piercing Susarman with seven swift-coursing arrows, cut down his standard, bow and chariot with a couple a razor-sharp arrows.

8. Then with six swift-flying arrows Partha speedily dispatched to the mansion of Death the brother of the ruler of the Trigarttas, with his steeds and charioteers.

9. Thereat Susarman, aiming at Arjuna, hurled an iron dart resembling a snake and he threw a lance at the son of Vasudeva.

10. Having cut down the dart with three shafts and the lance also with another three, Arjuna compelled Susarman to turn back, depriving him of his senses my means of an arrowy down-pour.

11. None among your host ventured to oppose him, O monarch, as he came looking fierce and showering arrows like Vasava pouring rain.

12. Then Dhananjaya advanced slaying all the mighty car-warriors of the Kauravas, with his arrows, just as fire advances consuming heaps of straw and fuel.

13. Like the touch of fire, people were unable to bear the unbearable impetuosity of that intelligent son of Kunti.

14. The son of Pandu overwhelming with his arrowy showers the hostile host, made, O monarch, towards the rulers of the Pragjyotisas, like Suparna pouncing down (upon his prey).

15-16. Then the ever-victorious Arjuna held in his grasp the bow, that was prolific of benefit for the sinless Pandavas and that was capable of enhancing the grief of the enemy in battle, for the destruction of the Kshatriyas, brought about, O king, by your son's recourse to the deceitful fame at dice.

17. Then, O monarch, your troops being thus agitated by the son of Pritha, was broken like a frail bark grounded on a rock.

18. Thereupon, ten thousand bowmen, brave and inflamed with a fierce determination for battle and disregardful of victory or defeat, turned upon (Arjuna).

19. With their hearts shorn of fear, those mighty warriors completely encompassed him. Thereat Partha capable of bearing all burdens how heavy souvenir, took up that burden in that battle.

20. Then Partha began to crush your forces just as an infuriate elephant of six years of age, with rent temples crushes and tears an assemblage of lotus plants.

21. When the troops were being thus crushed, Bhagadatta, the ruler of men, riding on the self-same elephant, rushed suddenly at Dhananjaya.

22. Thereupon Dhananjaya that foremost of men, received him. (Bhagadatta), opposing him with his car. Then a fierce encounter raged between that car and that elephant.

23. Riding on their car and elephant respectively which were equipped according to the rules of the military science, those two heroes Dhananjaya and Bhagadatta careered through the field of battle.

24. Then staying on his elephant that resembled a mass of clouds, the mighty down-pour of arrows, like Indra showering rain.

25. Then the son of Vasava (Arjuna) endued with prowess, cut-off with his arrowy showers, the arrows of Bhagadatta, before they could even reach him.

26. Then, O sire, the king of the Pragjyotisas, baffling that shower of arrows,

pierced the mighty-armed son of Pritha, as also Krishna, with his arrows.

27. Thereafter covering Krishna and Partha with a thick net-work of arrows, Bhagadatta urged his elephant towards them in order to slay them.

28. Thereat beholding that infuriate elephant make towards themselves like Death himself, Janardana with swiftness moved his car in a manner as to leave the elephant on the left.

29. Thus Dhananjaya, though he got an opportunity of slaying that mighty elephant and its rider from the right side, yet did not avail himself of it, recollecting the laws of fair combat.

30. The elephant, O sire, trampling down upon other elephants, cars and steeds, sent them all to the regions of Death. Thereat Dhananjaya was inflamed with wrath.

## CHAPTER 29

(SAMSHAPTA-KA-VADHA PARVA)-

Continued

### The slaughter of Bhagadatta

**Dhritarashtra said**

1. Wrought up with rage, what did Arjuna the son of Pandu do to Bhagadatta? What did also the ruler of the Pragjyotisas do towards Pritha's son? Tell me all as it happened.

**Sanjaya said**

2. When Krishna and Arjuna were both thus engaged with the ruler of the Pragjyotisas, all creatures regarded them as placed within the teeth of Death.

3. Then, O mighty monarch, from the back of the elephant he rode, the ruler of the Pragjyotisas poured incessant showers of arrows on the two Krishnas (Arjuna and Krishna) stationed on the same chariot.

4. Thereafter Bhagadatta, with iron shafts furnished with golden wings, whetted on stone and discharged from a full-drawn bow, pierced the illustrious son of Devaki.

5. Those superbly ornamented arrows of the touch of fire, shot with force by Bhagadatta, entered the earth, having pierced through the son of Devaki.

6. The son of Pritha then cut-off Bhagadatta's bow and slew that warrior who was supporting the latter from his flanks; he then engaged with the Pragjyotisa king as if in sport.

7. Thereat Bhagadatta sped at Arjuna fourteen lances of great sharpness and of the solar effulgence; but Arjuna cut each of them into two pieces.

8. Thereafter Arjuna shattered into pieces the armour covering Bhagadatta's elephant, with a mighty shower of arrows; the armour then dropped down on the earth.

9. With its armour shattered and mangled with numerous arrow-wounds, that elephant appeared like a prince of mountain shorn of its cloudy envelope and with its breast drenched with showers of rain.

10. Thereupon the ruler of the Pragjyotisas hurled at Vasudeva's son a dart having a golden staff and an iron head; but Arjuna cut that dart in two.

11. Thereafter having severed with arrows the umbrella and the standard of the king, Arjuna quickly pierced the ruler of the mountain-provinces with ten shafts, smiling the while.

12-13. Then that ruler of the Pragjyotisas was sorely wounded by Arjuna's arrows furnished with beautiful wings formed of the feathers of the Kanka birds. Thereafter Bhagadatta, O ruler of men, waxing wroth, hurled lances at the head of Pandu's son owning white steeds. And then he uttered a loud war-cry. Then by those lances, the diadem of Arjuna was displaced.

14. Then putting his displaced diadem, in its proper place, Phalguna said to king Bhagadatta - "Take you a full view of this world."

15. Thus spoken to, king Bhagadatta, inflamed with rage, took up a lustrous bow and showers of arrow on Pandu's son and Govinda.

16. The son of Pritha then having cut-off Bhagadatta's bow and quivers quickly pierced the latter in all his vital limbs with seventy two arrows.

17. Thus pierced and pained to the extreme, Bhagadatta invoked the Vaishnava weapon and

inspiring its hook with sacred aphorisms, he let to go, in rage, at the breast of Pandu's son.

18. Thereupon Keshava, covering Pritha's son, received upon his own breast that weapon capable of slaying every being, hurled by Bhagadatta.

19-22. That weapon turned into Vaijayanti garland when it had about to touch the chest of god Sri Krishna. That garland was made of all seasonal flowers and excellently graced with the stamen of lotus flower. It was illuminating like fire, sun and moon. Each petal of flowers intertwined in it was blazing like fire. God Keshava, the killer of Keshi, son of Sureasena, holder of Saranga bow, suppressor of enemy having their dark complexion like the Tisi flowers of that garland looked as if a mountain covered by clouds in one evening of rainy season. That garland was looked fantastic with lotus petals moving with the breeze.

23. Thereafter with a sorrowful heart Arjuna thus addressed Keshava - "O sinless one, without fighting for you, I will drive your steeds, in battle. Even these, O lotus-eyed one, were the words you spoke before. Why then do you not keep your promise inviolate? It is only then when I shall be involved in a calamity or shall be incapable or resisting (my foes and their weapons), it is then only that you shall take it upon yourself to protect me; but not when I am competent and standing thus.

24. Equipped with my bows and arrows, I am competent enough to conquer the words with all the celestials, Asuras and mortals dwelling in them; this fact indeed you also know."

25. Thereupon the son of Vasudeva addressing Arjuna spoke these words in reply - "Hear, O sinless one, O son of Pritha, this ancient and mysterious piece of history.

26. . Ever occupied as I am in achieving the welfare of the worlds. I have four semblance's. Dividing myself into parts I do try to bring about the world's benefit.

27. One of my semblance's, remaining on earth, is even now practising ascetic austerities. Another keeps an eye over the world engaged in good and evil deeds.

28. My third semblance, staying in the world of men, is engaged in the performance of acts and my fourth semblance sleeps a sleep extending over four thousand years.

29. This last-mentioned semblance of mine that awakes at the end of the every thousand years, accords excellent boons at that time, to those who really deserve them.

30. On one such occasion, the Earth knowing that the boon-giving hour has come, solicited a boon for her son Naraka; hear, I shall tell it to you.

31. Possessed of the Vaishnava weapon let my son be unslayable, both by the gods and the demons. It behoves you to grant me that weapon.

32. Listening then to that prayer for the boon that earth wanted me accord to her son, I gave the excellent and irresistible Vaishnava weapon to him.

33. I then said - 'O Earth, let this weapon be infallible in protecting Naraka. None, I say, will be able to slay him.

34. 'Protected by this weapon, your son, the crusher of hostile hosts, will, in all times and everywhere, be invincible.

35. Then saying "Be it so", that intelligent goddess went away, satisfied at the fruition of her desire. Her son Naraka, that afflicter of hostile horses, also accordingly became invincible.

36. Then, O son of Pritha, that weapon of mine was secured by the ruler of the Pragjyotisas from Naraka; and O sire, there, is none unslayable by it in all the worlds, not excluding Indra and Rudra themselves.

37. For your sake therefore, O Arjuna, I did baffle the weapon. Now slay the mighty Asura deprived of his excellent weapon.

38. Now slay in battle your invincible opponent Bhagadatta, that enemy of the gods, like myself slaying, in the days of yore, Naraka, for the worlds' benefit.

39. Thus spoken to by the high-souled Keshava, Pritha's son suddenly covered Bhagadatta with a shower of sharp arrows.

40. Then the mighty-armed and high-souled Arjuna dauntlessly wounded Bhagadatta's

elephant between its frontal globes with a (long) lance:

41. Then like the thunder-bolt rending a mountain open, that dart flying towards the elephant penetrated into its body to the very wings, like a snake entering into its hole in an ant-hill.

42. Then like the wife of a poor man, refusing to carry out the orders of her husband, that elephant though often urged by Bhagadatta, refused to obey his orders.

43. With its limbs paralysed it fell down striking the earth with its tusks. Then that huge elephant gave up its breath uttering a yell of distress.

44-45. God Sri Krishna then said to Arjuna - O son of Kunti! Bhagadatta is in his old age with all hair lured grey and eyes covered by the forehead flesh due to wrinkles appear as if these are closed. He is great warrior and gallant. It is tough to defeat him in the battle. He has tied the eyelids with a strip of cloth with the forehead so as to keep both eyes opened.

46. In compliance with the direction, Arjuna took out crescent shaped arrow of straight knots and shot at the eyes of Bhagadatta. He thus, lost his eyes and became blind.

47. The mighty Bhagadatta then seemed the whole world sank in darkness as she was blind now. Arjuna, the son of Pandu, in the meantime; pierced the heart of king Bhagadatta by hitting hard an arrow crescent shaped and bent knot at that spot.

48-49. His bosom being torn open by the diadem-decked Arjuna. King Bhagadatta lost the grasp of his bow and arrows, being deprived of vitality. The precious cloth that had constituted his turban now fell off from his head like a petal falling off from a lotus when its stem is struck violently.

50. He himself decorated with a garland of gold fell down from the back of his mountain-like elephant, decked also with trappings of gold, like a blossoming Karnikara tree falling down from the crest of a hill, being uprooted by the violence of the wind.

51. Then in that battle, the son of Indra having slain that monarch equal to Indra in

prowess and who was a friend of Indra, began to crush, inspired with the hopes of victory, other warriors of your army, like a violent gust of wind crushing large number to trees.

## CHAPTER 30

### (SAMSHAPATAKA-VADHA PARVA)- Continued

#### The retreat of Shakuni

Sanjaya said

1. Having slain the ruler of the Pragjyotisas who was the friend and favourite of Indra and who was possessed of immeasurable prowess, the son of Pritha circumambulated him.

2. Thereafter, Vrisaka and Achala, the two sons of the king of the Gandharas, both competent to subjugate hostile cities, began to afflict the son of Pandu in battle.

3. Those two heroic bowmen assailing Arjuna simultaneously from the rear and the van, began to pierce him with swift-flying arrows coursing with vehemence.

4. Thereupon with whetted shafts, Pritha's son cut-off into fragments the steeds the charioteer, the bow, the standard, the umbrella and the chariot of Vrishaka the son of Subala.

5. Thereafter Arjuna with showers of arrows and various other weapons, began to afflict the Gandharas headed by Subala and others.

6. Then wrought up with wrath, Dhananjaya dispatched, by means of his arrows, to the regions of Death, five hundred heroic Gandhara warriors with their weapons held over their heads.

7. Meanwhile the mighty-armed Vrishaka alighting from his chariot of which the horses were slain, ascended the car of his brother with agility and grasped another bow.

8. Then those two heroic brothers Vrishaka and Achala, both riding on the self same car, began incessantly to pierce Pritha's son with their arrowy downpour.

9. Then those two kings, your brothers-in-law; viz., Vrishaka and Achala of illustrious souls, began to wound Partha sorely, like Bala or Vritra wounding Indra himself.



10. The two Gandhara kings of unerring aims, again and again pierced Pandu's son like the summer and the rainy months of the year piercing the world with heat and rain respectively.

11. Thereat, O monarch, Arjuna with a single shaft slew those two foremost of men, those two princes, viz., Vrishaka and Achala who had been riding on the same chariot side by side.

12. Thereupon those two heroic brothers with red eyes, possessed on long arms, having similar features and looking like two lions, fell down from their car.

13. Then their bodies, so much tended by their friends and favourites, falling from the car, lay prostrate on the Earth, spreading sacred fame in all the ten points of the compass.

14. Thereafter, O ruler of men, your sons beholding their two unretreating and heroic maternal uncles slain, began unceasingly to discharge weapons.

15. Then, conversant with hundred kinds of illusion, Shakuni beholding his two brothers slain spread a mighty illusion for confounding the two Krishnas.

16-18. Then clubs, iron-balls, Shataghnis, rocks, darts, maces, bludgeons, swords, tridents, mallets, battle-axes, kampanas scimitars, nails, Mushalas, axes, razors, horse-shoe-headed arrows, Nalikas, Vatsadantas and shafts of bony-heads, discuses, Vishikhas, lances and many other kinds of weapons began to fall upon Arjuna from all the cardinal and subsidiary points of the compass.

19-20. Also asses, camels, buffalo's, tigers, lions, deer, leopards, bears, wolves, vultures, monkeys and various reptiles and diverse kinds of Rakshasas and flocks of birds, all burning with hunger and rage, assailed Arjuna from all sides.

21. Thereat that heroic son of Kunti, by name Dhananjaya, versed in the use of celestial weapons, discharging a net-work of arrows, simultaneously attacked them all.

22. Attacked by that hero with excellent and strong airways, those beasts and reptiles and birds, emitting loud yells of agony, began to give the ghost up on the field of battle.

23. Thereupon Arjuna's chariot was enveloped in a pall of gloom and harsh voices were heard to reproach Arjuna from within that gloom.

24. Then in that fierce battle, Arjuna, with a mighty and lustrous weapon of the finest make called Gotishka, dispelled that dreadful and palpable darkness capable of inspiring every one with terror.

25-26. When that gloom had been dispelled, frightful waves of waters started into existence. Thereupon for destroying these water-waves, Arjuna discharged the Aditya weapon; that weapon then dried up almost all the water-waves. Thus various kinds of illusions created by Subala's son.

27. Arjuna smilingly nullified, by means of the virtue of his weapons. When all his illusions had been nullified, struck with the arrows of Arjuna and seized with terror.

28. Shakuni fled like a mean deserter being borne away by fleet coursers. Then Arjuna conversant with the use of all weapons, displaying to his foes his great light-handedness.

29. Poured showers of arrows on the host of the Kauravas. Then that army of your son, thus smashed by Pritha's son.

30. Became split up in twain, like a current of Ganges water dividing into two streams when it is obstructed by a hillock. Some among those foremost of men, then sought shelter from Drona.

31. And others, O king, being afflicted sore by the diadem-decked Arjuna, flew towards Duryodhana's division. Then we could not see Arjuna, as the army was enveloped in a cloud of dust.

32. I could then only hear the twang of the Gandiva-bow on my right side, as also the sound and blare of conch-shells and drums and the din of many other musical instruments.

33. But rising above all those noise and din, the twang of the Gandiva reached the very heavens. Then on the Southern part of the field, again raged a fight between numerous warriors on the one side.

34. And Arjuna on the other. I, however, followed Drona's division. Then the diverse divisions of Yudhishtira's army began to strike down the enemy's host on the field.

35. Then, O Bharata, like wind scattering masses of clouds in the heavens, Arjuna began to scatter the various divisions composing the army of your son.

36. None could then resist that fierce bowmen, that excellent of all male beings, as he advanced, like Indra, pouring incessantly showers of arrows.

37. Then all those troops of yours, thus slaughtered by Partha and overwhelmed with intense pain, began to fly and in flying crushed many of their own number.

38. The arrows, sped by Arjuna, furnished with wings of *Kanka* feather and capable of piercing into every body, began to fall even like flights of locusts covering all the ten points of the compass.

39. Those arrows, O sire, penetrating through horses, car-warriors, elephants and foot-soldiers, entered the earth, like snakes entering their holes in ant-hills.

40. Arjuna did not shoot more than one arrow at any elephant, man or horse. Each of these, afflicted by one shaft only, began to fall down and give up the ghost on the field.

41. Over-strewn with slain men and elephants and horses mangled with arrows and filled with the yells of dogs and jackals, the field of battle assumed an awful appearance.

42. Afflicted with arrows, then father deserted his son, friend forsook his friend and son abandoned his father. Then with their hearts intent on saving themselves, men even forsook their very vehicles, being pained by the arrows of Partha.

### CHAPTER 31

#### (SAMSHAPATAKA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The slaughter of Nila

**Dhritarashtra said**

1. What, O Sanjaya, was the state of your mind when my army was routed and crushed by

Pandu's son and when you speedily fled away from the field?

2. The re-assembling of broken and routed troops is every difficult; tell me all about it, O Sanjaya.

**Sanjaya said**

3. In spite of all these, O ruler of men, many excellent heroes, desirous of doing good to your son and of keeping their reputation unsullied, followed Drona's track.

4. During that fierce encounter, they dauntlessly followed their commander, achieving numerous feats of valour, with weapons upraised and with Yudhishtira within accessible distance.

5. Availing themselves of an error of the heroic Bhimasena, of Satyaki of immeasurable prowess and of the mighty Dhrishtadyumna, the Kuru leaders fell upon the Pandava divisions.

6. The fierce Panchalas urged on their troops saying, "There is Drona, there is Drona," whilst your sons urged on the Kurus, saying, 'Let not Drona be slain'.

7. Then one side saying "Fall upon Drona, fall upon Drona," and the other side saying, "Let not Drona be slain," a game of dice seemed to be played between the Kurus and the Pandavas, in which Drona was the stake.

8. Dhrishtadyumna, the Panchala prince, proceeded to those spots wheresoever Drona sought to assail the car divisions of the Panchalas.

9. Thus during that sanguinary engagement in which no rule for selection of antagonists was followed, heroes encountered heroes, uttering aloud their respective war-cries.

10. The Pandavas then became incapable of being shaken by their enemies, whilst they themselves, keeping alive the memory of all the wrongs they had to suffer, made the ranks of their foes tremble with fear before them.

11. Then in that fierce fight, the naturally modest Pandava warriors, under the influence of animosity and urged on by their energy, rushed to battle reckless of their lives and desirous of slaying Drona.

12. When those heroes of immeasurable energy played in that battle, as if in a game of

dice, staking their very lives, there seemed to be a collision of iron against adamant.

13. Even the oldest men could not recollect, O monarch, of having seen or heard of such a battle before.

14. In that battle distinguished by the slaughter of heroes, the earth seemed to tremble, being oppressed with the burden of the living oceans that rushed against one another.

15. The fierce yells uttered by your troops, tossed and agitated as they had been, filling the very heavens, seemed to penetrate even to the heart of the army of the *Ajatasatru* *Yudhishtira*.

16. Meanwhile the Pandava hosts' having reached by thousands Drona who had been coursing through the field of battle became shattered and broken with the sharp shafts of the latter.

17. When those troops were thus being crushed by Drona of marvellous achievements, the generalissimo of the Pandava hosts himself encountered Drona.

18. Then we beheld the marvellous fight between Drona and the Panchala prince and my firm conviction is that battle had no parallel.

19. Then like fire burning down houses, Nila resembling a veritable fire, of which the arrows were the scintillation's, the bow the flames, began to consume the Kuru army.

20. Thereat seeing Nila consume the troops, the highly puissant son of Drona, who had long been desirous of fighting with the former, smilingly addressed these smooth words to him (Nila).

21. What do you gain, O Nila, by consuming with your arrowy flame so many of my common soldiers? Fight with me single-handed as I am; and waxing worth, do you strike me as you can.

22. Then Nila, possessed of a countenance beautiful like full-blown lotus, began to pierce with his arrows him whose body resembled a cluster of lotuses and whose eyes resembled lotus-petals.

23. Thus pierced deeply by him, Drona's son, with ten whetted and broad-headed arrows,

cut-off the bow, the standard and the umbrella of his adversary.

24. Then jumping down from his car, Nila, armed with an excellent sword and buckler, desired to sever from Ashvatthaman's trunk his head, like a bird (bearing away its prey in its clutches).

25. Thereat, O sinless one, Drona's son with a broad-headed shaft smilingly severed from Nila's trunk his head graced with a fine nose and decked with ear-rings and resting on elevated shoulders.

26. Then Nila, whose countenance resembled in splendour the full moon, whose eyes were like petals of lotuses, whose stature was tall, whose complexion was like that of the lotus, thus slain, fell down on the earth.

27. After Nila of furious energy had been thus slain by the preceptor's son, the host of the Pandavas, was greatly agitated with grief.

28. Then, O sire, all the mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host began to think, "How indeed, would the son of Vasava (Arjuna) be able to save us from our foes.

29. When that heroic and mighty warrior is engaged in the southern part of the field in crushing the enemies' troops and in slaughtering the remnant of the Samshaptaka and the Narayana troops.

## CHAPTER 32

### (SAMSHAPATAKA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The terrible carnage

#### Sanjaya said

1. Vrikodara could not tolerate that slaughter of his own troops. He therefore, wounded Balhika with sixty and Karna with ten shafts.

2. Thereupon Drona, desirous of taking his life out of him pierced him in all his vital parts, with whetted shafts of exceeding sharpness, all coursing in straight lines.

3. Once more, desirous of giving Bhima no respite, Drona stuck twenty-six arrows, all

resembling fire in touch and venomous serpents in fierceness, on the former. Then again Karna pierced him with twelve and Ashvatthaman with seven arrows.

4. King Duryodhana also covered him with six arrows. The highly puissant Bhimasena also pierced them in return.

5. He pierced Drona with fifty shafts and Karna with ten arrows and Duryodhana with twelve and Drona's son with eight swift-coursing arrows.

6-7. Then uttering a loud war-cry, he engaged himself in battle. In that fight in which the warriors fought heedless of their lives and in which death seemed to be the common lot of all. Ajatasatru (Yudhishthira) urged on his troops to the rescue of Bhima. Those troops then approached Bhimasena of infinite prowess.

8-9. The, Yuyudhana and others, the twin sons of Madri by Pandu and other car-warriors headed by Bhima, assembled and united together and wrought up with rage, all foremost of men, fell upon Drona's division protected by many foremost archers, desirous of breaking and shattering it.

10. Then that foremost of car-warriors namely Drona, received unflinchingly those highly puissant heroic car-warriors, all masters in the art of fighting.

11. Then your troops, disregarding their kingdoms and the fear of death, encountered those of the Pandavas. Horse soldiers slew horse-soldiers and car-warriors slew car-warriors.

12. There were then veritable showers of lances and swords; and the battle was fought with battle-axes. Dreadful sword-fights producing great carnage were also fought.

13. The battle was all the more dreadful in consequence of the tremendous rush of elephants against elephants. Some fell down from the backs of the elephants, some from the backs of the horses, topsy turvy.

14. Others fell down, O sire, from their chariots, with hearts torn open with arrows. In that terrible crush as men fell down deprived of their armours.

15. Elephants crushed their heads having attacked them on the breast. Elsewhere might be seen elephants crushing other excellent prostrate warriors.

16. Many elephants (as they fell down) striking the earth with their tusks, were seen to mangle there with large bodies of car-warriors. With darts sticking to their trunks, many other.

17-18. Elephants careered through the field crushing men by hundreds. Some elephants again pressed and squeezed many fallen men, steeds, car-warriors and elephants, all furnished with iron armours, as if they were merely thick stalk or reeds. On beds of arrows furnished with vulture feathers, many rulers of men.

19. Endued with modesty, laid themselves down with pain, their hour having come. In that battle father rushing on his car, slew his own son;

20. Son also, out of confusion and disregardful of anything, fell upon his own father. Axels of cars were shattered, standards were torn to pieces, umbrellas were felled to the earth;

21. Dragging halves of broken yokes, horses began to ran away. Arms with swords in their grasps fell, as also heads graced with ear-rings.

22. Chariots, dashed against the earth by powerful elephants, became splintered into pieces. Wounded severely by elephants, steeds fell down with their riders.

23. Then there raged a fierce and dreadful fight in which nobody paid any regard to others. "Alas! Oh father " Oh son! Where are you, O friend! stay! Where do you run to!

24. Smite! Catch! Slay!" These and many other exclamations, mingled with loud laughter's, roars and war-cries, were uttered and heard there.

25. The blood of men and steeds and elephants mingled together, flowed in one current and caused the Earth's dust to disappear and inspired terror into the hearts of the cowards.

26. In that fight one hero having his car-wheel entangled with that of another and being too near to use any other weapon, smashed the other's head with a mace.

27. In that battle where there was no chance of safety, heroes, desirous of each other's safety, dragged one another by the head and fought with one another with blows, teeth and nails.

28. Upraised arms, with swords in grasp, of some heroes, were severed; the arms of others with bows or hook or arrows in grasp, were also lopped off.

29. Here one warrior loudly challenged another; there, another turned away his face from the field. Another lopped off from the trunk the head of another who happened to encounter him.

30. Some rushed to fight uttering fierce yells. Some became inspired with terror at the sound. Some slew with his sharp arrows a friend or a foe.

31. Here an elephant huge like the summit of a hill, slain by a lance, lay on the field, like a flat island in a river during the summer season.

32. There like a mountain with rellets flowing down its breasts, stood an elephant exuding the temporal juice, having crushed with its huge legs a car-warrior together with his steeds and charioteer.

33. Many weak-hearted cowards were overwhelmed with swoons at the sight of heroes accomplished in the use of weapons fighting with one another, literally bathed in blood.

34. Everything rolled in confusion and nothing could be distinguished. Soldiers enveloped in dust fought on regardless of one another.

35. Then the generalissimo of the Pandava troops saying "This is the opportune moment" quickly led the Pandavas ever endowed with activity, to the battle.

36. At his command the mighty-armed Pandavas, like a flock of swans descending on the breast of a lake, came down upon Drona's car, spreading slaughter as they proceeded.

37. Then near the chariot of the invincible Drona, loud cries of "Seize," "Do not fly," "Be not afraid" "Cut to pieces" were heard.

38. Thereupon Drona, Kripa, Karna, Drona's son, king Jayadratha, the two princes

from Avanti, viz., Vinda and Anuvinda and Shalya, checked that assault (of the Pandava troops).

39. Those irresistible and invincible warriors, the Panchalas and the Pandavas, all inflamed with righteous indignation, did not avoid Drona, though afflicted with showers of arrows.

40. Thereat Drona, excited to the highest pitch of fury, spread a great carnage among the ranks of the Chedis, the Panchalas and the Pandavas, by means of arrows which he discharged by hundreds.

41. Then, O sire, the twang of his bow and the slap of his palms were heard in all the points of compass, resembling the rumble of thunder and inspiring terror into the hearts of many a man.

42. At this juncture, the ever-victorious Arjuna, having vanquished the numerous host of the Samshaptakas, came to the spot where Drona had been crushing the Pandava ranks.

43. Then Phalguna showed himself in that part of the field, after having vanquished and slain the Samshaptakas and crossed many a lake whose waters were constituted by gore and whose mighty eddies were constituted by the numerous shafts.

44. Then we beheld the standard, bearing the emblem of the ape, of that one of illustrious renown and equal to the sun in effulgence, shine on that part of the field.

45. Having dried up the Samshaptaka ocean with his weapons that constituted his rays, that son of Pandu then looking like the sun during the dissolution period at the end of a Yuga, began to scorch the Kaurava ranks.

46. Like the comet risen at the end of a Yuga burning every creature. Arjuna then began to blast with the power of his weapons the Kuru hosts.

47. Pierced by him with thousands of shafts, elephant-riders, horse-soldiers and car-warriors, fell down on the earth, with hair dishevelled and bodies mangled with arrow-wounds.

48. Some uttered distressful cries, some emitted loud roars; others again struck by the shafts of Pritha's son, fell down deprived of life.

49. Remembering the duties of a warrior, Arjuna then desisted from slaying those among the hostile warriors who were falling or fallen or those who turned away from the field of battle.

50. The Kuru warriors then, deprived of their cars and filled with wonder and with their faces turned away from the field of battle, began to utter cries of "Oh"! and "Alas" and called upon Karna saying "O Karna, O Karna."

51. The son of Adhiratha then hearing those distressful cries of those who deserved his help, proceeded to face Arjuna, saying at the same time, "Be not afraid, O warriors."

52. Then that foremost of the Bharata combatants, that delighter of all the Bharata heroes, viz., Karna, that foremost of all conversant with the use of weapons, invoked into existence the *Agneya* weapon.

53. Dhananjaya however with the network of arrows woven by himself, repulsed the arrowy downpour of that hero (Karna) of bright shafts and effulgent bow.

54. Similarly the son of Adhiratha repulsed the arrows of Arjuna of blazing energy. Thereafter the former repulsing the weapons of the latter with his own weapons and discharging myriad's of shafts, uttered loud roars.

55. Meanwhile Dhrishtadyumna, Bhima and Satyaki, these mighty car-warriors, having approached Karna, pierced him each with three straight-flying arrows.

56. Thereupon Radha's son, having at first resisted Arjuna's weapons by his arrowy showers, cut-off the bow of those three warriors with three darts.

57. Then with their bows severed, those warriors with three darts appeared like serpents without venom. Then from their respective cars, hurling lances at the foe, they uttered loud war-cries.

58. Then those mighty and blazing lances hurled with fury by the arms of those heroes, coursed swiftly towards Adhiratha's son, looking like so many (flying) snakes.

59. Severing each of those lances with three swift-coursing arrows and speeding at the same time myriad's of shafts at Arjuna the highly puissant Karna uttered a loud roar.

60. Then Arjuna also piercing Radha's son with seven swift-flying arrows, slew the younger brothers of Karna with three shafts of great sharpness.

61. Thereafter Pritha's son having slain Satrunjaya also with six straight-going arrows, speedily deprived Vitapa of his head with lances, as the latter stood on his chariot.

62. Thus those three uterine brothers of Suta's son were slain by the singly-handed diadem-decked Arjuna even before the very eyes of all the Dharitarashtras.

63. Then like second son of Vinata, Bhima jumping down from his chariot, slew with his sword of excellent make five and ten warriors of Karna's party.

64. Then once more ascending his car and taking up a bow he pierced Karna with ten and his horses and charioteer with five shafts.

65. Dhrishtadyumna also grasping an excellent sword and an effulgent buckler, slew Chandravarman and Vrihatskshatra the ruler of the Nishadha.

66. Thereafter mounting on his chariot and taking up a bow, the prince of the Panchalas pierced Karna with seventy-three shafts uttering loud shouts all the while.

67. the grandson of Sini, of splendour equal to that of Indra himself, also grasping a fresh bow pierced the son of Suta with sixty-four arrows and uttered a roar like that of a lion.

68. Then with two well-directed broad-headed shafts he burst open Karna's bow; and once more he pierced Karna on the arms and breast with three shafts.

69. Thereupon king Duryodhana, Drona and Jayadratha, with a combined effort, rescued Radha's son who had been sinking in the ocean of Satyaki.

70. Then hundreds of foot-soldiers, horsemen, elephant-riders and car-warriors, all accomplished in smiting, rushed to the rescue of

Karna, inspiring terror into the hearts of the enemy.

71. Dhrishtadyumna, Bhima, Subhadra's son and Arjuna and Nakula and Sahadeva, all then protected Satyaki in that conflict.

72. Thus for the destruction of all the bowmen, raged the awful battle between your warriors and those of the enemy, in which everybody fought reckless of his life.

73. Foot-soldiers, car-warriors, elephant-riders and horse-men were engaged with elephant-riders horse-men, car-warriors and foot-soldiers; car-warriors fought with elephants, infantry and cavalry and cars and infantry were engaged with cars and elephants.

74. Horses were seen engaged with horses, elephants with elephants, car-warriors with car-warriors and foot-soldiers with foot-soldiers.

75. Thus raged between those high-souled and fearless warriors, the fierce fight marked by carnage, enhancing the delight of the flesh-eating animals and adding the population of Death's domain.

76. In that battle many were the car-warriors, elephant-riders and foot-soldiers and horse-men that were slain. Elephants were crushed by their rivals. Car-warriors with weapons held over head, were slain by car-warriors and horse-men by horse-men and large bodies of infantry by infantry.

77. Elephants were slain by car-warriors, steeds were crushed by excellent elephants; men were killed by horses and horses again by excellent car-warriors. With their eyes, tongues and teeth protruding out and with their armours and ornaments shattered, many a creatures lay on the earth deprived of the vital spark.

78. Others, again, of dreadful aspect being slain by others armed with various and excellent weapons, fell down on the earth; they then were pressed inside the earth being trod upon by elephants and steeds and being crushed and mangled by sharp edges of car-wheels.

79. When that dreadful destruction of beings went on enhancing the joys of beasts and birds of prey and cannibals, mighty heroes, inflamed with wrath, coursed over the field of battle smiting one another with impetuosity.

80. When the ranks of both the armies were greatly thinned, the combatants, with bodies bespattered with blood, looked at one another. At that moment, O Bharata, the orb of the day disappearing below the horizon, the two armies slowly returned to their respective encampments.

### CHAPTER 33

#### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)

#### The consultation for forming the circular array

##### Sanjaya said

1. Ourselves being at first broken and routed by Arjuna of immeasurable prowess and also the vow of Drona being unfulfilled in consequence of Yudhishtira being well guarded.

2. All your warriors, with their armours shattered, were then regarded as vanquished. Soiled with dust and sorely pierced with anxiety, they began to look askance at all the ten quarters of heaven.

3. Withdrawing from the field with the consent of Pharadvaja's son, after being vanquished by their adversaries of unerring aim and humiliated by them in the conflict.

4. They heard, as they retired, the infinite virtues of Phalguna extolled by all beings, as also of the friendship of Keshava for Arjuna spoken of by all.

5-6. Then they passed the night like doomed men, in silence and in anxious contemplation. At the break of day, king Duryodhana depressed at the aggrandisement of the enemy, inflamed with rage, addressed these words, before all those warriors to Drona, out of affection and affectionate angers, "O you learned in the art of speaking.

7. Indubitably, O foremost of the twice-born ones, you have taken us to be men doomed to be slaughtered for your sake, in as much as today getting Yudhishtira near you, you did not seize him.

8. The enemy whom you would seize in battle could not escape you if once you get him within sight, even if he be protected by the immortals themselves.

9. Pleased with me, you accorded me, a boon; but now you seem unwilling to verify your words. Noble men do never falsify the hopes of those who are devoted to them."

10. Thus spoken to, Bharadvaja's son felt greatly ashamed; then he thus addressed the king in reply - "It behoves you not to entertain such an uncharitable opinion regarding myself, who am ever striving to bring about your good.

11. All this universe, with all the celestials, Asuras, the Gandharvas, the Yakshas, the reptiles and the Rakshasas, is not competent enough to conquer that army (of the Pandavas) when it is protected by the diadem-decked Arjuna.

12. Except that of the three-eyed Mahadeva, whose might can avail anything against that army which number among it Govinda the world's creator and have Arjuna for its generalissimo?

13. But this, O sire, I tell you truly and this will never be false, that today I shall slay a mighty hero, the foremost among the many car-warriors of the enemy.

14. I will also form an array that will be invulnerable even to the celestials themselves. Do you, by some means or other, take Arjuna away from the field.

15. There is nothing unknown to him, nothing incapable of being achieved by him battle, he who have acquired all knowledge of warfare from different quarters."

16. After Drona had spoken in the above manner, the host of the Samshaptakas, once more challenging Arjuna led him to the southern part of the field.

17. Then there took place a battle between Arjuna and his opponents, the like of which had never been seen or heard of before.

18. Then the array formed by Drona is honoresplendent, O king and it appeared incapable of being looked at, like the midday sun shining in the meridian and scorching the world underneath.

19. Then, O Bharata, at the command of his father's eldest brother, Abhimanyu penetrated, in that battle, into that impenetrable array (of the Kurus) figuring the discus.

20. Having achieved many difficult feats and having slain thousands of warriors, Subhadra's son encountered six warriors simultaneously. At last succumbing to Dushasana's son.

21. O ruler of earth, O afflicter of your foes, he gave his life up in battle. At the death of Abhimanyu we were enraptured and the Pandavas were depressed with grief. After Subhadra's son had been slain, the troops were withdrawn by us.

#### **Dhritarashtra said**

22. Hearing of the death of the youthful son of that foremost of men (Arjuna), my heart, O Sanjaya, seems to be split up into pieces.

23. Heartless, indeed, are the duties of the Kshatriyas as specified by the law-givers, in as much as these duties even enjoin a hero, desirous of sovereignty, to shoot weapons at a mere child.

24. Describe into me, O Gavalgana's son, how did so many warriors accomplished in the use of weapons, slay that veritable child, brought up in luxury and careering (then) dauntlessly in the field?

25. Tell me, O Sanjaya, how in battle did the dauntless son of Subhadra, endued with immeasurable might sport, having penetrated into our car-division.

#### **Sanjaya said**

26. That which you ask me to describe, O foremost of kings, viz., the slaughter of Subhadra's son, I shall describe in detail, Hear, O king, attentively.

27. I shall tell you, how that hero played amidst us, having penetrated into our ranks; as also how, many irresistible heroes inspired with hopes of victory were afflicted by him.

28. Like the denizens of a wood abounding in numerous corses, creepers and trees, when encompassed by a terrible forest-conflagration, the combatants of your host were then all seized with panic.



**CHAPTER 34****(ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)–  
Continued****The construction of the circular array****Sanjaya said**

1. The five Pandavas brothers, all of fierce deeds in battle and all incapable of being overcome by fatigue as is apparent from their achievements, when aided by Krishna, could not be vanquished even by the celestials.

2. In righteousness, in deeds, in lineage, in intelligence, in renown, in fame and in prosperity—in all these virtues, there neither was nor is, nor will be, person equal to Yudhishtira.

3. King Yudhishtira is constantly in the enjoyment of heavenly bliss, in consequence of his devotion to truth, righteousness, control passions, worship of the Vipras and such other qualities.

4. The Destroyer at the end of a Yuga, the highly puissant son of Jamadagni and Bhimasena on his car, O king, these three are held to be equal (in prowess).

5. Of the wielder of Gandiva ever competent to fulfil his vows in battle, of that son of Pritha, I do see no equal on the face of the earth.

6. Devotion to the elders, secrecy of counsels, modesty, self-control, beauty of person and heroism, these six virtues are ever present in Nakula.

7. In knowledge of the *Shrutis*, in gravity, in humility, in righteousness, in personal beauty and in prowess, the heroic Sahadeva equals the two immortals viz., the twin Asvinis.

8. All those illustrious qualities that are present mostly in Krishna and in the Pandavas, all those qualities were to be seen combined in Abhimanyu.

9. Abhimanyu was equal to Yudhishtira in patience, to Krishna in conduct, to Bhima of terrible deeds in his achievements.

10. He was equal to Dhananjaya in beauty of person, prowess and scriptural knowledge and to Nakula and Sahadeva in humility.

**Dhritarashtra said**

11. O Suta, I desire to hear in detail how the invincible son of Subhadra, viz., Abhimanyu was slain in battle.

**Sanjaya said**

12. Be patient, O mighty monarch. Bear your unbearable burden of grief. I shall speak of the dreadful carnage of your relations. Now hear be attentively.

13. The circular array, O monarch, was then formed by the preceptor, in which were duly stationed kings, each equal to Indra himself.

14. At the head of the array (entrance) were stationed all the princes of the effulgence of the sun. Then there was a veritable assembly of princes.

15. All of them sword to help one another, all owned standards decked with gold; all wore red raiment's and all were decorated with crimson ornaments.

16. All of them possessed crimson flags, all had golden garlands; all were smeared with sandal-paste and other perfumed unguents and all of them wore floral garlands and fine attires.

17. In a serried file, they rushed against Krishna's nephew. desirous of fighting with him. All of them firm bowmen, then numbered no less than ten thousand strong in all.

18. Placing at their head your handsome grandson Lakshmana, they proceeded to battle, resolved to share one another's grief, emulating one another in deeds of valour.

19. Striving to outview one another's and intent on one another's good. O foremost of kings, Duryodhana was stationed in the very centre of your troops.

20. The king then was surrounded by such mighty warriors as Karna, Dushasana and Kripa, with a white umbrella held over his head, he appeared beautiful like the king of the celestials.

21. Fanned by the moving yak-tails, he appeared like the sun himself. In the very van of those troops was stationed Drona the generalissimo of the Kuru hosts.

22. There also was stationed the handsome ruler of the Sindhus, immovable like the mount Meru itself. By the side of the ruler of the Sindhus, headed Ashvatthaman.

23. Stood, O mighty monarch, your thirty sons, all resembling the celestials themselves. That gamester, the ruler of the Gandharas, Shalya and Bhurishravas.

25. These mighty car-warriors shone in the flank of the king of the Sindhus. Then raged a combat between your troops and those of the enemy, combat, that was fierce in the extreme and horripilating and in which the warriors regarded Death to be their goal.

### CHAPTER 35

#### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)–

##### Continued

#### The determination of Abhimanyu

##### Sanjaya said

1. The Parthas then led by Bhimasena marched against that invincible array of your soldiers protected by the son of Bharadvaja.

2. Then Satyaki, Chekitana, Prishata's son Dhrishtadyumna, the powerful Kuntibhoja, the mighty car-warrior Drupada.

3. The son of Arjuna, Kshatradharman, the puissant Brihat-kshatra, the ruler of the Chedis, Dhrishtaketu, the two sons of Madri, Ghatotkacha.

4. Yudhamanyu of great prowess, the unvanquished Shikhandin, the irrepressible Uttamaujas, the mighty car-warrior Virat.

5. The wrathful sons of Draupadi, the valiant son of Shishupala, the highly powerful Kekayas and the Srinjayas by thousands.

6. These and many others followed by their respective clansmen, all accomplished in the use of weapons and invincible in battle rushed with impetuosity at the son of Bharadvaja, out of a desire for battling with him.

7. The highly puissant son of Bharadvaja getting the warriors within reach dauntlessly checked them with a mighty downpour of arrows.

8. Like a mighty wave of waters checked by an immovable hill or like the swelling ocean checked by the banks, those warriors of the Pandava army were dashed back by Drona.

9. Afflicted, O king, with the shafts shot upon Drona's bow, the Pandavas could not stand in front of Bharadvaja son.

10. Then we beheld the wonderful strength of Drona's arms, in as much as, the Panchalas aided by the Srinjayas was not able to assail him.

11. Beholding then the infuriate Drona rush towards himself, king Yudhishtira reflected upon the diverse measures for resisting the former.

12. At last regarding Drona to be incapable of being checked by any one else, Yudhishtira placed that unbearable heavy burden on the son of Subhadra.

13. Then addressing that slayer of hostile heroes, namely, Abhimanyu, who was in no way inferior to the son of Vasudeva and was superior to Arjuna himself in infiniteness of prowess, king Yudhishtira said these words -

14. "O son, do you so act, that coming back, Arjuna may not have reason to reproach us. The means for breaking the circular array, is not known to any one of us.

15. O mighty-armed one, either you or Arjuna or Krishna or Pradyumna, can penetrate into the circular array. I do not find a fifth man to do it.

16. It behoves you, so, O son, O Abhimanyu, to accord the boon that your sires, your uncles and all these soldiers beg of you.

17. Quickly taking up your arms, smite down this array of Drona so that returning from the fight with the Samshaptakas Dhananjaya may not blame us."

##### Abhimanyu said

18. Desiring victory to my sires, I will, without delay, penetrate into the middle of Drona's firm and fierce and excellent array of troops in this battle.

19. My father has taught me the way to penetrate this kind of array. But I do not know how to come out of the array, if per chance some danger overtake me there.

**Yudhishtira said**

20. Pierce, O foremost of warriors, this array and create an opening for us to penetrate into it. Pursuing the very track you shall create, we will follow you.

21. Seeing you penetrate the hostile ranks, we will follow you, O sire, who are equal to Dhananjaya himself in battle, protecting you from all sides.

**Bhima said**

22. I will follow you. so also will Dhrishtadyumna and Satyaki and the Panchalas, the Kekayas, the Matsyas and the Prabhadrakas.

23. When the array will once be penetrated into by you, we will again and again destroy it, slaying foremost of the enemies' warriors.

**Abhimanyu said**

24. I will break through this invincible array of Drona, like an insect under the influence of anger entering into the flames.

25. I will this day achieve that feat that will redound to the good of both the families (of my father and mother). I will do what will please my sire and my maternal uncle.

26. All creatures will see the enemies' host crushed in large bodies by myself, an unaided child.

27. I will not consider myself to be begotten by Partha or born of Subhadra, if today, encountering me, anybody escapes with his life.

28. If today, on a single car I cannot cut the whole race of the Kshatriyas into eight pieces in battle, I will not regard myself as the begotten son of Arjuna.

**Yudhishtira said**

29. May your might, O son of Subhadra, increase even as you speak, in as much as you venture to break through this impenetrable array of Drona.

30. Being protected by these foremost of men, all fierce bowmen possessed of great strength, all resembling the *Sadhyas* or the *Rudras* or the *Marutas*, all who equal the *Vasus*, the fires and the *Adityas* in prowess.

**Sanjaya said**

31. Hearing those words of Yudhishtira, Abhimanyu commanded his charioteer saying -

"Quickly urge, O Sumitra, the steeds towards Drona's divisions."

**CHAPTER 36****(ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)-****Continued****The display of Abhimanyu's prowess****Sanjaya said**

1. The son of Subhadra, having heard the words of the intelligent king Yudhishtira commanded his charioteer to drive his chariot against the army of Drona.

2. Thus commanded by him with the words - "Proceed, proceed", the charioteer, O king, then replied to Abhimanyu saying -

3. "Heavy is the burden, O long-lived one, that has today been placed on you by the Pandavas. Ascertaining by your judgment as to whether you have the strength to bear it or not, you should engage in the fight.

4. The preceptor Drona, by continued labours, has acquired the excellent weapons and he is an adept in the art of warfare. You, on the other hand, have been brought up in all luxury and are unaccustomed to the toils and severities of fight."

5. Thereupon Abhimanyu, with a smile, replied to his charioteer saying - "O charioteer, who is indeed this Drona? What avails all this vast host of the Kshatriyas?

6. I would engage even with Indra on the back of his elephant Airavata and attended by the complete host of the immortals. I do not care anything for all this Kshatriyas today.

7. This host of the enemy is not competent to fight even with the sixteenth part of myself. Getting, O son of a driver, my uncle (maternal), the world-conquering Vishnu or my father, for my antagonist in battle, I will not this day be overcome with terror."

8. Thereafter Abhimanyu seeing at naught those words of his charioteer commanded him saying - "Quickly drive towards the division of Drona."

9. Then the charioteer with a heart scarcely cheerful, urged on his steeds, three years of age and decked with caparisons of gold.

10. Then urged on towards the army of Drona by Sumitra, those steeds, endued with great fleetness and, prowess, rushed, O king, against Drona himself.

11. Beholding Abhimanyu thus advance, all the warriors, headed by Drona, of the Kaurava host, advanced to meet him who was on the other hand followed by the Pandavas.

12. Then like a young lion falling upon a herd of elephants, the son of Arjuna equal to Arjuna in prowess, owning an excellent standard bearing the device of a *Karanikara* tree, clad in fine coats of mail, fearlessly rushed against Drona, out of a desire for battle.

13. Filled with delight, the warriors of Drona's division began to strike Abhimanyu as he strove to break through their ranks. Then for a moment only there reigned a confusion, that resembled the eddy that produced there where the Ganges stream flows into the waters of the ocean.

14. Then as the heroes fought on and slew one another, O king, there commenced a pell-mell and awful fight.

15. When that awful conflict raged fiercely, the son of Arjuna breaking through the enemies' array entered it even before the very eyes of Drona himself.

16. Then large bodies of elephant-riders, horse-men, car-warriors and foot-soldiers, all delighted, surrounded that mighty hero who penetrating into the enemies ranks, had already begun to smite them down.

17. With the sound of various musical instruments, with shouts and slappings of arm-pits and war-cries, with yells, leonine roars, with cries of 'Slay, slay.'

18. With a dreadful and confused din, with exclamation of Do not go, Stop, Come to me, with repeated voices saying, Here am I, come.

19. With roars of elephants, with the tinkling of ornaments, with roars of laughter, with the clatter of car-wheels and horse-hoofs,

filling the earth with all these sounds, the Kauravas warriors assailed the son of Arjuna.

20. That hero endowed with great lightness in discharging weapons and possessed of the knowledge of the vital parts of the body, swiftly and firmly shooting arrows capable of penetrating the very vitals, began to slaughter those advancing warriors of the enemy.

21. Though thus slaughtered by diverse shafts of exceeding sharpness and rendered quit helpless, yet they, in that battle, fell upon Abhimanyu like fights of insects falling upon fire.

22. Then with their bodies and their severed limbs, Abhimanyu covered the earth like a priest covering the altar with Kusha-grass during a sacrifice.

23-26. Then Arjuna's son quickly lopped off by thousands the arms of your warriors; some of these arms were protected with gloves made of iguana skin, some held bows and shafts; some grasped swords or bucklers or iron hooks and reins, some held lances and axes; some clutched maces or iron ball or spears. Some had in their grasps scimitars or crows or battle-axes; some held short darts or shafts of Kampanas; some held goads and huge conch-shells, some wielded piked lances and *Kachagrahas*, some had mallets or other kinds of missiles; some had nooses, some heavy clubs and brick-bats. All of these arms again were ornamented with bracelets and bangles and smeared with fragrant perfumes and unguents.

27. Then covered with those effulgent arms all bathed in the crimson laid, the field, O sire, O mighty monarch, appeared as if strewn over with five-headed serpents torn to pieces by Garuda.

28-30. Then *Phalugna's* son spread the earth with the severed heads of the enemy—heads graced with beautiful noses and countenances and tresses of hair and without blotches and adorned with ear-rings; heads from which blood flowed copiously and in which the nether lips were bit in anger; heads that appeared like lotuses severed from their stems owing to their being decked with beautiful

garlands and tiaras and turbans and pearls and gems and owing to their being possessed of the splendour of the sun or the moon; heads that laved with fragrant perfumes could speak sweet and salutary words, when the vital spark was in them.

31-33. Then, O Bharata, Arjuna's son careered in all directions over the field, having shattered with his arrows, cars, equipt with all the necessities of war and looking like the vapoury edifices in the air having shafts in front and excellent bamboo poles and looking beautiful with standards mounted on them. They were all deprived of their *janghas*, axels, perriferries and Dascnas, wheels, standards and terraces; the implements of war in them were all splintered into pieces; the precious clothes that covered them were all blown away and warriors on those cars, were slain by thousands.

34-35. Then again with arrows of keen points and edges he cut down the enemy's elephants, with their riders, standards hooks, banners, quivers, armours, girths, neck-ropes, caparisons, blankets, bells, trunks; and also the foot-soldiers that guarded those elephants from the back.

36-39. Numerous steeds of the Vanayu the Lilly, the Kamboja and the Balhika breed with tails, ears and eyes fixed and motionless, endued with great fleetness, well-broken, ridden by accomplished warriors armed with swords and spears, were seen to be deprived of the fine ornaments of their heads as also of their fine tails; they were deeply pierced and lay covering the field. Their tongues and their eyes were fixed and their livers and entrails were drawn out; their riders had been slain; their bells torn and they enhanced the delight of flesh-eating animals. Their armours and other leathern fences were cut open and they lay weltering in the urine and excreta they themselves had discharged. Thus slaughtering your steeds and elephants, Abhimanyu appeared highly beautiful.

40. Achieving, single-handed, these most difficult of feats, like the incomprehensible Vishnu in the days of old, Abhimanyu crushed your army consisting of three kinds of forces.

41. Even like the three-eyed Deity of infinite prowess crushing the Asura host. In that battle, the son of Arjuna having achieved feats incapable of being achieved by the enemy.

42-43. Began to break through your infantry divisions on all sides. Thus then beholding the army mangled with sharp arrows of the single-handed son of Subhadra like the army of the Asuras mangled by Skanda, your sons looked vacantly at all the ten points of the compass.

44. Their mouths became parched up; their eyes rolled; their persons were covered with drops of perspiration. Desponding to conquer their antagonist, they exerted themselves in flying away from the field.

45-46. Desirous of saving their lives, they called out one another by their appellation and family-names. Forsaking on the field their wounded fathers, sons, brothers, friends and relations, they strove to fly away from the field urging the horses and elephants that carried them to the top of their speed.

## CHAPTER 37

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The display of Abhimanyu's prowess

##### Sanjaya said

1. Then beholding his army routed Subhadra's son of immeasurable energy, king Duryodhana worked up the highest pitch of fury, himself proceeded against the former.

2. Then seeing the king turn back upon Subhadra's son in battle, Drona addressed the warriors saying "Save the king.

3. The highly puissant Abhimanyu is slaying even before our very eyes, every one he is aiming at. Assail him and be not afraid; and rescue the king of the Kurus."

4. Thereupon grateful, mighty and friendly warriors, ever attended with victory though inspired with fears, yet surrounded your heroic son in order to rescue him.

5-6. Drona and Drona's son, Kripa, Karna, Kritavarman and Subala's son, Brihadbala, the

ruler of the Madras, Bhuri, Bhurishravas and Shala, Paurava and Vrishasena, all shooting sharp arrows, covered Subhadra's son with thick downpour of arrows.

7. Then thus confounding the latter, they rescued Duryodhana. But Arjuna's son did not tolerate this snatching away of the monarch from his very mouth.

8. Compelling those mighty car-warriors with their horses and charioteer to turn their faces away from the field of battle, by means of his arrowy downpour, the son of Subhadra sent up a loud war-cry.

9. Hearing that war-cry of his, resembling the roar of a lion desirous of prey, the warriors of your army headed by Drona and inflamed with rage did not brook it.

10. Completely surrounding Abhimanyu with their host of cars, your warriors O sire, began to shoot at him myriads of arrows of diverse description all falling in thick showers.

11. But your grandson, with his own sharp arrows severed all these shafts even when the latter were coursing through the sky; in return also he pierced your warriors; indeed that feat then appeared wonderful.

12. Thereupon your warriors, excited with wrath in consequence of being wounded with shafts of the touch of fire and desirous of slaying the unretreating son of Subhadra, surrounded him on all sides.

13. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, with his arrows that served the purpose of banks, Arjuna's son held in check the agitated ocean that was then identified with the vast number of your troops.

14. None among those heroes, viz., Abhimanyu on one side and all your warriors on the other, who were then fighting with and slaying one another, turned away from the field of battle.

15-16. Thus when that awful and terrible combat raged fiercely, Dussaha pierced Abhimanyu with nine arrows, Dushasana pierced him with twelve, Kripa and the son of

Saradvata with three, Drona with seventeen arrows, all resembling so many snakes of virulent poison.

17-18. Vivinshati pierced him with seventy Kirtavarman with seven, Brihadbala with eight and Ashvatthaman with seven arrows, Bhurishravas wounded him with three arrows and the king of the Madras with six swift-coursing shafts. Shakuni pierced him with a couple of shafts and king Duryodhana with three.

19. Abhimanyu, on the other hand, O mighty monarch, pierced each of them with three straight-flying arrows, displaying his prowess and appearing to dance all the while with his bow in hand.

20. Then Abhimanyu, enraged in consequence of your sons seeking to terrify him displayed his marvellous might that he had acquired through his culture and practices.

21. Then borne by his well-trained steeds possessed of the fleetness of Garuda or of the wind and perfectly obedient to the behests of him who held their reins, Abhimanyu quickly repulsed the heir of Ashmaka. Standing before him, the prosperous and mighty son of Ashmaka, pierced him with ten arrows, saying all the while, stay stay.

22. Then with ten arrows Abhimanyu smilingly cut down to the earth, his charioteer, horses, standards, arms, bow and head.

23. When the heroic ruler of the Ashmakas had thus been slain by the son of Subhadra, the whole of his army being completely agitated, took to flight.

24-26. Thereupon Karna, Kripa, Drona, Drona's son, the ruler of the Gandharas, Shala, Shalya Bhurishravas, Kratha, Somadatta, Vivinshati, Vrishasena, Sushena, Kundabhedhin, Pratardana, Vrindaraka, Lalitha, Prabahu, Dirghalochana and king Duryodhana, all excited with rage, covered him with a shower of arrows.

27. Thus deeply pierced with straight-flying arrows by those mighty bowmen, Abhimanyu. Sped at Karna an arrow capable of penetrating through his armour and body.

28. That swift-flying dart piercing through Karna's armour and body. Entered, O king, the earth, like a snake entering its hole in an ant-hill.

29. Pained to the extreme in consequence of that deep wound and over-whelmed with a swoon. Karna trembled in battle like a hill during an earth-quake.

30. Then with other sharp arrows the valiant Abhimanyu inflamed with rage, slew Sushena, Dirghalochana and Kundabhedhin.

31. Thereafter Karna pierced him in return, with twenty-five long shafts. Ashvatthaman pierced him with twenty and Kritavarman with seven arrows.

32. Then that enraged grandson of Shakra, with his body struck all over with arrows. Looked, as he careered through the forces, like the destroyer himself with noose in hand.

33. Then he covered Shalya who was standing near him with a thick shower of arrows; and then that mighty-armed hero sent up a loud war-cry, that inspired terror into your troops.

34. Pierced with straight arrows capable of penetrating to the vitals shot by Abhimanyu accomplished in all weapons. Shalya squatted down on the terrace of his car, O king and fainted away.

35. Beholding him thus deeply pierced by the illustrious son of Subhadra, all the troops began to fly away, even before the very eyes of the son of Bharadvaja.

36. Beholding that mighty-armed hero Shalya, covered with gold-winged shafts, your troops fled like herds of deer frightened by the lion.

37. Then Abhimanyu, extolled by the ancestral manes, the celestials and Charanas and Siddhas and also by various kinds of beings inhabiting the earth, with eulogies about his heroism and bravery in battle, appeared blazing like fire fed with clarified butter.

## CHAPTER 38

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The display of Abhimanyu's prowess

##### Dhritarashtra said

1. When warriors of my army then tried to resist the son of Arjuna in battle when he was thus crushing my troops with his straight-flying arrows?

##### Sanjaya said

2. Hear, O king, of the wonderful achievements of the prince (Abhimanyu), when he was engaged in breaking through the car-division protected by Bharadvaja's son himself.

3. Seeing Shalya the ruler of the Madras worsted in battle by Subhadra's son with his arrows, his younger brother, inflamed with wrath proceeded to battle, showering shafts in all directions.

4. He shot ten arrows, injured Abhimanyu with horses and charioteer killed, challenge in a loud voice and said - O! stay there undeviated.

5-8. Thereupon the light-handed son of Arjuna, with his arrows, cut-off his antagonist's head and neck, arms and legs, four steeds, umbrella, standard and charioteer; his triple bamboo pole fixed to the car, his car-terrace, car-wheels, yokes, shafts, quivers, car-bottom, his banner, his implements of war with which the car was furnished and also the two persons engaged in protecting his car-wheels. No one was then able to discern him (in consequence of the swiftness of his movement). Shalya's brother then pierced through his ornaments and attires, fell down dead on the ground, like a mighty mountain-crest broken by the overwhelming vehemence of a tempest.

9. His followers then seized with panic, fled in all directions. Beholding that feat achieved by Arjuna's son, all creatures were filled with delight and they applauded him, O Bharata, saying, "Well-done" Well-done".

10. When Shalya's brother had thus been killed, many of his soldiers, loudly proclaiming their names, places of residence and families, rushed against Arjuna's son, being excited with

rage and wielding in their arms various kinds of weapons.

11-13. All those warriors were possessed of great strength, some of them rushed on their car, others on steeds, others on elephants and some on foot. With the whizz of their arrows, with the loud clatter of their car-wheels, with war-cries, with roars, whoops and exclamations, with leonine roars and cries with the twang of their bow-strings and with many other kinds of sound-seeking to terrify Arjuna's son, they rushed at him saying, "You shall not escape us today with your life, even if it cost us our own lives."

14. Hearing them thus speak, the son of Subhadra smilingly pierced those with shafts who had smitten him first.

15. Holding diverse kinds of weapons, all beautiful and swift-going, to the gaze of the people, Arjuna's heroic son battled with them mildly.

16. Then, in no way less than Krishna and Arjuna, Abhimanyu began to display all those weapons he had received from Vasudeva's son and Arjuna.

17. Setting at naught the heavy burden he had drawn upon himself and dismissing all fears away, Abhimanyu then scattered his arrows (in all directions). No interval could then be noticed between his taking up and shooting the shafts.

18. Only his bow drawn to the fullest stretch could then be seen blazing like the burning disc of the sun in the autumnal sky.

19. Then, O Bharata, there were heard the twangs of his bow and the slapping of his palms, resembling the rumble of rain-clouds surcharged with the thunder during the rains.

20. Bashful, unenvious, handsome and devoted to the elders, the son of Subhadra, out of respect for his heroic opponents fought on with arrows and other weapons,

21. Mildly; but gradually he grew fierce, O king, like the blazing autumnal Sun at the end of the rainy seasons.

22. Then like the lustrous orb shooting his rays, he, excited with wrath, shot hundreds of

diverse kinds of arrows, all whetted on stone and furnished with golden wings.

23-24. Then with horse-shoe-headed arrows, calf-tooth-headed shafts, with *Vipatas*, with long shafts with crescent-headed arrows and with *Anjalikas*, that illustrious warrior. Began to mangle the car-division of your army, even before the eyes of Bharadvaja's son. Thereupon the army afflicted with his shafts turned its face away from the field of battle.

## CHAPTER 39

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The encounter between Dushasana and Abhimanyu

##### Dhritarashtra said

1. Upon hearing that Subhadra's son, single-headed as he was, held in bay the entire army of my son, my heart, O Sanjaya, is simultaneously filled with shame and delight.

2. O son of Gavalgani, relate to me in detail the fight with prince Abhimanyu, that seems to be much like that between Skanda and the Asuras.

##### Sanjaya said

3. Yes; I will tell you all about the dreadful carnage, the dreadful battle that was fought between the one and the many.

4. Then mounted upon his car and exerting his best, Abhimanyu began to shower shafts upon your warriors, all subduers of their foes, mounted on cars and exerting to the best of their might.

5-6. Roving like a circle of fire, he then struck his arrows of Drona, Karna, Kripa, Shalya, Drona's son, Bhoja, Brihadbala, Duryodhana, Somadatta's son, the valiant Shakuni and various other kings and princes and diverse kind of troops.

7. With his excellent weapons slaying his foes, the highly puissant son of Subhadra, endued with fierce energy, was then seen, O Bharata, on all directions.



8. Beholding those feats of Subhadra's son of immeasurable prowess, your troops trembled repeatedly.

9-10. Thereupon the highly wise and valiant son of Bharadvaja, with his eyes blooming forth in delight, addressing Kripa quickly said, beholding then Abhimanyu proficient in battle he said these words of Kripa, O Bharata, thereby seeming to pierce the very vitals of your sons.

11-12. Drona said- "Yonder advances the youthful son of Subhadra at the head of the Parthas, imparting delight to all his friends, to king Yudhishtira, to Nakula, to Sahadeva, to Bhimasena the son of Pandu, to his friends, relatives, kinsmen and to all who are passive and neutral spectators.

13. I do not regard any other bowman equal to him in fight. If he wills, he can annihilate this vast host; but why does he not wish it?

14-15. Thereupon hearing the words of Drona that betrayed how delighted he was (at Abhimanyu's feat), your son enraged with Abhimanyu, smiled looking at Drona. Thereafter, king Duryodhana addressing Karna, king Balhika, Dushasana, the ruler of the Madras and many other mighty car-warriors present, said -

16. "The preceptor of all venerable Kshatriyas, this one foremost of all those conversant with Brahma, does not, out of affection, wish to slay the son of Arjuna.

17. None can escape him in battle, no, not even the Destroyer himself, if he comes as an antagonist. What then, O friends, shall we say of a mortal! I say this forsooth.

18. He spares the son of Arjuna for he is his pupil. Pupils, their sons and grandsons, are ever dear to the righteous people.

19. Thus protected by Drona Abhimanyu is prizing his valour highly. Indeed he is a fool proud of himself. Crush him without delay."

20. Thus spoken to, O king, they rushed against the son of Subhadra the daughter of the Satvata race, all inspired with wrath and a desire to slay the latter, before the very eyes of Bharadvaja's son.

21. Then that foremost of the Kurus, viz., Dushasana, having heard the words of Duryodhana, addressed these words to him in reply :-

22. "I tell you, O mighty monarch, I will slay this one before the very eyes of the sons of Pandu and at the sight of the Panchalas themselves.

23. Today, like the Rahu devouring the maker of the day, I will devour the son of Subhadra." Then raising his voice, Dushasana once more spoke to the Kuru kings thus -

24. "Hearing that the son of Subhadra has been slain by me, the two Krishnas, both braggards, will surely go to the regions of the departed, leaving this world of animate beings.

25. Then it is evident also, that hearing of the death of these latter, the other sons of Pandu, with all their allies and friends, will give up their lives in the course of a single day, out of despair.

26. It seems therefore, that this one enemy of yours being slain, all the rest of them will be destroyed. Wish me well, O king, even I will slay this your enemy.

27. Having thus spoken, O king, your son Dushasana waxing wroth and sending up a loud war cry, rushed at Subhadra's son, covering him at the same time with a shower of arrows.

28. Then, O subduer of your foes, beholding your wrathful son advance furiously towards himself, Abhimanyu wounded him, with twenty-six arrows of exceeding sharpness.

29. Then like an elephant with its temples rent, Dushasana infuriate with rage, fought on with Abhimanyu the illustrious son of Subhadra.

30. Then those two heroes well-versed in the art of driving cars, fought on describing beautiful circles, right and left, with their ears.

31. The combatants then set up a loud din, with the sounds of their Pandavas *Mridangas Dundubhis, Krakachas*, mighty *Anakas, Bheris* and *Jharjharas*, mingled with their war-cries, such as is produced by the great reservoir of saline water.

**CHAPTER 40****(ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)-  
Continued****The defeat of Karna and Dushasana**

**Sanjaya said**

1. Then the highly intelligent Abhimanyu with his body mangled with arrow-wounds smilingly addressing his antagonist Dushasana stationed before him, spoke these words.

2. "It is by good luck that today I find before me that vain warrior of cruel deeds and lost righteousness who ever brays loudly in his own applause.

3-4. In as much as in the midst of the assembly of courtiers and at the very hearing of king Dhritarashtra, you pierced the very virtuous king Yudhishtira with harsh words and in as much depending on the unfair game at dice and on the skill of Shakuni therein, you, intoxicated with joy, addressed many wild words to Bhima.

5-7. In consequence of all these acts and in consequence of the wrath of all those illustrious heroes, the present fate has over-taken you. O wicked-minded one, to you now reap the fatal fruits of your robbery of other peoples' possessions, of your wrathful temperaments, of your hatred for peace, of your covetousness, of your ignorance, harm-fullness and persecution of others, as also of depriving my sires, all fierce bowmen, of their kingdom and of your own unrighteousness. This day before the eyes of all these warriors I will chastise you with my arrows.

8. This day I will free myself from the burden of anger I bear against you, as also from the debt I owe to my sires and to the angry Krishna, who ever desire your death.

9. Today, O descendant of the Kuru race, I will in battle pay off the debt I owe to Bhima; you shall not this day escape me with life, provided you do not abandon the fight.

10. Having thus spoken, that mighty-armed hero, that slayer of hostile heroes, fixed on his bow-string an arrow, endued with the effulgence of Yama, Fire or the Windgod and calculated to bring about Dushasana's death.

11. Flying towards Dushasana's breast, that arrow pierced his shoulder-joint up to the very bones, like a snake piercing into an ant hill.

12. Then again he struck Dushasana with twenty-five arrows that resembled fire in their touch and were shot from his bow drawn back even to his very ears (i.e. fully).

13. Thus deeply pierced and painted to the extreme, Dushasana squatted down on the terrace of his chariot and, O mighty monarch, he became unconscious in a swoon.

14. Thereupon his charioteer quickly carried away from the field the unconscious Dushasana who had been sorely afflicted by Abhimanyu's arrows.

15. The Pandavas, the sons of Draupadi and Virat and the Kekayas and the Panchalas, beholding that act of Subhadra's son sent up a loud roar like that of a lion.

16. Then filled with joy, the troops of the Pandavas struck up numerous musical instruments of various description and shape, from all sides.

17. Beholding that feat achieved by Subhadra's son, they were amazed. Then seeing their most implacable and arrogant adversary thus worsted,

18-21. The five mighty car-warriors, viz., the five sons of Draupadi bearing on their standards as device the images of Yama, Maruta, Indra and the Asuras, as also Satyaki, Chekitana, Dhristadyumna Sikhandin, the Kekaya brothers, Dhristaketu and the Matsyas, the Panchalas and the Srinjayas and the Pandavas, were all enraptured and then headed by Yudhishtira, they rushed to battle desirous of breaking through Drona's division.

22. Then there commenced a fierce battle between the foe and your troops, all unretreating heroes, bent on achieving victory.

23. Thus, O king, when the awful battle raged furiously, Duryodhana addressing Radha's son said these words -

24. Behold the heroic Dushasana worsted by Abhimanyu- he who had been ere now slaying and scorching the foe like the sun himself.

25. Yonder rushes the infuriate Pandavas, looking like so many mighty lions, with

weapons uplifted, to the rescue of Subhadra's son.

26. Thereupon inflamed with wrath Karna ever bent on doing good to your son, covered the invincible Abhimanyu with many sharp arrows.

27. Then as if in contempt, the valiant Karna pierced the followers of Subhadra's son in battle with sharp shafts of excellent make.

28. Thereupon the high-souled Abhimanyu, who was longing to meet Drona himself, quickly pierced, O king, Radha's son with seventy-three shafts all whetted on stone.

29. Then there was no car-warrior save and except Drona himself who could have checked that grandson of the wielder of the thunderbolt, who had then been afflicting the mighty car-warriors sorely.

30. Thereafter displaying many excellent weapons, Karna, that most honoured of all bowmen, desirous of victory pierced Subhadra's son with hundreds of shafts. Then that puissant pupil of Rama, that foremost of all men learned in the use of weapons, began to afflict Abhimanyu who was incapable of being vanquished by the foe.

31. Though thus afflicted with showers of weapons hurled by Radha's son, yet the son of Subhadra equal to an immortal, did not flinch.

32. Thereafter having cut-off the bows of warriors, with broad-headed shafts of depressed knots all whetted on stone, Arjuna's son began to afflict Karna in return.

33. Then with arrows, shot from his bow drawn to a circle and resembling snakes of virulent poison in touch, Abhimanyu quickly cut-off Karna's umbrella, standard, horses and charioteer, smiling all the while.

34. Then Karna sped at him five shafts of straight-knots; but the son of Phalguna dauntlessly received all those arrows.

35. Then that valiant hero in a moment cutting off with a single shaft Karna's bow and standard, felled them to the ground.

36-37. Seeing Karna in such a plight his younger brother, stretching his bow with great force impetuously rushed at Subhadra's son. At

this, the Parthas sent up a loud uproar; their followers beat and blew many musical instruments; and they all applauded the sons of Subhadra.

## CHAPTER 41

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The display of Abhimanyu's prowess

##### Sanjaya said

1. Then that brother of Karna armed with a bow and stretching its string repeatedly, soon placed himself between those two high-souled car-warriors.

2. Then as if smiling he pierced the invincible Abhimanyu together with his umbrella, standard, charioteer and steeds with ten sharp arrows.

3. Then beholding Abhimanyu, who had been achieving superhuman feats after the manner of his father and grandfather, afflicted with those shafts, your warriors became enraptured.

4. Thereupon Abhimanyu smiled and bending his bow shot a winged shaft that lopped off his antagonist's head and then the latter fell down from his chariot.

5. The, O monarch, Karna was extremely pained on seeing his brother slain and overthrown like a blossoming *Karnikara* tree thrown down by the wind from the mountain top.

6. Thereafter having compelled Karna to turn back from the field with arrows furnished with *Kanka* feathers, Subhadra's son quickly assailed other mighty bowmen.

7. Then Abhimanyu possessed of fierce energy and great renown, wrought up with rage, began to break through the various division of cars, elephants, steeds and infantry.

8. Meanwhile Karna who had been afflicted by Abhimanyu with his myriads of shafts, fled away from the field of battle, being borne by fleet steeds. Your army then began to give way.

9. Then when the sky was covered with the arrows of Abhimanyu, like the flights of locusts

or thick showers of rain, O king, nothing could be distinguished.

10. Amongst all your warriors then thus slaughtered by Abhimanyu with his sharp shafts, none stayed on the field, except the ruler of the Sindhus.

11. Thereupon, that foremost of princes viz., Subhadra's son, blowing his conch fell, O foremost of the Bharatas, upon the army of Bharatas.

12. Then like fire set to work on a heap of dried grass, consuming the hostile ranks, Arjuna's son moved in circles amidst the Kaurava host.

13. Breaking through the hostile array, he began to afflict car-warriors, elephant-riders, horse-men and infantry with his great arrows; and thus made the earth impassable with headless trunks.

14. Mangled with the shafts of excellent make, shot from the bow of Subhadra's son, the Kauravas fled in fear of their lives, slaying, as they ran, their own partisans that happened to meet them.

15. Those dreadful shafts of terrible effects and touch, penetrating through car-warriors, elephants and horses, struck on the earth's surface.

16. With weapons in grasp, with finger-preservers, with maces in clutch and with *Angadas* and decked with golden ornaments, arms were seen to be strewn on the ground.

17. Arrows and bows and swords and corpses and heads with ear-rings and garlands were seen on the ground by hundreds.

18-20. Strewn over with *Upashkaras*, *Adishthanas*, long poles and with shattered *Akshasas* and broken wheels and yokes, thousands in number, with arrows, bows, swords, fallen standards; with backless bows and shafts scattered about, with the bodies of slain Kshatriyas, horses and elephants, the field of battle looking fierce soon became impassable.

21. Then as the princes were being slaughtered by Abhimanyu, they created a loud noise enhancing the apprehension of the cowards by calling one another by their names.

22. That din, O foremost of the Bharatas, filled all the points of the compass with its echo; the son of Subhadra then assailed the Kauravas host killing excellent car-warriors, steeds and elephants.

23. Then like fire set to a heap of straw, Arjuna's son began to consume his foes; and he was then seen to stand in the very centre of the Bharata troops.

24. Then surrounded as he was by our troops and covered with dust, we could not obtain sight of him, when he, O Bharata, careered through the cardinal and subsidiary directions.

25. The next moment, O Bharata, we beheld him shining like the mid-day sun and wrenching the lives out of elephants, steeds and men.

26. We then beheld, O mighty monarch, Abhimanyu afflict his foes. In that battle that grandson of Vasava viz., Abhimanyu equal to Vasava himself in prowess, shone, O mighty monarch, in the very centre of your troops.

## CHAPTER 42

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The fight between Jayadratha and the Pandavas

##### Dhritarashtra said

1. When that heroic Abhimanyu, that veritable child brought up in great luxury, proud of the strength of his arms, expert in the art of fighting, of noble blood, ready to sacrifice his life in battle.

2. Penetrated into our ranks, borne by his excellent steeds, three years old, was there any one else of the army of Yudhishtira, who then followed him?

##### Sanjaya said

3-5. Yudhishtira, Bhimasena Sikhandin, Satyaki, the twins Nakula and Sahadeva Dhrishtadyumna, Virata, Drupada with the Kekayas, Dhristaketu and the Matsyas, all inflamed with rage, rushed to battle. Then Abhimanyu's sires accompanied by his maternal uncles, all accomplished in slaying

their opponents, formed in battle-array, rushed, desirous of rescuing him through the breach he himself had created in the enemies' ranks.

6. Seeing those heroes rush to battle, all your warriors turned their faces away from the field of battle. Thereupon beholding the mighty army of your son give way, your son-in-law endowed with fierce energy, proceeded to rally them.

7. Then, O monarch, Jayadratha the royal son of the Sindhu king, checked the Parthas backed by their troops, when they tried son (Abhimanyu).

8. That mighty bowmen of great skill in archery, viz., the son of Vridhakshatra then checked, displaying his celestial weapons, the Pandavas, like an elephant playing on the low-lands.

**Dhritarashtra said**

9. I consider, O Sanjaya that a heavy burthen was then placed upon the king of the Sindhus, in as much as he had to withstanding the enraged Pandavas desirous of rescuing their son.

10. It appears to me that the Sindhu ruler was endowed with wonderful might and heroism. Tell me of the feats and heroism of that illustrious warrior.

11. What gifts did he make or what sacrifice did he accomplish or what austerities did he undergo by virtue of which he was able to resist, single-handed, the enraged sons of Pritha?

**Sanjaya said**

12. On the occasion of the abduction of Draupadi, Jayadratha was humiliated by Bhimasena. Out of a feeling of this humiliation, the king performed rigid austerities for securing desirable boons.

13. Withholding his senses from the objects pleasurable to them and suffering (patiently) the pangs of hunger and thirst, he tortured his body till his swollen veins appeared to view.

14. Chanting the eternal hymns of the Vedas, he worshipped the God Sarva (Mahadeva). Thereupon that illustrious God, ever compassionate towards his devotees, became gracious on him.

15. The god Hara revealing himself in a dream to the son of the ruler of the Sindhus, addressed him thus - "Ask the boon you like; I am pleased with you, O Jayadratha, what do you desire?"

16. Thus spoken to by Sharva (Mahadeva), king Jayadratha bowing down to him with folded palms and subdued soul, said -

17. "I desire that I may check in battle on a single car and single-handed, the Pandavas, possessed though they are of extra-ordinary prowess and energy." This was the boon which he asked from the god.

18. Thus addressed, that God of gods, spoke to Jayadratha, in the following manner - "O gentle one, I accord you the boon; save and except Dhananjaya, the son of Pritha.

19. You shall vanquish in battle the other four sons of Pandu." "So be it" said Jayadratha in answer to what the God of gods had said and then awoke from his sleep.

20. In consequence of having received this boon and through the virtue of the celestial weapon he possessed, he was competent to check the Pandava hosts, single-handed.

21. The twang of his bow-string inspired the hostile warriors with fear, filling at the same time, the hearts of your troops with joy.

22. The Kshatriyas then beholding the king of the Sindhus take upon himself the whole burden of the onset, rushed with deafening war-cries at the divisions of Yudhishtira.

## CHAPTER 43

(ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)-

Continued

**The fight between Jayadratha and the Pandavas**

**Sanjaya said**

1. You ask me, O mighty monarch, to describe the prowess of the ruler of Sindhus. I shall describe all that in detail. Hear how he fought with the sons of Pandu.

2. Excellent steeds of the Sindhu breed obedient to the behests of the charioteer and fleet as the wind itself, carried him to the field of battle.

3. He rode a chariot duly furnished with the implements of war and looking like an aerial castle. His mighty standard decked with the device of an argentine boar, appeared highly resplendent.

4. With white umbrellas, with pennons and with the yak-tails that were used to fan him, with all these emblems of royalty, he appeared beautiful like the moon in the midst of myriad of stars.

5. His iron-made car-fence embossed with pearls, diamonds and gold, appeared effulgent like the welkin bespangled with the luminaries.

6. Stretching his mighty bow and shooting numerous shafts, he filled up the Kaurava array there where Arjuna's son had created breaches.

7-9. He wounded Satyaki with three arrows, Vrikodara with eight, Dhrishtadyumna with sixty and Virata with ten and Drupada with five sharp arrows and Sikhandin with ten. He pierced the Kekayas with twenty-five, the Draupadeyas with three shafts each. Then piercing Yudhishtira with seventy arrows, he mangled the rest of his army with a mighty downpour of arrows; and that feat appeared indeed wonderful.

10. Thereupon, O king, the highly puissant son of Dharma (Yudhishtira), laughing the while, cut-off, with a sharp and well-tempered arrow the bow the ruler of the Sindhus.

11. But the latter, taking up within the twinkle of an eye another bow, pierced Pritha's son with ten shafts and the others following him, with three shafts each.

12. Beholding that light-handedness displayed by Jayadratha, Bhima, with three broad-headed shafts, once more cut-off and felled to the ground the bow, the standard and the umbrella of the former.

13. Taking up and stringing another bow, that puissant hero (Jayadratha) cut down, O sire, the standard, the bow and the steeds of Bhima.

14. Thereupon Bhima with his bow burst open, jumped down from his excellent chariot of which the steeds were slain and leapt upon the car of Satyaki like a lion leaping upon the top of a hill.

15. At this, your troops filled with delight, cried out saying 'Well done, Well done' and

they applauded that feat achieved by the Sindhu king again and again.

16. Then all creatures praised that feat of his which was nothing less than checking the enraged Pandava hosts by means of the force of his weapons.

17. The track that the son of Subhadra had marked out for the Pandavas by the numerous slain warriors and elephants, was then blockaded by the king of the Sindhus.

18. Then the Matsyas, the Panchalas, the Kekayas and the Pandavas, all these heroic warriors exerting their best, tried to follow Abhimanyu, but they could not withstand the ruler of the Sindhus.

19. Every one of your enemy who tried to penetrate through Drona's array was checked by the ruler of the Sindhus in consequence of the boon the latter had obtained from Mahadeva.

## CHAPTER 44

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The display of Abhimanyu's prowess

Sanjaya said

1. Thus when the Pandavas intent on securing victory were resisted by the Sindhu ruler, there commenced an awful fight between your warriors and those of the enemy.

2. Penetrating into your ranks, Arjuna's son invincible and of unerring aim and endued with great energy, began to agitate your troops, like a mighty whale agitating the sea.

3. Then according to their ranks, the foremost warriors of the Kauravas rushed against Subhadra's son, the subduer of foes, who has been agitating his enemies with his arrowy downpour.

4. The clash between these warriors, endued with infinite energy and scattering a shower of arrows on one side and Abhimanyu on the other, became awful.

5. Then impaled by the enemies with crowds of cars, the son of Arjuna slew the driver of Vrishasena and also cut-off the latter's bow.

6. Then again that highly powerful hero pierced Vrishasena's horses with straight-flying arrows; the latter then was carried away from the field of battle by those steeds of the fleetness of the wind.

7. At this opportunity, the charioteer of Abhimanyu drove his vehicle out of the press of hostile charioteers and then the troops filled with delight exclaimed aloud saying 'Well done, Well done.'

8. Thereupon approaching Abhimanyu who, excited with rage, had been crushing the foe with his arrows like a lion crushing other animals, Vasatiya fell upon him with great impetuosity.

9. He then covered Abhimanyu with sixty shafts all furnished with golden wings and also thus addressed him—'You shall not escape me alive in battle, so long as I am alive'.

10. Him cased in iron mail, the son of Subhadra pierced on the breast with an arrow capable of flying to a great distance; and he fell down on the earth deprived of life.

11. Beholding Vasatiya slain, the foremost of the Kshatriyas all excited with rage, surrounded, O king, your grandson, desirous of taking his life out of him.

12. They stretched their bows of different shapes, in many different ways. There-upon commenced a terrible conflict between Subhadra's son and his adversaries.

13. Then the son of Phalguna inflamed with wrath, cut-off their bows and arrows and the various limbs of their body and their heads adorned with ear-rings and garlands of flowers.

14. Then severed arms were seen on the field with fingers-protectors and grasping swords, lances, axes and bludgeons and adorned with golden ornaments.

17. With garlands of flowers and ornaments and cloths, with all standards lopped off, with armours and bucklers and golden chains and diadems and umbrellas and chamaras, with yokes and braces and shafts and axels of cars, with shattered wheels Akshas and yokes by thousands, with Arnukarshas, pennons and fallen charioteers and steeds, with broken cars,

with elephants steeds, the earth then became literally covered over.

18. Then the field of battle assumed a dreadful aspect being strewn over with many slain heroic Kshatriya rulers of many countries, who had fought for securing victory.

19. The very form of Abhimanyu could not then be discerned, as he careered through the field of battle moving in all the directions, subsidiary and cardinal.

20. His golden coat of mail and his buckler and his ornaments and his arrows and bow only were seen by us then.

21. His no one was able to cast his eyes on him (Abhimanyu). when he was slaying hostile warriors with his arrows, staying in their midst like the very sun in the heavens.

## CHAPTER 45

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The defeat of Duryodhana

#### Sanjaya said

1. Then engaged in depriving the heroes of their lives, the son of Arjuna resembled the Destroyer of all creatures snatching their lives out of them, at the time of the universal annihilation.

2. Endued with prowess equal to that of Shakra, that grandson of Shakra, namely Abhimanyu of infinite mighty, agitating your forces, appeared highly beautiful.

3. Then, O foremost of kings, entering into the very heart of the hostile army, that slayer of those best among the Kshatriyas, fell upon Satyashravas like a fierce tiger falling upon a deer.

4. When Satyashravas had thus been pounced upon, the other mighty car-warriors, with haste taking up various kinds of weapons, rushed against Abhimanyu.

5. 'I shall meet him first, I shall meet him first'—boasting in this way, those foremost Kshatriyas then encountered Arjuna's son, out of a desire for slaying him.

6. Then beholding the divisions of those rushing Kshatriyas advance towards him, Abhimanyu met them, even like a whale meeting a shoal of small fishes in the sea.

7. Just as rivers never course back from the ocean they fall in, so no one among them who did not fly, returned back with his life, after having encountered Abhimanyu.

8. Then the army began to reel like a boat on the ocean, overtaken by a mighty tempest and having its crew afflicted with fear through the violence of the wind.

9. Thereafter the mighty Rukmaratha, a son of the ruler of the Madras, dauntlessly spoke these words, with a view to inspire confidence into the hearts of the panic-struck troops.

10. O heroes, you need not fear; Abhimanyu is nothing so long as I am here. For certain, I will capture him alive (today).

11. Having thus spoken that highly puissant hero rushed upon Abhimanyu, borne on a resplendent chariot duly furnished with the implements of war.

12. Piercing Abhimanyu on the breast with three shafts, he uttered his war-cry; and then again, he pierced him on the right and the left arms with three sharp shafts each.

13. But the son of Phalguna cutting off his bow, his right and left arms and his head graced with beautiful eyes and eye-brows, soon felled them on the earth.

14. Beholding Rukshmaratha the illustrious son of Shalya, who had promised to capture alive or consume Abhimanyu, slain by this latter.

15. Many princely warriors, O king, accomplished in smiting down and formidable in battle, all friends of Shalya's son (Rukshmaratha), came upon Abhimanyu, with their standards decked with gold, raised high.

16. Then those mighty car-warriors stretching their bows huge like palmyra trees, covered the son of Arjuna on all sides with showers of arrows.

17-18. Beholding Subhadra's heroic and invincible son encountered, single-handed as he was, by many brave, youthful, irate princes

endued with skill acquired through practices and teaching and also beholding him covered with a shower of arrows (shot by his adversaries), Duryodhana became highly gratified; and thought Abhimanyu already a visitor of the mansion of Vivasvata's son (Death).

19. Within a wink's time, all those youthful princes, each shooting sharp shafts of various shapes and furnished with golden wings, intercepted the son of Arjuna from the view.

20. Then, O sire, we beheld Abhimanyu's car and driver and his standard, covered with arrows, as if by flights of locusts.

21. Thereupon like an elephant pierce deeply, the son of Arjuna, deeply pierced with those arrows, became inflamed with rage; and he then invoked into existence, the Gandharva weapon and its consequent illusions, O Bharata.

22. This weapon was secured by Arjuna from the Gandharvas Tamburu and others, through his ascetic austerities. Now Abhimanyu confounded his foes with that weapon.

23. He was then seen, O sing, sometimes as a single individual, sometimes as a hundred and sometimes as a thousand. He then moved over the field, displaying his weapons, like a circle of fire.

24. Then, O king, confounding the kings hostile to him with the illusions caused by his car, his coat of mail and his weapons, he mangled, O king, their bodies in hundred pieces.

25. The vital breaths of living creatures were then snatched out of them by his arrows; and, O king, they reached the other world when their bodies fell down on earth.

26. The son of Phalguna with sharp broad-headed shafts, cut-off their bows, their steeds, their charioteers, their standards and arms with bracelets and also their graceful heads.

27. Like a grove of mango trees, five years old and on the point of bearing fruit, laid low by the tempest those hundred princes were slain and felled by the son of Subhadra.

28. Beholding those young and delicate horses reared up with all possible care and



resembling furious snakes of virulent poison, slain by the single-headed son of Subhadra, Duryodhana became filled with fear.

29. Then beholding his car-warriors, his elephants, his steeds and foot-soldiers, smashed, the enraged Duryodhana quickly rushed at Abhimanyu.

30. For a moment only a fierce battle raged between them, which virtually remained unfinished when your son, afflicted with arrows turned away from the field of battle.

## CHAPTER 46

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The slaughter of Kratha's son

**Dhritarashtra said**

1-2. What you are saying to me, O Suta, about the fierce and awful battle between one and the many and the victory of that high-souled one, this story of the prowess of Subhadra's son is wonderful and none the less incredible. But I do not regard it altogether impossible with respect of them whose sole refuge is virtue.

3. After Duryodhana had been repulsed and the hundred princes slain, what measure was adopted by my warriors against Subhadra's son.

**Sanjaya said**

4. Their mouths were parched up and their eyes began to roll. They perspired and their hair stood erect. Desponding of conquering the enemy, they exerted their best to fly away.

5. Abandoning their slain brothers, fathers, sons, friends, relatives and kinsmen, they fled urging their elephants and steeds on.

6. Beholding then the troops thus broken, Drona and his son and Brihadbala, Kripa, Duryodhana, Karna, Kritavarman and Subala's son.

7. All these warriors excited with rage rushed against the invincible son of Subhadra. Then those warriors also, O king, were almost beat back by your grandson (Abhimanyu).

8. A single warrior only, viz., Lakshmana, brought up in luxury, versed in the use of

arrows and weapons, endued with great energy and dauntless through pride and youth, rushed against Arjuna's son.

9. Preyed upon by anxiety on account of his son, his father (Duryodhana) turned back; and other mighty car-warriors also followed Duryodhana's example.

10. These warriors all showered arrows of him (Abhimanyu), like clouds showering in torrents rains on mountains; he, in return, though single-handed, routed them like the dry and confused wind scattering masses of clouds.

11-12. Then like one infuriate elephant meeting another in the same state, Krishna's nephew encountered your grandson Lakshmana, invincible, of great personal beauty, standing near his father with his bow ready for use, endued with heroism, brought up in all luxury and resembling the son of the God or wealth.

13. Encountering Lakshmana, that slayer of hostile heroes, that son of Subhadra, was pierced on the breast and the arms with exceedingly sharp shafts.

14. Then that mighty-armed grandson of yours (Abhimanyu), O mighty monarch, excited with rage like a snake struck with a rod, addressing your other grandson (Lakshmana), thus spoke—

15. Look well on this earth, for you shall be required soon to go to another world. I will dispatch you to the abode of Death even before the very eyes of your on-looking friends.

16. Having thus spoken, that slayer of hostile heroes, that mighty-armed hero, viz., Subhadra's son, took out a broad-headed shaft that resembled a snake that had recently cast its slough off.

17. That shaft sped by the force of his arms, cut-off the beautiful head of Lakshmana, graced with ear-rings and a beautiful nose and charming locks and eye-brows.

18. Beholding Lakshmana slain, people began to wail aloud saying 'Oh' and 'Alas.' Thereupon at the death of his dear-loved son, Duryodhana became inflamed with rage.

19. And then that foremost of the Kshatriyas commanded his other Kshatriya warriors saying

'Slay him.' Thereupon Drona, his son, Kripa, Karna and Brihadbala and.

20. Kritavarman the son of Hridika, these six warriors surrounded Subhadra's son. But the son of Arjuna piercing them with whetted shafts and heating them back.

21-22. Angrily and with vehemence, fell upon the mighty division of the ruler of the Sindhus. Thereupon the Kalingas, the Nishadhas and the puissant son of Kratha, clad in mail, covered his path with their mighty elephant division. The battie then that commenced between Abhimanyu and the other warriors was dreadful and fierce to the extreme.

23. Then the son of Arjuna began to crush that division of elephants, like the wind that blows in all directions destroying masses of clouds in the heaven.

24. Thereafter Kratha covered Arjuna's son with showers of arrows; meanwhile many other car-warriors headed by Drona, turning back to the field of battle,

25. Rushed at Subhadra's son, discharging numerous weapons of celestial make. Beating back all of them with arrows, Arjuna's son afflicted Kratha's son,

26. With innumerable groups of arrows, in all haste and inflamed with a desire for slaying his antagonist. Then the bow, the arrows, the bracelets, the arms and the head decked with a diadem, of Kratha's son,

27. His umbrella, standards, charioteer and horses, were all felled by Abhimanyu. When that one (Katha's son) possessed of a high lineage and character, acquainted with the Srutis and endued with wealth of weapons and fame was thus slain, almost all the remaining heroic warriors turned away from the field of battle.

## CHAPTER 47

(ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)–

Continued

The defeat and death of Brihadbala

Dhritarastra said

1-2. When that youthful and invincible son of Subhadra, ever unretreating in battle, penetrating into the ranks of my troops was

achieving feats worthy of his own family and when borne by his three-year-old steeds of great strength and excellent breed, he appeared to sail though the skies, what heroes of my army then strove to resist him?

Sanjaya said

3. Penetrating into the heart of your troops, Abhimanyu, the delighter of the Pandavas, with his sharp arrows compelled all the kings to turn their faces away from the field of battle.

4. Thereupon Drona, Kripa, Karna, the son of Drona, Brihadbala and Kritavarman the son of Hridika, these six car-warriors surrounded him.

5. Beholding a very heavy burden (of keeping the rest of the Pandavas at bay) placed on the shoulder of the Sindhu king, your troops, O mighty monarch, assailed Yudhishtira.

6. Other mighty warriors stretching their bows full six cubits long, covered the heroic son of Subhadra with a shower of arrows.

7. Then that slayer of hostile heroes, namely Subhadra's son, assailed by means of his arrows, all those mighty car-warriors all well accomplished in all kinds of learning.

8-9. And he then pierced Drona with fifty arrows and Brihadbala with twenty; and Kritavarman with eighty and Kripa with sixty, the son of Arjuna then pierced Ashvatthaman with ten shafts furnished with wings of gold, charged with great forces and shot from the bow drank back to the very ear.

10. Then in the very midst of the hostile troops, the son of Phalguna pierced Karna in one of his ears with an excellent barbed arrows, carefully tempered and whetted.

11. Then having felled Kripa's steeds and the two supporters of his flanks, Abhimanyu pierced him on his breast with ten shafts.

12. Thereafter the valiant Abhimanyu slew the warlike Vrindaraka the enhancer of the glory of the Kurus, even before the very eyes of your heroic son.

13. Then Drona's son dauntlessly struck Abhimanyu with twenty-five short arrows, when the latter was occupied in slaying the best among his enemies.

14. Thereupon O Sire, Arjuna's son pierced Ashvatthaman in return with whetted shafts, before the presence of all the warriors of your army.

15. Then Drona's son having pierced Abhimanyu with sixty fierce and resplendent shafts of exceeding sharpness, could not make the latter tremble; and then the latter remained unmoved like the Mainaka hills.

16. Then that hero of puissant mighty and fierce energy, pierced the son of Drona who had been afflicting him, with thirty seven arrows, all straight-going and furnished with wings of gold.

17. Thereupon Drona desirous of saving his son, struck hundred shafts on Abhimanyu; and Ashvatthaman also desirous of rescuing his father, pierced him with sixty shafts.

18. Karna then pierced Abhimanyu with twenty-two broad-headed shafts, Kritavarman with fourteen, Brihadbala with fifty and Kripa the son of Saradvata with ten.

19-20. In return, Abhimanyu pierced each of them with ten shafts. Then the ruler of the Kosalas pierced him on the breast with a barbed dart. Abhimanyu then felled on the ground his horses, his standards, his bow and his charioteer.

21. Thereupon deprived of the use of his car, the king of the Kosalas grasping his sword and shield. Strove to take off the head, graced with ear-rings, of Phalguna's son, from his trunk.

22. Then the latter, pierced the ruler of Kosalas, by name prince Brihadbala on the breast, with arrows; and the latter fell down with his breast cleft open.

23. Then ten thousand high-souled kings broke away. Uttering abusive language (against Duryodhana), armed though they were with swords and bows.

24. Thereafter having slain Brihadbala in battle, Subhadra's son careered through the field, the paralysed the mighty car-warriors of your army with a downpour of arrowy showers.

## CHAPTER 48

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The fight of Abhimanyu

##### Sanjaya said

1. Once more did the son of Arjuna pierced Karna on his car, with barbed arrows and then for angering the latter, again pierced him with fifty shafts more.

2. Thereupon Radha's son pierced him in return with as many arrows. Covered all over with arrows, O Bharata, he then looked exceedingly beautiful.

3. Excited with wrath, Abhimanyu also caused Karna to be covered over with streams of blood; the heroic Karna also appeared beautiful being mangled with shaft-wounds and bathed in blood.

4. then both those high-souled warriors, mangled with arrow-wounds and steeped in blood, appeared like two Kinshukas covered with blossom,

5. Then Subhadra's son slew six of Karna's ministers all versed in various modes of warfare, together with their horses, charioteer, car and standards.

6. Then Abhimanyu fearlessly pierced the rest of the mighty car-warriors in return, with ten shafts each; that feat of his seemed exceedingly wonderful.

7. Thereafter having slain the son of the ruler of the Magadhas with six swift-coursing arrows, Abhimanyu felled the youthful Ashvaketu together with his horses and charioteer.

8. Next slaying with a sharp, horse-shoe-headed arrows, the Bhoja prince of Martikavata having the device of an elephant on his banner, the son of Arjuna sent up a tremendous war-cry and began to scatter his arrows on all sides.

9. Thereupon the son of Drona pierced his four horses with four arrows and charioteer with one shaft and then he pierced Arjuna's son with ten arrows.

10. Thereafter Krishna's nephew having pierced Dushasana's son with ten swift-coursing arrows, spoke these words at the top of his voice, with eyes red in rage.

11. "Your father has fled from the battle like a veritable coward. It is fortunate that you know how to fight. But today you shall not escape me alive."

12. Having spoken only these words, he hurled at him a Naracha burnished by the forger himself.

13. Then leaving alone the son of Drona, Arjuna's son struck Shalya with three arrows. Him Shalya pierced in return with nine shafts furnished with vulterine feathers, on the breast, like one not at all afraid. That feat appeared to be highly wonderful.

14. The son of Arjuna then cutting off his bow and slaying his two flank-supporters, pierced him with six iron-made shafts; and then Shalya ascended another chariot.

15-16. Then having slain, Satrunjaya, Chandraketu, Meghavega, Suvarchasam and Suryabhasa, he pierced the son of Subala. Subala then piercing him with three arrows, thus addressed Duryodhana -

17. 'Let all of us united together, crush this one; for, fighting singly, he will slay us all. O king, with the assistance of Drona and Kripa and others, do you think out the means of slaying this one. Thereafter Vikartana's son Karna, addressing Drona said these words -

18. "Tell us the means of his death, before he slays us all." Thereupon the fierce bow-man Drona replied to them all saying -

19. "With all your watchfulness, have you been able to detect any weakness in this youthful prince? He is careering in all directions; yet has any of you been able to find out any laches in the prince?

20-21. Behold the lightness of hands of this son of Arjuna, this foremost of all men! In the course of his car-motion, only his bow drawn to a complete circle can be seen and not his arrows, so swiftly does he let them off!

22. Indeed this slayer of hostile heroes, this son of Subhadra is affording me great delight,

though with his shafts he is afflicting my vital limbs and confounding my senses. This son Subhadra careering through the field of battle, delights me greatly.

23-24. In as much as many mighty car-warriors inflamed with rage cannot detect any the slightest weakness in him. I do not find any very great difference between the wielder of the Gandiva bow and this one of great lightness of hands, filling the points of the compass with his mighty shafts.

25. Then once more Karna, afflicted with the arrows of Arjuna's son said to Drona - "Afflicted sore by Abhimanyu, I am staying here, only because as a warrior, I should stay here.

26. The fierce and exceedingly dreadful darts, corroding like fire, of this very furious prince, are this day sucking my heart's strength in battle." Then softly and with a smile the preceptor replied to Karna saying -

27-28. "O Karna! This Abhimanyu is faithful, his prowess is great and his armour is incapable of being penetrated into. I have taught the father of this hero, the diverse methods of wearing coats of mail; assuredly this subjugator of hostile fortresses, knows all those methods of wearing armours. But exerting yourself carefully, you can, with arrows cut-off his bow, his bowstring.

29. The reins of his steeds and his two supporters of the flanks. O mighty bow-man, O son of Radha, if you are competent, then do all these.

30. Then compelling him to turn his face away from the field, do you strike him from behind. As long as he wields the bow, he is incapable of being defeated even by all the Gods and the Asuras united together.

31-32. So if you can, deprive him of the use of his car and his bow." Then, Vikartana's son, Karna, hearing those words of the preceptor quickly cut-off Abhimanyu's bow with his arrows, when the latter was light-handedly scattering his shafts. Then Kritavarman of the Bhoja race, slew his steeds and Kripa the son of Gautama dispatched his two flank-supporters.

33-34. The rest covered him with arrowy showers, when he was deprived of the use of his bow. Then these six mighty car-warriors with great activity, when activity was so necessary, ruthlessly covered that young careless hero who was fighting with them single-handedly, with showers of arrows.

35. Then that handsome hero whose car had been rendered useless and whose bow had been cut-off, grasping his sword and buckler and remembering his duty, jumped up into the sky.

36. Exhibiting great prowess and great lightness, Arjuna's son roved in the air like the king of the birds, in various motions, known as Kaushika and others.

37. 'With the sword in his hand he may fall upon me,'—thinking thus those mighty bowmen with their eyes up-turned and very watchful for finding Abhimanyu's weakness, began to pierce him.

38. Then that conqueror of enemies, viz., Drona of mighty energy quickly cut-off the jewel-decked hilt of Abhimanyu's sword with a single shaft furnished with a horse-shoe-head.

39. Then Radha's son also cut-off his excellent buckler with many sharp arrows. Then deprived of his sword and his shield he came down from the sky upon the ground, with all his limbs intact. The raising a car-wheel, he furiously rushed against Drona.

40. His person shining with the dust from the car-wheel and himself wielding the car-wheel in his upraised arm, Abhimanyu appeared highly beautiful and for a while imitating the son of Vasudeva, he became terrible fierce in that battle.

41. With his robes dyed with the blood flowing in profusion (from his wounds), with his brows formidable in consequence of the wrinkles thereon, himself sending up loud war-cries, that highly powerful Abhimanyu appeared superbly beautiful staying in the midst of those foremost of kings.

## CHAPTER 49

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)— Continued

#### The slaughter of Abhimanyu

Sanjaya said

1. That delighter of Vishnu's sister (Subhadra), that Abhimanyu, then furnished with the weapon of Vishnu himself, looked highly beautiful like a second Janardana on the field of battle.

2. With the ends of his locks, blazing in the air, with that best of weapons raised in his hands, his person became difficult of being looked at even by the very gods. The rulers of the earth beholding it.

3. And the wheel in his hands, became seized with anxiety. They then cut it off into many fragments. Thereupon that mighty car-warrior, the nephew of Krishna took up a heavy mace.

4. Then the mighty-armed Abhimanyu deprived of his car, his bow, his sword and his car-wheel by the enemy, rushed (with that mace in his hand) upon Ashvatthaman.

5. Then, O foremost of kings, Ashvatthaman, beholding that upraised mace resemble the blazing bolt of heaven, leapt off three steps from the terrace of his car.

6. Slaying with his mace the horses and the two flank-supporters of Ashvatthaman, the son of Subhadra, with his body covered all over with arrows looked like a porcupine.

7. Then Abhimanyu crushed down on the ground Subala's son Kalikeya and slew seventy-seven of the latter's followers of the Gandhara race.

8. Next he slew ten car-warriors of the clan of Brahma-vasatiya; and then seven warriors of the Kekayas and then ten huge elephants. Then he pressed down upon the ground the car and horses of Dushasana's son.

9. Thereupon, O sire, Dushasana's invincible son excited with rage and upraising his mace, rushed against Abhimanyu crying at same time, "Wait" "Wait."

10-11. Then those two heroes with maces upraised, both desirous of compassing one

another's death, Those two cousins, began to strike one another, like the three-eyed (Mahadeva) and the Asura Andhaka fighting in the days of yore.

12. Then striking one another by the ends of their clubs, they both fell down on the ground, like two uprooted standards raised in honour of Indra.

13. Then that enhancer of the glory of the Kurus namely Dushasana's son rising first, smote Subhadra's son on the crown of head as the latter was rising up.

14. Confounded with the great force of that mace-stroke and overpowered by the fatigue of the flight. That slayer of hostile heroes namely Subhadra's son fell down senseless on the ground. Thus, O king, was the one slain by many in battle.

15. One who grinded the whole army of the Kurus, like an elephant crushing lotus-stems. Then that heroic warrior slain by the Kurus, appeared beautiful like a wild elephant slain by hunter.

16-19. Then your troops surrounded the fallen hero, who then looked like an extinguished fire that had consumed a whole forest during the summer season; or like a tempest with its fury subsided after it has broken down numerous tree-tops; or like the setting sun that had scorched the Bharata army with its rays; or like the moon devoured up by the Rahu; or like the ocean with its waters dried up. Then the mighty car-warriors of your army beholding Abhimanyu whose countenance wore the splendour of the full moon and whose eyes were black like the wings of the raven, lie prostrate on the naked earth, uttered repeated lion-like roars being filled with great delight.

20. Indeed, O king, your warriors were transported with delight, while tears rolled down from the eyes of the warriors of the other host.

21. Then beholding that hero lying prostrate on the ground like the moon dropped from the skies many creatures and rulers of men, on the skies, uttered woeful cries saying—

22. Slain by the six mighty car-warriors of Dhritarastra's host headed by Drona, this single

hero is lying on the field of battle. We hold this to be very unfair.

23. When that hero had been laughed at, the earth appeared highly beautiful like the starry firmament decked with the full-moon herself.

24-27. The earth was then covered over with arrows furnished with golden wings and inundated with waves of blood. And overspread with the beautiful heads of the heroes, adorned with ear-rings and precious and variegated headgears and streamers and chamaras and splendid blankets and gem-embossed weapons of good make and the bright ornaments of cars and horses and men and elephants and sharp and well-tempered swords looking like snakes freed from their slough and bows and shattered arrows and darts and scimitars and spears and kampanas and various other kinds of weapons, (offensive and defensive), she looked exceedingly beautiful.

28. In many places the field of battle became impassable being choked with dead any dying steeds bespattered with blood all felled by the son of Subhadra and lying with their riders slain.

29-31. With iron goads and elephants prodigious as hills, furnished with shields and weapons and with standards lying about, crushed with shafts; with excellent chariots deprived of steeds and charioteers and their warriors, lying scattered on the field, crushed by elephants and looking like agitated takes; with large bodies of foot-soldiers, armed with various weapons and lying slain on the field, the earth assuming an awful aspect struck terror into the hearts of the cowards.

32. Beholding Abhimanyu equal to the sun or the moon in splendour lie dead on the field, your troops obtained great joy whilst the Pandavas were highly distressed.

33. When the young Abhimanyu still in his minority was slain, all the troops of the Pandavas fled even before the very eyes of the very virtuous king Yudhishtira.

34. Then upon the death of Abhimanyu, seeing his troops routed, Ajatasatru Yudhishtira addressed these words to the heroic warriors of his army —

35. This heroic son of Subhadra who without turning back from the battle has been slain by the enemy, has ascended to heaven. Stay you all and do not fear. We shall yet conquer the foe.

36. Possessed of great energy and great effulgence, the virtuous king Yudhishtira that best of all warriors, himself overwhelmed with grief, tried to console them with those words.

37. (He went on) - Having at first slain many hostile princes resembling snakes of virulent poison, the son of Arjuna has followed in their wake.

38. Having slain ten thousand car-warriors and that mighty car-warrior namely the ruler of the Kosalas, Abhimanyu, equal to Krishna and Arjuna, has indubitably gone to the mansion of Shakra (Indra).

39. Having slain car-warriors, steeds foot-soldiers and elephants by thousand, he was not satiated with what he achieved in battle. We should not bewail this performer of pious deeds; he surely has attained the regions of righteousness, that men acquire by deeds of piety.

## CHAPTER 50

### ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)- Continued

#### The description of the field of battle

Sanjaya said

1. Thus having slain one of their best warriors and having been afflicted with their shafts and covered with blood, we returned to our quarters in the evening.

2. Gazed at by the foe and nearly senseless and overpowered with fatigue, we then, O mighty monarch, slowly left the field of battle.

3. Then approached that wonderful hour, that joining between the day and the night, harbingered by the inauspicious yells of the jackals; and the sun then assuming the pale-red tint of the lotus-filaments, went down below the horizon, having neared the western hills.

4. Then the sun robbed the radiance of our excellent swords, lances, scimitars, car-fences, shields and ornaments; and causing the sky and the earth to assume the self-same hue, he then betook to his favourite shape of fire.

5. The earth was then covered over with motionless carcasses of myriads of elephants, all lifeless, resembling the peaks of cloud-clapt hills cleft open by the bolt of Heaven and with their banners and goads scattered about and their guides dislodged from their backs.

6. The field of battle appeared beautiful with huge chariots splintered into pieces and with their warriors, drivers ornaments, steeds, standards streamers crushed, shattered and torn to pieces. Those cars then, O monarch, resembled animate beings deprived of their vital breaths by the enemy with his arrows.

7. Then the earth assumed a dreadful and repulsive aspect, being strewn over with numerous horses and their riders all lying dead, with precious housings and blankets of various kind scattered about and in consequence of the tongues, teeth, entrails and eyes of those creatures being drawn out of their places.

8. Men adorned with precious armours ornaments and garments and weapons, deprived of life, lay prostrate on the field with slain horses and elephants and shattered chariots, on the naked earth, totally helpless, although quite deserving of precious blankets and beds.

9. Greatly delighted dogs, jackals and crows and numerous other flesh-eating birds and wolves and hyenas and ravens and other blood-drinking animals and various clans of Rakshasas and large bodies of Pisachas, repairing to the field of battle.

10. Tore open the corpses and drank their fat marrow and blood and then fell upon eating their flesh. They began also to drink the secretions of rotten corpses, while some of the Rakshasa laughed terribly and dragged out dead bodies by thousands.

11-12. An awful river like the Vaitarani itself difficult of being tided over, was created there by many best of car-warriors. Its waters were formed by the blood of slain creatures. Chariots formed the rafts on which to cross it;

elephants constituted its rocks and the heads of men formed its pebbles. It was muddy with the flesh of slain elephants, men and horses. Various kinds of weapons constituted the garlands floating on it. That dreadful current of blood flowed through the middle of the field of battle carrying with it living being to the doleful abodes of Death.

13. Drinking and eating in that stream numerous Pisachas of terrible and repulsive aspect rejoiced. Dogs and jackals and flesh eating birds, all partaking of the same food and striking terror into the hearts of the living creatures held a great feast (on its banks).

14. Then at the advent of night, looking upon that fierce field of battle that had increased largely the population of Deaths regions and that was infested with dancing headless trunks of soldiers, they slowly went away from it.

15. Then as they left if, they saw the mighty car-warrior Abhimanyu, who resembled Indra himself, lying on the field of battle, with precious ornaments displaced and falling off and appearing like a sacrificial fire on the alter no longer fed by oblations of clarified butter.

## CHAPTER 51

### ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The lamentations of Yudhishtira

Sanjaya said

1-2. When that hero that leader of a car-division viz., Subhadra's son had been slain in battle, leaving their cars and doffing their coats of mail and throwing aside their bows, all the Pandavas sat surrounding king Yudhishtira. They were then brooding upon their grief with their hearts occupied with the thought of the deceased son of Subhadra.

3. Then upon the death of the brother's son, the heroic and mighty car-warrior Abhimanyu, king Yudhishtira began to lament totally unmanned by grief.

4. Desirous of doing an act agreeable to me, he (Abhimanyu) penetrated the array of Drona with the least difficulty, like a lion penetrating into the midst of a herd of kine.

5. Meeting with him in battle, fierce bowmen, endowed with heroism, accomplished in the use of weapons and incapable of being easily defeated in battle, were compelled to turn back.

6. Our implacable enemy Dushasana having encountered him in battle, was quickly compelled by his shafts to retreat, being nearly deprived of his senses.

7. Having crossed the ocean-like host of Drona's troops difficult of being defeated, that nephew of Krishna was despatched to Death's mansion, upon encountering the son of Dushasana.

8. Oh, now that Abhimanyu is slain, how shall I look upon Kunti's son Arjuna or upon the auspicious Subhadra bereft of her that dear-loved son!

9. What meaningless, disjointed and incoherent words shall we have to say today to both Hrishikesha and Dhananjaya!

10. It is myself, desirous of my own good and intent on victory, that have done this injury to Subhadra, Arjuna and Keshava!

11. A covetous man never finds his own short-comings; and it is from folly, that covetousness proceeds. Desirous of collecting the honey, I could not see that such a fall threatened me.

12. He who was a mere boy and who should have been indulged with good food, conveyance, beds and ornaments, alas, even such a boy was placed by us in the thick of battle!

13. Like a steed of spirited mettle that sacrifices itself rather than obey the reins, how could that boy of tender years, unskilled in the modes of warfare reap good in such a perilous situation?

14. Alas, after him, today we also shall lay ourselves down on the field of battle, being consumed by the glances of grief cast by Vibhatsu inflamed with sage.

15-18. Arjuna is free from covetousness, intelligent, bashful, forbearing, handsome, powerful, endowed with well-developed limbs, respectful to the elders, heroic, amiable and devoted to truth; the feats of that one of fierce



deeds even the gods applaud; that one of puissant energy slew Nivatakavachas and also the Kalakeyas; by him were the opponents of the great Indra, the dwellers of the golden cities, viz., the Paulamas slain with their followers, within the twinkling of any eye; that lord gives assurance of safety to those who seek to be protected from their enemies. Alas, today, we have not been competent through fear, to save the son even of that one!

19. Surely a great fear has overtaken the mighty host of the son of Dhritarashtra. Filled with rage at the slaughter of his son the son of Pritha (Arjuna) without doubt extirpate the Kauravas.

20. It is also evident that the mean-minded Duryodhana, having mean counselors, that destroyer of his own partisans, seeing the destruction of the troops and overtaken by grief, shall give up his life.

21. Beholding this son of Indra's son endowed with unequalled energy and prowess fallen on the field of battle, neither victory, nor kingdom, nor immortality, nor equality of rank with the celestials, does afford me the least joy.

## CHAPTER 52

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The consolation of Yudhishtira's grief

##### Sanjaya said

1. Thus when the son of Kunti, king Yudhishtira, was indulging in lamentations, there came to him the mighty sage Krishna Dvaipayana.

2. Then having duly worshipped him, Yudhishtira resumed his seat; and afflicted with grief at the death of his brother's son, he then thus addressed the Rishi.

##### Yudhishtira said

3. The son of Subhadra has been slain in battle when fighting with many, by several fierce bowmen of vicious tendencies, who, mighty car-warriors as they were, surrounded him on all sides.

4. That layer of hostile heroes that son of Subhadra, was a mere child in years and in understanding. And he fought in battle against overwhelming numbers.

5. During the course of the fight I said to him "Open a passage for us," then he penetrated into the hostile array and then we could not follow him, prevented by the ruler of the Sindhus.

6. Those who live by fighting should surely desire equal combats. But his battle that the enemy fought with Abhimanyu was an extremely unfair one.

7. It is this that burns me with the fire of grief and draws tears of sorrow from my eyes. Brooding over this thought I cannot regain the tranquility of my mind.

##### Sanjaya said

8. Then the almighty Vyasa addressing Yudhishtira who was thus bewailing and was unmanned by the force of his grief, spoke the following words.

##### Vyasa said

9. O Yudhishtira, O son of superior wisdom, O son who are well-learned in all the branches of knowledge, O foremost of the Bharatas, people of your stamp are never confounded in seasons of calamity.

10. This hero (Abhimanyu), this foremost of all male beings, has attained paradise after having slain numerous enemies in battle and having achieved many feats not at all boy-like.

11. O Yudhishtira, this law (that created being shall die) cannot be violated. O Bharata, Death takes away all Gods, Danavas and Gandharvas, (without exception).

##### Yudhishtira said

12. These rulers of earth, all endued with great mighty, are now lying on the bare ground of the battle-field being slain and deprived of their senses.

13. Some of them possessed strength equal to that of ten thousand elephants; some, on the other hand, possessed the impetus and force of the very tempest. They have all been slain in

battle by beings of their species and are all equal now.

14. I do not see the slayer of these created beings in battle, (save one of their own class). They were possessed of prowess and endued with mighty and energy.

15. Alas even those who entertained in their heart the hopes of conquering one another in battle, are now lying slain deprived of their senses, in spite of all their wisdom.

16. The significance of the word 'Death' has-today been clearly brought home (to our minds), as almost all these rulers of earth possessed of fierce prowess, lie dead on the field of battle.

17. These heroes having succumbed to their foes and now lying motionless and shorn of their pride. Many princes inflamed with wrath have fallen upon the fire of their antagonist's anger.

18. On this point a great doubt has taken possession of me, namely, whence has the word "dead" been derived? Whose offspring is Death? Whence does it come and why does it take away creatures? O you equal to a celestial, O grandsire, speak to me about all this.

**Sanjaya said**

19. Then that illustrious sage spoke these comforting words to Yudhishthira, the son of Kunti, who had been questioning him in the above manner.

**Vyasa said**

20. On this subject, O monarch, an ancient story is cited as an example, story that was related to Akampana by Narada.

21. So far as I know, O king, Akampana, while in this world, was also afflicted with the overwhelming and unbearable grief caused by his son's death.

22. I shall now recount to you the excellent story of the origin of Death. Hearing that story you shall be freed from grief and from the bondage of affection.

23. Listen to me, O sire, as I go on repeating that ancient story. This story is

excellent and enhances the period of life and kills sorrow and bestows health.

24. It is holy, capable of destroying large numbers of foes and the most auspicious of all auspicious things. Verily this story is like the study or recital of the Vedas themselves.

25. It should, O king, be every morning listened to be those foremost of the twice-borns, who desire to obtain long-lived sons, sovereignty and their own welfare.

26. In the days of yore during the Krita-yuga, O Sire, there lived a certain king by name Akampana. Once on a time, on the field of battle, amongst his foes, he was on the pint of succumbing to his enemies.

27. He had a son by name Hari, who was equal to Narayana himself in might; he was exceedingly handsome, accomplished in the use of weapons, intelligent, powerful and equal to Shakra in battle.

28. Surrounded by countless foes on the field of battle, he shot thousands of shafts at the warriors and elephants that encompassed him.

29. Having achieved many feats difficult of being achieved, that afflicter of foes, O Yudhishthira, was slain amidst his troops by his adversaries.

30. Performing the funeral ceremonies of his son, king Akampana became purified. But bewailing his son, day and night, he could not regain his peace of mind.

31. Then cognisant of his grief caused by the death of his son, there came near him the celestial sage Narada himself.

32. That monarch of illustrious qualities, beholding the sage come, worshipped him duly and he spoke to him these words.

33. And then that ruler of men spoke to the Rishi all that had happened, his defeat by his foes and the slaughter of his son by them.

**Akampana said**

34. My son of great energy and mighty equal to Indra or Vishnu himself in effulgence, has been killed in battle by his numerous enemies, when engaged in fighting vigorously with them.

35. But, O illustrious sage, who is this Death, what is his prowess, might and manliness? O foremost of intelligent beings, I desire to know the real truth about all these questions.

**Vyasa said**

36. Having heard those words of his, the lord Narada, that bestower of boons, related this story that is capable of destroying the great sorrow caused by the death of one's son.

37. Hear, O mighty-armed monarch, this long story, exactly, O ruler of earth, as I myself have heard it.

38. In the beginning of the creations, the Grandsire Brahma created all beings. Then that highly powerful one, seeing that the beings of his creation suffered no decay.

39. Fell to thinking, O king, as to how he should cause their destruction. Meditating long over the subject, he then failed to find out any means of destruction, O ruler of earth.

40. (Then he waxed worth) and inconsequence of that wrath then, a fire sprang out from the skies. That fire spread in all the quarters of heaven and it began to consume all the regions of the universe.

41. Thereat heaven, earth and the welkin, all became overspread with tongues of flame. And that Almighty lord then burnt down the universe with its mobile and immobile creatures and objects.

42. Then mobile and immobile, all creatures were annihilated. Verily the puissant Brahma did all this, frightening the worlds with the fierceness of his angers.

43. Thereupon Hara, otherwise called Sthanu, wearing matted locks on his head, that Lord of all the night-rangers, sought shelter from the divine Brahma that foremost of all gods.

44. Thus when Sthanu had fallen (at Brahma's feet) desirous of doing good to the creatures, that highest divinity, the foremost of all ascetics, burning with effulgence said -

45. What desire of yours shall we fulfill. O you that deserve to have all your wishes gratified! O son, you are born out of our will.

We shall accomplish all that is dear to you. Speak, O Sthanu, what you desire (to have).

## CHAPTER 53

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The story of the origin of Death

**Sthanu said**

1. O Lord, you did take great pains for creating various creatures. All these different sorts of beings have been created and reared by you.

2. Those very creatures are now being burnt down by the fire of your anger. Seeing their condition, I am filled with compassion; O Lord, O illustrious One, be merciful on them.

**Brahma said**

3. I had no desire for destroying the worlds. I wanted to leave them in peace; I always desired the earth's welfare. But then anger took possession of me.

4. The goddess of earth, over-burdened with the heavy weight of creatures, always solicited me for destroying the beings on her surface, O mighty God.

5. Then though thinking in many ways, I could not find out the means for destroying the infinite creation. At this, anger entered into me.

**Rudra said**

6. Be propitiated, O ruler of the universe and do not cherish wrath for the destruction of creatures. Do you not any longer destroy the mobile and immobile creatures.

7. Through your grace, O almighty Lord, the universe is divided in three divisions, viz., the Past, the Present and the Future. Let it remain as it is;

8. You have, O lord, blazed up in anger from anger this fire has proceeded and that fire now consumes rocks, trees and rivers.

9-10. And all kinds of shrubs and grass. Verily that fire is blasting the mobile and immobile universe. Behold the mobile and immobile universe reduced to ashes. Be propitiated, O almighty God! give not way to wrath. Even this boon do I beg.

11. All created things, O Divine Being' that belong to you, are being consumed; therefore withdraw your energy, let it be quenched in your ownself.

12. Look at the creatures of your own creation, filled with a desire for doing good to them all. Do that by which all these beings endowed with life, may continue to live.

13. Let not these things with their prowess of propagation weakened, be exterminated. O Creator of the world, you have employed me to be their protector.

14. O Lord of the universe, let not this mobile and immobile universe be destroyed. You are inclined to show mercy and it is for this reason that I now speak thus.

**Narada said**

15. Hearing these words (of Mahadeva) the Divine Brahma, desirous of accomplishing the good of the created beings, withdrew in his own inner self his anger that had been excited.

16. Quenching that fire, the illustrious benefactor of the universe, the Supreme Lord, declared the duties of Production and Emancipation.

17-18. When that high-souled god had thus extinguished that fire of his wrath, there came out from the various outlets of his sense-organs, a female figure. She was dark and red and tawny and her tongue, countenance and eyes were red and she was adorned with two shining ear-rings and various other brilliant ornaments.

19. Coming out of his body, she betook to the southern quarter and she smilingly cast glances at those two lords of the universe.

20. Then Brahma, that controller of the creation and destruction of the words, called her by the name of "Death." And, O ruler of men, he said to her – "Slay" these beings of my creation.

21. You are the offspring of the wrath I harboured for the destruction of the universe. Therefore kill you all these creations including the learned and the idiot, at my own behest. Thus you shall attain your won good."

22. Thus spoken to by him, that lady of lotus-like eyes, called "Death," meditated for a long time and then began to wail aloud helplessly in plaintive voice.

23. Then the grandsire with two hands caught the tears that flowed from her eyes, for the welfare of all creatures and entreated her in the following words.

## CHAPTER 54

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The colloquy between Death and the Lord of Creation

**Narada said**

1. Then that helpless lady restraining her grief within herself, thus addressed the lord of the people, with folded palms and bending like a creeper with humility.

**Death said**

2. O most eloquent of all speakers, how shall I, created a female by you, do such heartless and mischievous deeds, knowing them at the same time to be so?

3. I fear sin greatly - O illustrious lord, be propitious on me. Sons, friends, brothers, fathers and husbands are always dear to creatures. If they are destroyed by my hands, they that will incur the loss, shall endeavour to avenge themselves on me. It is them that I fear.

4. The drops of tears that will fall from the eyes of grief-stricken and bewailing persons. Fill me with terror. Thus affrighted, O illustrious Lord, I seek your protection.

5-6. O foremost of the celestials, O Divine Being, I will not go to Yama's abode. O you that bestow boons, I do propitiate you, by bending my head low and by folding my hands, O Grandsire of the worlds, I desire the fulfillment of even this wish of mine at your hands.

7. O Lord of the creation, I desire to carry on ascetic austerities through your grace. O great Lord, O divine being, accord me this boon.

8. Permitted by you, I shall go to the excellent hermitage of Dhenuka and there shall I practice ascetic austerities of the most severe sort, being engaged in worshipping yourself.

9. O Lord of the celestials, I shall not be able to destroy the dear lives of living creatures, when they will weep in grief. Save me from unrighteousness.

**Brahma said**

10. You have been created, O Death, for causing the destruction of creatures; go, destroy all the creatures; entertain no scruples whatsoever.

11. This must have happened and nothing could have prevented it. Carry out my command; none in the world will find any fault with you.

**Narada said**

12. Thus spoken to, the lady became pleased and she stood with her face turned towards the illustrious god. And out of desire for doing good to the creatures, she did not set her heart upon the destruction of creature.

13. Then that Divinity, the Lord of the lords of creatures also remained silent for a while; and the grandsire soon became satisfied with his ownself.

14. Then turning his eyes upon the creatures he smiled. Then the creatures lived cheerfully as before, undisturbed by premature death.

15. When that invincible and illustrious divinity had cast his wrath off, that lady also went away from the presence of that intelligent being.

16. Then without having promised the destruction for creatures, she went away, O king; and then Death hastily came to Dhenuka.

17-18. There she practised a vow excellent and greatly severe. There she stood on one leg for sixteen times ten billions of years and five times ten billions also, through compassion for living creatures and through desire for doing them good, all the time withholding her senses from their dear objects.

19. Once more, O monarch, she stood there on one leg for twenty one times ten billions of years.

20. Then she roved for ten times ten thousand billions of years with the animals. Then once again repairing to the holy river Nanda that was full of cool and translucent water.

21. She passed in those waters eight thousand years. Practising austere penances on the banks of the Narada, she purged herself of all her sins.

22. Then observant of her vows, she first visited the sacred Kousiki; living upon air and water only, she practised penances there.

23. Going then to Panchaganga and afterwards to Vetasa, that already-purified lady, pulled her own body down by performing various kinds of asceticism.

24. Repairing next to the Ganga and thence to the great Meru, she remained inert like a block of stone, devoting herself in the practice of Pranayama (suspension of breaths).

25. From that place repairing to the crest of the Himavat mountain, where, in the days of yore, the gods had formed their sacred sacrifices, that excellent and auspicious damsel stood on her tip toe for a billion of years.

26. Thence going to Puskara and Gokarna and Naimisha and Malaya, she pulled her health down by the practice of penances after her own choice.

27. Without worshipping any other god and with firm devotion to the Grandsire, she lived and propitiated him in every way and everywhere.

28. Thereafter the undeteriorating Creator of the universe, thus propitiated, spoke to her with a softened and joyful heart thus—

29. "O Death, what for are you under-going all these severe ascetic penances?" Thereat Death once more addressed the illustrious divinity, the Grandsire, saying—

30. "O God, I shall not be able to destroy of living creatures. They are all in the enjoyment of health and do not envy one another. O Lord, even this is the boon that I want at your hands, O master of all.

31. I am afraid of sin; and it is for this reason that I am engaged in the practice of

ascetic austerities. O blessed Lord! vouchsafe assurances of eternal safety to me overwhelmed with terror.

32. A woman by birth, helpless and sinless, I implore your mercy, be you my refuge." Thereupon that Divinity possessed to the knowledge of the past, the present and the future thus spoke to her again.

33. "In destroying all these creatures, O Death, you shall reap no sin. My words, O handsome damsel, can never be false.

34. Therefore, O blessed lady, destroy these four kinds of creatures. Eternal virtue shall always be yours.

35. Yama, the Regent of the worlds and the various maladies, shall help you in your work of destruction. Myself and the celestials also will bestow boons on you;

37. So that purged of all sins and perfectly purified, you shall attain glory. Having been thus spoken to, O mighty monarch, she, with her palms folded, thus addressed the Lord, saluting him by bending her head low. "If, O lord, such be the state of things and if it cannot do without me.

38. Then I place your behest upon my own head. However hear what I have to say. Let covetousness, anger, animosity malice, dissensions and folly and shamelessness and other stern passions tear to pieces the frames of corporeal beings."

#### **Brahma said**

39. It shall be as you desire, O Death, Do you begin to destroy the creatures. No sin will hang on you; I shall not seek to injure you, O blessed damsel.

40. There tears of yours which I hold in my hands, even they will become maladies, starting into existence from the creatures themselves. They will destroy men whose life-time has been exhausted. No sin will hang on you. Do not be frightened.

41. Verily sin shall not be yours. You shall be the righteousness of living creatures; and the presiding deity of that righteousness. Devoted to virtue and observant of your duties, you shall

control all creatures. Therefore destroy always the lives of these corporeal creatures.

42. Renouncing both desire and anger, snatch out the lives of all living creatures. In this way you shall secure eternal merit. Sin will destroy those who are vicious in their conduct of life.

43. Carrying out my command, purify yourself. The task of plunging those who are wicked, in their own sins, will be left to you. Therefore renounce desire and anger and begin destroying those creatures possessed of life."

#### **Narada said**

44. Thereafter that lady, seeing that she was persistently called by the name of Death, became afraid of acting otherwise. And in fear of Brahma's malediction, she said 'Yea.' Unable to set at naught the behests of Brahma, she began, renouncing wrath and desire, to deprive living creatures of their lives, when their last days came.

45. Death is the lot of all living creatures. Maladies originate out of living creatures. Maladies are the abnormal conditions of living beings and they are pained by them. Disease and death fall to the share of all creatures. Therefore do you not indulge in fruitless grief.

46. Upon the death of living creatures, their senses go with them; and achieving their respective functions (in the other world, they come back with their possessors, (when they are born anew). Thus all creatures including the gods going thither, have to act like mortals, O best of all kings.

47. The wind that is tremendous, of dreadful roars and great strength, omni-present and endowed with energy infinite, even that wind will tear open the bodies of living creatures. It will, in this action, put forth no active energy, nor will it suspend its workings.

48. Even all the gods and qualified with the adjective mortal. Therefore, O foremost of kings, do not bewail you son. Your son having ascended to heaven, is enjoying perpetual happiness, in those delightful regions allotted to the heroes.

49. Renouncing all grief, he has obtained the fellowship of the virtuous. Death has been ordained for all corporeal beings by the Creator himself. So when their days are numbered, they suffer destruction. The death of creatures is brought about by their own selves.

50. Creatures destroy themselves. Death does not destroy any one, armed though she is with the mortal dart. Therefore the wise, knowing death to be unavoidable being ordained by Brahma, never lament for those that are dead. Now knowing that death is ordained by the highest divinity, renounce, without delay, your sorrow for your son.

**Vyasa said**

51. Having heard these words of grave signification uttered by Narada, king Akampana, addressing his friend Narada said -

52. "O illustrious one, O foremost of Rishis, I am gratified any my sorrow has left me. Hearing this story from you, I am contented and I salute you."

53. Thus spoken to by that monarch, Narada, that excellent of all the foremost sages, that celestial sage of immeasurable souls, speedily went back to the Nandana forest.

54. The frequent audition as well as the recital of this piece of history is held to be purifying, fame-giving leading to paradise, life-giving and fraught with all blessings.

55. Having heard this instructive story, renounce your sorrow, O king Yudhishtira, you know the duties of a Kshatriya and the region they may attain to after death.

56-57. The mighty car-warrior Abhimanyu endowed with great energy has ascended to heaven, having slain his enemies in battle, before the presence of all bowmen. That mighty car-warrior, that fierce Bowman, has been slain, when fighting, with swords, lances, maces and bows. He is the sinless son of the moon and is now dissolved in the lunar essence.

58. Therefore, O son of Pandu, mustering all your courage, yourself accompanied by your brothers, speedily march out for battle inflamed with wrath and without allowing your senses to become stupefied.

## CHAPTER 55

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The story of Shvaitya

**Sanjaya said**

1. Having heard of the origin of Death and her strange deeds, the very virtuous king Yudhishtira, once more humbly addressing Vyasa said these words-

**Yudhishtira said**

2. In many blessed countries there were many many monarchs, of virtuous deeds and of prowess equal to that of Shakra (Indra) himself. O Brahman, they were royal sages, sinless and lovers of truthful speech.

3. Once again, do you address me in words of grave signification and comfort me with the story of the feats of those royal sages of ancient days.

4. What was the amount of the sacrificial gifts made by them? Who were those royal sages of high soul and virtuous practices that made them? Tell me all this, O almighty Rishi!

**Vyasa said-**

5. There lived in days gone by, a king known by the name of Srinjaya. He had a son who was named Shaivya; the sages Parvata and Narada were his friends.

6. Once on a time desirous of an interview with him, the Rishis entered his palace. Being duly adored by him, they continued to live there happily.

7. One day when Srinjaya was seated with the sages at his ease, his very beautiful daughter of pure smiles came to him.

8. Then saluted by that daughter of his, he greeted her with benedictions after her own desire, when she was standing beside him.

9. Beholding that girl, Parva smilingly said these words to Srinjaya - "Whose daughter is this girl of restless glances and auspicious marks?

10. Is she the effulgence of the solar orb or the blazing flame of Fire? Or is she Sri or Hari

or Kirti or Dhriti or Pushti or Siddhi or the splendour of the moon?"

11. Thereupon king Srinjaya replied to the celestial sage who spoke those words, thus - "O almighty Rishis, this damsel is my daughter and she solicits my blessings."

12. Thereafter Narada addressed the king saying - "O monarch, if you desire to secure great good, give me this your daughter in marriage."

13. Filled with delight (at the Rishi's proposal) Srinjaya said to Narada - "I shall give her in marriage to you." Thereat the other sage Parvata excited with wrath, said these words to Narada.

14. "You have accepted this girl for your wife, whom before you I had chosen in my heart to be my wife; and because you have done this, you shall not, O Brahmana, go to heaven at your will."

15-16. Thus spoken to, Narada said to him these words in reply - "The husband's heart, his speech, the giver's consent, the speeches of both of them, the actual gift made with the sprinkling of water. The mantras specified for holding the bride's hands, these have been said to be the indications by which one becomes known as the husband of a damsel. But these ceremonials are not sufficient, the essential one being the walk for seven paces after the marriage."

17. "Without any provocation whatever, you have pronounced a curse on me. Therefore you also shall not go to heaven save in my company."

18-20. Thus having cursed each other those two sages continued to live there. Meanwhile Srinjaya, desirous of obtaining a son and purifying himself, began to gratify the Vipras to the best of his resources, with drinks, garments and foods. After a while, those Brahmanas devoted to the study of the Vedas and acquainted with the contents of the scriptures and their various auxiliaries, being gratified with the king, who desired to have a son, came in a body to Narada and said to him - "Give this king a son of the sort he desires."

21. Thus spoken to by the regenerate sages, Narada said 'Let it be so'; and then he addressed Srinjaya saying - "O royal sage, the Brahmanas have been gratified with you and they desire to bestow a son on you."

22-23. Good betide you. Ask for the boon about the kind of the son wish to have.' Thus addressed, the king with folded palms, solicited the boon of getting a son endued with all qualities, famous, possessed of glory, highly energetic and subduer of all foes, whose urine, excreta, secretions and perspiration would be gold."

24. The king then obtained a son in due time who came to be called Suvarnasthivi on earth and through the virtue of that boon the child began to increase the wealth of his father beyond all limit.

25-27. King Srinjaya then caused all objects of his desire to be made of gold; and his houses and walls and fortresses and the residencies of the Brahmanas, his beds, conveyances, plates and all kinds of cups, saucers and the mansion he possessed and all implements and utensils, domestic and otherwise. Were caused to be made of gold. In the course of time his treasure went on increasing.

28. Then certain robbers hearing of the prince and seeing him to be such banded together and endeavored to do mischief to the king.

29. Some of them said, "We shall seize the son of the king. He is the mine of gold of his father. Let us therefore try to seize him."

30. Thereafter those robbers, led by covetousness, entered the king's palace; and forcibly took away the young prince Suvarnasthivi.

31. Seizing him and carrying him to the woods, those idiots not knowing what to do with him. Out of avarice slew him and cut him to pieces. But they found not any gold inside his frame. When that child was deprived of his life, all the gold consequent on the sages' boon, disappeared.

32. The robbers then, ignorant and idiotic as they were, slew one another; for having slain that wonderful prince, they also met with their destruction.



33. These robbers of wicked deed were plunged to an awful and unimaginable hell. The beholding his son obtained through a boon slain, that one of great asceticism, viz.,

34. King Srinjaya began to lament plaintively being afflicted with terrible grief. Hearing the king afflicted with grief caused by his son's death thus lament.

35. The celestial Rishi Narada revealed himself before the king. And he spoke these words to the bewailing and woe-stricken and senseless.

36. King Srinjaya. O Yudhishtira listen now to those words. You shall have to die, O Srinjaya, with many of your desires unfulfilled.

37. Although we the reciters of the sacred Veda live under your roof. O Srinjaya, we had to hear of the death of even Avikshita's son Marutta.

38-40. Piqued with Brihaspati, he had compelled even Samvarta himself to be a office-bearer in one of his great sacrifices. To that royal sage, the illustrious divinity (Mahadeva) had given wealth in the shape of a golden plateau of Himavat. There with Marutta had accomplished numerous sacrifices. After the accomplishment of his sacrifices, various tribes of celestials, the creators of the world, accompanied by Indra and headed by Brihaspati, used to come to him. All the carpets and furniture's of his sacrificial compound were made of gold.

41-43. At his sacrifices the twice-born sects desirous of food all ate as it pleased them—food that was purified and suited to their tastes. At all his sacrifices, milk and curds and clarified butter and honey and other kinds of drinks and edibles, all of the finest sort and garments and ornaments precious and desirable, used to be given to Brahmanas thoroughly acquainted with the scriptures. The very gods became the distributors of food in Marutta's palace.

44-47. The Visvadevas were the courtiers of that royal sage the son of Avikshita. By him were propitiated the dwellers of heaven with oblations of clarified butter; gratified therewith, the gods, in their turn, increased that sovereign's wealth of corn by profuse showers

of rain. He always contributed to the pleasure of the Rishis, the ancestral manes and the celestials and thereby made them propitious, as also by practising Brahmacharya, by the study of the Vedas, by observance of obsequial rites and by offering all kinds of gifts. His beds and carpets and conveyances and his vast treasures of gold difficult to be given away, in reality, all that vast among of wealth of his, were voluntarily distributed among the Brahmanas. Indra himself wished him well. His subjects were made happy by him. Performing all acts through piety, he finally attained to the eternal regions of bliss acquired by his religious merit.

48. With his children, counsellors wives, descendants, relatives, king Marutta, in the days of his youth, ruled his dominions for a thousand years.

49-50. When even such a monarch, O Srinjaya, superior to you in respect of the four cardinal virtues and who, superior to you, was much more superior to your son, had to suffer death, do not lament for your son, saying - 'O Shvaitya,' who performed no sacrifice and made no sacrificial presents.

## CHAPTER 56

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The story of Suhotra

##### Narada said

1. O Srinjaya, we heard also of the death of king Suhotra, who was the foremost of all heroes, invincible and interviewed by the gods themselves.

2. Having obtained his kingdom by virtue, he used to question his Ritvigas, family priests and Brahmanas about its welfare and then used to live up to their instructions.

3. Knowing virtue to be identified with the protection of his subjects, acts of charity and performance of sacrifices and the subjugation of foes, Suhotra desired the increase of his wealth.

4. He worshipped the gods according to the ordinances of the holy texts and conquered his foes by means of his arrows. He pleased all creatures with his own excellent acquirements.

5. During his time of rule, the earth was freed from the depredation of Mlecchas and the forest-thieves and the Parjanya showered gold throughout the whole year.

6-7. In those days of his the rivers ran liquid gold and were open to the use of everybody. Parjanya then poured on his kingdom large numbers of golden alligators, crabs and fishes of various classes and many other objects of desire; the artificial lakes of his dominions were full two miles long.

8. Then king Suhotra beholding thousands of dwarfs hunch-backs, alligators and sharks and tortoises, all made of gold, was greatly amazed.

9. That royal sage, having performed a sacrifice in Kurujangala, gave away that unlimited quantity of gold to the Brahmanas, even before the accomplishment of that sacrifice.

10. Having celebrated a thousand horse-sacrifices, a hundred Rajasuya sacrifices and, numerous other Kshatriya sacrifices, in all of which he gave away vast wealth as sacrificial presents.

11. And also having accomplished numerous daily rites from specific wishes, that king ultimately attained to a very desirable end. O Srinjaya, when even such a king suffered death, who was superior to you in all the four virtues.

12. And so was superior to your son, you should not lament for your son saying 'O Shvaitya' who performed no sacrifice and gave away no sacrificial presents.

## CHAPTER 57

(ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)–

Continued

The story of king Paurava

Narada said

1. O Srinjaya, we also heard of the death of the heroic king Paurava, who gave away a thousand times thousand horses that were all white in colour.

2. At the celebration of the horse-sacrifice by him, the number of Brahmanas learned in the

Shiksha and Aksharas that then presented themselves from different countries, was indeed countless.

3. These Brahmanas, purified by the Vedas, by learning, by the observance of vows, all of benevolent dispositions and of amiable features, received from the monarch gift of such things as garments, horses, precious beads, carpets and conveyances.

4. They were always entertained by actors, dancers, minstrels perfectly accomplished and well-acquainted with their respective arts and engaged in sports and always striving for pleasing the former.

5. At each of his sacrifices, in due time, he used to give away as Dakshina, ten thousand elephants of golden effulgence, with their temporal juice trickling down.

6. And also golden chariots decked with standards and flags, He also used to give away as Dakshina a thousand times thousand damsels, all adorned with golden ornaments.

7. And chariots, elephants and horses for mounting and mansions and fields and hundreds of cows and thousands of high-souled cattle-tenders and all decked with chains of gold.

8. That in that sacrifice king Paurava gave away as gifts kine with calves, having horns of gold, hoofs of silver and udders of brass, as also numerous male and female slaves, asses, camels and sheep.

9. He also gave away as presents, diverse kinds of gems and numerous piles of food and edibles, even before the accomplishment of his sacrifices.

10. People conversant with the history of the past ages sing this songs -

11. That monarch of the Angas, ever devoted to the performance of sacrifice, celebrated many auspicious sacrifices suited to his order, one after another, according to their respective efficacy; and these sacrifices yielded all his objects of desire.

12. O Srinjaya, when even such a king suffered destruction, who was superior to you in all his four cardinal virtues and so who was far superior to your son, you should not lament for your son saying, Oh Shvaitya and should not

grieve for his having performed no sacrifices and made no sacrificial presents.

## CHAPTER 58

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The story of king Sini

**Narada said**

1. We heard, O Srinjaya, that even Sini, the son of Ushinara, had to suffer death, who had put, as it were, a leathern band round the entire earth.

2. He made the earth with her mountain and the islands and seas and forests resound with the clatter of his car-wheels. That subduer of foes, viz., Sini himself, every day used to slay the foremost of his opponents.

3. He celebrated various sacrifices attended with profuse sacrificial presents; that highly puissant and intelligent monarch acquired enormous quality of wealth.

4. In battle he came to be recognised as the head of all the Kshatriya. Having brought the entire earth under his control, he performed many Horse-sacrifices.

5. Productive of grant merit without any the least obstruction, giving away as sacrificial presents thousands and millions of golden nikshas, numerous elephants, steeds and other kinds of animals, large quantities of grain and countless deer, cows and sheep.

6-9. And Sini also offered as a gift to the Brahmanas this earth consisting of various different kinds of soil. Indeed Ushinara's son Sini gave away as presents as many kine as is the number of rain drops showered on the earth or the number of stars in the firmament or the number of sand grains on the bed of the river Ganga, the number of stones that compose the mount Meru or the number of gems or aquatic animals in the ocean. The Lord of creation has not come across or will not come across, in the past, the present or the future, another king competent to bear the burden that king Sini bore on his shoulders. The sacrifices celebrated by

king Sini were numerous and attended with all sorts of rites.

10. In his sacrifices, the stakes, the carpets, the horses, the wells and the arches were all made of gold. Edibles and drink suited to the taste and perfectly pure, were used to be supplied in abundance; and the Brahmanas that came there were countless.

11. Viands and edibles of every description were used to be distributed with agreeable words, (such as 'take, accept'). There milk and curds used to be collected in lakes of large dimensions. In his sacrificial compound, flowed rivers of drink and stood hills of white edibles.

12. "Drink" "bathe" 'eat' and 'do as like,' these were the words that used to be heard there. Pleased with his deeds of piety, Rudra bestowed a boon on him, saying–

13. "As you give away numerous presents, let your wealth, your devotion, your renown, your meritorious deeds, the love that people cherish for you and the paradise that you shall attain to, let all these of yours, be inexhaustible."

14. Having obtained even such a desirable boon, in due time, Sini had to go to heaven. O Srinjaya, even when such a king had to suffer death who was superior to you in respect of the four virtues.

15. And consequently who was far more superior to your son, you should not lament for your son saying–O Shvaitya—who performed no sacrifice and made no gifts.

## CHAPTER 59

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The story of Rama

**Narada said**

1. O Srinjaya, we heard that even Rama that son of Dasaratha, had to suffer death. His subjects were as much delighted with him a father is pleased with the sons of his own loins.

2. In that one endowed with immeasurable energy, innumerable virtues resided. At the command of his father that undeteriorating one,

for fourteen long years lived in the woods with his wife and his younger brother Lakshmana.

3. While in the forest of Janasthana, that foremost of men slew Rakshasas, fourteen thousand in number, for the protection of the ascetics.

4. When he was living there, the Rakshasa, by name Ravana stole away his wife, the princess of Videha, having deceived both himself and his follower Lakshmana.

5. That son of Paulastya invincible by his enemies who had injured him, Rama slew in battle, being excited with rage, like the three-eyed Mahadeva slaying the demon Andhaka.

6. That one (Ravana) incapable of being slain by the celestials and the Asuras, that thorn in the sides of the Gods and Brahmanas, namely that descendant of Paulastya, the mighty-armed Rama slew in battle, with all his followers.

7. In consequence of his showing mercy towards his subjects he used to be honoured by the celestials themselves.

8. That one (Rama), served even by the Gods and the sages, filled the earth with his fame. Having acquired immeasurable kingdom, he used to treat his subjects with kindness.

9. Cherishing his subjects virtuously, that lord without any hindrance, accomplished one hundred of that mighty sacrifice Ashvamedha together with the sacrifice called Jaruthya.

10. He created great joy in Indra by pouring libations of clarified butter on the fire. And, O king, he celebrated many other kinds of sacrifice, all productive of great religious merit.

11. Rama conquered hunger and thirst and he was beyond the influence of maladies that trouble the corporeal creation. He was always attended with all kinds of virtues and burnt in his own energy.

12. Indeed Rama, the son of Dasaratha surpassed in beauty all other created beings. The Rishis, the celestials and the mortals all together.

13. Lived on the face of the earth, when Rama ruled over the kingdom. Then the lives of animate beings never terminated untimely.

14. When Rama ruled his dominions, the vital breaths know as Prana and Apana and Samana and others, all duly performed their functions. All splendour appeared to increase and evil portents were never seen.

15. All his subjects then enjoyed length of days; men then were not taken away in the prime of their life. The denizens of heaven, highly satisfied, used to obtain, according to the (ordinances of the) four Vedas.

16. Libations of clarified butter and other offerings of edibles presented by men. His dominions were not infested with gnats and flies and they were free from snakes and other reptiles.

17. Living creatures died not being drowned and prematurely; fire did not consume anything then. Then there were none, of vicious propensities and covetous and ignorant.

18. His subjects, belonging to all the four castes, were engaged in the performance of righteous and desirable deeds. The Rakshasas then, used to hinder the adoration of the Pitris in Janasthana.

19. The Lord Rama slaying them, caused the offerings and the adoration to be one more made to the ancestral manes and the gods. Men then became fathers of thousand sons and their duration of life covered a thousand years.

20. Then seniors in age had never the misfortunes of performing the obsequies of their juniors. Youthful, of a dark blue complexion, of red eyes, possessing the tread of an infuriate elephant.

21-22. Having arms hanging down to the knees and of well-shape, of shoulders resembling those of the lion and of great might, that delighter of the hearts of beings, namely Rama, ruled his kingdom for eleven thousand years. His subjects were then always occupied in talking about him.

23. While Rama ruled his kingdom, the world became most charming and captivating. At last taking his subjects belonging to all the four orders with him, Rama ascended to heaven.

24. Having perpetuated his own, line in eight separate dynasties of kings, When, O Srinjaya, even such a king died who was superior to you in respect of the four cardinal virtues.

25. Consequently, who was far more superior to your son, you should not lament for your son saying "O Shvaitya" who performed no sacrifice and made no sacrificial presents.

## CHAPTER 60

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The story of Bhagiratha

Narada said

1. O Srinjaya, we also heard that king Bhagiratha, fell a prey to death, Bhagiratha who caused the banks of Ganga-called Bhagirathi after him—to be covered with fights of golden steps.

2. He have away to Brahmanas, kings and princes, a thousand times thousand damsels, all adorned with ornaments of gold.

3. All those damsels were mounted on chariots; and to all the chariots were harnessed four steeds; and again every chariot was attended with a hundred elephants all decked with chains of gold.

4. A thousand horses followed each king and after each horse, came a hundred cows and after the cows came sheep and deer, countless in number.

5. Bhagiratha gave away enormous gifts at his sacrifices in consequence of which, large used to be the concourse of people at them. Afflicted with the heavy burden of men, Ganga saying 'protect me', sat down upon his lap.

6. And because in the days of yore Ganga sat on his lap, she, like Urvashi, came to be regarded as his daughter and was named after him. Then having become the kings daughter, she became his son (i.e. she procured, like a son, the salvation of his ancestors).

7. Gandharvas of melodious voice and solar effulgence, greatly pleased, sang this song in

the hearing of the anscertral manes, the celestials and the human beings.

8. Thus, O Srinjaya, that Goddess namely the ocean-going Ganga, chose the Lord Bhagiratha that descendant of 'Ikshvaku, that performer of sacrifices with profuse gifts, to be her father.

9. His sacrifices were always honoured by the presence of the celestials with Indra at their head. Removing all obstructions, the Gods used to appropriate their respective shares and to facilitate those sacrifices in every way.

10. That self-controlled king Bhagiratha highly pleased used to give to the Brahmanas all their objects of desire and all things that any one of the Brahmanas used to set his heart upon.

11. He had nothing that he would have hesitated to give to the Brahmanas. Every one obtained from him everything he wanted; that king also, through the grace of the Brahmanas, ascended to regions of Brahma.

12. For the self-same object for which the sages living on the rays of the sun, used to dance attendance upon the Sun, for that very object they used to wait upon the Lord Bhagiratha, that ornament of the three world.

13. When, O Srinjaya, even such a king had to suffer death, who was superior to you in respect of the four cardinal virtues and consequently far superior to your son you should not lament for your son saying, 'Oh Shvaitya'—who did not perform any sacrifice or make any sacrificial gift.

## CHAPTER 61

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The story of king Dilipa

Narada said

1. We also heard, O Srinjaya, that Dilipa the son of Ilavala had to suffer death. In the celebration of his hundred sacrifices were present countless number of the twice-born ones acquainted with the knowledge of the reality about things, devoted to the performance of sacrifices and blessed with sons and grandsons.

2. That king of the earth, celebrating various sacrifices, offered this earth replete with treasures, to the Brahmanas as a gift.

3. At all the sacrifices of king Dilipa, the roads used to be constructed of gold. Regarding him equal to Dharma himself, the very Gods and Indra at their head, used to come to him.

4. There were wandering many great elephants like a various hills. The upper and lower rings in his sacrificial stakes were made of gold.

5. Canals of essence used to flow there and piles of cereal (food-grains) was so collected as that of mountains. O king! One thousand pandalas (pavilions) made of gold extended each to a vyama were erected with grandeur in the offerings (yajna) arranged by them.

6. Partaking of his Raga-khandavas, many people at his sacrifices used to lie down on the high-ways. He following thing seemed exceedingly wonderful and never occurred to any other king, viz., that when Dilipa fought on waters, his car-wheels never sank below the surface.

7. Those who saw king Dilipa, that steady bowmen, always truthful and giving away profuse gifts at his sacrifices, succeeded in attaining paradise.

8-9. In the mansion of Dilipa otherwise called Khattvanga, the following five sorts of sounds were always to be heard, namely, the sound of the recital of the Vedas, the twang of the bow and the sound produced by utterance of the words, 'Drink, Enjoy and Eat.'

10-12. When even such a king, O Srinjaya, died, who was superior to you in respect of the four cardinal virtues and consequently far superior to your son, you should not lament for your son saying - 'O Shvaitya', who did perform no sacrifice and make no sacrificial presents.

## CHAPTER 62

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The story of Mandhata

##### Narada said

1. O Srinjaya, we also heard that Yuvanasva's son, king Mandhata, who vanquished the celestials, the Asuras and the gods and the worlds, had to undergo death.

2. The twin Asvinas, (the celestial physicians) drew him out of his fathers womb. Once on a time when out hunting, king Yuvanasva became thirsty and his steed became exhausted.

3. Seeing at a distance, a curl of smoke, the monarch (guided by it) reached a sacrificial compound and he drank the sacrificial butter that lay scattered there. (Thereupon the monarch conceived). Then seeing the king quick with child.

4. The two foremost of celestials physicians, the twin Asvins drew out the child from the kings womb. then beholding the new-born babe of divine radiance lie on the lap of his father.

5. The gods spoke to one another saying-'Whom shall this child suck.' Then Vasava said - 'Let this child suck, my finger first.'

6. Thereupon from the fingers of Indra nectareous mild flowed out. Because Indra had, out of compassion for the child, said 'Let him suck me.'

7-8. Therefore the celestials designated him as Mandhatri. Then streams of milk and clarified butter flowed into the mouth of Yuvanasva's son from the finger of the high-souled Indra. He then drank the nectar flowing from Indra's hand and thus went on growing.

9. In twelve days he became twelve cubits in stature and was also endued with great prowess. And he conquered this extensive earth in the course of a single day.

10-11. Of righteous soul, endued with great intelligence and heroic and devoted to truth and of controlled passions, Mandhatri conquered,

through the force of his bow, Janamejaya, Sudhanva, Gaya, Puru, Brihadratha, Asita and king Nriga.

12. The hill where the sun rises and the hill where it sets, all the land lying between these two hills, is called the dominion of the king Mandhatri, the son of Yuvanasva.

13. Having accomplished a hundred horse-sacrifices and a hundred Rajasuya sacrifices also. He gave away to the Brahmanas, O ruler of men, some Rohita fish made of gold that were ten yojanas in length and one yojana in breadth.

14. Piles of delicate and tasteful foods and edibles, after the Brahmanas had been entertained, were partaken of by other people and greatly enhanced their joy.

15. Enormous quantities of food, viands edibles and drinks and potion and piles of cooked rice were there and shone beautiful. Many rivers, having lakes of clarified butter, with various kinds of soup for their mud, curds for their forth and honey for their water, looking charming and flowing in currents of milk and honey, wended round the mountains of solid edibles.

16-17. Gods, Asuras, men, Jakshas, Gandharvas, snakes, birds and many Vipras, learned in the Vedas and their auxiliaries, came at this sacrifices. Among the Brahmanas and the sages who came there, there was none who was not learned.

18. King Mandhatri having given away as gift the earth bounded by the ocean and replete with all sorts of wealth, to the Brahmanas, at last set like the sun itself.

19-20. Then having filled the quarters with his fame, he repaired to the regions of righteous. Even when such a king, O Srinjaya, died, who was superior to you in all the four cardinal qualities and consequently much more superior to your son—you should not lament for your son saying—‘Oh Shvaitya’—who performed no sacrifice and made no sacrificial gifts.

## CHAPTER 63

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The story of Yayati

##### Narada said

1-2. O Srinjaya, we heard also that Yayati, the son of Nahusa, was carried away by Death. Having celebrated a hundred Rajasuya sacrifices, a hundred Horse-sacrifices, a thousand Pundarikas, a hundred Vajapeya sacrifices, a thousand Atiratra sacrifices, numerous Chaturmasya sacrifices. Many Agnistomas and diverse other kind of sacrifices, all attended with the giving away of profuse Dakshinas.

3. He gave to the Brahmanas all the wealth on the face of Earth, belonging to the non-Brahmana sect, having at first taken an account of them all.

4. The holiest river Sarasvati, oceans, mountains and rivulets offered ghee and milk for offering arranged by the religious soul, king Yayati.

5-7. He assisted the celestials when they and the Asuras stood ready for fight arraying themselves in battle order. He divided the earth in four parts and gave her away to four persons. Having celebrated diverse sacrifices and virtuously begotten excellent progeny on his wives, viz., Devayani, the daughter of Ushanas and Sharmistha, that god-like Yayati roamed in the woods of the celestials, at his own unrestrained pleasure, like a second Vasava (or Indra).

8. Versed in all the Vedas, when he found that he was not satiated with the indulgence of his desires, he repaired to the forest with his wives, having uttered this saying -

9. “Whatever of paddy, wheat, gold, animals and women there are on the face of the earth, are not sufficient for even one single man. Knowing such to be the fact, one should betake to contentment.”

10. Thus having renounced all his desires and cultivating contentment, the Lord Yayati

retired into the woods, having installed his son Puru on the throne.

11. O Srinjaya, when even such a king had to suffer death, who was superior to you in respect of the four cardinal virtues and was consequently much more superior to your son, you should not lament for your son—crying—‘O Shvaitya’—who did not perform any sacrifice or offer any sacrificial presents.

## CHAPTER 64

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)— Continued

#### The story of Ambarisha

Narada said

1. O Srinjaya, we heard that Nabhaga’s son Ambarisha, who, single-handed, fought a thousand times against thousand kings, was also carried away by Death.

2. He simultaneously attacked his enemies who desired to obtain victory over him, who were accomplished in fighting with weapons and who had assaulted him with fierce yells.

3. Subduing them with his prowess and by the strength of his weapons, he cut-off their umbrellas, weapons, standards and chariots and deprived them of their lives. Thus he relieved himself of all his anxieties.

4. Then desirous of saving their lives, those defeated king, putting off their coats of mail implored the mercy of that compassionate monarch and sought his protection saying, “We surrender ourselves.”

5. Thus having brought them under his control and having conquered this world, he celebrated a hundred desirable sacrifices, in accordance with the ordinances of the Shastras, O sinless one.

6. At those sacrifices of his, people partook of edibles possessed of all delicate qualities. Therefore most of the Brahmanas were greatly gratified and were most excellently worshipped.

7-9. Sweetmeat, Purikas, Pupas, Saskulis of excellent taste and large size, Karambhas, Prithumridikas and various kinds of well-prepared edibles, various sorts of Supas, Maireyas, Pupas, Ragakhandavas and diverse

king of confectionery, well-dressed, delicate and savoury and clarified butter and honey and milk and water and tasteful curds and fruits and esculent roots—these things were there eaten by the regenerate castes.

10. And men who were addicted to drink wines, drank, in proper time, various kinds of intoxicating drinks, for the sake of the pleasures they produced and then sang and played upon their musical instruments.

11. Some perfectly intoxicated sang songs and were greatly delighted; and some reeled on the ground; some applauded the son of Nabhaga in panegyrics and some danced in thousands.

12. In those sacrifices, Ambarisha gave as gifts the kingdoms of hundreds and thousands of kings to the ten million priests engaged in his sacrifice.

13-15. Having celebrated diverse sacrifices the king gave to the Brahmanas as sacrificial presents numerous princes and kings whose coronal locks had been purified by the sacred bath, all furnished with golden armours, all having white umbrellas held over their heads, all mounted on golden chariots, vested in superb garments and having large retinues and all bearing their scepters and possessing their treasures. ‘None amongst the men of olden times did, nor those to come will do.’

16. What king Ambarisha, profuse in his sacrificial present’s has done. Even thus did the mighty sages, gratified with him, applauded him.

17. O Srinjaya, when even such a king who was superior in respect of the four cardinal virtues to you and consequently to your son, had to undergo death, you should not lament for your son who performed no sacrifices and made no sacrificial gifts, saying, ‘O Shvaitya.’

## CHAPTER 65

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)— Continued

#### The story of Shashabindu

Narada said

1. We also heard, O Srinjaya, that king Shashabindu, who was of great personal beauty



and of prowess incapable of being repulsed and who performed numerous and diverse sacrifices, had to undergo death.

2. That one of illustrious soul had a hundred thousand wives; and each of these wives was blessed with a thousand sons.

3. All those princes were endowed with prowess; all of them performed ten millions of sacrifices each. Learned in the sacred scriptures, those royal heroes accomplished many excellent sacrifices.

4. All of them, (on occasions of battle) used to don golden coats of mail; and all were excellent bowmen. All those sons of Shashabindu accomplished the Horse-sacrifice.

5. That foremost of kings, their father gave them away to the Brahmanas as sacrificial peasants, at his own sacrifice. Each of those princes was followed by hundreds upon hundreds of car-warriors and elephants.

6. And beautiful damsels adorned with ornaments of gold. With each damsel were a hundred elephants and with each elephant a hundred chariots.

7. With each car were a hundred horses adorned with chains of gold and with each horse a thousand cows. With each cow were fifty goats.

8. This uncountable wealth was gifted by the prosperous and respected king Sasabindu to Brahmins in the great offering Ashvamedha arranged once by him.

9. In that great Horse-sacrifice of his, he gave away unlimited wealth and in other sacrifices also he gave away equal amount of gold.

10. There were piles of edibles, foods and confectionery of the height of two full miles. And when the Horse-sacrifices of the king was over thirteen such piles remained (un-used).

11. Having ruled for many years over his kingdom, where the people were well-fed, satisfied and free from diseases and where all kinds of evils were rooted out, king Shashabindu ascended to heaven.

12. O Srinjaya, when even such a sovereign, who was superior in respect of the four cardinal

virtues to you and consequently to your son, had to suffer death you should not lament of your son who performed no sacrifices and made on sacrificial gifts, saying 'O Shvaitya'.

## CHAPTER 66

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The story of Gaya

Narada said

1. O Srinjaya, we also heard of the death of king Gaya, the son of Amurtarajas, who for hundred years lived only upon remnants of the libations offered on fire.

2-3. Thereat Agni offered to bestow boon on him; and thereupon Gaya asked for this boon saying, "I desire to acquaint myself with the contents of the Vedas, through ascetic penances, observance of Brahmacharya rites, vows and rules and also through the grace of my preceptors. I also desire to acquire inexhaustible wealth without transgressing the duties of the order which I belong to and without any injury to any one else.

4. I desire also the boon, that everyday I may give away devoutly my wealth to the Brahmanas. I wish also to beget sons upon females of my own order and not upon others.

5. Let devotion be the ruling feeling of my heart when I shall give away edibles; let also my mind delight in the foundation of righteousness. Let, O Agni, no difficulty overtake me when I engage myself in the performance of pious deeds."

6. "It shall be so", saying this, the God of Fire, disappeared even there. Then Gaya realising all those boons sought, began to obtain righteous victories over all his enemies.

7. Then king Gaya celebrated for a full hundred years, various kinds of sacrifices with profuse Dakshinas, as also many other vows as Chaturmasya.

8. Every year, in a century, the king gave to the Brahmanas, with due devotion, hundred thousand kine, ten thousand horses.

9. And for several successive centuries he gave to the Brahmanas hundred thousand Nishkas and sixty-thousand kine, at the time of his rising.

10. Under every (auspicious) conjunction of the constellations, he gave away presents specified for those occasions. Verily the monarch performed various sacrifices like another Soma or another Angirasa.

11. Making the earth covered with gold and with pebbles constituted by gems, he gave her away as a present to the Brahmanas during the celebration of his great Horse-sacrifice.

12. In the sacrifices of Gaya, the stakes were made of gold; and embossed with jewels and precious, they delighted the hearts of all.

13. Then Gaya gave to the delighted Brahmanas and other creatures, those stakes and many other precious object the desire.

14-15. The various species of creatures inhabiting the oceans, the islands, the rivers male and female, the woods, forests, towns, kingdoms, the paradise and the sky and diverse other beings were gratified with the wealth and riches distributed at Gaya's sacrifice. They then said, "There was no sacrifice like that celebrated by Gaya."

16-17. The sacrificial altar of Gaya was thirty yojanas long, twenty-six yojanas high; and it was covered with gold and strewn over with pearls and gems. He gave away this altar and many garments and ornaments to the Brahmanas.

18. That liberal-handed monarch gave to the Brahmanas other presents specified in the scriptures. When the sacrifice was completed, their remained twenty-five mountains of edibles and foods, (untouched).

19. And there also remained many lakes of potions and several stream of juicy drinks flowing charmingly and many garments and ornaments, perfumes and many princes (who were intended to be given away as presents).

20. Through that great sacrifice of his, Gaya became well-known in the three worlds; and the eternal Banian tree and the holy Brahma-lake, owe their origin to that sacrifice.

21. O Srinjaya, when even such a king, who was far superior in respect of the four cardinal virtues to you and consequently to your son, had to undergo death, you should not lament for your son who performed no sacrifice and made no sacrificial gifts—saying 'O Shvaitya.'

## CHAPTER 67

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The story or Rantideva

#### Narada said

1. O Srinjaya, we heard also that Sankriti's son Rantideva, who had two hundred-thousand cooks of high-soul, had to undergo death.

2. These cooks of his, used to distribute raw and cooked food and vast amount of wealth, day and night, to the Brahmanas that repaired to Ratindeva's mansion as guests.

3. He gave away unto the Brahmanas his wealth acquired through fair means. Having studied the Vedas he subdued his foes in fair combats.

4. He always gave away golden Nishkas to the Brahmanas saying. "I give you Nishkas, I give you Nishkas."

5. "To you, to you," saying these words he gave thousands of Nishkas away to the Brahmanas. Then again, comforting them, he gave them Nishkas.

6. Having given away in the course of a single day, a Koti of Nishkas, he used to say, "I have his day given away a very small number of coins", thus thinking, he would again give away Nishkas. What other person can give away such enormous quantity of wealth?

7. That king used to give away wealth, thinking— "If I do not give wealth into the hands of the Brahmanas, great and everlasting sorrow will surely fall in my share."

8-9. For a hundred years, twice a month, he gave away unto thousands of Brahmanas a golden bull each followed by a herd of hundred cows and eight hundred pieces of Nishkas. All the articles necessary for his Agnihotra sacrifice and for his other sacrifices.

10-11. He gave away to the sages, including karakas and jars for water and plates and dishes and beds, carpets, conveyances, palaces and dwelling houses. And various sorts of trees and diverse kinds of edibles and viands. All the utensils and articles of the intelligent Ratindeva were made of gold.

12. Seeing then the super-human prosperity of king Ratindeva, those that were conversant with the history of past ages sang this song.

13. We have not seen such vast treasures even in the mansion of Kubera (the Plutus of Hindu mythology), what to speak of the treasures of men?

14. People then wonderingly used to say—"It is evident that the kingdom of Ratindeva, the son of Sankrita, is made of gold.

15. On such nights when guests used to assemble in the mansion of Ratindeva, twenty-one thousand cows used to be sacrificed (for feeding them).

16. And the cooks of the king, adorned with jeweled ear-rings used to cry out (to the guests) saying—"Drink as much soup as you can, for there is not so much meat today as there was the other day."

17. Whatever of gold Ratindeva possessed, then, was given away to the Brahmanas in the course of one of his sacrifices.

18. The gods in person used to accept the libations of butter poured on the fire for them. And the ancestral manes used similarly to accept food that was offered to them in proper time. The Brahmanas, the best of their sects, used to obtain from him all the objects of their desire.

19. When, O Srinjaya, even such a king had to undergo Death, who was superior to you in respect of the four cardinal virtues. And consequently was superior to your son, you should not lament for your son who performed no sacrifice and made no sacrificial gifts, saying—"O Shvaitya'.

## CHAPTER 68

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The story of Bharata

Narada said

1. O Srinjaya, we heard that Dushyanta's son Bharata, who, when a child, performed in the woods many feats difficult of being performed by others, had also to suffer death.

2. Possessed of great prowess, he used quickly to deprive the very lions armed with teeth and claws, of all their ferocity and dragged them and bound them at his own pleasure.

3-4. He used to tame down the very tigers, more ferocious and more ruthless than the lions. Seizing various beasts of prey and even prodigious elephants dyed with red chalk-solution and bespattered with other liquid minerals, by their teeth and tusks, that highly powerful one used to bring them to his subjection causing their throats to become parched up and compelling them to fly away.

5. Endued with great strength he used to drag down the mightiest of buffaloes. Through his prowess, he tamed hundreds of ferocious lions.

6. And powerful tigers and horned rhinoceroses and other animals. Binding them by their necks and twisting the ropes (around their necks) to an inch of their lives, he used to release them.

7. For those feats of his, the regenerate sages residing there used to call him Sarvadamana (or the subduer of all). But at last his mother forbade him do so, saying—"Do not torture animals thus."

8. Possessed of great energy, he celebrated a hundred Horse-sacrifices on the banks of the river Yamuna, three hundred such sacrifices on the banks of the Sarasvati and four hundred such on the banks of the Ganges.

9. Having accomplished all those sacrifices he once more performed a thousand great Horse-sacrifices and a hundred such Rajasuya,

in which he made profuse gifts to the Brahmanas.

10. He performed also such other sacrifices, as the Agnisthoma, the Atiratra, the Vektha, the Visvajit and thousands of Vajapeyas.

11-16. Then the royal son of Sakuntala gratified the Brahmanas with the present of riches; then Bharata of illustrious fame gave ten thousand billions of coins made of the purest gold to Kanwa (who had reared his mother). The gods with Indra at their head, accompanied by the twice-born ones, coming to this sacrifices, set up his sacrificial stake made wholly of gold and measuring hundred vyamas in width. The royal Bharata of magnanimous soul, that conqueror of his foes, that sovereign ever unsubdued by his enemies gave away unto the Brahmanas, charming steeds, elephants and chariots, adorned with gold and embossed with gems of the first water of all sorts and camels and goats and sheep and male and female servants, wealth, grain, milch-cows with calves and villages, houses and fields and garments of various kinds, countless in number. When, O Srinjaya, even such a king had to suffer death who was superior to you in respect to the four cardinal virtues.

17. And consequently to your son, you should not lament for your son who performed no sacrifice and made no sacrificial gifts saying, 'O Shvaitya.'

## CHAPTER 69

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The story of Prithu

Narada said

1. We heard also, O Srinjaya, that Vena's son Prithu, who was installed as the emperor of the world by the mighty sages on the celebration of his Rajasuya-sacrifice, had also to suffer death.

2. Having vanquished all his foes with great efforts, he consolidated his empire, for which he

came to be called Prithu (or the celebrated). He became a true Kshatriya, owing to his protecting his subjects from wounds and injuries.

3. Beholding Vena's son Prithu, his subjects said, 'We are delighted' and in consequence of the affection of his subjects which he enjoyed, he came to be called Raja.

4. The Earth yielded corn without being cultivated and for Vena's son Prithu she fulfilled all his desires. The cows also yielded milk whenever desired and every lotus-bud was filled with honey.

5. The sacred Kusha grass were all made of gold and were delicate to the touch and otherwise delightful. The people used to wear cloths made of this grass and they used to lie down on beds composed of them.

6. Fruits, nectareous, tasteful and delicate, then became their chief edible; and none went without food.

7. In his kingdom men lived free from all diseases, their desires were all crowned with fruition, they entertained no fear. They lived on trees and in caves, as it pleased them.

8. His dominions and his cities were not divided into smaller sections and countries. There his subjects lived delightedly, as it suited their desire or convenience.

9. When king Prithu repaired to the sea, its waves become solidified. The very mountains opened a way for him and his standard never broke (being obstructed by any thing).

10-12. Him seated at his ease, the mighty trees of the forest, the gods of the mountains, the celestials, the Asuras, the men and the replies the seven sages, the holy ascetics, the Gandharvas, the Apsaras and the ancestral manes, approaching said these words– "You are our Emperor, you protect us from injuries, you are ever our delighter, saviour and father. Give us, O mighty monarch, O Master, the boons we desire to have-boons through whose virtue we may live in happiness and plenty, for eternal years.

13. Then saying 'yea' to all their prayers, Vena's son Prithu took up his Ajagava bow and

several dreadful arrows, whose equals existed not; then thinking for a while, he addressed the Earth saying—

14. “Come, come, O Earth, quickly give these my subjects the milk they desire. Good betide you; from the milk you shall shed, I desire to give my subjects the edibles they wish to have.

**The Earth said**

15. “O Hero, it behoves you to look upon me as your own daughter.” Saying, “So be it” the self-controlled Prithu, then arranged for (milking the Earth).

16. Then the whole assemblage of creatures begin to milk the Earth (successively). The mighty trees of the forest then first approached her, desirous of milking her.

17. There then stood the highly affectionate Earth (as a cow), looking for a calf, a milker and a pot wherein to keep the milk. Then the flowering Shala tree became the calf and the Plaksha became the milker.

18. Torn buds become the milk and the auspicious fig tree became the milk-pot. (Next the mountains appeared to milk her) The Eastern hill then became the calf and the mighty Meru-mountain became the milkman.

19. Jewels and precious stones and the Osadhis became the milk and the stones became the milk-jar. Next the celestials became the milkers and everything capable of imparting energy became the milk.

20. Next the Asuras milked urine from the Earth, in unbaked earthen jars. Dvimurdha (the two-headed) then became the milker and Virochana became the calf.

21. Next the men milked her when products of cultivation and crops became the milk; the self-create Manu became the calf and Prithu the milker, on this occasion.

22. Next the snakes milked her and they received poison for milk in gourds. Dhritarashtra became the milker and Takshaka became the calf.

23. The seven sages untiring in work, next milked her and obtained the knowledge of the Supreme Brahma for the milk. Then Brihaspati

became the milker the Vedas became the milk-pot and the Somarat became the calf.

24. The Rakshasas milking her, in a jar of unbaked Earth, obtained the power of disappearing at will. Their milker was Vaishravana and Vrishadvaja was their calf.

25. The Apsaras and the Gandharvas milked her of holy fragrance and received it in lotus-petals. Chitraratha became their calf and the lord Visvaruchi became their milker.

26. The ancestral manes milked her of Svadhas in pots of silver. Vaivasvata became their calf and the Destroyer (Yama) himself became their milker.

27. Thus was the Earth milked by that entire host of creatures, who obtained for milk all objects of their respective desire. The very calves and the pots, with whose help they milked could be seen even today.

28. Then Vena’s son Prithu, possessed of prowess, celebrated various sacrifices and he gratified the hearts of creature with objects desired by them.

29. The king caused all objects obtaining of the face of the Earth to be made of gold and on the occasion of his great Horse-sacrifice, he gave them away to the Brahmanas.

30. The king caused sixty-six thousands images of elephants to be made of gold and he gave them away to the Brahmanas.

31. The entire Earth adorned with jewels and gems, the king caused to be covered over with gold and he then gave her away to the Brahmanas.

32. When, O Srinjaya, even such a king, who was superior to you in respect of the four virtues and consequently much more superior to your son, you should not lament for your son who performed no sacrifices and made no sacrificial gifts-saying, ‘O Shvaitya’.

**CHAPTER 70****(ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)–****Continued****The story of Jamadagni's son****Narada said**

1. Even the heroic Rama that illustrious ascetic adored by the heroes of the world, that son of Jamadagni, of great renown, died with his desires unsatiated.

2. Making this Earth abound in all kinds of happiness, he caused the primeval Yuga to set in. He was not perverted, having obtained excellent affluence.

3. When a calf belonging to him when stolen and when his father was slain by the Kshatriyas, he took a vow saying that he would relieve the Earth of her burden of Kshatriyas. Thereafter he slew Kartavirya who was never before defeated in battle by his foes.

4. Single-handed and with a single bow, he vanquished and dispatched to the abode of Death, four and sixty times ten thousand Kshatriyas.

5. In that slaughter were included fourteen thousand Kshatriyas all contemners of the Brahmanas. Then again he slew many Kshatriyas of the Dantakrura country.

6. He slew a thousand Kshatriyas with his bludgeon, a thousand with his sword and a thousand of the Kshatriyas also by hanging them.

7. He splitted the teeth and cut off nose and ears of one thousand Kshatriyas and forcibly made seven thousand kings to sip the bitter Dhupa (herb).

8. Remaining of them were tied and slain by clashing their heads. At north from Gunavati and at south from Khandava forest, hundreds and thousands of Haihaya kings were slain in the battle field.

9. Heroes with their chariots, steeds and elephants, lay slain on the field of battle, by the intelligent son of Jamadagni, who had been exasperated by the death of his father.

10. Then Rama slew with his axe ten thousand Kshatriyas. He then could not bear the

hot words uttered by his enraged adversaries. When the twice-born sects exclaimed saying, 'O Rama, descendant of Bhrigu's race.'

11-13. Then the puissant son of Jamadagni proceeding against the Kashmiras, the Daradas, the Kuntis, the Kshudrakas, the Malavas, the Angas, the Vangas, the Kalingas, the Videhas, the Tamraliptakas, the Rakshavahan, the Vitihotras, the Trigartas, the Martikavatas the Sini and other kingly races, thousands in number, inhabiting various countries, slew them all with his arrows of exceeding sharpness.

14-16. Going from country to country, he slew thousands and crores of Kshatriyas creating a deluge of blood and filling many lakes with it, which was as red as Indra Gopakas or the wild fruit known as Bandhu-jiva and also bringing under his sway all the eighteen division of the earth, that descendant of Bhrigu's race. Celebrated a hundred holy sacred sacrifices in which he gave away profuse sacrificial presents.

17-18. The sacrificial altar, full eighteen Nalas high and made entirely of gold and erected duly. And filled with diverse kinds of gems and jewels and adorned with hundreds of pennons, as also this earth abounding in domestic and wild animals were accepted by Kasyapa as sacrificial presents offered to him by Rama.

19. The son of Jamadagni. Rama also gave him many thousands of huge elephants adorned with golden ornaments. Freeing the earth from the robbers that infested her and making her full of innocent and amiable people, Rama gave her away to Kasyapa at his great Horse-sacrifice.

20. That lord, that hero having relieved the earth, for twenty-one times, of her burdens of the Kshatriya population and having celebrated a hundred sacrifices, gave her away to the Brahmanas.

21. The earth with her seven grand divisions were bestowed by him upon the twice-born son of Maricha (Kasyapa). Then the latter addressed Rama saying– "Go you out of this Earth, at my command".

22. At the words of Kasyapa, that best of warriors obedient to the Brahmanas' command, caused, by the fall of his arrows, the very ocean to roll back; then going to the foremost of mountains, namely, the Mahendra mountain, he continued to live there.

23. Even that enhancer of the glory of the Bhṛigu race that one endowed with desirable qualities that son of Jamadagni, of illustrious renown and great effulgence, had to die.

24. O Srinjaya, Superior to you in respect to the four virtues and also to your son, even that one did die. Therefore you should not weep for your son, who performed no sacrifice and made no sacrificial gifts.

25. These foremost and best of men, all superior to you in respect of the four virtues and in respect of many other meritorious qualities, had to suffer death, O Srinjaya.

## CHAPTER 71

### (ABHIMANYU-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The conclusion of the story of the sixteen sovereigns

##### Vyasa said

1. Having heard these holy stories of the sixteen kings, capable of enhancing the duration of the listener's life, king Srinjayas said nothing and remained silent for a while.

2. Then to him thus sitting silent, the almighty sage Narada said - "O you of great effulgence, you have heard the stories just now related by me and have comprehended their signification.

3. Or are all these lost on you, like a sraddha performed by a twice-born one having a female of the Sudra caste for his wife." Thus spoken to, Srinjaya replied to him with folded palms, saying-

4. "O you rich in the wealth of asceticism, having heard these best and laudable stories of ancient royal sages, all of whom celebrated great sacrifices with profuse presents unto the Brahmanas.

5. All my sorrow have been driven away by wonder, like darkness being dispelled by the

radiance of the sun. I have now been purged of all my sins; and I do not feel any pain now. Tell me what shall I do.

##### Narada said

6. It is through good luck that your sorrow has been dispelled. Ask you the boon that your heart craves for; you will get whatever you may seek to have. We never speak falsehood.

##### Srinjaya said

7. I am contented even with this, viz., that you, O holy sage, are pleased with me. That person with whom you are pleased, O you holy one, has nothing inaccessible to him.

##### Narada said

8. I will once again give you back your son, who was to no purpose slain by the robbers, like an animal immolated in a sacrifice. I shall take him out of the terrible hell.

##### Vyasa said

9. Then the son of Srinjaya of wonderful splendour, resembling the son of Kubera, appeared there, bestowed on his bereaved father, by the qualified sage.

10. Then king Srinjaya once more obtaining the sight of his son became highly delighted. He then gave away numerous merit-giving sacrificial gifts upon their accomplishment of the yajnas.

11. The life-mission of Srinjaya's son was not fulfilled. He had performed no sacrifices and had begotten no progeny. Destitute of bravery, he perished miserable and not in battle. For this reason he could be brought back into life.

12. As regards Abhimanyu, he was courageous and brave. He has fulfilled the mission of his life; for, the brave son of Subhadra having scorched his enemies by thousands, had passed away, falling on the field of battle.

13. Those eternal regions that are attained through the performance of Brahmacharya vows, through knowledge and acquaintance with the scriptures, through foremost of sacrifices, even those regions have been obtained by your son.

14. Men possessed of knowledge always desire to attain to heaven by their performance of deeds of piety. They who live in heaven do not like this world.

15. Therefore it is not easy to find out any desirable thing that might have been unattained by him, that might bring back into this world Arjuna's son slain in battle and now dwelling in heaven.

16. Your son has ascended to those regions, the eternal goal of Yogins who contemplate with their eyes shout or by performers of illustrious sacrifices or by people possessed of great ascetic merit.

17. Having attained a new figure after death, that hero is shining like a monarch in his own immortal radiance. Verily Abhimanyu has once more assumed his own body composed of the essence of the moon that is desired by all twice-born ones. Therefore you should not weep for him.

18. Acquainted with these facts, compose yourself and slay your enemies. Muster courage, O you sinless one, it is the living beings who want us to grieve for them and not they who have ascended to heaven.

19. O king, his sins go on increasing, for whom the living mourn. For this reason, the wise, renouncing grief, exert themselves for the benefit of the dead (i.e., their souls).

20. The living man should think of the joy, the glory and the happiness of the dead. Acquainted with truth, the wise never harbour grief, for grief is nothing more or less than grief.

21. Know this as truth; rise up, gird up your loins; do not lament, you have heard of the origin of the Death and of her unequalled penances.

22. As also of her equality of conduct towards all creatures. You have heard that prosperity's unsteady; you have also heard as how the dead son of Srinjaya was brought back to life.

23. O foremost of learned monarchs, do not lament. May you enjoy peace, I depart. Having

thus spoken, the sacred Rishi Vyasa disappeared even there.

24. Upon the disappearance of that eloquent speaker, that foremost of all intelligent beings, viz., the holy Vyasa whose colour was like that of the sky overspread with clouds, Yudhishtira having obtained consolation.

25. In consequence of what he had heard about the sacrificial merit and prosperity, of those great monarchs of ancient times endued with energy equal to that of the great Indra himself and all of whom had acquired wealth by virtuous means.

26. Applauded them in his mind and then became relieved of his sorrows. But once more, with a sorrowful heart he asked himself saying—'What shall I say to Dhananjaya?'

## CHAPTER 72

### (PRATIJNA PARVA)

#### The wrath of Arjuna

Sanjaya said

1. When that dreadful day so fraught with the slaughter of creatures had passed away and when the sun set, the auspicious shade of twilight began to spread itself.

2-3. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, when the troops of both the hosts had retired to their respective quarters, the ape-bannered Jishnu having slain the Samshaptaka hosts with his celestial weapons, proceeded towards his pavilion mounted on that victorious chariot of his. As he went on, he asked Govinda, in a voice choked with tears.

4. "Why, O Keshava, does my mind misgive and why does my speech falter? Evil portents reveal themselves to me and my limbs are becoming weak.

5. Thoughts, such as a calamity has befallen me, occupying my heart, does not leave it; on earth, in all the directions, various dreadful portents affright me.

6. Various kinds of omens are being seen by me and they harbingers the happening of a calamity, May all things fare well with the king, my venerable superior and with his followers."



**The son of Vasudeva said**

7. It is evident that everything fares well with your brothers and his ministers. Do not give way to evil thoughts; it is probable, that some trivial calamity has taken place.

**Sanjaya said**

8. Then those two heroes, having adored the evening twilight, proceeded on their car talking of the incidents of that day's battle so destructive of heroes.

9. Thereafter having achieved feats difficult of being achieved, Arjuna and Vasudeva reached the Pandava encampments, joyless and melancholy.

10. Then that slayer of foes, Vibhatsu, beholding the camp in confusion, said to Krishna with a sorrowful heart –

**Arjuna said**

11. O Jaraddana, the auspicious drums are not best today and their sound does not add to the din created by the trumpet-blasts and conch-blare.

12-13. The melodious Venu is not played upon accompanied by claps; auspicious sons, fraught with praises and delightful, are not sung in my troops today, by the minstrels and the bards. All warriors also, beholding me, are turning away with their faces cast down.

14. Duly performing the ceremonies one after another, they do not come forward to salute me. O Madhava, is everything well with all my brothers?

15. Seeing my own people distressed with sorrow, my mind does not obtain peace. Does everything fare well, O bestower of honour, with the Panchala king or the ruler of the Viratas.

16. Or with all of our warriors, O you of undeteriorating glory? Alas, today Subhadra's son accompanied by his brothers, does not come out, smiling and joyful to receive me returning from battle.

**Sanjaya said**

17. Thus talking to one another, they both entered into their encampments and they beheld

the Pandavas sit cheerless and with hearts distracted (with grief).

18. Then that hero bearing the ape as a device on his banner, seeing his brother and sons (thus depressed), himself became melancholy. Then not finding Subhadra's son he spoke these words–

**Arjuna said**

19. I see that the colour of your countenances has turned pale. I do not also see Abhimanyu here, nor do you welcome me.

20. I have also heard that Drona today arrayed his troops in the circular order. There is also none among you capable of penetrating into that array, save my boy Abhimanyu.

21. But I did not teach him the means of coming out of that array. Is it that you made the boy enter the array of the enemy?

22. Has that fierce bowman, that slayer of hostile heroes, namely, the son of Subhadra, having penetrated into those numberless divisions of the enemy, been slain in battle.

23. Tell me, Oh, how that hero possessed of mighty arms and red eyes, who was born in our race, like a lion on the mountain breast and who resembled Upendra himself, has been slain in battle?

24. Tell me about Abhimanyu, the grandson of Indra, the great archer, delicate body youth and always dear to me. How was he slaughtered in the battle.

25. What warriors, urged on by their evil Destiny, ventured to slay that dear-loved son of Subhadra, that favourite of Draupadi and Keshava, who was always fondly loved by my own mother (Kunti)?

26. How has that hero resembling the high-souled Vrishni hero Keshava himself in prowess, generosity and acquaintance with the Shastras, been slain in battle?

27. If today I do not see that hero dearly loved by that daughter of Vrishni race (Subhadra) and fondly brought up by myself, I shall be a guest of Death's abode.

28-32. Possessed of soft and curling hair-ends, of tender years, of eyes like those of a young gazelle graced with the tread of an

infuriate elephant, resembling an offshoot of a Shala tree. Of sweet speeches attended with smiles, modest, ever ready to carry out the behests of his venerables, achieving in tender years, feats worthy of mature age, sweet-spoken, free from animosity. Of mighty energy and prowess, of eyes resembling large lotus-petals, ever merciful towards his followers, self-possessed, never pursuing mean objects and men. Ever grateful, endowed with the knowledge of all things, unretreating and accomplished in the use of all kinds of weapons, ever delighting in battle and ever enhancing the terror of his adversaries. Always intent on bringing about the welfare of his own party, ever desirous of seeing victory secured by his own sires, never striking first in battle, never daunted in fight. Oh! if, I do not see such a son of mine, I shall carry me to the abode of Death.

33-34. In the tale of car-warriors, always counted with the mighty car-warriors. Possessed of mighty arms, of tender years, one an a half time superior to me in battle, always a favorite of myself, Pradyumna and Keshava. Oh, if I do not see that son of mine, I shall go to the regions of Death.

35. Graced with a beautiful nose and forehead and eyes and eyebrows and teeth and lips. Oh, without seeing that countenance of his, I shall enjoy no peace of mind.

36. Delightful like the warding of a lyre, charming and melodious like the voice of a cuckoo. Oh, without hearing that voice of his what peace can my heart enjoy?

37. His beauty that was unequaled and scarce even among the heaven-dwelling gods. Oh, without beholding that beauty of his, what peace can my heart enjoy?

38. Skillful in congratulating and welcoming others, obedient to the commands of his sires. If I do not see that son of mine, what peace can my heart enjoy?

39. Brought up in all luxury, always heroic and accustomed to lie on precious beds. He lies today on the bare earth like one helpless, though he is foremost of all who have others to look after them.

40. He upon whom, when on his bed, the most beautiful women used to attend. Oh! even he, his bodies mutilated with shafts, has inauspicious jackals prowling over the field to attend upon him today!

41. He who formerly used to be awakened from his sleep by songsters, minstrels and panegyrists. Oh! even he shall today be roused by the fierce yells of the beasts of prey.

42. That auspicious and charming countenances of his, worthy of being shaded by umbrellas. Shall today be soiled with the dust rising from the field of battle.

43. Oh! my dear child, I, who was never satiated with looking at you. Alas! unfortunate that I am I have been forcibly bereft of you by Death.

44. Surely the mansion of Death, that goal of persons of pious deed. That delightful palace, has today been illumined by your splendour and so has been made highly charming by you.

45. "Surely Yama, Varuna, Indra of hundred sacrifices and Kubera, receiving yourself as a welcome guest, are making preparations for worshipping you."

46. Thus copiously lamenting like a trader whose ship has been broken and being possessed by great grief Arjuna thus questioned Yudhishtira—

47. "O delighter of the Kurus, spreading a terrible, slaughter among the enemy's host, did my son ascend to heaven having fought with many foremost of men in battle?

48. "Surely fighting carefully in battle, he, single-handed and needing assistance, repeatedly through of me!

49-50. Afflicted by Karna and Drona and Kripa and others, with exceedingly sharp shafts of various shape and well-polished tips, my son of small strength must have repeatedly thought—"My father will surely rescue me from this difficulty." I think, when thus thinking of me he was felled to ground by those ruthless warriors.

51. "Or it may be, that being begotten by myself and being the nephew of Madhava,

being born out of Subhadra's womb, he did not utter such exclamations.

52. Surely my heart is made of the hardest adamant. In as much as, it does not burst open for my not seeing that one of mighty arms and red eyes.

53. How could the fierce bowmen (of the Kaurava) hosts, ruthless and cruel, have sped their arrows capable of penetrating to the very vitals, at that boy of tender years, that son of mine and the nephew of Madhava?

54. He of generous soul who everyday used to come out to receive me when I returned after having slain my foes, will he not see me today?

55. Alas, he lies today prostrate on the field of battle weltering in his blood and enhancing the beauty of the earth with the splendour of his limbs and looking like the sun dropped from the firmament.

56. I am indeed also destined to grieve for Subhadra who hearing that her unretreating son has been slain in battle, shall be struck with sorrow and shall give up her life?

57. Oh! what will Subhadra say to me when she will not behold Abhimanyu (her son)! Alas, what also shall I tell to Draupadi overwhelmed with great grief?

58. Surely my heart is made of the hardest adamant, in as much as it will not be splintered into thousand fragments when I shall behold my daughter-in-law (Abhimanyu's wife), bewail, afflicted with the burden of her grief.

59. I heard indeed the war-cries of the Dhritarashtras, elated with pride and Krishna also heard Yuyutsu admonishing the heroes in the following terms.

60. O mighty car-warriors, not being able to defeat Vibhatsu and slaying this boy of tender years. What, do you rejoice? O most unrighteous ones, now shall you feel the mighty of the son of Pandu.

61-62. Having done an injury to Keshava and Arjuna in battle why do you roar like lions in delight. Verily your hour for grief has come. The fruits of you sinful acts will soon overtake you all. went away, You have committed a heinous crime not long will it delay in bearing the ripe fruit for you!

63. Having spoken to them (the enemy) thus, the highly intelligent son of a Vaishya went away, leaving aside his weapons and leaving the Kauravas with wrath and sorrow.

64. Why, O Krishna, did you not tell me all this in the course of fight? I would then have burnt down all those cruel car-warriors of the enemy's host.

**Sanjaya said**

66. Thereafter the son of Vasudeva, consoling Pritha's (Arjuna) who overwhelmed with sorrow on account of his son, was exceedingly thoughtful, whose eyes were overflowing with tears and who, indeed, was afflicted by the grief generated by the slaughter of his son, said to him- "Do you not give way to grief."

67. This indeed is the inevitable fate of all those heroes who never think of retreating. Specially of the Kshatriyas who live by war. Of unretreating heroes fighting in battle, this.

68. O foremost of intelligent beings, has been specified to be the finale by those who are conversant with the meanings of our sacred scriptures. Death in battle is the inevitable fate of heroes who do not fly away from the field.

69. Undoubtedly Abhimanyu has gone to the regions of those who perform pious deeds; and, O foremost of the Bharatas, even this is coveted by all heroes.

70. O Bharata, you are renowned for honouring others, listen that all chivalrous persons are passionate and consider it their prime objective to die while facing bravely the enemy. \_

71. That they may fall in battle facing their enemies. As regards Abhimanyu, he, having slain in battle many heroic and mighty princes.

72. Hath reaped that death in battle which is so much desired by the heroes, O foremost of men, do not lament. The ancient sages have specified this to be the enduring merit of the Kshatriyas, viz., their fall in battle.

73. O foremost of the Bharatas, these your brothers are highly distressed. As also these monarchs and these your relatives, beholding you plunged in sorrow.

74. "O bestower of honour, do you console them with comforting speech. Everything worthy of being known is known to you. It behoves you not to indulge in grief."

75. Thus consoled by Krishna of wonderful deeds, the son of Pritha (Arjuna) said to all his brothers these words in a voice choked with grief—

76. O lord of Earth, that mighty-armed one, that one possessed of eyes large like lotus petals namely Abhimanyu, how he fought, I desire to know?

77. You will see that, I will consume the enemy with their elephants, chariots and steeds in battle all those opponents of my son together with all their blood relations.

78. You all are accomplished in the use of weapons and are even now armed with weapons. How then could Subhadra's son be slain in battle, even if it were the wielder of the thunder-bolt whom he might have encountered?

79. Alas, if I had known that the Pandavas and the Panchalas would be incompetent to protect my son in battle, myself would then have protected him.

80. You were all then on your chariots and were shooting your arrows; how could then Abhimanyu be slain by the enemy spreading havoc in your troops?

81. Alas, you possess no manliness! you have no prowess. Inasmuch as even before your very sight Abhimanyu was felled in battle.

82. It is better I should blame myself, since knowing you all to be cowards, sneaking and irresolute, I went away.

83. Alas! are your armours, weapons, offensive and defensive, mere decorations of your persons? Are your eloquence mere empty words suited to an assembly only? For, you all failed to protect my son.

84. Having spoken these words, Arjuna sat down with his bow and excellent sword. Then none was able to look at Vibhatsu.

85. Who then resembled the enraged destroyer, repeatedly drawing long and heavy sighs. Then his friends could not speak to Arjuna or look at him who was burning with the

grief on account of his son's death and whose countenance was then over-flooded with tears.

86. Except the son of Vasudeva or the eldest son of Pandu, none then ventured to speak to Arjuna.

87. These two (Yudhishtira and Krishna) were always agreeable to Arjuna. These two were only competent to address him on all occasions, in as much as they were held in great veneration and dear love.

88. Then the king addressed the following words to that one possessed of eyes like lotus petals; whose heart was then aching with the sorrow caused by the (untimely) demise of his son and who was excited to the highest pitch of fury.

## CHAPTER 73

### (PRATIJNA PARVA)— Continued

#### The oath of Arjuna

##### Yudhishtira said

1. When, O mighty-armed one, you had gone, against the Samshaptaka hosts, the preceptor Drona exerted himself vigorously for capturing me.

2. We then began to resist Drona and his troops arrayed in order on all sides, by dispensing off our troops and car divisions in counter array and striving hard.

3. Though he was thus resisted by many and though I was well protected, yet he began to smite us with agility, afflicting us with his sharp shafts.

4. My troops then, thus afflicted by Drona, were not even able, in battle, to look at his divisions what to speak of the thought of breaking through them!

5. Then we all, O sire, spoke to Subhadra's son, who was unequalled in his prowess, saying—'O lord, do you break through these divisions of the enemy.'

6. That highly puissant hero then thus urged on by ourselves, like a good horse, prepared himself to take that burden upon himself, however unbearable it might have been for him.

7. Then that boy of tender years, endued with energy and possessed of the knowledge of

weapons received from you, broke through that array, like Suparna entering into the ocean.

8. Then we followed that hero in battle, that son of a daughter of the Satvata race, desirous of entering the hostile ranks even through the path he then opened for us.

9. Then alas, O sire, the puny ruler of the Sindhus, king Jayadratha resisted us all, through the virtue of a boon received from the god Rudra (Mahadeva).

10. Thereupon Drona, Kripa, Karna, Drona's son, the king of the Kosalas and Kritavarman—these six car-warriors surrounded the son of Subhadra.

11. Thus surrounded by all those mighty car-warriors in battle, that boy though striking to the best of his abilities, was deprived of the use of his car, by the tremendous odds he was fighting against.

12. Thus when Abhimanyu was deprived of the use of his car by those warriors, Dushasana's son, who himself was involved in great catastrophe, succeeded, as fate would have it, in making Abhimanyu see his end.

13. Having slain thousands of men, steeds, car-warriors and tusked elephants and eight thousands car-warriors and nine hundred elephants.

14. Two thousand princes and many other unknown heroes and also having dispatched king Brihadbala to Heaven.

15. That one of highly illustrious soul through Destiny, attained his own end. Thus everything that now burns us with grief, has taken place.

16. That foremost of men has also in his way, ascended to paradise." Thus Arjuna hearing the word spoken by the virtuous king Yudhishtira.

17. And saying, O my son! and sighing like a furnace, fell down on the earth in great distress. Then every one present, with melancholy countenances sat surrounding Dhananjaya.

18. And highly distressed they began to gaze vacantly at one another with winkless eyes. Then regaining his consciousness and burning with rage, the son of Vasava.

19. Shivering as if with fever and repeatedly sighing and squeezing his hands and drawing deep breaths and with eyes flooded with tears and rolling his eyes like one mad, said these words—

**Arjuna said**

20. I tell you this for sooth that, tomorrow I will slay Jayadratha, provided that, afraid of being slain, he does not forsake the sons of Dhritarashtra.

21. Or seek our refuge or that of Krishna the foremost of all male being or that of yourself, O monarch. I will surely slay Jayadratha tomorrow.

22. Tomorrow will I slay Jayadratha who forgetting his friendship for me, has been doing good to the sons of Dhritarashtra and who has become instrumental in bringing about the slaughter of my boy.

23. Desirous of protecting him in battle whosoever shall fight with me, I will cover him, O king, with my arrows, be he Drona himself or Kripa.

24. O foremost of men, O best of heroes, if I do not do tomorrow in battle what I promise to do, then let me not ever attain to the regions which the righteous attain after death.

25-28. Those regions which are allotted to those who ravish their own mothers, to those who slay their fathers, who violate their preceptor's beds and who are malicious; those regions which are reserved for those who harbour hatred against the righteous, who speak maliciously of others, who appropriate the wealth entrusted with them and who betray their trusts; those regions that are for them who abuse others' wives enjoyed by them before or for them that slay Brahmanas or for them that slaughter the kine or for them that drink payasas or eat food prepared from barley or herbs or articles prepared from milk, sesamum and rice and *Pupas* and other kinds of cakes or meat, without having first offered them to the gods.

29-31. Even those regions shall I attain to, if I do not slay Jayadratha. Those regions to which they go who condemn the Brahmanas devoted to

the study of the Vedas or otherwise deserving of veneration or those that are senior in years or those that are senior in years or those that are pious or those that are preceptors, (even those region shall mine if I do not slay Jayadratha). That end which becomes theirs who touch the Brahmanas and the fire with their feet, that end which becomes theirs, who throw phlegm or excretions on and discharge urine in water, even that most miserable end shall be mine, if indeed I do not slay Jayadratha tomorrow.

32-34. That end that overtakes him who bathes naked in water or him who does not hospitably entertain a guest; that and that overtakes them who accept bribes, speak falsehoods and deceive and cheat men; that end that overtakes them who offend against their own souls or who falsely utter praises, that end that overtakes low wretches who eat sweetmeats before servants, sons and wives and dependents without giving them a share of them, may that end also overtake me if I do not slay Jayadratha.

35-37. That end which overtakes the cruel-hearted wretch who without maintaining a pious and obedient protegee casts him off or him who without giving a deserving neighbour the offerings in a sraddha, gives them to one undeserving of them; that end that overtakes them who accept in marriage Vrishalis; that end which becomes his who indulges in wine, his who contemns those that are worthy of veneration or his who is ungrateful or his who speaks evil of his brethren, that end shall also soon overtake me if I do not slay Jayadratha.

38. (If I fail in killing Jayadratha) the hellish living obtained by the people eating meal through left hand, put the food on lap while eating, not abandon the seat of Palasha and brush of Tenduki shall be accepted by me.

39-44. If I fail in killing Jayadratha tomorrow, the status of living or the insults as befallen on the persons described hereinafter shall be accepted by me. These persons are - the Brahmins who fear of winter, the Kshatriya who fears of battle, the village where single well is dug for drinking water and where Vedic hymns never chanted - the persons living in such village for six months, the people who condemn the scriptures, who cohabit and sleep in the day,

who set others' home on fire and poison them, who seldom arrange offering and entertain guests, who disturb cows to drink water, who enjoy intercourse with wife during her menstruation cycle and solemnise daughter's marriage by collecting fee, who make numerous clients and live on service even after born in Brahmin family, who enjoy intercourse unnatural way (insertion of penis in mouth) or do intercourse in the day and who promise to give something to any Brahmin but avoid later-on under influence of greed.

45-46. The ends of all those wretched persons whom I have not enumerated, as also of those whom I have here mentioned, shall soon overtake me, if, after this night passing away, I do not slay Jayadratha tomorrow.

47. Now listen to another oath of mine. If tomorrow's sun sets before I succeed in slaying this sinful wretch, then even here shall I enter into a blazing fire.

48. Asuras and the celestials, mortals, winged creatures, reptiles or ancestral manes, rangers of the night, Brahmanical or celestials sages, the mobile and immobile things and beings and what other things there may be on the face of the earth, even all these will not be able to protect that foe of mine.

49. If he enters the nether regions or ascends to the skies or repairs to the celestial regions or to the dominion of the Daityas, I will still, with a group of hundred, shafts, cut-off the head of Abhimanyu's enemy, when this night passed away."

50. Having spoken these words, Arjuna began to twang his bow with both his right and left arms. Rising above the voice of Arjuna, the sound of the twanging bow touched even the very heavens.

51. When Arjuna had thus taken that oath Janardana blew the conch Panchajanya and Phalguna also excited with rage blew his conch Devadatta.

52. Then that conch Panchajanya being filled with the breath of the undeteriorating Krishna, emitted a loud sound and that sound then caused the universe, the nether regions, the heavens and the quarters O lord, to tremble, as if the end of a Yoga had come.

53. Then when the high-souled Arjuna had taken that oath, sounds of thousands of musical instruments and fierce war-cries, arose from the encampment of the Pandavas.

## CHAPTER 74

### (PRATIJNA PARVA)– Continued

#### The consolation given to Jayadratha

**Yudhishthira said**

1. Having heard the loud uproar created by the Pandavas desirous of victory and having ascertained through spies the cause thereof, Jayadratha then rose up.

2. With a heart confounded with grief and overwhelmed with affliction and like one sinking in an extensive and deep sea of sorrow.

3. Then that ruler of the Sindhus, having reflected for a long while, proceeded to the assembly of the kings; there, before the assemblage of monarchs, expressing his grief.

4. And afraid of the father of Abhimanyu and overwhelmed with shame, he spoke these words– "He, who was begotten upon the wife of Pandu by the lustful Indra.

5. That one of perverse intellect is desirous of dispatching me to the abode of Death. Good be tide you all, I shall now go back to my home out of a desire for saving my life.

6. Or, O foremost of the Kshatriyas, do you all protect me with the power of your weapons; O heroes, the son of Pritha (Arjuna) seeks to slay me; do you give me assurances of safety.

7-8. Drona, Duryodhana, Kripa, Karna, the rulers of the Madras and the Balhikas and Dushasana and others, these are competent to save even one who is seized by Death himself. Why then should not all these rulers of earth, united together, be able to protect me, when I am threatened by Phalgunas who seek to slay me?

9. Having heard the rejoicings of the sons of Pandu, I am struck with fear and O ruler of men, my limbs are losing strength, like those of one on the verge of death.

10. Without doubt, the wielder of the bow Gandiva has promised to slay me; therefore it is

that, the Pandavas are shouting with delight at a time when they should grieve.

11. Even the Gandharavas, the Asuras the reptiles and the Rakshasas, cannot dare baffle a vow of Arjuna, what to speak of the rulers of men?

12. Therefore O foremost of men, do you all accord me year permission (to go home); may good betide you; I shall go concealed and the Pandavas will not be able to detect me."

13. Him thus lamenting with a heart confounded with the burden of fear, king Duryodhana ever devoted to his own personal interests, said these words–

14. O foremost among men, you should entertain no fear. What person, O best of men, can seek to slay you, when you stand in the midst of the Kshatriya heroes.

15-18. Myself, Vikartana's son Karna, Chitrasena, Vivinshati, Bhurishravas, Shala, Shalya, the invincible Vrishasena, Purumitra, Jaya, Bhoja, Sudakshina the ruler of the Kambojas, the mighty armed Satyavrata, Vikarna and Durmukha, Dushasana, Subahu, the ruler of the Kalingas with arms uplifted, Vinda and Anuvinda of Avanti, Drona and the son of Drona, Subala's son, these and many other rulers of various countries, attended with all their troops, shall exert themselves in protecting you. Let the fever of fear be driven away from your mind.

19. You also, O you of unrivalled effulgence, are the foremost of all heroes; why then, O ruler of the Sindhus, do you entertain fear from the Pandavas.

20. These ten and on Akshouhini of my troops shall strive their best for protecting you. Be not afraid, O ruler of the Sindhus. Let fear be driven away from your heart.

**Sanjaya said**

21. Thus comforted by your son Duryodhana, the ruler of the Sindhus, O king accompanied by the former, went that very night, to the camp of Drona.

22. Then saluting Drona by touching his feet and having bowed down to him, Jayadratha, O

ruler of men, sat down with humility and then asked the following question.

23. "Tell me, O illustrious one, the difference between myself and Phalguna, as regards hitting the aim, hitting it from a distance, lightness of hands and the force of strokes.

24. O preceptor, I want to know exactly the difference, as regards proficiency in arms between myself and Arjuna. Say it to me truly."

**Drona said**

25. As regards teaching you and Arjuna, O sire, have both received an equal share. But through Yoga and through the effects of hardship he had undergone, he has become superior to yourself.

26. In battle, you should never entertain any fear from Pritha's son Arjuna, I am surely your protector, O sire, from all dangers.

27. Even the very gods cannot obtain victory over him who is protected with the strength of my arms. I will (tomorrow) from such an array which Partha will never be able to reach the end of.

28. Therefore do you fight and be not afraid in the least and observe (scrupulously) the duties of your order. O foremost of car-warriors, do you follow the path chalked out by your fathers and grandfathers.

29. Having studied the various branches of knowledge, you have burnt due offerings on the fire, you have also celebrated various sacrifices; death therefore should not be an object of apprehension to you.

30. (On the other hand), if you die you shall attain to that good fortune so difficult of being attained by the vile men, viz., you shall ascend to those excellent regions that are acquired by the strength of our arms.

31. The Kurus, the Pandavas, the Vrishnis and other men and I and my son—think all these to be mortal and uncertain.

32. One after another, destroyed by the powerful God of Death, we shall go to the regions of the departed, carrying with us the fruits of our respective actions.

33. Those regions to which the ascetics repair through their observance of ascetic austerities, even those regions the heroic Kshatriyas attain, by the observance of their own duties."

34. Thus then was the ruler of the Sindhus comforted by the son of Bharadvaja. He then dismissed (from his heart) all fears of Partha (Arjuna) and set his heart upon battle.

35. Thereupon, O ruler of men, you warriors were filled with delight and the war-cries they then shouted out, became mingled with the terrible din of the musical instruments.

## CHAPTER 75

### (PRATIJNA PARVA)— Continued

#### The counsel of Krishna

**Sanjaya said**

1. After the son of Pritha (Arjuna) had promised to slay the ruler of the Sindhus, the mighty-armed son of Vasudeva addressed him saying—

2. "Only with the consent of your brothers (and without taking my advice), you have promised to slay the Sindhus king, saying— 'I will slay Jayadratha tomorrows.' This has been an act of rashness.

3. Without taking my advice previously, you have drawn down a heavy burden on your shoulders. Alas! how now shall we escape from being the butt of ridicule of all men.

4. I had deputed spies in the encampment of the sons of Dhristarastra. Those spies, returning soon furnished me with this information.

5. 'O Lord, when you had vowed the slaughter of the king of the Sindhus, they (the Kauravas) heard the war-cries mingled with din of musical instruments that then arose from our camp.

6. Terrified at that up-roar, the son of Dhritarashtra together with all their relatives and kinsmen, thought—'these shouts are not without due causes' and they then waited (for what would ensue next).



7. Then, O mighty-armed one, a great confused noise was created by the Kauravas and their elephants, steeds, infantry and the rattle of their car-wheels.

8. 'Having been appraised of the slaughter of Abhimanyu, Dhananjaya sorely distressed will surely, in wrath, come out in the night desirous of battle.' Thinking even in the above manner, they stood prepared for battle.

9. Thus when those vow-observing heroes were preparing for the battle, O you of eyes like lotus petals, they heard of the true vow you had taken for the slaughter of the Sindhu king.

10. Thereat the counsellors of Suyodhana all became depressed at heart and they then resembled weak animals struck with panic. Then king Jayadratha,

11. The ruler of the Sindhus and the Sauviras, sorely afflicted with grief and melancholy, rose up and with his ministers retired to his tent.

12. Then in that time suitable for consultations, he consulted with them about the best remedial measure (against Arjuna's vow). And then repairing to the assembly of kings he said these words to Suyodhana.

13. "He is the slayer of my son, thinking, tomorrow will Dhananjaya assault me. In the very midst of his troops, he has vowed to slay me.

14. Neither the Gods, nor the Gandharvas, nor the Asuras, nor the reptiles nor the Rakshasas would venture to baffle that vow of Savyasachin (Arjuna).

15. Do you all therefore protect me in battle. Let not Dhananjaya, placing his feet on your heads, succeeded in hitting his target. Let suitable arrangements be made.

16. On the other hand, O delighter of the Kurus, if you do not undertake to protect me in battle, permit me, O king, to go back to my home."

17. Thus spoken to, Suyodhana hang down his head and became depressed at heart. And ascertaining Jayadratha to be greatly terrified, he began to meditate (silently).

18. Then the ruler of the Shindhus seeing Duryodhana sorely afflicted, softly spoke these words, intended to conduce to his own welfare and good.

19. "I do not find any bowman among you who is equal to Arjuna in prowess and who is capable of baffling the weapons of Arjuna in battle, with those of his own.

20. What person would dare stand before Arjuna who is supported by the son of Vasudeva and who wields the Gandiva bow? Even Indra of hundred sacrifices will not venture to do so!

21. It is said that the son of Pritha (Arjuna), on foot, fought with Almighty Mahesvara himself in days gone by, on the Himavat mountains.

22. Being commissioned by the lord of the celestials, he slew on a single chariot thousands of Danavas inhabiting the golden city.

23. That son of Kunti is now united with the intelligent son of Vasudeva. And I think that he is now competent to destroy the triune, world, with even the immortals therein!

24. So, may it please you, I desire to have either your permission to go home or to be protected by the high-souled Drona and his son, both endowed with heroism."

25. O Arjuna, thus addressed the king himself entreated the preceptor to undertake to protect Jayadratha. All remedial measures have been adopted; and chariots and steeds have been duly arranged.

26. Karna, Bhurishravas, the son of Drona, the invincible Vrishasena, Kripa and the ruler of the Madras these six warriors will station themselves in the van of their array.

27. Drona has formed an array, half of which figures a car and half a lotus; inside that array there has been formed a minor array of the shape of an wedge, Jayadratha will stand in the middle of the lotus-like array and by the side of the other array.

28. There will the invincible king of the Sindhus stand, being protected by those heroes. In handling the bow and other weapons, in prowess, in mighty and in their high extraction.

29. These six warriors, O Partha, are surely exceedingly difficult of being borne down. Without first vanquishing these six car-warriors, you cannot hope to reach Jayadratha.

30. Think of the respective prowess of these six warriors. O foremost of men, when united together, they cannot be easily defeated.

31. Let us once again hold consultation with those versed in the use of weapons and with our own ministers and friends, to settle the course of action that should be adopted for our well-being and for the fruition of our aims.

## CHAPTER 76

### (PRATIJNA PARVA)— Continued

#### The words of Arjuna

##### Arjuna said

1. Those six car-warriors of the Dhartarastra hose whom you consider to be superior to me in strength, I think their prowess is not even equal to half that of mine.

2. You will see, O slayer of Madhu, the weapons of all these heroes cut-off by those of mine, when, desirous of slaying Jayadratha, I shall encounter them.

3. Before the eyes of Drona and before his bewailing followers, I will fell down on earth the head of the ruler of the Sindhus.

4. Even if the Saddhyas, the Rudras, the Vasus together with the twin Aswins, the Marutas with Indra, the Visvadevas and the mighty gods.

5. The ancestral manes and the Gandharvas and Suparna and the oceans, the mountains, the firmament, heaven, earth the quarters and their regents.

6. The domestic and the wild animals and all the mobile and immobile beings united together—even if all these become the protector of the Sindu king, O slayer of Madhu.

7. Still you shall behold him tomorrow slain by my arrows in battle. O Krishna, I swear by my truth and touching my weapons.

8. That, O Keshava, at the very first instance, I shall proceed against that Drona, that fierce bowman who had undertaken to protect the sinful Jayadratha.

9. King Suyodhana considers this battle as a game depending on the dice identified with Drona himself. Therefore, penetrating through the divisions of Drona himself, I shall reach the king of the Sindhus.

10. Tomorrow you shall behold the mighty bowmen (of the enemy's host), rent open by me with Narachas of fierce energy, like the crests of the mountains cleft open by the bolt of Heaven.

11. Blood shall flow out copiously from the bodies of men, elephants and steeds, rent open and fallen on the ground, being struch with my whetted shafts.

12. Arrows shot from the bow Gandiva and resembling in speed the speed of mind or the wind itself, shall, by thousands, deprive men, horses and elephants of their lives and limbs.

13. In tomorrow's battle, men will see those terrible weapons displayed by me which I have secured from Yama, Kubera, Varuna, Indra and Rudra.

14. In tomorrow's fight you will seen the weapons of those that will come to protect the king of the Sindhus, repulsed by my one Brahma weapon.

15. Tomorrow you shall see the earth covered by me with the head of princes cut-off their trunks by the force of my arrows, O Keshava.

16. Tomorrow will I afford gratification to the flesh-eaters and will scatter my enemies and delight my friends and completely destroy the ruler of the Sindhus.

17. A greatly sinful wretch, one who had acted not like a kinsman, born in a sinful country, the king of Sindhus slain by me, will, tomorrow, impart sorrow to his followers.

18. Tomorrow you shall see the mean ruler of the Sindus, that one brought up in all luxury and of sinful behaviour, pierced by me in battle with my shafts.

19. O Krishna, at day-break, I will achieve such feats, that Suyodhana will never think that there is any other bowman equal to me.

20. This Gandiva bow is of celestial make; I, O foremost of men, am also a warrior; you also,

O Hrishikesha, are my driver; what then cannot be conquered by me?

21. Through your grace, O almighty one, what is there unacquirable by me in battle? O Hrishikesha, knowing my prowess to be incapable of being baffled, why do you admonish me?

22. As Lakshmi is ever constant in the moon, as water ever remains in the ocean, so, O Janardana, know my vow to be ever incapable of being frustrated.

23. Do not hate my weapons, Do not hate my firm and tough bow. Do not despise the prowess of my arms and do not also, O Krishna, despise Dhananjaya.

24. I will proceed to battle in such a manner that I will surely win and not lose. When I have taken the oath, count Jayadratha already among those slain in battle.

25. Truth is ever constant in the Brahmana; humility is ever constant in the pious; prosperity ever attends sacrifice and victory ever attends Narayana.

**Sanjaya said**

26. Having spoken these words to Hrishikesha and having said so to his own self also, Vasava's son (Arjuna) once more addressed the lord Keshava in a sonorous voice, saying—

27. O Krishna, you should so arrange that as soon as the night passes away, my chariot my be ready, well-furnished with the implements of war, inasmuch as the task at hand is very serious.

## CHAPTER 77

(PRATIJNA PARVA)— Continued

**The consolation of Subhadra**

**Sanjaya said**

1. Then throughout the whole of that night, Vasudeva and Dhananjaya, both afflicted with sorrow and grief and breathing like two serpents, did not enjoy an wink of sleep.

2. The gods together with Indra himself, understanding Partha and Narayana to be

excited with rage, became anxious and they began to think—what will come of it?

3. Dry and dreadful winds, portending calamities, began to blow. A headless trunk and a bludgeon became manifest in the solar disc.

4. Although the sky was cloudless, thunderbolts fell on the earth, accompanied by dreadful rumbling the flashes of lightning; and the Earth with her mountains, hills and forest, began to quake.

5. O mighty monarch, the oceans, the abode of the numerous aquatic creatures, became agitated; and the ocean-going rivers began to flow in directions opposite to their natural courses.

6. The lower and upper lips of car-warriors, horses, men and elephants began to tremble, indicating, as if, a great festivity for the flesh-eaters and an increase of the population of Death's domain.

7. The animals on the field began to discharge excreta and urine and they began to wail aloud. Beholding all those dreadful portents capable of making the hair stand on end.

8. And having heard of the fierce vow of the mighty Savyasachin, all your troops. O foremost of the Bharatas, became preyed upon by anxious thought.

9. Then the mighty-armed Pakasasaui (Arjuna) addressing Krishna said - "Do you offer consolation to your sister Subhadra and her daughter-in-law.

10. O Mahadeva, go, assuage the grief of my daughter-in-law and her companions; O lord, console them with your soft words fraught with truth.

11. Thereat the son of Vasudeva with a depressed heart, going to the pavilion of Arjuna, began to comport his sorrowful sister afflicted with the grief caused by the death of her son.

**The son of Vasudeva said**

12. O daughter of the Vrishni race, do not grieve, with your daughter-in-law, for you son. O timid lady, the self-same end is ordained by the Destroyer for all created beings.

13. This sort of death is worthy of your son, born in an illustrious family, modest and especially belonging to the Kshatriya order. Do not grieve for him.

14. Indeed it is through good fortune that mighty car-warrior, modest and equal to his father in prowess, has obtained the goal coveted by the heroes, in consequence of his observance of Kshatriya duties.

15. Vanquishing innumerable foes and dispatching them to the abode of Death, he as attained to the posthumous state of the pious, that is enduring and in which all desires become fruitful.

16. Your son of tender years has attained to that end which the pious desire to have through the performance ascetic austerities and Brahmacharya and through knowledge of the Shastras and wisdom.

17. You are the mother of a hero, the wife of a hero, the daughter of a hero and a kins-woman of the heroes: O amiable one do not bewail your son who has attained an excellent mode of existence.

18. That wretched and sinful ruler of the Sindhus, that murderer of an infant, shall soon reap the fruit of this arrogance, with his relations and kinsmen.

19. O beautiful lady, when the day dawns, that perpetrator of sinful acts, shall not escape the son of Pritha, even if he seeks shelter in Heaven itself.

20. Tomorrow you shall hear that the head of the Sindhu ruler has been severed from his trunk in battle, to roll on the precincts of the Samantapanchaka. Dismiss your grief and do not weep.

21. Keeping in the view duties of the Kshatriya order, that hero has obtained the end of the pious, end, which we also will meet with, as also many other men who live by their weapons.

22. Of expansive chest and mighty arms, unretreating and slayer of car-warriors, your son, O you of dainty waist, has gone to heaven. Renounce yours fever of grief.

23. Obedient to the behests of his sire and his relations through mother's side, that valiant hero and mighty car-warrior that valiant hero and mighty car-warrior of great prowess, has been slain may of his foes.

24. O queen, comfort your daughter-in-law; O daughter of a Kshatriya, do not lament, Dismiss your sorrow, O my beloved sister, as in the morrow you will hear such agreeable news.

25. What the son of Pritha has vowed shall be accomplished and cannot be otherwise. What your husband has set his heart upon, cannot remain undone.

26. Even if the descendants of Manu and the Pannagas and Pisachas and night-rangers and winged creatures and Asuras and the celestials come forward to protect in battle the ruler of the Sindhus, yet he, with these, shall cease to exist tomorrow.

## CHAPTER 78

### (PRATIJNA PARVA)– Continued

#### The lamentations of Subhadra

Sanjaya said

1. Having heard these words of Keshava of high-soul, Subhadra afflicted with grief on account of her son and sorely distressed, began to lament piteously.

2. Alas! son of my unfortunate self, why did you go to the battle? Oh son equal in prowess to your father, how could you perish?

3. Oh my dear child, how shall I see your face dark like the blue lotus and graced with beautiful teeth and charming eyes, soiled with the dust of battle-field!

4-5. Surely, heroic and unretreating as you were, you are now being seen by every body. Of graceful head, well-formed neck and arms, of expensive chest, of low belly of limbs, decked with ornaments, of charming eyes and covered with wounds of weapons, surely creatures are now looking at you as if at the rising moon!

6. Alas! you who used to lie down on beds covered with precious coverlets, alas, how could you, ever used to luxuries, now lie down on the bare earth, being pierced with arrows!

7. That hero of mighty arms who used formerly to be attended upon by most beautiful damsels; Oh, how can he, prostrate on the field of battle, pass his time today in the company of the jackals!

8. He who formerly used to be eulogised by the joyful bards, minstrels and singers alas, he, today, is greeted by the dreadful flesh-eaters with their fierce yells!

9. O son! having the Pandavas, the Vrishni heroes and the Panchalas for your protector, by whom have you been slain like one helpless?

10. O my sinless son! my desire for looking at you is not yet satiated. Unfortunate that I am, I shall surely today go to the regions of Death.

11. When again O my son, shall I see that face of yours, graced with expansive eyes, covered with beautiful looks and from which sweet words and fragrant perfume used always to come out?

12. Fie on the strength of Bhima, fie on the bowmanship of Arjuna, fie on the prowess of the Vrishni heroes and fie on the mighty of the Panchalas!

13. Fie on the Kaikayas and on the Chedis and the Matsyas and the Srinjayas, who all, united together, could not protect that hero when he went to battle.

14. Today do I see the earth vacant and destitute of its beauty, inasmuch as I do not see Abhimanyu and my eyes are blinded with grief.

15. How shall we see you slain, you who are the son of the wielder of the Gandiva, the son of Vasudeva's sister, you who are a hero and a Atiratha too!

16. Dear son! Come to me. You would thirsty. Suck milk from my breast immediately by taking a seat on lap as I am an unfortunate mother who had to live thirsty to see your face.

17. Alas, O hero, you were like a hoard to treasure to me, seen and lost in dream. Alas! everything human is as transitory as even a bubble of water!

18. How shall I comfort your young wife overwhelmed by the grief caused by your death and resembling a cow bereft of its calf.

19. Alas, Oh my son, you have passed away prematurely at a time when you were on the

point of bearing fruit, although I yearn to have a sight of you!

20. Surely the ways of the Destroyer are mysterious even to the wise, inasmuch as, you, having Keshava himself for your protector, have been slain in battle like one perfectly helpless.

21-22. May you, O son, attain that end which is theirs that perform sacrifices, theirs that are Brahmanas of purified soul, theirs that observe the vow Bhramacharya, theirs that have bathed in the sacred waters, their that are grateful, theirs that are devoted to the performance of benevolent deeds, theirs that serve their preceptors and theirs that make profuse sacrificial presents!

23. May that end by yours which they attain who fight and never retreat or who fall in battle after slaying their numerous foes!

24. That blessed end which they attain who give away a thousand cows or who perform charitable deeds at a sacrifice or who give away houses and palaces to the liking of the recipients.

25. Or who give away gems and jewels to worthy Brahmanas or who mete out just punishments, O son, may that blessed end be yours!

26. O son, may you attain to that end which sages of rigid vows attain to, by the performance of Brahmacharya or that end which is attained by the women who marry but once their husbands.

27-28. That eternal and which is obtained by monarchs through their good conduct or by those persons who, leading one after another all the four modes of life and through the observance of duties, have purified themselves. That end which they attain who are kind to the poor and the woe-stricken or who equally divide objects of enjoyments amongst themselves and their dependents or who are free from the influence of malice, O son, may that end be yours!

29. That end which is theirs, who observe their vows, theirs that are devoted to righteous practices, theirs that serve their elders and

preceptors, theirs that never drive away guests from their doors, O son, may that end by yours!

30. O son, may you attain to that end which they attain who preserve the coolness of their temper even in the most difficult circumstances, however much they may be consumed by the fire of sorrow!

31. May you attain to the end of those who always take care of their father and mother and who never enjoy the company of women other than their own wives!

32. May you attain, O son, to the end of those who hold sexual intercourse with their own wives during their seasons, of those who restrain themselves from enjoying others; wives!

33. May you attain to the end of those, who, free from malice, look upon every one with an eye of peace or who are forgiving and never inflict distress on others!

34. O son, may you attain to the end of those who ever hold themselves aloof from money, meat, intoxicating drinks, pride and falsehood or who never cause pain to any body else!

35. O son, may you attain that end which they attain who are modest, learned in all the Shastras, content in knowledge and hold their passions under check.

36. While the distressed Subhadra, overwhelmed with grief, had been thus lamenting, Panchali accompanied by Vairata's daughter, came to her.

37. Then copiously lamenting and bewailing under the weight of their grief, they fell down, O king, on the earth, senseless and like so many mad creatures.

38-39. Then the highly-afflicted Krishna who was there ready with water sprinkled water on the face of them and for comforting them said such salutary words that should be said on such occasions. Then the eyes of resembling lotus-petals said these words to his sister, weeping, insensible, trembling and pierced in her very heart.

40. O Subhadra, bewail not your son; O Panchali, console the Uttara. Abhimanyu, that

foremost of Kshatriyas, has attained to the most excellent (posthumous) state.

41. O you of charming countenance, may all the other people of our race that are yet alive attain to that state which the illustrious Abhimanyu has attained!

42. We, supported by our allies, desire to accomplish that feat in this battle, the like of which, O lady, your son, that mighty car-warrior, achieved single-handed.

43. Thus having consoled his sister and Draupadi and Uttara, that subduer of foes, that mighty-armed one, (viz., Krishna) came back to Partha's side.

44. Then with the permission of his relatives and of the kings and of Arjuna, O monarch, Krishna retired to the inner apartments of the latter's pavilion; the rest of the kings then retired to their respective quarters.

## CHAPTER 79

### (PRATIJNA PARVA)- Continued

#### The colloquy between Krishna and Daruka

##### Sanjaya said

1. Then that Lord of eyes like lotus-petals, having entered into the matchless mansion of Arjuna, touched water and on the smooth and auspicious floor.

2. Spread an auspicious bed made of Kusha-grass of the hue of lapis. Thereafter, with garlands of flowers, fried paddy and perfumes and other auspicious articles.

3. He decorated that bed and then kept around it many excellent weapons. Then when Partha also had touched water, obedient and humble servants.

4. Performed the usual nightly ceremony of offering victims to the three-eyed Mahadeva. Thereafter with a delighted heart, Pritha's son, with perfumes and garlands.

5. Adorned Madhava and then offered him the nightly offering. The Govinda with a smile thus spoke to Phalguna.

6. "O son of Pritha, lay yourself down for sleep; good betide you. I go in search of your

welfare." Then placing at the door well-armed sentinels and door-keepers.

7. The auspicious Krishna followed by Daruka, entered his own tent. Then he laid himself down on his milk-white bed and brooded over the diverse measures (to be adopted on the morrow).

8. Then that illustrious one of eyes resembling lotus-petals, for Partha's sake, began to reflect on various measures that would drive away the latter's grief and sorrow and increase his energy and effulgence.

9. Then that one of soul engaged in meditation, that foremost lord of all, viz., Vishnu of wide-spread renown, who always performed what was agreeable to Jishnu, had recourse to Yoga-meditation, for benefiting Arjuna.

10. During that night none enjoyed sleep in the camp of the Pandavas. During that night, O ruler of men, wakefulness possessed every body.

11. "The wielder of the Gandiva bow, the high-souled Arjuna, being afflicted sore with grief on account of the death of his son, has rashly vowed the slaughter of the king of the Sindhus.

12. How indeed shall the mighty-armed son of Vasava, that slayer of hostile heroes, fulfill his vow?" Even thus did they then think.

13. "The vow which the high-souled son of Pandu has made, is a very difficult one. King Jayadratha is endued with great energy. may Arjuna successfully observe his vow!

14. Indeed Arjuna has made a tremendous resolve, being highly afflicted with the grief on account of his son's death. The brothers (of Duryodhana) are very powerful and his army is numerous.

15. The son of Dhritarashtra (Duryodhana) has also employed them all in the protection of his (Jayadratha). May Dhananjaya return safe, having slain the ruler of the Sindhus!

16. Let Arjuna fulfill his vow and vanquish his enemies. If tomorrow he fails to slay the Sindhu king, he will enter the blazing fire.

17. Pritha's son Dhananjaya will never venture to falsify his vow. Oh, what will be the condition of king Yudhishtira, the son of Dharma, if Dhananjaya dies!

18. Indeed Pandu's son (Yudhishtira) has grafted all his hopes of victory on Arjuna. If we have acquired any religious merit, if we have ever given away things in charity, if we have burnt offerings on the fire.

19. Then through the fruits of all those acts of ours, let Savyasachin (Arjuna) obtain victory." Thus, when they were talking to one another of the victory of Arjuna on the morrow, O lord.

20. O monarch, that live-long night at last passed away. During that night Janardana, having awaked.

21. And remembering the vow Pritha's son had made, thus addressed Daruka- "Afflicted with sorrow for the death of his dear-loved son, Arjuna has vowed.

22. O Daruka, saying Before tomorrow's sun sets, I will slay Jayadratha - having heard of this vow, Duryodhana will surely hold counsel with his counselors.

23. As to how Partha might be prevented from slaying Jayadratha in battle. His several Akshauhini will also protect the latter;

24. As also Drona and his son, both accomplished in the use of all sorts of weapons, will protect him. That matchless hero, the thousand-eyed Indra himself, that humiliator of the pride of Daityas and Danavas.

25. Even he will not venture to slay Jayadratha, if he is protected by Drona in battle. I, therefore, will do that in the morrow by which Kunti's son Arjuna.

26. May slay Jayadratha before the sun goes down below the horizon. My wives, my friends, my kinsmen, my relatives.

27. None among these is so dear to me as is Kunti's son Arjuna. O Daruka, bereft of Arjuna, for even a moment, this world.

28. I will not be able to look at. And therefore, it shall not be so. Vanquishing them all, with their horses and elephants.

29. I will slay them all with Karna and Duryodhana, for the sake of Arjuna. Tomorrow the three worlds will behold my prowess in the dreadful battle.

30. When, O Daruka, I shall put forth my prowess for Arjuna's sake. Tomorrow thousands of kings and hundreds of princes.

31. With their steeds, cars and elephants, will, O Daruka, turn hastily away from the battle. Tomorrow Daruka, you shall see the army of kings crushed with my discus.

32. And overthrown by my enraged self, for the sake of Arjuna. Tomorrow the celestials, the Gandharvas, the Pisachas, the reptiles and the Rakshasas.

33. Will all know me to be the true friend of Savyasachin. He that injures him (Arjuna) injures me; and he that follows him follows me also.

35. With the help of your intelligence, do you identify Arjuna to be the half of my ownself. When the day dawns, O Daruka, equipping my best of chariots according to the rules of military science, you must bring it and follow me carefully. My mace Kaumodaki of celestial make, my discus and my bow and arrows.

36-40. And many other implements of war-placing all these, O Suta, on my chariot and leaving room thereon for my standard and for heroic Garuda that adorns my car and yoking thereto my excellent steeds named Balahaka, Meghapuspa, Shaivya, Sugriva, having incased them in caparisons of gold of the effulgence of the solar orb and the fire and yourself donning your coat of mail, stay on it carefully. Having heard the shrille blast resembling the Rishabha note, of my conch Panchajanya, you will quickly come to me. In the course of a single day, O Daruka, I shall drive away the rage and the various woes of my cousin, the son of my paternal aunt. By every means, I shall so exert in battle, so that Vibhatsu in battle.

41-42. May slay Jayadratha even before the very eyes of the Dhritarastras. All those for whose death Vibhatsu will strive, I tell your

truly, will be slain and O charioteer, he will succeed in obtaining victory.

**Daruka said**

43. Victory is sure to him and whence can defeat come to him, whose charioteership you, O foremost me, have accepted.

44. I shall do what you will bid me do. This night will end ushering in a morning, that will bring victory for Vijaya.

## CHAPTER 80

### (PRATIJNA PARVA)— Continued

#### Arjuna's dream

**Sanjaya said**

1. Then Dhananjaya the son of Kunti, possessed of inconceivable prowess thinking of how to redeem his vow, recollected the mantras (obtained from Vyasa); and soon was he lost of sleep.

2. Then the highly puissant god having the Garuda as an emblem on his banner, appeared before the ape-bannered Arjuna merged in thought and burning with grief, in his dream.

3. The pious-souled Dhananjaya through the love and veneration he bore for Krishna, never failed under any circumstance, to rise up and advance a few steps for welcoming him.

4. Standing up therefore (in his dream), he welcomed Govinda and offered him a seat. He himself however then did not think of resuming his own seat.

5. Thus seated, Krishna of mighty energy, knowing what resolution Partha had formed, said these words to the son of Kunti, while the latter was standing before him.

6. O Son of Pritha, let not your heart give way to sorrow. Time is invincible. It is time that compels all creatures to take to the inevitable course.

7. Tell me, O foremost of men, the cause of this your sorrow? O foremost of the learned, sorrow should not be indulged in, inasmuch as it overthrows the ends of life.



8. What should be done should be done (without hesitation). Do your duty with all endeavours, O Dhananjaya, the grief that deprives one of the power of acting, is indeed his greatest enemy.

9. A man giving way to grief delights his enemies and saddens his friends and himself becomes reduced in (strength). Therefore you should not grieve.

10. Having been thus spoken to by the son of Vasudeva, the invincible and learned Vibhatsu said these words of (grave) signification to the former—

11. I have taken a terrible oath in vowing to slaughter Jayadratha. Tomorrow shall I slay, O Keshava that wicked-souled slayer of my son.

12. Surely, O undeteriorating one, in order to frustrate that resolution of mine, the partisans of Dhritarashtra will place the ruler of the Sindhus in their furthest rear and have him protected by all their mighty car-warriors.

13. Alas! O Mahadeva, their invincible army of one and ten Aoukshahin strong, consists of the remnants of their soldiers (slain during the last campaign).

14. Surrounded by all these troops, as also by all their mighty car-warriors, how could that wicked-souled ruler of the Sindhus, O Krishna, be seen (by us)?

15. Me seems, O Keshava, I shall not be able to fulfill my vow. And why should one like myself who could not redeem his promises, bear the burden of his life?

16. O hero, despondency stares me at the face, me whose only consolation now is in grief. I also tell you this that (during this period of the year) the sun runs his heavenly course swiftly.

17. Then Krishna that foremost of the twice-born ones, having heard of the source of Partha's sorrow, touched water and sat there with his face turned towards the East.

18. Thereafter that highly puissant one of eyes like lotus-petals, said these words, for the welfare of Pandu's son who had resolved upon the slaughter of the Sindhu king.

19. "O Son of Pritha, there is a weapon excellent and eternal known by the name of Pasupata. By means of this weapon the god Mahesvare (in days gone by) slew all the Daityas in battle.

20. If today it be with your recollection, then tomorrow you will be able to slay Jayadratha. If it is unknown to you now, then do you worship in you mind the god having the bull for his emblem.

21. Meditating on that god in your mind. do you hold communion with him. You are his devotee and in this way, through his grace only, can you expect to obtain that valuable treasure (Pasupata weapon)."

22. Thereupon, having heard Krishna's words and having rinsed his mouth with water, Dhananjaya sat down on the ground; and with a singleness of heart, began to adore Siva (in his mind).

23. Thus rapt up in meditation, Arjuna saw himself and Keshava roving in the skies, just when the hour Brahma of auspicious indication set in.

24-25. Then it seemed that Parth held by his right arm by the lord Keshava and endued with the fleetness of the wind, reached the root of the sacred Himavat mountain teeming with gems, abounding in luminous objects and inhabited by Siddhas and Charanas. He was then accompanied by Keshava.

26. It seemed that he saw, as he went, many wonderful sight and objects; that one of righteous soul then saw on the Northern direction the white mountain.

27. He beheld in the pleasure-garden of Kubera, the delightful lake adorned with lotuses. He also beheld that most excellent of rivers namely Ganga of copious waters.

28-29. Then he saw the regions about the Mandara mountains, regions that abounded in trees bearing blossoms and fruits; that were covered with pebbles and transparent crystals, that were infested with lions and tigers; that abounded in many other animals, that contained many sacred hermitages; that were charming; that there frequented by beautiful birds and that

ever rang with the melodious songs of the Kinnaras.

30. The mountain itself was graced with gold and silver peaks blazing with various herbs and Oshadhis; and it was beautiful with numerous Mandara trees decked with blossoms.

31. He then arrived at the black mountains that looked like a heap of collyrium and after that, at the Brahmatunga, at many rivers and at many countries.

32. He then reached the Sutunga and the Shatashringa hills and the woods known the name of Sharyati. Then he went to the holy place called Ashvashiras and also to the one known by the name of Artharvana.

33. Then he arrived at that foremost of hills known as Vrisha-Dansha and also the hill called the great Mandara, both of which were thickly peopled by the Apsaras and beautified by the Kinnaras.

35. Then roaming on that hill in the company of Krishna, Pritha's son beheld a plot of earth abounding in soothing springs, teeming with gold and other minerals, burning with the effulgence of the sun or moon and possessing a large number towns and cities. He also beheld various seas and numerous rich mines of wealth.

36. Then wandering through the sky the firmament and the earth, he arrived at Vishnupada; there struck with admiration and like an arrow shot from the bow, he came down with Krishna.

37. Partha then beheld a mountain blazing as if with the effulgence of the planets, the stars, the moon, the sun and the fire.

38. Having reached that hill he beheld that high-souled Divinity having the bull for his emblem on the banner, seated on its peak and lost in contemplation.

39. He saw the god burning in his own energy like a thousand suns; holding the trident; with matted locks on his head; of milk-white complexion; and wearing barks and tiger skins.

40. He was the highly puissant god having his body rendered beautiful with a thousand

eyes; and in company with Parvati and numerous other beings of great effulgence.

41. The dependents of the god were engaged in singing, in playing upon musical instruments, in dancing, in laughing, in frolicking about and striking and clapping their palms. The place was also made fragrant with perfumes.

42. Arjuna then beheld that protector of all creatures, that undeteriorating wielder of the bow (Pinaka), eulogised with beautiful panegyrics by the sages and the reciters of the Vedas.

43. Beholding the god, the pious-souled son of Vasudeva, together with the son of Pritha, saluted him by touching the earth with his head; and he uttered then the eternal verses from the Vedas.

44-47. Then Krishna adored with his speech, his mind, his intellect and his acts that origin of the worlds; that creator of the universe; that unborn divinity; that lord paramount; that undeteriorating one; that primary source from which the mind has sprung; that receptacle of the space, the wind and the luminary bodies; that creator of the rain; that primordial essence of the earth; that one worthy of the reverence of the celestials, the Danavas, the Yakshas and the human beings; that one who is the highest Brahma realised by the Yogins; that protector of those versed in the Vedas; that creator and destroyer of the mobile and immobile creatures; that God whose anger is destruction; that supreme soul; that one who is equal to Shakra or the sun.

48. Then Krishna and Arjuna sought the protection of that Bhava who is uncreate the unmanifest cause and whom sages learned in the Vedas worship when they desire to obtain the subtle and spiritual existence.

49. Arjuna also worshipped that Deity over and over again, knowing him to be origin of all creatures and the cause of the Past, the Present and the Future.

50. Then beholding them two, viz., Nara and Narayana come to him, Sharva with a delightful heart said these words, as if smiling the while—

51. All hail, O you two foremost of men! Arise and let the fatigue of your journey be shaken off. Tell me soon that things your minds earn after, O you heroes!

52. What business of yours has brought you here? I will perform it. Ask for the boon that will benefit you? I will grant all your desire.

53-54. Hearing these words of the god, Vasudeva and Arjuna rose up with their palms folded; and they both endued with great intelligence and of unblamable character, out of reverence, began to eulogise the high-souled Sharva with beautiful panegyrics.

#### **Krishna and Arjuna said**

55. Salutation to Bhava, to Sharva and to Rudra the giver of all boons; to the lord of all animate beings; to him who is known as Kapardin; to the great Divinity.

56. To Bhima; to the three-eyed god who is identical with peace; to Isha and to him who annihilates all pride engendered by the possession of prosperity. Salutation to the slayer of Andhaka;

57. To the father of the Kumara (Kartikya); unto him of blue neck and of great intelligence; unto the wielder of the Pinaka bow; unto the havisya; unto him who is ever attended with truth and prosperity.

58-61. To him who is red; who is tawny, who is the hunter in disguise; and who is unvanquished; unto him who possesses blue locks, who wields the trident, who is omniscient; unto him who is the Hotri and the Pitri; unto him of three-eyes, who is disease and whose vital seed is fire itself; unto him who is inconceivable, who is the lord of the goddess Ambika; who receives homage from all creatures; whose emblem is the bull; whose head is shaved and who wears matted locks and who is again a Brahmacharin, unto him who performs ascetic austerities in the waters, who is devote to the study of the Vedas and who is unvanquished. Unto him who is the soul of the universe, its creator and remains pervading it. Salutation unto him worthy of the homage of all

creatures and the origin of all creatures; unto the Brahmachakra, the Sharva, the Shankara and Shiva.

62. Salutations be unto him who is the lord of speech and the master of the created beings; salutation unto the lord of the universe and of the great people.

63. Salutations unto him of thousand heads who possesses a thousand arms and who is Death himself. Salutations unto him of thousand eyes and legs, whose deeds are countless.

64. Salutations unto him of the complexion of gold, who is clad in a armour of gold; and unto him who is ever gracious upon his devotees. O lord let our desires be fulfilled.

#### **Sanjaya said**

65. Thus having eulogised the great god, Arjuna and the son of Vasudeva began to propitiate the former for obtaining the weapon (Pasupata) from him.

## **CHAPTER 81**

### **(PRATIJNA PARVA)– Continued**

#### **The obtaining of the Pashupata weapon**

#### **Sanjaya said**

1. Then the son of Pritha with a delightful soul and joined palms and eyes expanded in amazement, gazed at the god having the bull for his banner-mark and the receptacle of all energies.

2. He then beheld by the side of the three-eyed god, the offerings he used to make, every night, to the son of Vasudeva.

3. Thereafter that son of Pandu having worshipped in his mind both Sharva and Krishna, said unto the god Sankara– ‘I desire to have the celestial weapon (Pasupata)!’

4. Then having heard the words of Pritha’s son, that disclosed that boon he wanted, the god (Mahadeva) with a smile, thus replied to Vasudeva’s son and Arjuna–

5. All hail, O you two foremost of men, I have known the desire of your hearts; I shall grant even that desire of yours which has brought you both here.

6. You slayers of foes, there is a heavenly lake of nectar not far from this place; in days gone by, I laid down my celestial bow and arrows there.

7. With that bow and arrow, I slew in battle all the enemies of the gods. From that lake bring, O Krishnas, that excellent bow and arrow of mine.

8. Thereupon saying 'yea' to the words of Siva, the two heroes with all their followers, went to that celestial lake possessed hundreds of celestial wonders.

9. Then those two sages Nara and Narayana fearlessly went to that holy lake capable of fulfilling all desires, that had been indicated by the god having the bull for his emblem.

10. Thereafter Arjuna and the undererorating Krishna having repaired to that lake of the effulgence of the solar disc, saw in its waters a terrible serpent.

11. They also saw there another foremost of snakes possessing a thousands hoods, of the effulgence of fire; it was then vomiting terrible flames.

12. Then Krishna and Partha, having touched water and having folded their palms and saluted the god having the bull of his emblem, approached those snakes.

13. As they approached the snakes, learned as they were in the Vedas, they recited the hundred slokas in the Veda to the praise of Rudra, saluting all the time with all their heart, Bhava of infinite might.

14. Then through the charm of those adorations offered to Rudra, those two snakes forsook their snake forms and assumed the forms of a bow and arrow capable of slaying the enemy.

15. Then highly delighted, they both took up those effulgent weapons, the bow and the arrow. Then those two high-souled ones, gave that bow and arrow to the illustrious Mahadeva.

16. Thereafter from one of the sides of Siva's body, a Brahmacharin issued forth; his eyes were tawny and he seemed to be the refuge of all asceticism. Having blue throat and red hair, he was possessed of great energy.

17. Then that Brahmacharin taking up that most excellent bow stood in the proper posture. And placing the arrow on the string he began to stretch the latter duly.

18. Thereupon, seeing the mode of his grasping the bow, drawing the string, placing his legs and hearing also the mantras uttered by Bhava, Pandu's son of infinite prowess duly learnt them all.

19. When the mighty and powerful Brahmacharin, shot that arrow even to the lake whence it had been brought; he also threw that bow into the self-same lake.

20. Thereupon Arjuna gifted with an accurate memory knowing that Bhavas was pleased with him and recollecting the boon the latter had accorded to him in the forest and the sight of his person he had vouchsafed to reveal to him.

21. Desired in his mind that all this mighty be true, thinking—'May all this be productive of fruit.' Knowing this to be his desire, Bhava pleased with him, gave him the boon.

22. He also granted him the terrible Pasupata weapon and the fulfillment of his vow. Then having obtained the Pasupata weapon of celestial make, once more, from the Lord.

23. The invincible Arjuna with the down of his body erect, consider his vow already fulfilled. Then with delighted hearts, they (Krishna and Arjuna) saluted the god Maheshvara, by bending their heads low.

24. Even at that moment obtaining the permission of Bhava, the two heroes Arjuna and Krishna, transported with delight came back to their own encampment.

25. Indeed their joy was as great as that which filled Indra and Vishnu when those two deities, desirous of slaying Jambha, had secured the permission of Bhava (to do so), the slayer of mighty Asuras.

**CHAPTER 82****(PRATIJNA PARVA)– Continued****The decoration of Yudhishtira**

**Sanjaya said**

1. When Krishna and Daruka were thus taking to one another, O king, the night drew to its close. At day-break, king (Yudhishtira) Rose from his bed.

2. The Panisvanikas, the Magadhas, the Madhuparkikas began to read verses in his praise; and Vaitalikas and minstrels began to eulogise that foremost of men (Yudhishtira).

3. The dancers commenced dancing, songsters gifted with melodious voices, began to sing charming songs fraught with praises of the Kuru dynasty.

4. Mridangas, Jhanjharas, Bheri, Panavas, Anakas, Gomukhas, Adambaras, conchs and Dundubhis of fierce sounds.

5. These and many other such musical instruments, were, O Bharata, played upon by well-trained and expert performers, all of them being transported with joy.

6. The loud din (thus produced) resembling the rumbling of clouds, reached the very heavens themselves; and it awakened that foremost of all rulers of earth viz., king Yudhishtira, from his sleep.

7. Having enjoyed an undisturbed sleep on his precious and excellent bed, king Yudhishtira awoke (in the morning). Then rising up, the king retired to the bath-room, for performing acts that must be performed (sandhyas).

8. There, a hundred and eight orderlies robed in white garments, all washed and of youthful age, approached the king with many a golden jar filled (with water) to the very brim.

9. Seated at his ease on an auspicious seat and vested in a garment of fine texture, the king bathed in waters fragrant with sandal-wood and sanctified with religious aphorisms.

10. His limbs were shampooed by strong and well-trained servants, with water that had been rendered bitter, with medicinal drugs. He

was then washed with holy Adivasa-water fragrant with perfumes.

11. Then being furnished with a piece of cloth that was as white as the plumage of the swan and that had been lying loose there, the king encircled his head with it in order to rub off the water therefrom.

12. Thereafter that mighty-armed one, having smeared his body with the paste of Hari-sandal and decorated his person with garlands and flowers and dressed in stainless garments, sat with his palms folded, facing the east.

13. Then, ever following in the wake of the righteous, the son of Kunti reiterated the prayers that should be done so; and then with becoming meekness, he entered the chamber where the blazing fire was kept (for adoration).

14. Then having worshipped the fire with holy and purified faggots and religious aphorisms, the monarch came out of the fire-chamber.

15. Then entering into a second chamber, that foremost of men king Yudhishtira saw a number of venerable old Brahmanas well-versed in the Vedas and all foremost of their order.

16. They were all self-restrained and had performed ablutions after the accomplishment of sacrifices, vows and recital of the Vedas. Worshipers of the sun, they counted a thousand in number with one thousand and eight followers.

17-18. The mighty armed son of Pandu having caused these Brahmanas to pronounce, in clear voices, benedictions on him, by making presents of honey, clarified butter and delicious fruits of the best sort, gave away to every one them a Niksha of gold, a hundred steeds adorned with golden caparisons and precious garments and other presents that were liked by them.

19. Then the son of Pandu, giving unto them milch cow, that yielded milk whenever touched, with calves and with their horns and hoofs decked with gold and silver respectively, circumambulated them.

20. Auspicious objects capable of increasing good fortune, golden Nandyavartas, garlands of flowers, jars of water, blazing fire.

21. Vessels filled to the brim and containing Askhotas (sun-dried rice) and the yellow pigment prepared from the urine of the cow and also well-decked and beautiful maidens and curds and clarified butter and honey and water.

22. And auspicious birds and other things considered to be holy—seeing and touching these things, the son of Kunti proceeded to the outer apartments.

23-24. There, O mighty armed one the attendants that were in waiting, brought the monarch an excellent throne (to sit upon)—throne that was wholly made of gold and of auspicious marks and adorned with pearls and lapises; this throne was made by the celestial artificer Vishvakarman and was over-spread with a precious carpet which again was covered by a stuff of very fine texture.

25. Then when that high-souled one had seated himself on that throne, his orderlies brought him all his precious and glittering ornaments.

26. Then, O mighty monarch, the appearance of the illustrious son of Kunti who was adorned with pearls and various ornaments was such as to excite the jealousy of his foes.

27. Then fanned with yak-tails furnished with handles of gold and of white effulgence out-ying the charming beams of the moon, the monarch shone like a mass of cloud emitting flashes of lightning.

28. That delighter of the Kuru then, was praised by all creatures; the minstrels gratified him with panegyrics; and the Gandharvas then began to sing at his hearing.

29. Thereafter within a moment the voices of the bards swelled to a tremendous sound; and instantly were there heard the clatter of the car-wheels of car-warriors and the hoof-sounds of the of the cavalry.

30. With the tinkling of bells tied round the necks of the elephants, with the blasts of conchs and with the sound of the (measured) foot-fall of the infantry, the earth began to quake.

31-33. Then of the attendants guarding the doors, cased in armour, youthful, adorned with ear-rings and having his sword tied to his waist-band, entered the private chamber of the very virtuous king Yudhishtira; then kneeling down before him and doing obeisance to the worshipful and illustrious monarch with his head, he represented that Hrishikesha was waiting to be ushered in. Thereupon that foremost of men (Yudhishtira) welcomed Madhava with inquiries after his health and welfare.

34. He also ordered his attendants saying—"Give to this one an excellent seat and offer him a Argha." Then when he of the Vrishni race was ushered in, the very virtuous king Yudhishtira caused him to be seated on an excellent seat and worshipped him with proper ceremonies.

## CHAPTER 83

### (PRATIJA PARVA)—Continued

#### The words of Krishna

#### Sanjaya said

1. King Yudhishtira the son of Kunti then welcoming the son of Devaki, that assuager of the grief of men, cheerfully addressed the following words to him—

2. "Having you, O slayer of Madhu, passed the night in happiness? Are all your sense-organs, O undeteriorating one, as keen as ever?"

3. The son of Vasudeva also put similar questions to Yudhishtira. Then an orderly came there and said that other Kshatriya warriors were waiting to be ushered in.

4-6. Permitted by the king, the orderly introduced that influx of men of men, numbering it, Virat, Bhimasena, Dhristadyumna and Satyaki and the ruler of the Chedis, Dhristaketu the mighty car-warriors Drupada, Sikhandin, the twins Nakula and Sahadeva, Chekitana with the prince of the Kekayas. As also Yuyutsu of Kuru race and Uttamaujas of the Panchala tribe and Yudhamanyu and Subahu and the five sons of Draupadi.

7. These are many other Kshatriyas approached that best of Kshatriyas of illustrious fame; and they sat down on auspicious seats.

8. The two mighty heroes, Krishna and Yuyudhana, of illustrious souls and great effulgence, both sat on a single seat.

9. Thereafter king Yudhishtira, at the hearing of those assembled Kshatriyas, said these sweet words addressing that slayer of Madhu, who was graced with eyes resembling lotus petals—

10. Like celestials depending on the strength of the thousand-eyed (Indra), we relying on you alone, seek victory in battle and eternal happiness.

11. You, O Krishna, know all about the despoliation of our kingdom, our exile by the enemy and also all the miseries we had to suffer.

12. O Lord of everything, O you who are merciful to all devoted to you, upon you rest all our happiness and even our existence, O slayer of Madhu.

13. O descendant of the Vrishni race, so do you manage that, my heart may always rely on you and Arjuna's oath may remain inviolate.

14. Help us to cross this veritable ocean of grief and wrath. O Madhava, be you our raft today, as we desire to cross this ocean (of troubles).

15. A car-warrior desirous of slaying his adversary cannot, in battle, do that (to achieve his purpose) which, O Krishna, his driver can do, if this latter strides with due caution.

16. O mighty-armed Janardana, as you save the Vrishnis from all calamities, so also, it behoves you to save us from this impending ruin.

17. O you the bearer of the conch, the discus and the mace, do you save the sons of Pandu sunk in the deep and boatless Kurn ocean, by becoming even a boat to them.

18. Salutations unto you, the Lord of the foremost of celestials, the eternal one, the supreme destroyer, O Vishnu, O Jishnu, O Hari, O Krishna, O Vaikuntha and O foremost of all male beings.

19. Narada had pronounced you to be that best and most ancient of sages viz., (Narayana),

who accord boons, who wields the Sharnga bow and who are the foremost of all. Make, O Madhava, all these words true.

20. Thus spoken to in the midst of the assembly by the very virtuous king Yudhishtira, that most fluent speaker Keshava replied to the former, in a voice sonorous like the rumbling of clouds charged with rain.

#### Krishna said

21. In all the worlds, including the regions of celestials, there is no such wielder of bow who can equal Dhananjaya the son of Pritha.

22. Endowed with energy, accomplished in the use of weapons, possessed of great prowess and might, ever brave in battle and wrathful and agile, he is the foremost of all men.

23. Moreover is youthful, of shoulders strong like those of the bull, of long-arms and mighty prowess; his gait resembles that of the lion itself. That handsome hero will slay all your enemies.

24. On my part, I shall so act as Kunti's son Arjuna may be able to consume the troops of Dhritarashtra's son, even like raging conflagration.

25. Even this very day, with the help of his arrows, Arjuna will compel that one of sinful acts, that mean-minded slayer of Subhadra's son viz., Jayadratha, to travel on a road from which no traveller ever returns.

26. The vultures, the hawks, the fierce jackals and other carnivorous animals, will today hold a feast on the flesh of that one.

27. O Yudhishtira, even if the Gods with Indra at their head today become the protectors of Jayadratha, yet, slain in the thick of the fight, he shall undoubtedly be borne to the capital of Death's domain.

28. The victorious Arjuna shall this day come to you, having slain in battle the ruler of the Sindhus. Dismiss the grief of your heart and free yourself of the fever of anxiety and O king, be you attended with prosperity!

**CHAPTER 84****(PRATIJNA PARVA)– Continued****The words of Arjuna****Sanjaya said**

1. When they were thus conversing, Dhananjaya appeared there, desirous of seeing that foremost of Bharatas, viz., king Yudhishthira and his relatives.

2. When he had entered that auspicious chamber and was standing before the king, having saluted him duly, that foremost of the Pandavas (king Yudhishthira) rose from his seat and out of affection, embraced Arjuna.

3. Having locked Arjuna in his affectionate embrace and having smelled the crown of his head and pronouncing best benedictions of him, the king smilingly addressed him saying—

4. "It is evident, O Arjuna, that in today's fight a great victory is sure to court you, inasmuch as your very appearance indicates it, as also the fact that Janardana is gratified with you."

5. Then Jishnu spoke to him of the wonderful incident (he had seen in his dream) in the following terms – "May good beside, you, O monarch! Through the mercy of Keshava, I have seen a marvel."

6. Then, for giving very assurance to his partisans, Dhananjaya related everything he had seen in his dream—his meeting with the three eyed god.

7. Thereupon all the hearers filled with wonder, touched the earth with their heads; and thus having bowed down to the god having the bull for his emblem, they said excellent.

8. Then permitted by the son of Dharma, all the friends and partisans of the Pandavas, cheerfully set out for the battle with haste and with hearts swelling with rage.

9. Then having saluted the king, Yuyudhana, Arjuna and Krishna of unfading glory, with cheerful hearts, issued out of the chamber of Yudhishthira.

10. Those two indomitable warriors, the heroes Yuyudhana and Janardana, riding on the

same car, proceeded towards the abode of Arjuna.

11. Repairing there, Hrishikesha dressed and equipped the car of the foremost of warriors, like a profession charioteer-car that bore the device of the monkey prince on its standards.

12. Thereupon that best of chariots of rattle resembling the rumble of clouds and of effulgence like that of heated gold, thus equipped (by Keshava), shone like the maker of day in the morning.

13. Thereafter that foremost of men, namely the son of Vasudeva eased in an armour, told Pritha's son who had completed his morning prayers that his chariot had been made ready.

14. Then that foremost of all men of this world, namely, the diadem-decked Arjuna, clad in a golden cost of mail and holding his bow and arrows in his grasp, circumbulated his vehicle.

15. Then praised and blessed with benedictions believed to bestow victory in battle, by Brahmanas old in the performance of austerities, in knowledge and in years, ever engaged in the performance of religious rites and sacrifices and holding all their passions in subjugation, Arjuna mounted upon his mighty chariot.

16. That excellent vehicle of his which had been previously purified with victory-giving mantras, like the sun of burning radiance ascending the Eastern mountains.

17. Then that best of car-warriors adorned with golden ornaments, shone, in consequence of those golden ornaments of his, on his chariot, like the sun of burning radiance on the breast of the Meru mountain.

18. After Partha, Yuyudhana and Janardana mounted on that car, like the twin Ashvinis riding on the best celestial car when they had come to the sacrifice of Sharyati.

19. The Govinda that best of charioteers took up the reins (of Arjuna's steeds), like Matali taking up the reins of Indra's horses, when the latter went to fight in order to slay Vritra.



20. Mounting on that his best of cars, with those two heroes Yuyudhana and Janardana, Pritha's son appeared like the moon dispelling darkness when rising in conduction with Budha and Shukra.

21. Then that slayer of large bodies of foes (Arjuna), desirous of bringing about the slaughter of the Sindhu ruler, proceeded to battle, like Indra accompanied by Varuna and the sun, proceeding to fight with the Asuras, in the battle caused by the abduction of Taraka.

22. The minstrels and musicians then greeted the heroic Arjuna as he proceeded, with the sounds of musical instruments and eulogies, auspicious and well-worded.

23. The voice of the bards and the minstrels pronounced benedictions of victory; and good-day greetings became pleasing to the heroes, being mingled with the din of musical instruments.

24-25. An auspicious breeze bearing holy fragrance, began to blow from behind Partha and it gladdened him, but sucked up the energies of his adversaries. In that moment, O king, various auspicious signs appeared to view, indicative of the victory of the Pandavas.

26. And, O sire, of the reverses of their enemies seeing those signs indicative of victory Arjuna, addressing the mighty bow-man Yuyudhana who was sitting at his right, said these words— "O Yuyudhana, in today's battle, my victory is undoubted."

27. Inasmuch as, O foremost of Sini's race Yuyudhana, these auspicious signs are appearing to us.

28. I shall now penetrate to the spot where the king of the Sindhus remains desirous of seeing a display of my prowess and of going to the domain of Yama.

29. Indeed, as the slaughter of the Sindhu ruler in one of my foremost duties. So also the protection of the very virtuous king Yudhishtira is another imperative duty of mine.

30. Therefore, O mighty-armed one, do you protect the king this day. So that, protected by you he will be as safe as if he were protected by my own self.

31. Moreover, I do not see any one who can vanquish you in battle. In battle you are equal to Vasudeva himself; even the lord of the celestials cannot vanquish you.

32. Placing the burden of the king's protection on you or on the mighty car-warrior Pradyumna. I can, O foremost of men, without anxiety, exert myself in slaying the Sindhu king.

33. O descendant of the Satvata race, you need not entertain any misgiving about myself. It shall be your first duty to protect the king, with all your heart and soul.

34. "There where the mighty-armed son of Vasudeva stay or where I myself stay, certainly no calamity can befall there."

35. Thus spoken to by Pritha's son, Satyaki the slayer of hostile heroes, saying 'yea' to the words of the former, returned to that part of the field where Yudhishtira was.

## CHAPTER 85

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)

#### The repentance of Dhritarastra

##### Dhritarashtra said

1. When the day after the one in which Abhimanyu had been slain, came, what did the Pandavas, afflicted with grief and sorrow, do? What warriors of my host fought with them?

2. Aware, as they were, of the feats achieved by Savyasachin (Arjuna), tell me, how could the Kauravas and my warriors, having perpetrated that sinful act. (Abhimanyu's slaughter) remain undaunted?

3. How could they in battle dare look at that foremost of men as he proceeded like the all-destroying Death, burning with fury and distressed with the grief occasioned by the slaughter of his son.

4. What did my warriors do, beholding that warriors having the king of the monkeys for the emblem on his standard, that hero afflicted with the grief caused by the death of his son and shaking his huge bow in battle?

5. What, O Sanjaya, has befallen, unto Duryodhana in this day's battle? A great grief

stares us in the face. I do not hear any longer, sounds of joy (from my camp).

6. Those mind-captivating sounds, highly pleasing to the sense of hearing that were before heard from the pavilion of the Sindhu king, those sounds are no longer perceived today.

7. In the encampment of my sons, the sounds of numerous minstrels and panegyrists singing eulogies and of dancers, are no longer heard.

8. formerly all these sounds used to strike my ears incessantly. Alas, merged as they are in grief, do not any longer here those sounds from their pavilions

9. Formerly, O Sanjaya, while sitting in the camp of the truth-loving Somadatta, I used to hear all those charming sounds.

10. How poor in religious merit I am today, inasmuch as I perceive the pavilion of my sons today to be resounding with sounds of sorrow and lamentations and to be destitute of all sounds of life and energy.

11. I do not now hear those sounds I used to hear formerly in the camps of Vivinshati, Durmukha, Chitrasena, Vikarna and other sons of mine.

12. That fierce bowman namely the son of Drona, who is the protector of my sons, upon whom Brahmanas, Kshatriyas and Vaishyas and a large number of pupils used to wait.

13. Who delighted in disputations and conversation and in the stirring music of various instruments and in diverse kinds of songs.

14. Who was worshipped by many persons among the Kurus, the Pandavas and the Satvatas—O you son of Suta, even in the camp of that son of Drona no sound could be heard as before.

15. Numerous songsters and dancers used to dance attendance upon that mighty bowman viz., the son of Drona! Now their sounds could no longer be heard in their camp.

16. The loud sound that used to be sent up from the pavilion of Vinda and Anuvinda every evening, alas, that sound could no longer be heard there. In the camp of the Kekayas also.

17. Could no longer be heard the sound that used to be made by the songs and slappings of palms of soldiers engaged in dance and merry-making.

18. Those Yajaka Brahmanas accomplished in conducting Saptatantu sacrifices, who used to wait upon the son of Somadatta versed in the Vedas, the sound made by those Brahmanas could no longer be heard.

19. The twang of bows, the sound of Vedic recitations, the whistle of shafts, the whiz of swords and the rattle of cars, these sounds were the be heard incessantly in the pavilion of Drona. But I do not hear them now.

20. The melody of songs that used to be sang in the various parts of the field and that used to be mingled with the sound of musical instruments, alas, that sound could not be heard this day.

21. When Janardana of unfading glory out of the compassion he cherished for every creature, came here with a desire for concluding peace.

22. Then, O Suta, I said unto the wicked Duryodhana - "With the son of Vasudeva as the mediator, O son, do you conclude peace with the Pandavas.

23. Me seems the time for concluding peace has arrived. O Duryodhana, do not violate my command. If you now disregard the son of Vasudeva who now entreats you for peace.

24. And advises you for your welfare, victory will never fall in your lot in battle." Duryodhana however neglected him of the Dasharha race, that foremost of all bowmen.

25-26. Who then addressed him for his welfare and thus he brought danger on his own head. Then that son of mine, whose intellect was perverted and who was being drawn into the jaws of death, accepted the counsel of Dushasana and Karna and rejected that which I offered him.

27. I was not in favour of the game at dice, nor was Vidura so. Neither also did the ruler of the Sindhus approve of the game at dice, nor did Bhishma approve of it.

28. O Sanjaya, so also, Shalya Bhurishravas, Purumitra, Jaya, Ashvatthaman, Kripa and Drona, none of these approved of that game.

29. If my unfortunate son had conducted himself according to the counsel of these persons. He with his friends and relatives would then have passed his days in peace and happiness.

30. Of sweet and charming speech, always speaking what is agreeable to their relatives. Of noble extraction, esteemed by all, gifted with knowledge, the sons of Pandu are sure to reap happiness.

31. The man who depends of righteousness, is sure to reap happiness always and everywhere. After death, he obtains bliss and grace (of god).

32. Relying on their own prowess for the achievement of their purposes, the Pandavas deserve to enjoy one half of the Earth itself. The sea-girt earth is as much an inheritance to them as it is to the Kurus.

33. Obtaining sovereignty they will ever remain in the path of virtue. I have kinsmen, O son, to whose words the Pandavas will ever pay attention.

34-35. O sire, As for instance, Shalya, Somadatta, the high-souled Bhishma, Drona, Vikarna, Balhika, Kripa and numerous other high-souled and venerable (in years) members of the Bharata dynasty. If these persons speak for you, the Pandavas will act up to their beneficial words. Who among these do you think would speak otherwise?

36. Krishna will never abandon righteousness; the Pandavas are ever submissive to him.

37. Those heroes will not also disregard the righteous words that I shall speak to them for the Pandavas are all of righteous soul.

38. Thus plaintively lamenting, I said these and many other words to my son, O Suta. But that fool did not listen to me, Me seems all this is owing to the evil influence of time.

39-43. There where remain Vrikodara and Arjuna and the Vrishni hero Satyaki and

Uttamaugas of the Panchala race and the indomitable Yudhamanyu and the invincible Dhristadyumna and the ever-victorious Sikhandin and the Ashmakas, Kekayas and Kshatradharman of the Somaka clan, the ruler of the Chedis and Chekitana and Abhibhu the son of the Kasi king, the sons of Draupadi and Virata and the mighty car-warrior Drupada and those foremost of men the twins Nakula and Sahadeva and the slayer of Madhu as the counsellor. What man in this world desirous of living would venture to fight with these?

44. Who else again will face my enemies when they will display their celestial weapons. Save and except Duryodhana, Karna, Shakuni the son of Subala and Dushasana as their fourth; I do not indeed see a fifth man.

45. They who have Vishvaksena (Vishnu), clad in armour and reins in hand, on their chariot, they who have Arjuna for their warrior, they can never suffer defeat.

46. Does Duryodhana now remember all those lamentations of mine? You say that Bhishma and Drona, those two foremost of men, have been killed.

47. I think my foolish sons are now overwhelmed with grief, seeing now the words of the far-sighted Vidura to be true and fruitful. I think my foolish sons are now indulging in lamentations seeing the army sorely distressed by Arjuna and the grand son of Sini.

48. And seeing also the terraces of their cars empty. Surely Dhananjaya is consuming my stooks like fire assisted by the wind, burning down a heap of straw dried by the heat of the sun that rises at the expiration of the winter season.

49. O Sanjaya, expert as you are in story-telling, relate to me everything that happened.

50. After that wrong had been inflicted on Arjuna in the evening. What was the state of your mind, O son, when Abhimanyu was slain?

51. Surely the feats of valour of the wielder of the Gandiva bow. My warriors were unable to bear, guilty, as they were, of injuring Arjuna (by slaying his son).

52. What measures Duryodhana or Karna direct to be adopted? What also Dushasana or the son of Subala thought fit to do, when they were involved in this predicament.

53-54. O sire, everything that befell my assembled sons was, O Sanjaya, certainly owing to the misdeeds of my wicked son Duryodhana, who follows in the path of covetousness, whose understanding has been perverted by wrath, whose soul is vitiated, who longs to have sovereignty who is stupid and whose reason is clouded by anger. O Sanjaya, tell me whether the measure adopted by him was agreeable to policy or against it?

## CHAPTER 86

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)—

#### Continued

#### The words of Sanjaya

Sanjaya said

1. Alas, as I have seen everything with my own eyes, I shall tell you all. Hear me patiently. Great indeed is your fault.

2. O king, these lamentations of yours are as useless as the construction of embankments when the waters have receded from a flooded field. O foremost of the Bharatas, do not indulge in grief.

3. The decrees of Destiny and wonderful and inevitable. O foremost of the Bharatas, do not give way to grief, for these things are not unique.

4. If in days gone by, you had prevented Kunti's son Yudhishthira or your own sons, from the tournament at dice, then this calamity would not have overtaken you.

5. If, again, on the eve of the battle, you had prevented the enraged parties from joining in the battle, then this calamity would not have overtaken you.

6. If, again, formerly you had incited the other Kurus to put an end to the existence of the refractory Duryodhana, then this calamity would never have overtaken you.

7. If, indeed, you had done one of these alternatives, then the Pandavas, the Panchalas,

the Vrishnis and the other rulers of Earth have never had the reason for blaming you for your pervert understanding.

8. If, again, doing the duty of a father, you had (by directing Duryodhana on the path of virtue) compelled him to follow in the same path, then this calamity would never have befallen you.

9. You are the wisest man on the face of the Earth. But in spite of your being so, you accepted the counsel of Karna, Duryodhana and Shakuni, abounding the ways of eternal virtue.

10. Therefore, O king, all these lamentations of yours that I have heard—you who are absorbed in the enjoyment of worldly objects—appear to me to be like honey-mixed with poison.

11. In days gone by, Krishna did not hold king Yudhishthira the son of Pandu or Bhishma or Drona, in so high an estimation as he did hold you, O king.

12. But when he came to know you fallen from the duties of royalty, that time forward, he did not respect you as before.

13. When your sons applied harsh epithets to the sons of Pritha, you assumed an indifferent attitude. The result of that indifference of yours has now overtaken you—you who long to see your sons installed on the throne.

14. O sinless one, the royalty you inherited from your fore-fathers, is now going to slip off your hands; or on the other hand you will have it, obtaining it from the sons of Pritha (who would certainly snatch it away from your sons after slaying them).

15. The dominions of the Kurus and their fame, had been acquired by Pandu and the right-behaving sons of Pandu have again added to that fame and those dominions.

16. All those endeavours of their became fruitless when indeed their interests clashed with yours, in as much as they were despoiled of their ancestral sovereignty by your very avaricious self.

17. So, O king, the fact of your attributing blame to your sons at the time of the actual warfare and the face of your expatiating on their faults, indeed, seem very unbecoming.

18. The monarchs, when engaged in battle, do not pay the least regard to their lives. Those foremost of the Kshatriyas fight (to the best of their abilities, having penetrated into the heart of the array of troops belonging to the sons of Pritha.

19. The army which Krishna and Arjuna and Satyaki and Vrikodara protect what persons except the Kauravas would hazard a battle with that army.

20. They whose warrior is Gudakesha (Arjuna), they whose counsellor is Krishna, they whose protectors are Vrikodara and Satyaki.

21. What human wielder of bow would venture to fight them, save and except the Kauravas and those who follow their lead.

22. Everything that can possibly be done by devoted (tributary) kings endued with heroism and observant of the duties of the Kshatriyas, all that is being done for the Kauravas by their partisans.

23. Hear now from me everything that transpired in that dreadful battle between those foremost of men, viz., the Kauravas and the Pandavas.

## CHAPTER 87

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The arraying of the Kaurava troops

**Sanjaya said**

1. After the night had passed away, that foremost of all wielders of weapons, viz., Drona began to dispose of his divisions in battle array.

2. Then there were heard the diverse words of challenge uttered by shouting heroes, inflamed with rage and desirous of slaying one another.

3. Stretching their bows and drawing back the strings of their bow with their hands and breathing (hot), they began to exclaim, 'where now is that Dhananjaya.'

4. Some began to toss their swords in air—swords that were naked, non-pliant, well-tempered, of the hue of the sky, possessed of

great sharpness and decorated with ornamental hilts.

5. Thousands of heroic warriors longing for battle, were seen to perform various evolutions of swordsmen and bowmen, with dexterity acquired through discipline.

6. Others again whirling in the air their maces tied with belts decorated with sandal paste and adorned with gold and diamond, began to enquire after the son of Pandu (Arjuna).

7. Other warriors, maddened with the pride of their prowess and endued with strong arms, obstructed the sky with their spiked bludgeons that looked like bannered poles raised in honour of Indra.

8. Other brave warriors again decorated with charming floral garlands and armed with various kinds of weapons, stationed themselves on different parts of the field, burning with a desire for battle.

9. 'Where is Arjuna? Where is Govinda? Where is the proud Vrikodara? Where are all their followers and friends? Even thus did they then challenge the Pandavas to battle.

10. Then blowing his conch and urging his steeds to full speed, Drona began to move hither and thither with great celerity, arranging his troops in order.

11. When those divisions that ever delighted in fight, were disposed of in order, O mighty monarch, the son of Bharadvaja addressing Jayadratha said these words.

12-14. "Yourself, the son of Somadatta, the mighty car-warrior Karna, Ashvatthaman, Shalya, Vrishasena and Kripa supported with a hundred thousand horses, sixty thousand chariots, fourteen thousand elephants with rent temples, twenty-one thousand foot-soldiers cased in armour, take up your stand behind me at a distance of twelve miles.

15. There even the very gods led by Vasava himself will not be able to assault you what to speak of the sons of Pandu? Take heart, O ruler of the Sindhus."

16. Thus spoken to, Jayadratha the ruler of the Sindhus became comforted. He then set out for the spot indicated by Drona, followed by many Gandhara heroes and surrounded by those great car-warriors.

17. And accompanied by many foot soldiers cased in armours, armed with nooses and prepared to fight to the best of their abilities. Decked with *Chamaras* and adorned with golden caparisons.

18. The horses of Jayadratha, O mighty king, were all very good carriers; seven thousand such steeds and three thousands other steeds of the Shindhu breed, were also with him.

19-20. Your son Durmarshana, desirous of doing battle, was stationed in the van of the rest of the troops being supported by one thousand and five hundred maddened elephants of prodigious size, covered with mail and of dreadful deeds, all mounted by skilful elephant-riders.

21. Your other two sons, Dushasana and Vikarna, stationed themselves amidst the advance division of the army, for securing success to the king of the Sindhus.

22. The array that the son of Bharadvaja then formed, partly figuring a *sakata* and partly a *circle*, was full forty-eight miles in length and its back portion, in width, measured full twenty miles.

23. Drona himself formed this array in which were stationed numerous brave kings and innumerable cars, elephants, horses and foot soldiers.

24. In the back portion of that array was formed another impenetrable array figuring a *lotus*. Within this latter again was constructed another closely formed array, that was designated the *needle*.

25. Thus having formed this mighty array Drona waited for the encounter. In the rear of the needle array was placed Kritavarman the fierce bowman.

26. After him were stationed the Kamboja Princes and also Jalasandha, O sire, Behind

them stood Duryodhana and Karna, in the *Sakata*.

27. Next to them were placed hundreds and thousands of unretreating warriors, for protecting the head of that array.

28. Behind their back, was stationed king Jayadratha by the side of the needle array and surrounded by a mighty division of troops.

29. The son of Bharadvaja, himself stood at the mouth of the *Sakata*. Next to him stood the ruler of the Bhojas, who protected the former.

30. Cased in a white coat of mail, graced with a beautiful turban, of broad chest and of mighty arms, Drona there stood stretching his bow, like the enraged God of Death.

31. The Kurus then were filled with delight by beholding the chariot of Drona, graced with a banner, having crimson steeds yoked to it and standard that bore the device of the sacrificial altar and a black deer.

32. Beholding that array formed by Drona that resembled the ocean agitated (by the tempest), the Siddhas and the Charanas were filled with great wonder.

33. The creatures then thought that array would devour the whole Earth with her mountains, oceans, forests—and the various rivers flowing on its surface.

34. King Duryodhana then beholding that great array figuring a *Sakata*, teeming with chariots, men, steeds and elephants and roaring fearfully, of wonderful appearance and capable of afflicting the hearts of the enemy, became filled with delight.

## CHAPTER 88

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)—

#### Continued

#### The appearance of Arjuna on the field of battle

#### Sanjaya said

1. Thus when the troops had been excellently disposed of in that array, O sire and when Bheris were sounded and Mridangas struck up.

2. When the soldiers uttered loud war-cries and musical instruments emitted tremendous din, when conchs were blown and horripilating roars were heard.

3. When the field slowly became over-spread with Bharata heroes desirous of battle and when the hour known as Roudra arrived, Savyasachin (Arjuna) made his appearance on the field of battle.

4. Then, O Bharata, many thousands of ravens and crows flew sportively in front of Arjuna's car.

5. Various animals of fearful yells and jackals of dreadful appearance, began to howl in our right as we proceeded to battle.

6. Thousands of meteors, with harsh sounds and blazing tails, began to drop down; on the dreadful occasion, the whole Earth began to quake and tremble.

7. Dry winds accompanied by deep sounds and driving pebbles and gravel, began to blow when Kunti's son made his appearance before the commencement of the battle.

8. Then Shatanika the son of Nakula and Dhristadyumna the son of Prishata, these two warriors endued with great wisdom began to array in order the numerous divisions of the Pandavas.

9-10. Supported by a thousand cars, a hundred elephants, three thousand horses and ten thousand foot-soldiers and covering a part of the field measuring fifteen hundred bows, your son Durmarshana stationed himself in the very van of the troops and thus spoke—

11. Like the banks resisting the waves of the swelling main, even I myself will this day hold in check the wielder of the Gandiva bow, that slayer of foes, that hero who is irrepressible in battle.

12. Today let people see the irate and indomitable Dhananjaya collide with me, even like a mass of stone against another stony mass.

13. Stay, O you car-warriors that long to join in the fray! Single-handed, will I fight with the assembled Pandavas, for enhancing my glory and my fame.

14. Having thus spoken, O mighty monarch, that illustrious one of generous intellect, that fierce bowmen stood, O king, being surrounded by many excellent car-warriors.

15. Then like the enraged Destroyer or like Vasava armed with the thunderbolt or like the unbearable god of Death wielding his bludgeon and let loose by Time.

16. Or like Siva with trident and unruffled or like Varuna armed with the noose or like the blazing fire appearing at the end of a Yuga for consuming the creation.

17. That slayer of the Nivatakavachas, inflamed with rage and swelling with his energies, the ever victorious Jaya attached to truth and intent on accomplishing his great vow.

18. Cased in mail and armed with a sword, graced with a golden diadem, decorated with garlands of white flowers and attired in white garments, his arms decked with charming *Angadas* and ears with resplendent ear-rings.

19. Riding on his own best of chariots, the embodied Nara accompanied by Narayana, shaking his Candiva bow in battle appeared shining and dazzling like the risen sun.

20. Then Dhananjaya endued with great might, O king, stopping his chariot before the van of his troops where the thickest downpour of arrows was expected blew his conch.

21. Thereupon the undaunted Krishna also, O sire, with Pritha's son, blew with force that most excellent conch of his, known as the Panchajanya.

22. Then at that blare of the conchs, O ruler of men, the soldiers of your army had the hair of their body erect and they trembled and were confounded.

23. At the blare of their conchs, your troops took right even as creatures become frightened at the rumbling of the thunder.

24. All the beasts discharged urine and excreta. Your whole army with its animals seized with anxiety.

25. O sire, O monarch, in consequence of the blare of those two conchs, all men were deprived of their strength. And some of our

array then were filled with fear and some lost their consciousness.

26. Then frightening your soldiers, the ape of Arjuna's banner with other creatures thereon, opening its mouth, uttered a terrible roar.

27. Then conchs, horns, cymbals and Anakas, were sounded and blown for inspiring energy into your troops.

28. Then din thus produced, became mixed up with the din produced by various musical instruments, by the shouts of warriors and by the slappings of their armpits, by the war-cries of the great car-warriors, as they challenged one another.

29. Thus when that tremendous din arose there - din that enhanced the fear of the cowards-the son of Pakashasani became filled with joy; and addressing the descendant of the Dasarha race, he then thus spoke.

## CHAPTER 89

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The fight of Arjuna

##### Arjuna said

1. Drive, O Hrishiksha, the horses to the spot where Durmarsana stands. Penetrating through this division of elephants. I shall enter into the heart of the hostile army.

##### Sanjaya said

2. Thus spoken to by Savyasachin, the mighty-armed Keshava drove the steeds to the spot where Durmarsana was standing.

3. Thereupon, there ensued a fearful and terrible encounter between the many and the one, encounter that was destructive of many cars, elephants and men.

4. Then, like masses of clouds surcharged with rain drenching the mountain-breast with their contents. Pritha's son covered his enemies with his arrowy downpour.

5. The warriors of your army then with great lightness of hands, hastily covered Arjuna and Krishna with a net-work of arrows.

6. Then excited to the highest pitch of anger by his enemies, the mighty-armed Partha endued with great prowess, began to rob, with his arrows, the heads of car-warriors, from their trunks.

7. The Earth became overspread with handsome heads graced with ear-rings and head-gears, the lower lips bit by the upper ones and the faces adorned with eyes inflamed with rage.

8. The countenance of the warriors scattered here and there, looked charming like an assemblage of plucked off lotuses lying crushed and strewn about the field.

9. Armours of gold bespattered with blood and lying thick over the field, appeared like masses of clouds fringed with flashes of lightning.

10. The sound then created by the falling of heads on the earth, resembled that produced by the falling of ripe palm fruit.

11. Some headless trunk were seen standing there, with their bows in grasp. Some again stood, with their drawn swords raised on air (for striking).

12. The (surviving) foremost of warriors, all resenting those feats of Arjuna, the son of Kunti and desirous of conquering him in battle, did not pay any regard to the fallen heads (of their brother warriors).

13. The Earth became strewn over with the heads of horses, the trunks of elephants and the heads and arms of heroic warriors.

14. 'This is Arjuna' 'Where is Partha' 'Here is Pritha's son'-O master, even thus were the troops of your army then filled with the thought of Partha.

15. They then began to strike one another and some of them again struck their own selves. Confounded by Time, they then beheld the world to be full of battle only.

16. Uttering cries of agony, steeped in blood, deprived of consciousness, suffering excruciating pain, many heroes prostrate on the field of battle, began to summon their friends and relatives, for succour.



17. Holding *Bhindipalas* or lances or darts or swords or battle-axes or piked stakes or scimitars or bows or *Tomaras*.

18-19. Or shaft or maces and covered with mail and adorned with *Angadas* and other ornaments and looking like huge snakes and resembling large bludgeons, hands cut-off with mighty weapons from the trunks, were seen to leap, jump and jerk about with great force, as if in rage.

20. Whoever then ventured to advance in rage against Partha, had a fatal shafts discharged by that hero, stuck deep on his body.

21. Not the slightest flaw was then detected in Pritha's son, as he danced in the terrace of his chariot and stretched his mighty bow.

22. The troops belonging to the party hostile to him, were then amazed by beholding the lightness of hands with which he took out his shafts, placed them on the bow-string and discharged them.

23. Then Phalguna with his arrows penetrated elephants and their drivers, horses and their riders and car-warriors with their car-drivers.

24. There was none among the hostile troop, whether standing in front of him or exerting in battle or moving about or urged on, whom the arrows discharged by Arjuna did not pierce through.

25. Just as the sun rising in the heavens destroys deep darkness (of night), so did Arjuna destroy elephant with his arrows furnished with wings of Kanka-feathers.

26. That part of the field occupied by your troops looked like the Earth at the hour of dissolution, covered with hillocks, in consequence of its being strewn over with fallen and mangled elephants.

27. Just as the sun shining in the meridian is incapable of being looked at by beings, so then in that battle, Dhananjaya inflamed with rage, was incapable of being looked at by his enemies.

28. Then O scorcher of foes, the troops of your son afflicted with the arrows of Arjuna, deserted their ranks and fled from the field.

29. Like the tempest scattering and tearing a mass of cloud, Arjuna then routed your army; when he was thus afflicting the army, none could turn his eyes towards him.

30-31. Afflicted by Arjuna, you troops viz., the cavalry, the infantry and the car-warriors, fled in all haste from the field of battle, urging their horses to the top of their speed by goad-strokes, by stroke of the horns of their bows, by growls, by encouraging commands, by who's by (dagger) cuts on their flanks and also by threatening speeches.

32. Others (riding on elephants) fled urging their huge by pressing their sides with toes or with the stroke of the hooks; others again confounded by Parthas arrows, even fled to the direction of Partha himself. Thus then all your warriors were deprived of sense and their minds also became distracted.

## CHAPTER 90

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The defeat of Dushasana's division

##### Dhritarashtra said

1. When the vanguard of my troops were thus slaughtered and routed by the diadem-decked Arjuna, what heroes of my army then proceeded to fight with Dhananjaya.

2. Or did all of them, forgetting their determination, enter into the *Sakata* array and stood behind the fearless Drona resembling a solid wall?

##### Sanjaya said

3-4. When, O sinless one, Arjuna the son of Pakashasani (Indra) had broken and slain with his excellent arrows our own troops, many were the heroes that were slain or fled with depressed hearts. None indeed was able to look upon him.

5. Then O king your son Dushasana, seeing your troops in that wretched plight became inflamed with rage and advanced towards Arjuna for fighting with the latter.

6. That hero of fierce energy was cased in a coat of mail worked exquisitely with gold and he wore also a helmet of pure gold.

7. O mighty monarch, Dushasana then surrounded Savyasachin with a mighty division of elephants that seemed to devour the whole earth.

8. With the booming of the bells tied to the necks of elephants, with the blasts of the conchs, with the twang of bows, with war cried with the roars of tusked elephants.

9. The earth, the points of the compass and the welkin, became completely filled. The hour appeared to be awful and solemn.

10. Beholding those infuriate and huge elephants with extended trunks and urged with hooks make towards himself like so many winged mountains.

11. That foremost of men, Dhananjaya sending up a fierce war-cry, fell to agitate that elephant division of his enemy, with his shafts.

12. Then like a *Makara* entering into the waters of the mighty main lashed into fury by the tempest the diadem-decked Arjuna penetrated into that elephant division.

13. Indeed then Partha that conqueror of hostile fortresses, was seen by every body on every side to resemble the burning sun that rises on the day of dissolution, in contravention of all rules about direction and hour.

14. In consequence of the clatter of horse hoofs, the rattle of car-wheels, the cries of combatants, the twang of bowstrings.

15. The sounds of various musical instruments, the blasts of *Panchajanya* and *Devadatta* (the conchs of Arjuna and Krishna) and the crackling of the bow *Gandiva*.

16. The troops of your army and the elephants therein, lost all activity and became cheerless. They were pierced by Savyasachin with his arrows whose touch resembled that of snakes of virulent venom.

17. The elephants were pierced on every part of their bodies with the arrows of keen points shot by hundreds and thousands from the bow *Gandiva*.

18. Uttering fierce roars when they were being slaughtered by the diadem-decked Arjuna, they began to fall incessantly on the

ground like mountains having their wings cut-off.

19. Other elephants pierced with long shafts in the jaw of frontal globes or temples, began to utter yelling cries resembling the screech of the cranes.

20. The diadem-decked Arjuna then cut-off with *bhallas* of close knots, the heads of hostile warriors that rode on the neck of these elephants.

21. Those heads graced with ear-rings falling incessantly on the Earth, looked like so many lotuses that Pritha's son was culling, for an offering of the Gods.

22. Entangled with the trappings, divested of their armours, lacerated with wounds and smeared with blood, men were then seen hanging from the necks of elephants, as these latter careered over the field.

23. Sometimes two or three warriors penetrated by a single arrow decked with beautiful feathers and heedfully shot from the *Gandiva*, fell down on the Earth.

24. Deeply pierced with *Narachas* and vomiting blood through the mouth, elephants with their riders, began to fall down on the ground like so many mountains covered with trees.

25. With his *bhallas* of straight knots Arjuna then began to sever the bowstrings, the standards, the bows, the yokes and the shafts of many car-warriors.

26. Nobody was able then to detect when Arjuna took out his arrows or fix them on the string of his bows or drew the string back or discharged them. But Partha was then seen only to dance on the terrace of his chariot with his bow drawn to a circle.

27. Other elephants again pierced deep with *Narachas* and vomiting blood in consequence, fell down on the ground as soon as they were struck.

28. In that dreadful carnage, O mighty monarch, innumerable headless trunks were seen to stand up on all sides.

29. Numerous arms, holding bows, with fingers cased in leathern gloves, with swords in grasp, adorned with *Angadas* and golden ornaments, were seen scattered about, severed from the trunks.

30. With innumerable *Upasakas*, *Adisthanas*, shafts, crowns, broken car-wheels shattered *Akshas* and yokes.

31. With warriors armed with shields and bows, with garlands of flowers, with ornaments, garments and fallen standards scattered here and there.

32. With slain elephants and horses and fallen Kshatriyas, the field of battle appeared exceedingly awful.

33. Thus, O mighty monarch, the army of Dushasana with its leader, deeply afflicted and extensively slaughtered by the diadem-decked Arjuna, began to fly away.

34. Then Dushasana afraid and afflicted with shafts, with his whole division, fell back upon the *Sakata* array and looked upon Drona as his only protector.

## CHAPTER 91

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)- Continued

#### Arjuna's passing through Drona's division

##### Sanjaya said

1. Having slaughtered the division of Dushasana, the mighty-armed Savysachin desirous of getting at the king of the Sindhus, fell upon Drona's division.

2. Approaching Drona who was standing in the mouth of his array, Arjuna, with Krishna's permission, folding his palms thus spoke to Drona.

##### Arjuna said

3. Wish me well, O Brahmana and bless me saying *Svasti*. through your grace I desire to penetrate through this impenetrable array.

4. You are to me even as my own father or the very virtuous king Yudhishtira or as Krishna himself. This I tell you in sooth.

5. O sire, O sinless one, even as Ashvatthaman deserves to be protected by you, so also, O foremost of the regenerate ones, I deserve to be protected by you.

6. Through your grace, I desire to slay the ruler of the Sindhus in battle, O you foremost of men. O lord, see that my vow may be fulfilled.

##### Sanjaya said

7. Thus spoken to, the preceptors then smilingly replied unto Arjuna thus- Vibhatsu you shall not conquer Jayadratha without in the first instance conquering my own self."

8. Speaking these words only, Drona with myriads of sharp arrows, covered Arjuna, is chariot, steeds, standards and charioteer, smiling all the while.

9. Thereat Arjuna repulsing the arrowy showers of Drona with those of his own, proceeded against Drona, discharging mightier and more dreadful shafts.

10. Then, O ruler of men, showing due respect to Drona and observing the duties of the Kshatriya order, Arjuna sped at him nine shafts.

11. Then cutting those arrows of Arjuna with those of his own, Drona pierced both Krishna and the son of Pandu with shafts that resembled poison of the blazing tongues of fire.

12. The son of Pandu desired to sever the bow string of Drona with his arrows. Even when the illustrious Phalguna as thus thinking of cutting his bow string.

13. The undaunted Drona endued with prowess, cut-off with his arrows the formers string; he also pierced his horses, standards and charioteer.

14. And smilingly did then Drona cover Arjuna himself with many arrows. Meanwhile having strung his mighty bow, Pritha's son.

15. That foremost of all men versed in the use of weapons getting the better of his preceptor, quickly discharged six hundred arrows; that looked as if he had taken out and shot only a single arrow.

16. Once more he shot seven hundred other arrows and again a thousand irresistible arrows

and ten thousand other arrows. All these dispatched many warriors of Drona's division.

17. Pierced deep by those shafts shot by the mighty and accomplished Partha versed in all modes of warfare, many men and horses and elephants began to fall down dead.

18. Afflicted with those arrows, car warriors dropped down from their excellent chariots, deprived of horses and standards and weapons and life.

19. Like mountain-peaks or masses of clouds or mansions crushed, driven or dismantled by the thunder, the tempest or the fire, elephants began to fall down (being pierced with the shafts of Arjuna).

20. Thousands of horses began to fall down being struck by the arrows of Arjuna, like so many swans falling upon the Himavat mountain, being driven down by shower of rain.

21. Like the sun that rises at the end of a Yuga, sucking up with its rays large expanses of water, the son of Pandu, by his showers of weapons and shafts, slew large bodies of car-warriors, horses, elephants and foot soldiers.

22. Then like the clouds covering the sun, the Drona-cloud with its down-pour of arrows, covered the Arjuna-sun whose rays in the form of thick shower of arrows, were burning down the foremost ones among the Kurus, in battle.

23. Then the preceptor pierced Dhananjaya on the breast with a *Naracha* discharged with great force and capable of sucking out the life of every foe.

24. Thereupon the latter trembled in all his limbs like a mountain during an earth quake. But (in a while) regaining his composure, he began to pierce Drona with winged arrows.

25. Then Drona with five arrows afflicted the son of Vasudeva and he struck Vibhatsu with seventy-three shafts and his standard with three.

26. Thus, O monarch, the puissant Drona, worsting his disciple within a moment, caused Arjuna to disappear from the view, with his arrowy showers.

27. We then beheld the arrows shot by Bharadvaja's son fall in unbroken lines and his

bow present the wonderful appearance of always being drawn to a circle.

28. Those numerous arrows furnished with wings of Kanka feather and discharged by Drona in that battle, incessantly fell, O monarch, on Dhananjaya and the son of Vasudeva.

29. Then beholding that battle between Drona and the son of Pandu, the highly intelligent son of Vasudeva began to think about the accomplishment of the (more important) task (viz., the slaughter of Jayadratha).

30. Thereafter Vasudeva's son thus spoke addressing Dhananjaya—"O Partha O Partha, O mighty-armed one, we should not waste time.

31. Let us proceed leaving Drona alone the more important task must be accomplished." Then the son of Pritha replied to Krishna saying—"As it lists you, O Keshava."

32. Thereupon leaving the mighty-armed Drona to their right they proceeded onwards; turning his face away, Vibhatsu advanced shooting his shafts.

33. Thereupon Drona addressing Arjuna said - "Where are you going, O son of Pandu? Is it not the fact that you never turn back without defeating your adversary?"

**Arjuna said**

34. You are my preceptor and not my foe; I am your pupil and like your son. Also there exists not the man in the worlds who can vanquish you in battle.

**Sanjaya said**

35. Having thus spoken, the mighty-armed Vibhatsu, intent on slaying Jayadratha, quickly rushed against the hostile troops.

36. And when he penetrated into your army, the two illustrious Panchala princes, Yudhamanyu and Uttamaujas, followed him, protecting his car-wheel.

37. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, Jaya, Kritavarman of the Satva race and the Kamboja king the Shrutayusha—these put themselves on the way of Dhananjaya.

38. Ten thousand car-warriors followed these warriors. The Abhishakas, the Shurasenas, the Shibis, the Vasatis.

39. The Mavellakas, the Lalithyuas, the Kaikeyas, the Madra, the Narayanas, the Gopalas and the Kamboja clans.

40. Who had before been defeated by Karna and who were regarded as heroes, all these warriors placing the son of Bharadvaja at their head and disregardful of their lives, rushed against Arjuna.

41. For opposing that wrathful hero burning with sorrow an account of the death of his son, that warrior resembling the all-destroying Death himself, cased in armour, versed in all modes of warfare, prepared to sacrifice his life in the very thick of the fight.

42. That foremost of men, fierce bowman, endued with prowess, who resembled the infuriate leader of an elephant and who seemed to plunge into the ranks of your troops.

43. Then the battle that raged between all those warriors on one side and Arjuna on the other, became exceeding fierce and hair-stirring, inasmuch as each desired to meet the other.

44. Then like medicines checking a raging malady, the Kaurava warriors firmly united together began to check that foremost of men proceeding onwards for the slaughter of Jayadratha.

## CHAPTER 92

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The slaughter of Shrutayusha and Sudakshina

Sanjaya said

1. Then that mighty car-warrior viz., Pritha's son, endued with great might and prowess, was opposed in the front by those warriors and quickly pursued from behind by Drona himself.

2. Then scattering his sharp shafts like the lustrous orb of the day scattering his rays, he

afflicted that host of the Kurus like maladies afflicting the body.

3. On that occasion, horses were pierced, cars broken, elephants felled with their riders, umbrellas torn and chariots deprived of their wheels.

4. Afflicted with arrows, troops began to fly in all directions. Thus raged that terrible encounter between Arjuna on the one hand and the Kurus on the other. Nothing could then be distinguished.

5. Thus when they fought on, piercing one another in battle with straight coursing arrows, Arjuna, O king, made the hostile army tremble before him.

6. Ever firmly devoted to truth, Arjuna of white steeds, desirous of accomplishing his vow rushed furiously against that best of car-warriors viz. Drona owning crimson steeds.

7. The preceptor Drona then pierced his disciple, that great bowman Arjuna, with twenty-five straight-flying arrows that penetrated to the very vitals of the latter.

8. Thereat that foremost of all wielders of weapons viz., Vibhatsu quickly rushed against Drona shooting at the sametime arrows capable of checking the career of those shot by the latter.

9. Then Arjuna of generous soul discharging the Brahma weapons and with his *Bhallas* of close knots, repulsed the *Bhallas* so quickly shot at him by Drona.

10. Then we behold the wonderful skill of the preceptor Drona in the art of fighting, in as much as Arjuna, though youthful in years and exerting his best, could not pierce him in return.

11. Then like a mighty mass of clouds pouring down incessant showers of rain, the Drona-cloud covered the Arjuna-mountain with his shower of arrows.

12. Invoking into existence of the *Brahma* weapon, the puissant Arjuna, O sire, received that shower of arrows, cutting of the arrows shot by his adversary with those of his own.

13. Then Drona afflicted him of the white steeds with five and twenty shafts; and with

seventy swift-coursing shafts he pierced Vasudeva's son on the arms and on the chest.

14. The highly intelligent son of Pritha then smiling the while, checked the preceptor in battle who incessantly shooting sharp arrows, was looking like a sea having shafts or its waves.

15. Thus afflicted by Drona, those two foremost of car-warriors (Krishna and Arjuna) shunned him who then resembled the irresistibly raging conflagration that appears at the end of every *Yuga*.

16. Then avoiding the aim of the whetted shafts shot from Drona's bow, the diadem-decked son of Kunti fell to slaughter the division of the Bhojas.

17. Shunning Drona who stood immovable like the Mainaka mountain, Arjuna then took his stand between Kritavarman and Sudakshina, the ruler of the Kambojas.

18. Then that foremost of men, the undaunted ruler of the Bhojas quickly pierced the invincible hero, the foremost of the descendants of Kuru (Arjuna), with ten arrows winged with *Kanka* feathers.

19. O king, Arjuna pierced him in battle with sharp shafts again with another three arrows he confounded the descendant of the Satvata race (Kritavarman).

20. Thereupon the king of the Bhojas smilingly pierced Pritha's son and Vasudeva of Madhus race, each with a group of twenty-five arrows.

21. Bursting open his bow, Arjuna pierced him with twenty-one arrows resembling tongues of blazing fire or infuriate snakes of virulent poison.

22. Thereat, O Bharata, the mighty car-warrior Kritavarman taking up another bow quickly pierced Arjuna on the chest with five arrows.

23. Then again with another five whetted arrows he pierced Pritha's son deeply. Then Partha also with nine arrows struck him between the breasts.

24. Beholding the son of Kunti engaged with the mighty-warrior Kritavarman, the

descendant of the Vrishni race (Krishna) thought that there was no time to waste.

25. Thereafter Krishna addressing Pritha's son said— "Do not show any mercy to your kinsmen; setting at naught your relationship with him, do you slay and crush him down."

26. Thereat Arjuna stupefying Kritavarman with his arrows, plunged into the ranks of the Kamboja division, being borne by fleet steeds.

27. Beholding Arjuna owning white steeds enter into the Kamboja division, the son of Hridika was inflamed with rage. Then stretching his bow with arrows fixed on the string, he came up on the two Panchala princes.

28. Then with his arrows, Kritavarman opposed the two Panchala princes who were following in the wake of Arjuna, for protecting the wheels of his car.

29. The ruler of the Bhojas Kritavarman then pierced them both with sharp arrows, striking Yudhamanyu with three and Uttamaejas with four.

30. They both in return pierced him each with ten shafts. Then again Yudhamanyu with three and Uttamaejas with another three arrows.

31-32. Cut off Kritavarman's bow and standard. Thereat furious with rage and taking up another bow, the son of Hridika. Deprived both those warriors of the use of their bow and shrouded them in a net-work of arrows. They both in a moment having strung another pair of bows, began to strike the king of the Bhojas.

33. Meanwhile Arjuna had gone into the array of the hostile troops. But his two wheel-protectors held in check by Kritavarman, obtained no admission.

34. Into the divisions of the Dhritarashtra army though those two foremost of men exerted to the best of their abilities. Meanwhile that one of white steeds began to afflict in that battle the army opposed to him, with great agility.

35. That slayer of foes then did not slay Kritavarman though he had an opportunity for doing so. Then beholding him thus advance, the valorous king Shrutayusha.

36. Burning with rage and twanging his great bow, rushed furiously on him. He then pierced Partha with three and Janardana with seventy shafts.

37. And again with a sharp razor-headed arrow, he struck the standard of Pritha's son. Then with a group of ninety shafts of depressed knots Arjuna.

38. Inflamed with rage, pierced him like a *Mahavata* piercing a huge elephant with the hook. But, O king, he (Shrutayudha), did not tolerate that display of prowess by the son of Pandu.

39-42. And with a group of seven and seventy *Narachas* he struck his adversary. Thereat cutting of Shrutayusha's bow and shafts Arjuna inflamed with rage, struck him on the breast with seven arrows of depressed knots. Thereupon that king overwhelmed with rage and taking up another bow pierced the son of Vasava on the arms and the breast with nine long arrows. Then O Bharata, that subdue of foes viz., Arjuna afflicted Shrutayusha with many thousand, of arrows, smiling all the while; and that mighty car-warrior soon killed the latter's horses and charioteer.

43-45. And that highly puissant hero also pierced him with seventy *Narachas*. Thereupon leaving his chariot of which the steeds were slain, king Shrutayusha endued with great energy rushed against Pritha's son, heaving his huge mace over his head. The heroic king Shrutayusha and the son of Varuna having for his mother the mighty river of cool waters called *Parnasa*. O king, her mother, for the benefit of her son, had thus spoken to Varuna saying—

46. "Let this son of mine be unslayable in battle by his enemies on earth." Then Varuna gratified with her, had said- "I accord him the boon that will be highly beneficial to him.

47. I give to your son a celestial weapon by virtue of which he will be unslayable. Men could never obtain immortality on earth.

48. O foremost of rivers, every one who has taken his birth on the face of the earth must

inevitable fall a prey to death. This son of yours, however, will ever be invincible by his foes in battle.

49. By virtue of this weapon; so let the fever corroding your heart he dismissed." Having thus spoken, Varuna gave him a mace with all necessary aphorisms.

50. Obtaining which Shrutayusha became invincible in all the worlds. The illustrious lord of waters however again addressed him saying—

51. This mace, O son, should not be directed against one who is not fighting, in which case it will fall back upon yourself; on such occasion, coursing in an opposite direction it will kill him who has hurled it.'

52. But when the time for using it came, Shrutayusha did not pay any heed to that injunction of Varuna and with that mace capable of crushing heroes, he began to strike Janardana.

53. The highly puissant Krishna received those strokes on his broad and well-developed shoulders; and that mace could not cause Shauri to tremble even as a tempest cannot shake a mountain.

54. Like some ill-accomplished feat of conjuration injuring the conjurer the mace turning to Shrutayusha, smote that heroic and enraged monarch stationed in his car.

55. And slaying that brave warrior it fell down on the ground. Shrutayusha being slain.

56. The troops began to utter loud wails of woe, for indeed they had seen that subduer of foes Shrutayusha slain by his own weapon.

57. As Shrutayusha O ruler of men had hurled the mace at Krishna who was not engaged in the battle, it slew him who had hurled it.

58. So Shrutayusha fell on the field even in the manner indicated by the words of Varuna and he fell down deprived of life before the eyes of all the bowmen present.

59. When falling, that dear-loved son of Parnasa appeared beautiful like a mighty tree of many branches uprooted by the tempest.

60. Then beholding that subduer of foes slain all the troops and their leading warriors began to fly away in all directions.

61. Thereafter the heroic Sudakshina the son of the Kamboja king rushed against that slayer of foes viz., Phalguna, being borne by fleet steeds.

62. At him, O Bharata, Pritha's son shot seven arrows, which penetrating through that hero, entered the surface of the earth.

63. Pierced deep by those sharp arrows shot from the *Gandiva* bow, he in return pierced Arjuna in battle with ten shafts furnished with the feathers of the Kanka bird.

64. He once more pierced Vasudeva's son with three and Partha with five arrows, then O Sire, Pritha's son bursting open his bow, cut down his standard;

65. And the son of Pandu pierced him with a couple of *bhallas* of exceeding sharpness. He also having pressed Pritha's son with three such arrows uttered a fierce yell.

66. Thereafter the brave Sudakshina inflamed with rage hurled at the wielder of the *Gandiva* bow, a lance, dreadful, tied with bells and made wholly of iron.

67. Having reached that mighty car-warriors Arjuna, that lance blazing like a mighty meteor and emitting scintillations of fire, penetrated through him and then fell down on the ground.

68. Pierced deep with that lance, Arjuna was overwhelmed with a swoon. Then in an instant, that highly puissant hero recovering soon enough began to lick the corners of his mouth.

69. Then Partha of inconceivable prowess pierced Sudakshina and his steeds standards, bow and charioteer with ten *narachas* furnished with the feathers of the Kanka bird.

70-71. And with innumerable other arrows he rendered the latter's chariot useless and cut it to pieces. The son of Pandu then with an arrow of exceeding sharpness pierced on the chest Sudakshina the Kamboja ruler whose purpose and prowess had both even baffled. Then with his armour shattered, trembling in all his limbs, with his crown and *Angadas* falling off.

72-73. That hero fell with head down wards like a flagstaff loosened from the socket. Like a charming Karnikara tree in the spring growing gracefully on the top of a hill, with beautiful branches, lying on the ground when uprooted by the tempest, the prince of the Kambojas lying on the bare ground deprived of life, through accustomed to sleep on the most precious bed.

74-75. Adorned with precious ornaments, graceful, possessing eyes of coppery hue, wearing round the head a tiara of gold radiant like the flames of fire, the mighty armed Sudakshina, the prince of the Kambojas, felled by Partha with his arrows and lying dead on the ground, appeared beautiful like a charming hill with a flat summit.

76. Then beholding Shrutayusha and the prince of the Kambojas slain in battle, all the soldiers of your son's army began to fly in all directions.

## CHAPTER 93

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The slaughter of Ambashtha king and others

#### Sanjaya said

1. When king Sudakshina and the heroic Shrutayudha had been slain, your warriors inflamed with wrath, furiously rushed against the son of Pritha.

2. The Abhishahas, the Surasenas, the Shibis and the Vasatis, O king, then began to pour upon Dhananjaya a veritable shower of arrows.

3. The son of Pandu consumed sixty thousands of these and other warriors, with his arrows; and then the rest greatly frightened, began to fly away like smaller animals flying away from the tiger.

4. But soon turning back, they surrounded Partha on all sides, who was slaying his foes in battle and trying to obtain victory over them.

5. Then as they made quickly towards himself, Dhananjaya, with arrows shot from his *Gandiva* bow, began to cut down their heads and arms.



6. The field of battle was thickly strewn over with felled heads; and fights of vultures and crows and ravens formed its cloudy canopy.

7. Beholding their troops thus extirpated by Arjuna, Shrutayusha and Achyutayush, excited with rage and fury, began to fight vigorously with the former.

8. Those two heroes endued with prowess, pride and strength of arms and both born in noble families, began to scatter their arrows right and left.

9. With great agility, O mighty monarch, desirous of winning great fame and slaying Arjuna and doing good to your son.

10. Inflamed with rage, they covered Arjuna with a thousand winged shafts of depressed knots, like clouds filling a lake with torrents of rain.

11. Thereafter that foremost of car-warriors Shrutayusha excited with wrath, struck Dhananjaya with a well-tempered and well-sharpened lance.

12. Thus sorely wounded by his powerful adversary, that subduer of the foes viz., Arjuna was overwhelmed with a swoon, confounding thereby Keshava himself.

13. At this crisis that mighty car-warrior Achyutayusha struck the son of Pandu with a trident of exceeding sharpness.

14. Thus he seemed to pour acid upon the wounds of the illustrious son of Pandu; thus deeply pierced, Pritha's son caught hold of his flag-staff for supporting himself.

15. Thereupon, O ruler of men, a loud and deafening roar was uttered by all your troops, for they considered Dhananjaya to be slain.

16. Then seeing Partha losing consciousness, Krishna was very much distressed; and then he began to comfort Dhananjaya with words soothing and agreeable.

17-18. Then those foremost of car-warriors, Shrutayusha and Achyutayush of true aim, scattering their showers of arrows on all sides in that battle, made Dhananjaya and the son Vasudeva of the Vrishni race and their car, car-wheels, *Kuvaras*, steeds, flag-staff and banner,

disappear from the view. All this indeed seemed wonderful.

19. Then, O Bharata, recovering slowly, like one coming back from a visit to the regions of Death, Vibhatsu.

20. Saw his chariot and Keshava shrouded with a net-work of arrows; then beholding his two opponents standing before him like two blazing fires.

21. The mighty car-warrior Partha invoked into existence the terrible Shakra weapon. From that weapon issued out thousands of arrows.

22. Those arrows then struck those two fierce bowmen Shrutayusha and Achyutayush; and the arrows shot by these latter, being cut-off by those of Partha, began to drop down through the sky.

23. Then Pandu's son checking the force of all arrows directed towards him with that of his own shafts, began to run hither and thither over the field encountering mighty car-warriors.

24. Then those two heroes deprived of their arms and heads, by the arrows of Arjuna, fell down on the earth like mighty trees broken down by the wind.

25. The slaughter of Shrutayusha and Achyutayush caused a surprise like to what men would feel if the ocean be dried up.

26. Then, having slain fifty car-warriors, the followers of those two princes, Pritha's son plunged into the army of the Bharatas, crushing down numerous elephants and warriors (at each step).

27-28. Beholding Shrutayusha slain, O Bharata, the enraged Niyutayush and Dirghayusha, the sons of the former two heroes both foremost of men, assaulted the son of Kunti, afflicted with calamity that had befallen their sires they proceeded, scattering arrows of diverse description.

29. But Arjuna now excited to the highest pitch of fury, with his arrows of depressed knots, sent them instantly to the abode of Death.

30. Then the foremost Kshatriyas of your army were not able to oppose Pritha's son who had been agitating the troops like an elephant agitating a lake over-grown with lotuses.

31. Then thousands of well-trained elephant riders belonging to the divisions of the Angas, excited with rage, O king, surrounded the son of Pandu, with their elephant forces.

32. Commanded by Duryodhana, the easterners, the southerners and other kings hearded by the ruler of the Kalingas surrounded Arjuna with their elephants huge as hills.

33. But with the arrows shot from his Gandiva bow, Arjuna quickly cut-off their heads and arms decked with ornaments, as they were rushing against him.

34. Strewn over with their heads and arms decked with Angadas, the Earth appeared as if covered with golden stones and numerous snakes.

35. Arms severed by means of arrows and heads lying crushed, appeared like birds shot down from the top trees.

36. Pierced with thousands of shafts and covered with profuse blood, elephants looked like mountains during the rainy season, with red-chalk solution streaming down their sides.

37. Others slain by the whetted arrows of Vibhatsu, lay prostrate on the field of battle. Numerous Mlechhas, riding on the backs of elephants, of ugly appearances.

38. Attired in various kinds of garments and, O king, armed with numerous weapons and weltering in blood, appeared beautiful, as they lay on the ground deprived of life by means of various kinds of shafts.

39. Thousands of elephants with their bodies mangled and their riders and those who followed them, having been struck with the arrows of Pritha's son, vomitted blood.

40. Or uttered yells of agony, or fell down or careered wildly in all directions. Numerous other elephants greatly frightened, crushed their own ranks.

41-43. Many other elephants armed with weapons and fierce like snakes of virulent poison, also did the same. Numerous furious Yavanas, Paradas, Shakas, Balhikas and Mlechhas born of the cow (of Vasishtha) possessed of fearful eyes, accomplished in smitting, looking like emissaries of Death, all

versed in the use of illusive powers of the Asuras.

44. Many other Dravatisaras, Daradas, Pundras, thousands in number in bands of hundreds and thousands and together forming a force that was innumerable.

45. Began to pour on the son of Pandu their sharp arrows. Those Mlechhas also versed in all modes of war, began to shower on Arjuna their countless shafts.

46. Dhananjaya also poured his arrows or them in quick succession; and the arrows discharged from the *Gandiva* bow appeared like fights of locusts, as they flew through the air.

47. Having with his arrows created shade of over the troops like to that of the clouds, Dhananjaya slew, by the dint of his weapons, all the Mlechchas, having heads completely shaved or partially shaved of cover with matted hair, filthy in their mode of living and of malicious countenances.

48. Pierced with hundreds of shafts, those rangers of the mountains. Those dwellers of caves, began to fly away from the field of battle out of sheer fear.

49. Ravens, Kankas, birds and wolves, with great delight, then began to drink the blood of the elephants, horses and their Mlechchas riders, as they lay postrate on the field being cut down by the sharp arrows of Pritha's son.

50-54. Arjuna then caused a river to flow on the field of battle, of which (slain) foot-soldiers, car-warriors, horses and elephants formed and embankments; shower of shafts formed the rafts (wherewith to cross it); hair of (slain) combatants formed the moss and the weed floating on the moss and the weed floating on the surface; and blood formed its surging billows; and that river was dreadful and fierce to look at. The fingers cut-off from the arms of warriors constituted its smaller fishes; it was as dreadful as the Destroyer himself at the end of a Yuga; the bodies of (slain) elephants choked its flow and that river of blood proceeded towards the kingdom of Yama. The earth was deluged with the blood flowing from the bodies of slain princes, elephants horses, car-warriors and horsemen.

55. Its uplands and low-lands could not be distinguished, as if Vasava had poured a torrent of rain over it.

56. Six thousand brave warriors and many other Kshatriyas were dispatched by that foremost of Kshatriya Arjuna as to the abode of Death.

57. Thousands of elephants equipped according to rule, being pierced with numerous arrows. Lay prostrate on the field like so many mountains struck down by the thunder bolt. Then Arjuna careered over the field slaying horses, car-warriors and elephants. Like an elephant in rut crushing a forest of reeds.

58. Just as fire helped forwarded by the wind, burns down a forest abounding in trees, creepers, brush-woods, dry fuels and grass, so, that fire viz., the enraged Dhananjaya, the son of Pandu, having arrows for his flames and helped forward by the Krishna-wind, consumed the forest constituted by your troops.

59. Emptying the terraces of the cars, Arjuna over-spread the earth with the corpses of men. In that confused encounter Dhananjaya seemed to dance wielding his bow in his hand.

60. Deluging the ground with blood drawn by means of shafts resembling the thunderbolt itself. Dhananjaya, inflamed with wrath, plunged deep into the ranks of the Bharata troops. When he was thus advancing, Shrutayudha the ruler of the Ambashtha's then opposed him.

61. Thereupon, O sire, when he was thus exerting himself against Arjuna, the latter with sharp arrows furnished with wings made of *Kanka* feathers, speedily cut down his horses.

62. Then with other arrows cutting off his bow, Arjuna began to career over the field. Thereat the ruler of the Ambashthas, with eyes rolling in rage, took up his mace.

63. And assaulted in that battle Pritha's son and also the mighty car-warrior Keshava. Then O Bharata that hero, up-lifting and striking with his mace.

64. Checked the progress of Arjuna's car and with it began to strike Keshava; beholding Keshava struck with the mace, that slayer of hostile heroes.

65-67. Arjuna, O Bharata, excited to the highest pitch of anger, showered over that foremost of car-warriors viz., the ruler of the Ambasthas wielding the mace, numerous shafts furnished with golden wings, like the mass of clouds enshrouding the risen sun. Thereafter with other arrows, Pritha's son splintered into pieces the mace of that illustrious warrior; indeed this feat appeared to be marvellous. Then beholding that mace of his cut down and taking up another heavy one.

68. The ruler of the Ambashthas began to strike Vasudeva's son and Arjuna, incessantly. Thereat Arjuna with a couple of razor-headed arrows cut-off his upraised arms wielding the pole of Indra; and then with another winged shaft he cut off his head. Then that king, O monarch, fell down on the earth creating a loud noise.

69-70. Like a standard raised in honour of Indra falling down, when the ropes tying it to the engine (on which it is posted) are cut-off. Then plunging deep into the division of cars and surrounded by hundreds upon hundreds of elephants and steeds, the son of Pritha looked like the sun covered with thick masses of clouds.

## CHAPTER 94

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The donning of the armour on Duryodhana by Drona

**Sanjaya said**

1. When the son of Kunti, out of a desire for slaying the king of the Sindhus, had penetrated into the Bharata army, after having pierced through the invincible division of Drona and the Bhoja king.

2. When also, O king, the heir of the king of Kambojas, namely prince Sudakshina, also the powerful Shrutayudha, had been slain by Savyasachin.

3. When the divisions of your army had been broken and routed in all directions, your

son seeing his troops shattered speedily proceeded towards Drona.

4. Hastily riding on a single car, he repaired to Drona and addressing him said - "That foremost of men Arjuna has already passed through this mighty army, having crushed it completely.

5. Now decide with the help of your understanding, what should be done next, for bringing about the slaughter of Arjuna, taking into consideration this fearful carnage.

6. Do you so arrange that, that foremost of men may not slay Jayadratha. May good betide you. You are our sole protector.

7. Like a raging fire consuming a heap of dry grass and fuel, this Dhananjaya-fire urged on by the wind of his anger, is consuming the grass and fuel formed by my troops.

8. O afflicter of your foes, being informed that the son of Kunti had passed through the division having pierced through it, the warriors entrusted with the protection of Jayadratha, are being preyed upon by anxiety.

9. O you foremost of those conversant with the kings that Dhananjaya would never be able to escape Drona alive.

10. O you of burning splendour, when Pritha's son has succeeded in penetrating through you division before your very eyes. I consider all my troops to be involved in a great catastrophe, Indeed, I think I have no troops.

11. I know you, O illustrious one, to be attached to the interests of the Pandavas, therefore, O Brahmana. I am losing my sense in the thought what should be done by me next.

12. To the best of my prowess, O Brahmana, I try to behave well with you. I also, exert to the best of my capabilities for satisfying you; still you do not seem to attach any value to all these.

13. O you of prowess infinite, although we are ever devoted to you, you do not wish us well; but you are ever satisfied with the Pandavas who are intent on injuring ourselves.

14. Though you live upon our bread, yet you are instrumental in injuring us. I knew not before that, you are but a razor soaked in honey.

15. If you had not given me assurances of vanquishing the Pandavas, I would never have prevented the ruler of the Sindhus from returning to his own dominions.

16. Fool that I am, hoping to obtain protection from you, I gave assurances of safety to the king of the Sindhus; now I see that I have virtually offered him as a victim to Death.

17. It possible for a man to escape even when he goes inside the jaws of Death, but there is not the slightest chance of escape for Jayadratha, when he once comes within the reach of Partha in battle.

18. O you owning crimson steeds, do you so manage that the ruler of the Sindhus may yet be saved. Be not angry with me for all these raving of mine afflicted as I am with grief. Oh! save, save the ruler of the Sindhus!

#### Drona said

19. I do not take your words in ill-part; you are to me like Ashvatthaman himself, I tell you this for sooth. O ruler of men, do you now act up to my advices.

20. Krishna is the best of all drivers of chariots and his horses are the fleetest and the best of the species. Creating a small breath only, Dhananjaya can pass very quickly through it.

21. Can you not see the innumerable arrows shot by the diadem-decked Arjuna with his *Gandiva* bow, are falling full two miles behind his car as he is advancing?

22. Grown up in years, I cannot indeed proceed so hastily. Moreover, there! do you see the whole army of the Parthas assailing our van.

23. Yudhishthira also should be captured by myself, before the eyes of all bowmen. Even this, O mighty armed one, has been the vow undertaken by me amidst all Kshatriya warriors.

24. Abandoned by Dhananjaya, O king, he now stands at the head of his divisions. For these reasons I shall not fight with Phalguna, leaving the van of our array uncared for.

25. Duly supported, do you go yourself and fight with your unsupported foe who is equal to you in nobility of birth and in the achievement

of feasts. Be not afraid! You are the lord of this world.

26. You are a sovereign, a hero, possessed of fame and skilful in defeating (your opponents). O valorous subjugator of hostile fortresses, hie yourself, therefore to that part of the field where Dhananjaya is.

**Duryodhana said**

27. O preceptor, how is it possible for me to hold in check that Dhananjaya who has passed even yourself, the foremost of all wielders of weapons?

28. It may be possible for me to conquer in battle Purandara armed with his thunder-bolt, but it is not possible for me to conquer Arjuna that subjugator of hostile towns.

29. He by whom the son of Hridika, the ruler of the Bhojas and yourself equal to a god, have all been vanquished with the showers of his weapons, he by whom Shrutayusha has been slain.

30. He by whom Sudakshina and king Shrutayusha have been slain, as also Shrutayusha and Achytayusha and myriads of Mlechchas also have been slain.

31. How can I encounter that invincible son of Pandu, accomplished the use of all kinds of weapons and resembling the all-destroying fire itself.

32. How it is that you today think me competent to fight with him? I am entirely dependent on you and am your slave; Oh! save my honour!

**Drona said**

33. O foremost descendant of the Kuru race, you speak all that is true. Really Dhananjaya is incapable of suffering defeat. But I myself will so act by which you will be able to bear him.

34. Let all wielders of bow inhabiting this world, behold today the marvellous fact, of the son of Kunti being held in check by you, even before Vasudeva himself.

35. This golden coat of mail of yours, O king, I shall so tie on you that all weapons

discharged by human hands will not be able to pierce you in battle.

36. Even if the three worlds, with the Asuras, the celestials, the Yakshas, the Reptiles and the Rakshasas, together with all human beings, fight with today, still you need entertain no fear.

37. Neither Krishna, nor the son of Kunti, nor any other wielder of weapons, will be able to pierce your armour in battle with his arrows.

38. So, cased in this golden armour, do you hastily advance upon the wrathful Arjuna, yourself; he shall not be able to beat you in battle today.

**Sanjaya said**

39. Having thus spoken, Drona quickly rinsed his mouth with water and then bound that lustrous armour on Duryodhana, having duly reiterated most marvellous incantations.

40. In that dreadful battle, that foremost of persons conversant with the knowledge of the Vedas, was desirous of bestowing victory on your son and of exciting the wonder of the worlds with his excellent learning.

**Drona said**

41. May all the Vedas, the Brahmanas and Brahman himself and the Reptiles and other beings of superior order bless you, O Bharata!

42. May Yayati, Nahusha, Dhundhumara and Bhagiratha and other royal sage bless you in all acts!

43. May you obtain blessing from creatures having one leg only and creatures having many also! May you also get blessings from those who have no legs at all!

44. May Svaha and Svadha and Sachi all bless you always! O sinless one, may Lakshmi and Arundhati also pronounce benedictions on you!

45. May Asita, Devala, Vishvamitra, Angiras, Vasistha and Kashyapa, O monarch, bless you!

46. May Dhatri and Vidhatri, the quarters of heaven and their regents and the six-headed Kartikeya do all that is beneficial you!

47. May the illustrious Vivasvat bless you today! May the four elephants guarding the cardinal points, the earth, the firmament, the planets.

48. And he who is underneath this earth and O king who ever upholds her, viz., Shesha, that foremost of snakes-may all these do what is beneficial to you!

49. O Son of Gandhari, in days gone by, the Asura named Vritra, exerting his might in battle, had defeated the foremost of celestials in battle.

50. All those dwellers of heaven then with Indra at their head, destitute of their head, destitute of their energy and prowess, sought refuge with Brahman being highly afraid of the mighty Asura Vritra.

#### The celestials said

51. O foremost of the celestials, O best of the gods, be you the protector of the gods now, crushed as they are by the Asura Vritra. Save us from this our great fear.

#### Drona continued

52. Thereupon Brahman addressing Vishnu standing by his side, as also the other foremost of celestials headed by Indra, spoke to them that were are depressed, these words, all perfectly true.

53. The celestials with Indra at their head, as also the regenerate order are ever deserving of my protection. But the energy of Tvashtri from which Vritra has been created is indeed irrepressible.

54. In days gone by, observing ascetic austerities for millions of years, Tvashtri created, O Gods, Vritra, having obtained permission thereto from Mahadeva.

55. Hence that mighty energy of ours has succeeded in vanquishing you through the grace of that god. Without repairing to the place where Sankara stays, you cannot expect to obtain a sight of him.

56. After you have seen that god, you will be able to conquer Vritra. Therefore, his yourselves to the Mandara mountain; there dwells that origin of ascetic austerities, that destroyer of Daksha's sacrifice.

57. That wielder of the Pinaka, that lord of all creatures, that slayer of the Asura that Bhaganetra. Thereupon all those celestials accompanied by Brahma, proceeded to the Mandara mountain.

58. And there, beheld that heap of energy, who resembled in radiance a million of suns. (Seeing the gods come) Mahadeva said, "All hail O god! speak what am I to do for you!"

59. A sight of my self cannot be barren. So let the fruition of your desires proceed from this!" Thus spoken to, all those denizens of heaven replied to him saying-

60. All our energy has been robbed by Vritra. Be you the protector of us the dwellers of heaven. O God, look upon our bodies mangled and mutilated with the wounds inflicted by the Asura. We seek protection from you; O God of gods, be you our refuge.

#### Sharva said

61. O Gods, it is well-known to all of you, how this Asura, surcharged with strength, dreadful and incapable of being held in check by persons devoid of ascetic merit, came into being, created by the energy of Tvashtri.

62. Surely it is my duty to protect the denizens of heaven. O Shakra, take this radiant coat of mail off my body; and O lord of the gods, don it, reiterating these Mantras.

63. O sovereign gods! Tie this to your body by reciting hymn through mental japa as told by men. Then you will be able enough to kill Vritra, the monster king and enemy to the gods.

#### Drona continued

64. Having thus spoken, that giver of boons, gave that armour and the necessary *Mantras* to Indra. Clad in that coat of mail Indra then assaulted the army of Vritra.

65. Although then in that dreadful battle myriads of weapons of diverse description were hurled at him, yet they could not slacken or pierce through the joints, of that armour.

66. Then the lord of the celestials slew Vritra in battle and gave afterwards that armour of which the joints were composed of *Mantras*, unto Angiras.

67. Angiras again gave those *Mantras* to Brihaspati his son conversant with all *Mantras*. Brihaspati next imparted them to the intelligent Agniveshya.

68. Agniveshya gave them to me; and now with the help of those *Mantras* I have bound up this armour on you, O foremost of the kings, in order to guard your body from all weapon-wounds.

#### Sanjaya said

69. Having thus spoken, Drona that foremost of all preceptors, once more addressed your son endued with great effulgence, thus—

70. “O ruler of men, I don this armour on your body joining its parts by means of Brahma-threads. Even thus did Brahman springing from the golden lotus, put it on Vishnu.

71. I do it on you, even in the same manner in which Brahman himself had put this armour of celestial make on Indra, during the battle caused by the abduction of Taraka.”

72. Thus having tied that armour on Duryodhana with due *Mantras*, the regenerate Drona dispatched the king to the mighty encounter.

73. Then the mighty-armed king, accoutered by the illustrious preceptor, supported by a thousand car-warriors of the Trigartta country, all accomplished in smiting down.

74. As also by a thousand infuriate elephants endued with great might and a hundred thousand horses and numerous other mighty-car-warriors.

75. Advanced against the chariot of Arjuna. He then proceeded accompanied by the sounds of various kinds of musical instruments, even like the son of Virochana (in the days of yore).

76. Thereupon O Bharata, a loud uproar was created by your troops as they beheld the illustrious Kuru king advance like the fathomless deep itself.

## CHAPTER 95

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The fierce fight

#### Sanjaya said

1. When that foremost of men viz., king Duryodhana had started from behind, following Pritha's son and him of the Vrishni race, both of whom, O monarch, had penetrated into the Kaurava ranks.

2. The Pandavas supported by the Somakas furiously assaulted Drona, creating a loud din. Thereupon a fearful battle commenced between them and Drona's troops.

3. The battle then that commenced between the Kurus and the Pandavas at the van of their array was terrible, awful and capable of making the hair to stand erect; and it was wonderful to the extreme.

4. O king, that battle that raged when the sun shone on the meridian, was such that we had neither seen nor heard of its like, ever before.

5. The troops of the sons of Pritha commanded by Dhristadyumna, all accomplished in smiting and arranged in proper order, covered the division of Drona with arrowy showers.

6. We also placing that foremost of all wielders of bow namely Drona, at our head, began to pour our showers of arrows on the Parthas headed by the son of Prishata.

7. The vanguards of the two hosts, teeming with cars and appearing charming, then looked like two masses of clouds in the summer sky, rushing towards each other, being driven by opposite winds.

8. Clashing against each other, the two armies put forth their exertions, like the rivers Ganga and Yamuna swelling with water during the rain season.

9-10. Having various kinds of weapons for the wind that preceeded them, abounding in elephants, horses and chariots, surcharged with

the lightning formed by the flashing of maces wielded by warriors, the fierce and thick mass of cloud constituted by the army of the Kurus. Driven forward by the tempest constituted by Drona and incessantly pouring its arrowy showers, tried to extinguish the raging fire constituted by the Pandavas.

11. Then that foremost of regenerate heroes, namely Drona, agitated the Pandava hosts like a raging tempest of the summer, agitating the mighty main.

12. They also, putting forth all their endeavours, awaited Drona himself, like a strong current of water striking against an embankment with a view of carry it away.

13. Then like unto a mountain checking the progress of torrents of water, in that battle, Drona held in check the enraged Pandavas, Panchalas and Kekayas.

14. Other kings also endued with great mighty and heroism began to oppose the Panchalas, having surrounded them on all sides.

15. Thereafter in that battle, that foremost of men, viz., Prishata's son, supported by the Pandavas, repeatedly assailed Drona desirous of breaking through his division.

16. Indeed, as Drona poured his arrowy showers on the son of Prishata, so also, did this latter pour his own on the son of Bharadvaja.

17. Then the Dhrishtadyumna-cloud having rapiers and swords for the winds that preceded it, well-furnished with darts, lances and scimitar, having the bowstring for its flashes of lightning and the twang of the bow for its rumbling.

18. Poured, on all directions, torrents of weapons, for its showers of stones, slaying large bodies of car-warriors, best steed etc.; he seemed to deluge the earth with currents of blood, created by means of his weapon.

19. Then with his arrows Prishata's son turned Drona away from all those breaches in the ranks of the car-warriors of the Pandavas, through which the latter tried to pass, striking the men there with his arrows.

20. Then O Bharata, the division of Drona, although he exerted to the best of his might, became divided in three parts, having encountered Dhrishtadyumna in battle.

21. One of these divisions retraced their steps towards Kritavarman the ruler of the Bhojas, the other towards Jalasandha and the other slaughtered by the Pandavas fell back upon Drona himself.

22. Then, as many times did that foremost of car-warriors, Drona rally his troops, so many times did that mighty car-warrior Dhrishtadyumna break and route them.

23. Then like herds of cattle destitute of herdsmen slain by the beasts of prey, the troops of the Kurus divided in three divisions, began to be slaughtered by the Pandavas and the Srinjayas.

24. People then thought that in that terrible battle Death himself devoured up warriors stupefied by the mighty Dhrishtadyumna.

25. Just as the dominions of a wicked monarch are devastated by famine, pestilence and marauders, so were your own troops slaughtered and destroyed by the Pandavas.

26. Our eyes were then dazzled and blinded by the weapons and armours on which the sun's rays were reflected, as also by the dust raised by the troops.

27. Then when his troops had been divided in three bodies and when they were being slaughtered by the Pandavas, Drona inflamed with fury, began to consume the Panchalas with his arrows.

28. Then as Drona, crushed and slew the hostile host with his arrows, his appearance looked like that of the blazing fire that appears in the time of the universal Dissolution.

29. That mighty car-warrior, O king, then in that battle, began to pierce car-warriors, elephants and steeds and foot-soldiers each with a single arrow only.

30. There was none, O Bharata, in the host of the Pandavas who could bear the arrows in that battle, shot, O lord, from the bow of Drona.

31. Scorched by the rays of the sun and felled by the arrows of Drona, the army of the



Pandavas, O Bharata, began to reel about on the field.

32. So also your troops afflicted by the arrows of Parsata, appeared to blaze up at every place, like a dry forest on fire.

33. When the troops were thus being slaughtered by the arrows of Drona and Prisati's son, all warriors, heedless of their lives, fought on putting forth all their best energies.

34. O foremost of the Bharatas, then there was none among your or the enemy's host, who, O mighty monarch, forsook the fight out of fear.

35. His brothers, Vivinshati, Chitrasena and the mighty car-warrior Vikarna, opposed Kunti's son Bhimasena in the battle.

36. The two princes from Avanti, viz., Vinda and Anuvinda and the highly puissant Kshemadhurti were the followers of your three sons.

37. That mighty car-warrior, the king of the Balhikas, endued with strength and nobility of birth, assisted by his troops and ministers, began to hold in check the sons of Draupadi.

38. Shaivya, the king of the Govasanas supported by a thousand excellent warriors, faced the son of the Kashi king and began to oppose that valorous prince.

39. King Shalya the ruler of the Madras began to resist king *Ajatsatru* Yudhishtira that son of Kunti, who resembled a blazing fire.

40. The vindictive Dushasana inflamed with rage and inspired with courage and heading his own troops, advanced upon that foremost of car-warriors viz. Satyaki.

41. Myself cased in mail, furnished with arms and supported by my troops, numbering four hundred picked bowmen strong, resisted Chekitana himself.

42. Shakuni accompanied by seven hundred Gandhara warriors armed with lances darts and bows, began to oppose the son of Madri.

43. The two princes Vinda and Anuvinda, both fierce bowmen, for the sake of their friend Duryodhana, rushed upon Virata the ruler of the Matsyas, heedless of their lives and holding their weapons over head.

44. Exerting his best, Balhika resisted the invincible and puissant Sikhandin the son of Yajnasena, capable resisting all foes.

45. The prince of Avanti supported by the Sauviras and the ruthless Prabhadrakas opposed Dhristadyumna the Panchala prince whose very appearance reflected wrath.

46. Alayudha quickly rushed upon that various Rakshasa Ghatotkacha of fierce deeds who was proceeding to battle with fury.

47. The mighty car-warrior Kuntibhoja, supported by large division of troops resisted that wrathful Alambusha that best of the Rakshasas.

48. Thus in that battle thousands of single combats were fought, O Bharata; and then the ruler of the Sindhus was stationed behind all the troops and he was there protected by Kripa and other such car-warriors and bowmen.

49. O King, then the son of Drona on the right and the son of Suta on the left, there, two great warriors were engaged in protecting the car-wheels of the ruler of the Sindhus.

50. A number of other warriors headed by Somadattas' son, viz., Kripa, Vrishasena, Shala and the invincible Shalya were engaged in protecting his rear.

51. Thus many warriors accomplished in the art of fighting and conversant with the rules of policy, having arranged for the safety of the Sindhu king, went on fighting with the Pandavas.

## CHAPTER 96

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The fierce fight

Sanjaya said

1. Hear from me, O king, as I relate to you, the description of the wonderful fight that then took place between the Kuru and the Pandavas.

2. Then the Parthas desirous of breaking through the Kuru array fought vigorously with Bharadvaja's son Drona, having encountered him at the head of his array.

3. Drona also, desirous of winning great fame, fought on with the Parthas, protecting his array and helped, in the encounter, by his own troops.

4. Then the two Avanti princes Vinda and Anuvinda, those well-wishers of your son, inflamed with rage, pierced Virata with ten sharp arrows.

5. Virata also, O mighty monarch, encountering in battle these two puissant heroes together with their followers, fought on cheerfully.

6. A cruel and sanguinary combat raged between them, like that between a lion and a pair of elephants in rut, in a forest.

7. The highly powerful son of Yajnasena pierced with force, Balhika, with dreadful and sharp arrows capable of penetrating to the very vitals and the bones.

8. Thereupon Balhika also inflamed with rage, deeply struck Yajnasena's son with nine shafts of depressed knot, whetted on stone and furnished with golden wings.

9. Then that battle raged furiously in which arrows, lances and darts were freely used and that inspired terror into the hearts of the cowards and delight into those of the heroes.

10. Then with the arrows discharged by them, the welkin and the quarters became completely shrouded and nothing could be distinguished.

11. Shaivya the ruler of the Govasanas, with his troops, fought with that mighty car-warrior the son of Kasyapa, even as an elephant fights with its rival.

12. Then the king of the Balhikas excited with wrath, fought with the mighty car-warriors, the sons of Draupadi; and then he shone like the soul fighting with five senses.

13. Those five princes, O foremost of embodied beings, fought with his discharging their numerous arrows, like the sense-objects ever fighting with the body.

14. Your son Dushasana struck in that battle Satyaki of the Vrishni race with nine sharp shafts of depressed knots;

15. Thereupon Satyaki of invincible prowess, being thus deeply pierced by that mighty and fierce bowman, was soon partially deprived of his senses.

16. Then regaining his composure, he of the Vrishni race, pierced that mighty car-warrior viz., your son, with ten shafts furnished with wings of the *Kanka* feathers.

17. Then those heroes piercing each other deeply and each afflicted with the shafts of the other, shone, O king, like two blossoming *Kinshuka* trees.

18. Afflicting with the arrows of Kuntibhoja, Alambusha inflamed with wrath, appeared beautiful like a *Kinshuka* tree rich with the wealth of its flowers.

19. Then that Rakshasa having pierced Kuntibhoja, with numerous swift, coursing arrows, uttered a terrible war-cry, standing in the van of your troops.

20. Then all the troops beheld these heroes each fighting with the other, appear like Shakra and Jambha fighting in the days of yore.

21. The twin sons of Madri, Nakula and Sahadeva, inflamed with rage, O Bharata, mangled Shakuni with their shafts, in as much as the latter was their implacable enemy.

22. O mighty monarch, the carnage that then spread there was dreadful. Kindled by you, fanned into flames by Karna.

23. And kept up by your sons, the fire of wrath of the Pandavas, O king, was then in full blaze in order to consume the whole world.

24. Shakuni was then compelled to turn his face away from the field, by the arrows shot by the sons of Pandu; and unable to fight any longer, he knew not what to do.

25. Seeing him turn away from the field, those two mighty car-warriors, the sons of Madri, again poured on him their arrowy showers, like two clouds drenching a mighty hill with showers of rain.

26. The son of Subala, struck with numerous arrows of close knots, flew towards the division of Drona, being borne away by fleetest steeds.

27. Then with medium impetuosity that hero, Ghatotkacha rushed upon the Rakshasa Alayudha, in that battle.

28. The battle between them was very wonderful, like that which took place between Rama and Ravana in the days of yore.

29. King Yudhishtira having at first pierced the king of the Madras with five hundred arrows, again pierced him with seven.

30. O king, the battle that was then fought between them, was indeed marvellous and it resembled that fought between Shambara and the chief of the immortals in the days of yore.

31. Your son Vikarna, Vivinshati and Chitrasena, surrounded by their divisions, fought on with Bhimasena.

## CHAPTER 97

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The fierce fight

##### 1. Sanjaya said

1. Thus when that horripilating battle was progressing on, the Pandavas rushed against the Kauravas divided into three bodies.

2. Bhimasena rushed against the mighty armed Jalasandha and king Yudhishtira supported by his divisions assailed Kritavarman in battle.

3. Appearing beautiful like the sun and scattering showers of arrows, Dhrishtadyumna, O mighty monarch, rushed upon Drona in that battle.

4. Then raged the encounter between all the enraged bowmen of the Kurus and the Pandavas, all eager for encountering each other in fight.

5. During the progress of that dreadful carnage when the warriors were undauntedly fighting with one another in single combats.

6. The mighty Drona fought on with the powerful prince of the Panchalas and the myriads of shafts that he then discharged filled everybody with great wonder.

7. Like a forest of lotuses lying torn hither and hither, the heads of princes were being

scattered all over the field by Drona and the prince of the Panchalas.

8. In every division of heroic warriors, garments ornaments standards, armours and weapons were seen scattered in all directions.

9. Golden armours bespattered with blood, looked like masses of clouds illumined with flashes of lightning.

10. Other mighty car-warriors, stretching their bows full six cubits long, felled with their winged shafts numerous elephants, steeds and men.

11. In that battle between illustrious combatants, many swords, bucklers, bows, heads and armours of heroes, were seen lying scattered all over the field.

12. In that extremely terrible encounter, O mighty monarch, thousands of headless trunks were seen to rise up from the ground.

13. Vultures and *Kankas* and crows and jackals and numerous other flesh-eating animals, were seen there, O sire.

14. Eating flesh, drinking blood, dragging the hair and pecking the marrow.

15. And dragging out the bodies and limbs and heads, O king, of slain men, steeds, elephants.

16. Accomplished in the use of weapons, skilled in fighting and firmly resolved to fight, warriors exerted themselves vigorously in the battle, desirous of winning fame only.

17. The soldiers then roamed over the field, performing various evolutionary movements performed by swords-men. With darts, lances, javelins, tridents, *tomaras* and battle axes.

18. With maces, bludgeons and many other kinds of weapons as also with their bare arms, men who careered in that arena, inflamed with rage, fell to slay one another.

19. Car-warriors became engaged with car-warriors, cavalry soldiers with cavalry-soldiers, elephants with other excellent elephants and infantry with infantry.

20. Many infuriate elephants as if perfectly mad, uttered loud shrieks and killed one another, after the manner they do so in arenas of sport.

21. O ruler of men, as that battle, in which none paid any regard to any one, raged, Dhrishtadyumna caused his own horses to be entangled with those of Drona.

22. Those pegion-white and crimson steeds, endued with the fleetness of the wind, appeared extremely beautiful, being mingled together in that battle.

23. The horses, O king, then shone like clouds surcharged with lightning. Then Dhrishtadyumna beholding Drona approach him.

24. Grasped his sword and mace and that hero, O Bharata, left aside his bow. Then that slayer of hostile heroes viz., Prishatas son, desirous of achieving a difficult feat.

25. Leap over the shafts of Drona's car and entered into it. He then stood sometimes on the yoke and sometimes on its joints.

26. And sometimes beside the horses. His troops then applauded him highly. When he, armed with the sword, was thus moving quickly on the backs of those crimson steeds.

27. Drona could find no opportunity for striking him; that indeed seemed extremely marvellous. Indeed like the swoop of a hawk on a piece of meat in a forest.

28-29. Looked that sally of Dhrishtadyumna from his own chariot, upon Drona, for his slaughter. Thereafter with a hundred shafts Drona cut-off the shield of Drupada's son, decked with hundred moons and then with another ten he cut-off his sword.

30. Thereafter that mighty warrior slew the latter's steeds with sixty-four shafts. Then with a couple of broad-head shafts, he cut-off his enemy's standards and umbrella and his two Parshani charioteers.

31. Having at first drawn the bow-string back to the very ears, like Indra hurling the thunder-bolt.

32. Then again with great lightness of hands, he sped at Dhrishtadyumna an arrow capable of destroying his life, but soon Satyaki, with fourteen arrows of great sharpness, cut-off that fatal shaft shot by Drona.

33. Thus, O sire, Satyaki rescued Dhrishtadyumna, who had been seized by that foremost of the preceptor, that best of men, like a deer seized by a lion.

34. That foremost descendant of Sini then rescued the prince of the Panchalas from Drona. Beholding Satyaki save the Panchala prince in that battle. Drona quickly sped at him twenty-six arrows.

35. Thereupon the grandson of Sini, pierced, with twenty-six arrows of great sharpness, Drona who seemed to swallow up the Srinjayas, on the centre of his breast.

36. Then, upon the Satvata hero Satyaki advancing upon Drona, all the Panchala car-warriors, desirous of victory, extricated Dhrishtadyumna from that encounter.

## CHAPTER 98

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The battle between Drona and Satyaki

##### Dhritarashtra said

1. After that arrows shot by Drona had been severed and Dhrishtadyumna rescued by Yuyudhana that foremost of the Vrishnis, O Sanjaya.

2. What did the fierce Bowman Drona, that foremost of all wielders of weapons, inflamed with wrath, do to the grandson of Sini that foremost of men?

##### Sanjaya said

3-5. Then Drona, like a huge snake having wrath for his poison, the stretched bow for his wide open mouth, sharp *Narachas* for his teeth, whetted arrows for his fangs, with woves coppery in rage and breathing like a furnace—that undaunted warrior, borne by his fleet steeds of crimson hue that appeared to soar high into the heavens or get at the summit of the highest of mountains, advanced against Yuyudhana, scattering right and left his arrows furnished with golden wings.

6-7. Beholding the irresistible Drona - cloud having showers of arrows for its watery

downpour, the rattle of Chariot-wheels for its rumbling noise, the stretched bow for its volume, numerous *Narachas* for its flashes of lightning, darts and scimitars for its thunder, wrath for the violent wind going before it and steeds for the hurricane driving it forward.

8. Make towards himself, that subjugator of hostile towns, the invincible and heroic grandson of Sini, smilingly addressing his charioteer said :-

9. Against this heroic Brahmana fallen off from all his duties, who is the refuge of the Dhritarashtras and the despeller of the sorrow and anxiety of their king.

10. Who is also he preceptor of all the princes and is ever boastful of his prowess, do rush cheerfully and quickly, being borne by steeds urged to the top of their speed?

11. Thereupon those best of steeds of argentine hue and of the fleetness of the wind, belonging to that descendant of Madhus race, flew in all haste, towards Drona in that battle.

12. Then those two afflictors of foes Drona and Yuyudhana began to fight with each other, striking each other with many a thousand shafts.

13. Those two foremost of men enshrouded the-welkin in a net-work of arrows and those two heroes filled the ten points of the compass with their arrowy discharges.

14. Like two clouds at the expiration of summer pouring their contents on the Earth, they poured their showers of arrows on each other; the sun did not shine then, nor did the wind bow.

15. In consequence of these showers of arrows filling the firmament, in impenetrable and deep gloom was created there that became unbearable to the other warriors.

16. When the arrows of those two foremost of those accomplished in the use of weapons, viz., Drona and Shini's grandson, had covered the world with that gloom. None could find any interval in the shooting of arrows by those two best of warriors.

17. The sound produced by the clashing of the showers of arrows shot by them, was heard

there to resemble the rumble of the thunderbolt hurled by Indra himself.

18. The appearances of heroic warriors pierced with *Narachas* looked, O Bharata, like those of snakes of virulent poison, bit by other snakes.

19. The sound produced by the palm-strokes and twanging bows of those two accomplished warriors, was heard there. To resemble the sound that is produced by the incessant striking of the bolt of heaven on mountain summits.

20. The chariots of both those heroes, O king and their horses and charioteers, being pierced with shafts of golden wings, became beautiful to look at.

21. O ruler of men, of effulgent and straight-going *Narachas*, the down-pour was terrible and it resembled a shower of snakes of virulent poison, that have just cast off their slough.

22. The umbrellas of both those warriors were felled and their standards were also cut down. Both of them were bespattered with blood and both were desirous of obtaining victory.

23. With bodies steeped in blood and looking like two elephants in rut. They began to pierce each other with arrows capable of destroying life.

24. The din of battle caused by war-cries, shouts, roars and the sound of drums and the blare of conchs ceased, O mighty monarch, for none then uttered anything.

25. The troops became silent and warriors withdrew from the fight, filled with curiosity, men began to behold that single combat between those two heroes.

26. Car-warriors, elephant-drivers, horsemen and foot-soldiers surrounding those two foremost of men, began to witness that combat with fixed eyes.

27. The elephant-division as also the horse division stood still, so also the car-divisions stood still, arranging themselves in battle array.

28-31. Adorned with diverse kinds of pearls and corals, decked with jewels and gold adorned with standards and ornaments, with

armour made of gold, with flags and pennons, with the precious caparisons of elephants, with fine blankets, with effulgent and whetted weapons, with *Chamaras* decked with gold and silver, with warriors on the backs and necks of horse and elephants with garlands round the frontal globes of elephants and with circlets round their tusks, O Bharata, the Kuru and the Pandava troops then looked like masses of clouds at the close of the summer seasons, decked with rows of cranes and numerous fireflies underneath them and beautified with rainbows and flashes of lightning.

32. O king, Our troops, as also those belonging to Yudhishtira, beheld that combat between Yuyudhana and the illustrious Drona.

33. Coming there on their sky-ranging cars, the gods headed by Brahma and Soma and hosts of Siddhas and Charanas and Vidyadharas and mighty reptiles, all saw that combat.

34. The backward and forward movements and the modes of fighting, O king, of those two foremost of heroes, filled all of them with wonder.

35. Displaying great lightness of hands, those two mighty heroes, namely Drona and Satyaki, pierced each other with each other's arrows.

36. Thereafter in that battle he of the Dasharha race cut-off the arrows shot by Drona with his strong and winged shafts; as also the bow of that highly effulgent warrior.

37-38. But in a wink's time, the son of Bharadvaja fixed the string on another bow; but that also Satyaki cut-off quickly. But again Drona stood ready with a bow in hand. As often however Drona strung his bow so often did Satyaki cut it off and this he did for full sixty-three times.

39. Satyaki with his formidable bow cut-off one hundred bows of Acharya. However, it was strange to guess the difference between two functions i.e. when Acharya shoot the arrow and when Satyaki cut-off it.

40. Thereupon in that battle, Drona beholding that superhuman feat thought in his mind thus.

41-42. Achieved by Yuyudhana, O king—'This force of weapon that I see in this foremost of the Satvata race is possible only in Rama, in Kartavirya, in Dhananjaya and in Bhishma'. So, Drona praised the prowess of that hero in his mind.

43. Then that foremost of the regenerate ones, that best of all wielders of weapons, namely Drona, as also the celestials with Indra himself at their head, were highly gratified at seeing the lightness of hands displayed by Satyaki, which resembled that of Vasava himself.

44. O ruler of men neither the gods nor the Gandharvas ever before beheld the like of that lightness of hands now displayed by the swiftly-moving Yuyudhana. Although they, the Siddhas and the Charanas, were cognisant of the feats of which Drona was capable.

45. Then taking up another bow, Drona that crusher of Kshatriyas that foremost of those acquainted with the use of weapons, O Bharata, placed some weapons on its string.

46. But repulsing Drona's weapons with the illusion of his own weapons, Satyaki pierced Drona with exceedingly sharp arrows; that indeed appeared marvellous.

47. Beholding that superhuman feat achieved by him in battle-feat which was incapable of being achieved by others and which displayed great tact, those amongst your warriors who were judges of skill, highly praised it.

48. Whatsoever weapon Drona discharged, Satyaki also discharged the same. Beholding this, scorcher of foes namely the preceptor fought with Satyaki diffidently.

49. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, that one who had reached the end of all military sciences, being inflamed with wrath invoked into existence a celestial weapon for slaughtering Yuyudhana.

50. Beholding that dreadful and fiery dart capable of slaying the foe and of celestial make, that fierce bowman Satyaki invoked into existence the *Varuna* weapon.

51. Beholding them both using celestial weapons, the troops uttered loud cries of *Alas* and *Oh*; then the denizens of the air ceased to range through the sky.

52. When the *Varuna* and *Agranya* weapons were placed on their bow strings just at that moment, the lustrous orb of day went below the horizon.

53. Thereupon, king Yudhishtira and Bhimasena and the son of Pandu, (Arjuna) and Nakula and Sahadeva, rushed to the rescue of Satyaki.

54. Other warriors headed by Dhristadyumna and accompanied by Virata and his divisions so also the Matsyas and Shalvas quickly advanced upon Drona.

55. Thousands of princes, on the other hand, headed by Dushasana proceeded to help Drona who had been thoroughly encompassed by the foe.

56. Thereat, O king, the fight between your warriors and those of the Pandava, commenced anew. Then the earth became enveloped in a cloud of dust and in a net-work of arrows.

57. Everything being covered, nothing could any longer be distinguished. Thus when the troops were overwhelmed with dust, the battle raged in utter disregard of all rules of combat.

## CHAPTER 99

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The slaughter of Vinda and Anuvinda

Sanjaya said

1. When the sun had turned in its downward course towards the summit of the Western hills, when the earth was scattered over the dust and when the effulgence of the solar disc had become lessened.

2. And when some of the soldiers were standing aloof, some fighting on, some returning to the charge and some winning victory, the day gradually began to wane.

3. Thus when the troops inflamed with the hopes of victory were fighting together, Arjuna

and Vasudeva proceeded towards the spot where the ruler of the Sindhus were.

4. Vibhatsu the son of Kunti, with his sharp shafts went on creating breaches wide enough for his chariot to pass through; and through these breaches, the son of Vasudeva guided the chariot.

5. Wherever the car of the illustrious son of Pandu proceeded, thither O ruler of men your troops began to give way.

6. Then he of the Dasharha race endued with great might, displayed his superior skill in driving the car, in as much he performed, with the car, numerous kinds of circular motions.

7-8. Then, arrows having their names engraved on them, well-tempered, of the effulgence of the fire of dissolution, tied round with cat-guts, of polished joints, thick, far-reaching, made either of stiff bamboo or of iron, capable of taking the life out of the enemies, drank in that battle the life blood of numerous warriors, together with the birds of prey assembled on the field.

9. The arrows which Arjuna discharged standing on his car, fell two miles ahead and pierced and mangled the foe, just when that car came up to the spot.

10. Borne by those yoke-bearing steeds endued with the fleetness of Garuda or the wind, Hrishikeshas, advanced with such quickness that caused the whole universe to be filled with amazement.

11. O ruler of men, even the chariot of the sun himself or of Indra or of Rudra or of Vaishravana, can never proceed so quickly.

12. Indeed, no one else's chariot had before moved with such quickness in battle as Arjuna's chariot then moving with the fleetness of a glance of the mind.

13. Then having taken the chariot to the thick of the fight, that slayer of hostile heroes, Keshava, O Bharata, quickly drove the steeds of it into the ranks of the soldiers.

14. Having penetrated into the rear of the car-division, these excellent steeds drew the car of Arjuna with great difficulty, suffering as they did from hunger, thirst and fatigue.

15. They were also mangled with numerous weapons by many foremost of combatants. Then they began to move in various wonderful circular motions.

16. Passing over many slain steeds elephants and many men and also over broken cars, like a group of locusts.

17. During this opportunity, O king, the two heroic brothers, the princes of Avanti supported by their troops, rushed upon the son of Pandu whose steeds were fatigued and tired.

18. Filled with delight they pierced Arjuna with sixty-four, Janardana with seventy and the horses with a hundred shafts.

19. Then the enraged Arjuna knowing the vital parts of the body, pierced them both, O king, with nine arrows of depressed knots, all capable of penetrating to the very vitals.

20. Thereat inflamed with rage, those two warriors covered Vibhatsu and Keshava with their arrowy downpour and uttered loud war-cries.

21. Then that hero of white steeds with a pair of broad-headed shafts, quickly cut-off in that battle the two wonderful bows of those princes, as also their standards of golden effulgence.

22. Thereupon, O king, taking another two bows and excited to the highest pitch of fury, they began to afflict sorely the son of Pandu, with their arrows.

23. Then again, that son of Pandu Dhananjaya, inflamed with rage, quickly cut-off their bows with another pair of arrows.

24. Then with other shafts, furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone, he quickly slew their steeds, charioteers, *Parshni*-drivers and followers.

25. Thereafter with a razor-headed arrow, he cut the head of the elder of the two brothers, off his trunk; thus slain, the latter fell down on the Earth like a tree broken down by the wind.

26. The highly puissant Anuvinda, beholding Vinda thus slain, left the car of which the steeds were slain; and that mighty hero, taking up a mace.

27. Rushed towards Arjuna's car for avenging the death of his brother. Then that mighty car-warrior, that foremost of all car-warriors armed with his mace, appeared to dance on the field.

28. Inflamed with rage then Anuvinda struck with that mace of his, the slayer of Madhu on the forehead. But he could not make him tremble who remained immovable like the Mainaka mountain.

29. Of him, with six shafts, Arjuna cut-off the neck, the two legs, his arms and his head; and thus cut to pieces, he fell down like fragments of rocks.

30. Then, O king, beholding those two heroes slain, their followers inflamed with rage, rushed against Arjuna, discharging arrows by thousands.

31. Quickly dispatching them with his arrows, O foremost of the Bharata, Arjuna, then appeared beautiful like the fire consuming the forest at the expiration of winter.

32. Then Dhananjaya, having passed with difficulty, through their (Vinda and Anuvinda's) divisions, appeared beautiful like the lustrous orb of the day emerging out of a cluster of clouds.

33. At first beholding him the Kurus were struck with panic! But in the next moment they were filled with delight; and then, O foremost of the Bharatas, they rushed upon Pritha's son from all sides.

34. Beholding them fatigued and knowing the ruler of the Sindhus to be stationed afar, they surrounded Arjuna with a loud roar.

35. Beholding them highly excited, that foremost of men Arjuna smilingly addressed these words to that descendant of the Dasharha race viz., Keshava—

36. "Our steeds are afflicted with arrow-wounds; they are exhausted; the ruler of the Sindhus is still far off. What in your opinion is the best course to be adopted now?

37. Speak, O Krishna, truly on this point? You are ever the foremost of the wise. The sons of Pandu, having yourself only for their eyes, can hope to vanquish their enemies in battle.



38. Hear what seems to me to be our duty next. Unyoking the steeds, leave them to their ease and O Madhava, draw out the arrows from their body."

39. Thus spoken to by Pritha's son, Keshava replied to him saying - "O Partha, I am also of the same opinion that you have expressed."

**Arjuna said**

40. O Keshava, I shall hold the whole army in check. Do you duly perform whatever should be done now.

**Sanjaya said**

41. Thereupon descending from the terrace of his car, Dhananjaya, with the Gandiva bow in his grasp, stood on the field of battle like an immovable hill.

42. Beholding Dhananjaya on the ground and taking this to be a meet opportunity, the Kshatriyas, desirous of obtaining victory and uttering loud roars, rushed upon the former.

43. Then with a mighty host of cars, they surrounded that single-handed hero, stretching their bows and discharging their arrows right and left.

44. Inflamed with rage, they then displayed numerous wonderful weapons; and like the clouds covering the solar disc, they covered Pritha's son with their arrows.

45. Then those Kshatriyas, illustrious car-warriors all, rushed with impetuosity upon that foremost of Kshatriyas and that best of men, Arjuna, like infuriate elephant rushing upon a lion.

46. Then we beheld the wonderful might of Partha's arms inasmuch as inflamed with wrath, he held in check, the numerous army of the Kauravas.

47. Resisting with his own weapons those hurled by the foe, that highly puissant hero quickly covered all his adversaries with his myriad shafts.

48. The, O ruler of men, generated by the clash of those thick showers of arrows, a mighty fire of blazing flames, burnt on that part of the welkin.

49-50. There, in consequence of countless heroes, all inflamed with wrath and united together for a common cause seeking to obtain victory in battle, supported by steeds bespattered with blood and breathing heavily and by maddened and foe-crushing elephants emitting fierce yells, the weather became excessively hot.

51-53. Then with his arrows Pritha's son held in check that uncrossable, wide, fathomless ocean of cars-incapable of being, agitated, having arrows for its waves, flags for its whirlpools, elephants for its sharks foot-soldiers for its countless fishes, the blare of conches and the sound of drums for its roar, chariots for its swelling current, turbans of warriors for its tortoises, umbrellas and banners for its foam and the carcasses of elephants for its sub-marine rocks, which then was appearing like a vast continent.

**Dhritarashtra said**

54. Dhritarashtra asked - Why did my soldiers killed the son of Kunti when Arjuna descended on earth and god Krishna started giving treatment to the horses because it was the good opportunity.

**Sanjaya said**

55. Sanjaya said - Partha in the meantime resisted all kings seated on chariots suddenly, the same way as the sentence contrary to Vedas is declared unacceptable. This valour he exhibited when merely stood on the earth.

56. As the greed suppresses all qualities, Arjuna resisted all kings seated on their chariots even when his feet were touching the ground and chariot was wrecked.

57. Then as the battle progressed, the mighty armed and dauntless Janardana addressing his dear friend, that foremost of men (Arjuna), thus spoke-

58. O Arjuna, there is no water here on the field of battle for the forces to drink from. They want water for drinking and not for a bath.

59. Thereupon saying "Here is it" Arjuna fearlessly struck the Earth with a weapon and

thus created a beautiful lake there from which the steeds could quench their thirsts.

60. That watery expanse abounded in swans and ducks and was beautified with hosts of Chakravakas. Its water was translucent and abounded with full-blown lotuses of the best order.

61. It swarmed with tortoises and fishes and was fathomless and frequented by numerous seas. Then there came the sage Narada to have a look at that lake created there in a moment's time.

62. Then Partha that performer of wonderful works like Krishna himself, created there an arrowy hall having arrows for its beams and rafts, arrows for its pillars and arrows for its roof.

63. Thereupon Govinda, seeing the illustrious son of Pritha construct that hall there, laughing applauded him saying - "Well-done, well-done."

## CHAPTER 100

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The surprise of the troops

Sanjaya said

1. When the illustrious son of Kunti had created that water there and had held in check the troops of the enemies and when he had constructed that arrowy hall.

2. The highly effulgent son of Vasudeva descending down quickly from the chariot unharnessed the horses lacerated with arrows furnished with wings of the *Kanka* feathers.

3. The *Siddhas*, the *Charanas* and the troops present there, beholding that sight unseen before, uttered loud exclamations in praise of Arjuna.

4. That all the mighty car-warriors of your army were unable to resist that son of Kunti who then was fighting standing on his legs, was indeed wonderful.

5. Though myriads of chariots and thousands upon thousands of elephants and steeds assailed him, yet Partha experienced no

fear; but every moment obtained advantages over his enemies.

6. Showers of arrows were poured upon that son of Pandu by the hostile kings; but that slayer of foes, the illustrious son of Vasava felt no pain.

7. Then the highly puissant son of Pritha received those showers of arrows, lances and maces, like the ocean receiving the numerous rivers flowing into it.

8. With the tremendous force of his arms, Pritha's son began to swallow up, as it were, all the excellent arrows shot at him by hostile kings.

9. During that fight, O mighty kings, even the Kurus themselves applauded the prowess displayed by Arjuna and the son of Vasudeva.

10. "What incident, more wonderful has ever taken place or will ever take place in this world, then this, viz., that Pritha's son and Govinda in course of the fight, have unharnessed their steeds?

11. Those two foremost of men, displaying fierce energy in battle and confident of their prowess, have filled our hearts with terrors.

12-13. Thereafter Hrishikesha of eyes resembling lotus petals, smiling with the greatest assurance as if he were in the midst of women, led the steeds in the arrowy hall created on the field of battle by Arjuna, before the very eyes of all your troops, O king.

14. Then Krishna well-skilled in the art of grooming, removed their fatigue, pain, trembling and lacerations.

15. Drawing the arrows out of their bodies and shampooing them with his two hands and walking them duly, he made them drink water.

16. Having then washed them and made them drink and removing their fatigue and pain, he once more harnessed them to that foremost of chariots, with a joyful heart.

17. Thereafter that foremost of all wielders of weapons, that one endued with fierce energy viz., Shauri (Krishna), accompanied by Arjuna, mounted on the car and once more drove on quickly.

18. Beholding then that car belonging to that foremost of car-warrior, to which were yoked steeds whose thirst had been quenched, the foremost of the Kuru warriors once more became depressed at heart.

19. O king, beating like snakes whose fangs have been broken, they exclaimed, 'Fie fie on us; Oh, Partha and Krishna, have gone.'

20. Your armies excited by seeing that excellent and thrilling experience began to cry on their follows - "Bravo! It cannot be so. Pursue them immediately.

21-22. Riding on a single car and clad in mail, slaughtering our troops with as much ease as boys playing with a toy, even before the very eyes of all the Kshatriyas. In spite of all our efforts and endeavours, those two scorchers of foes, have gone way, disregarding all other kings and displaying their superior prowess."

23. Beholding them gone away, other soldiers said - "O Kurus, prepare yourselves in all haste for slaughtering Krishna and the diadem-decked Arjuna.

24. Yoking the steeds to the car, he of the Dasharha race is proceeding toward Jayadratha, crushing us in battle before the very eyes of all our bow-men."

25. Other rulers of earth, seeing that highly wonderful incident, never seen before, O king, said among themselves -

26. "These troops, the king Dhritarashtra himself, the Kshatriyas and the earth herself, are all now involved in a great calamity, through the fault of king Duryodhana.

27. All these are being destroyed; but the king (Duryodhana) heeds it not." Even thus did the Kshatriyas speak there. Others O Bharata, said -

28. Let the son of Dhritarashtra, of erring sight and meagre knowledge of measures, now perform those rites that are done for the departed, for, the ruler of the Sindhus may already be taken to be dispatched to the abode of Yama.

29. Then as the sun perambulated through the concavity of heaven, that son of Pandu

proceeded with increased speed towards the ruler of the Sindhus, being borne by refreshed steeds whose thirst had been quenched.

30. Then your warriors were unable to check that mighty-armed hero, that foremost of all wielders of weapons, viz., Arjuna, who had been proceeding like the enraged Destroyer himself.

31. Then for getting at the ruler of the Sindhus, that son of Pandu, that afflicter of foes, routing your army, began to agitate it like a lion agitating a herd of deer.

32. Plunging into the ranks of your soldiers, he of the Dasharha race, urged the steeds of to the top their speed and blew his conch *Panchajanya* of the hue of clouds.

33. The arrows discharged by the son of Kunti began to fall behind him, so quickly did those steeds, endowed with the fleetness of the wind, bear that chariot of his.

34. Thereafter, inflamed with rage, numerous hostile kings and various other Kshatriyas, surrounded Dhananjaya who was eager for bringing about the slaughter of Jayadratha.

35. When the Kuru-combatants thus rushed upon that foremost of men who had stopped for a moment only, Duryodhana, advancing quickly, followed Partha from behind, in that fierce encounter.

36. Many warriors became greatly depressed, beholding that chariot, of which the banner fluttered in the air, the rattle of which resembled the rumble of clouds and which was mounted with that fearful standard having the ape for its device.

37. Thus when the orb of the day had been enshrouded in a cloud of dust and when the warriors had been afflicted sore with arrows, they could not look at the two Krishnas engaged in that battle.

## CHAPTER 101

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The arrival of Duryodhana

Sanjaya said

1. Beholding, O king, Vasudeva and Dhananjaya penetrate into their ranks, having already pierced through many divisions, the kings of yours army fled in fear.

2. After a while, however, those illustrious warriors, overwhelmed with wrath and shame and urged on by their prowess, gathered courage and rushed upon Dhananjaya.

3. But, O king, those who proceeded to fight against the son of Pandu, being filled even as rivers falling into the sea, never return.

4. Like atheists turning away from the Vedas, many ignoble warriors turned away from the fight and thus incurred sin and hell.

5. Then those two foremost of men, passing beyond that cluster of cars, appeared like the two effulgent orbs (the sun and the moon) freed from the jaws of Rahu.

6. They then with their fatigue completely dispelled and passing beyond that net-work of soldiers, looked like two fishes that had torn away from a strong net.

7. Having passed through that impenetrable array of Drona impassable in consequence of showers of weapons, those two illustrious heroes looked like two suns risen at the period of Dissolution.

8. Penetrating through those showers of weapons and freed from the imminent danger to their lives, those illustrious warriors, themselves obstructing the sky with their weapons.

9. Appeared like two persons escaped from a raging fire or like two fish from the jaws of a *Makara*. They then agitated the Kuru ocean like two *Makara* agitate the mighty deep.

10. While Arjuna and Krishna were within Drona's division, your warriors and your sons, had thought that the two heroes would never be able to pass through it.

11. But beholding those two highly effulgent warriors now beyond the division of Drona, they became doubtful about the life of the ruler of the Sindhus.

12. Up till then, they cherished strong hopes of Jayadratha's life, for they had thought, O monarch, that the two Krishnas would never be able to escape from Drona and Hridika's son.

13. Falsifying that hope of theirs, those two scorchers of foes, succeeded in crossing over the uncrossable division of Drona and the Bhojas, O king.

14. Beholding them beyond those divisions and look like two blazing fires, your troops became despondent and they gave up all hopes for the life of the ruler of the Sindhus.

15. Then those two dauntless heroes, those enhancers of the fears of their foes, namely Krishna and Dhananjaya, thus began to talk among themselves, regarding the slaughter of Jayadratha.

16. "This ruler of the Sindhus has been placed in their midst by six of the foremost car-warriors of Dhritarashtra's army. Still he shall not escape, if we can only have a look of him.

17. Even if Indra himself with all the celestials, were to become his protector in battle, yet we shall slay him." Sanjaya said—Thus did the two Krishna's talk to themselves.

18. Even so, O mighty-armed one, did the two Krishna's speak amongst themselves while looking for the ruler of the Sindhus. (Hearing what they said) your sons set up a loud wail.

19. Those two subduers of foes then appeared like a pair of elephants of great quickness, whose thirst had been slaked and who had been refreshed with the drinking water, after they had passed through a desert.

20. Beyond death and above the reach of decay, they then appeared like two tradesmen that have passed over a hilly district infested with tigers, lions and elephants.

21. Indeed then your troops considered the hue of their countenances to be incapable of being faded; and beholding them freed, they began to wail aloud.

22. Escaping from Drona who resembled a snake of virulent poison or a blazing fire, as also from the other rulers of Earth, Partha and Krishna looked like two burning suns.

23. Those two subduers of foes, escaping from Drona's division which resembled the very ocean, seemed to be filled with delight, like persons that have safely crossed the mighty main.

24. Escaping from those thick down-pours of arrows, from those divisions protected by Drona and Hridika's son, Keshava and Arjuna appeared like Indra and Agni of burning radiance.

25. Pierced with the whetted shafts of Bharadvaja's son and profusely shedding blood, the two Krishnas appeared beautiful, like two mountains adorned with flowering *Karnikara* trees.

26. Having passed through that expensive lake, of which Drona formed the shark, darts the fierce snakes, shafts the *Makaras* and Kshatriyas the fathomless waters.

27. Having emerged out of that cloud formed by Drona's weapons, of which the thunders were the twang of bows and the sound of palm-strokes and the lightning the flashing maces and swords—Partha and Krishna appeared like the sun and the moon emerging out of darkness.

28. In consequence of their crossing the regions obstructed with the weapons of Drona, all creatures regarded those fierce and renowned bowmen viz., Keshava and Dhananjaya to be like two persons who have the strength of their arms, the five rivers having the ocean for their sixth when full of waters during the rainy season and abounding in numerous sharks and alligators.

29. All human-beings began to assume Sri Krishna and Arjuna, great archer, meritorious and renowned world-wide as they had effaced the destructive power of the weapon shot by Dronacarya.

30. From a desire for slaughtering Jayadratha stationed very near to them, looking at him, the two warriors appear like two tigers waiting to fall upon a *Ruru* deer.

31. The colour of their faces was such that your warriors, O mighty monarch, considered Jayadratha already to be one among the slain.

32. O mighty-armed one, with red eyes and staying together, the son of Pandu and Krishna then beholding the ruler of the Sindhus, became filled with delight and incessantly uttered loud war-cries.

33. The radiance of Shauri holding the reins and Partha wielding the bow, O king, was like that of the fire and the sun.

34. Escaping from the division of Drona and beholding the ruler of the Sindhus within reach, they were filled with delight, even as a hawk is filled with delight at the sight of a piece of meat.

35. Beholding the ruler of the Sindhus stay near them and burning with rage, they pounced down upon him, like a pair of hawks pouncing down upon a piece of meat.

36-37. Then beholding Hrishikesha and Dhananjaya penetrate through the division of Drona, your highly powerful, son, king Duryodhana, having his armour donned by Drona and knowing how to guide and groom horses, proceeded on a single car against those two warriors, in order to rescue the ruler of the Sindhus.

38. Leaving behind him the two mighty car-warriors Krishna and Partha, your son proceeded ahead and then turned back, O king, facing Keshava of lotus-like eyes.

39. Then when your son had outrun Dhananjaya, numerous musical instruments were joyfully sounded by all your troops.

40. Then beholding Duryodhana stay, facing the two Krishna's, your troops uttered war-cries resembling leonine roars that became mingled with the blare of conchs.

41. Beholding your son rush to fight, they also of blazing effulgence who were engaged in protecting Jayadratha, became filled with joy.

42. Then seeing Duryodhana and his followers outrun Dhananjaya, Krishna, O king addressing Arjuna, said these words suited to the occasion.

## CHAPTER 102

## (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

## Continued

## The boastful words of Duryodhana

Vasudeva said

1. O Dhananjaya, behold, Suyodhana has outrun us. Meseems this to be highly wonderful. There is indeed no car-warrior equal to him.

2. He is capable of shooting his arrows to a great distance; he is a fierce bowman, accomplished in the use of all weapons and formidable in battle. This son of Dhritarashtra is endued with great prowess and strikes hard and is versed in all modes of warfare.

3. Reared in all luxury, he is highly esteemed by all the mighty car-warriors. O Partha, he is accomplished and the constant hater of the Pandavas.

4. O sinless one, for these reasons I think that the time had now arrived, when you shall fight with him. Upon him rests, as upon a stake at dice, victory or the reverse.

5. On him vomit the venom of your wrath that you have cherished so long, O Partha. This mighty car-warrior is the root of all wrongs inflicted on the Pandavas.

6. He is now within your arrow-shot. Be mindful of your success. Why has king Duryodhana, desirous as he is of enjoying the kingdom come to fight with you?

7. By good fortune it is that he has now come within the reach of your arrows, O Dhananjaya, do you so strive now, that this one may lose his very life in battle.

8. Elated with the pride engendered by his prosperity, he has never experienced pain. O foremost of men, he knows your prowess in battle.

9. O Partha, the three worlds and the celestials, the Asuras and the men, cannot bear you in battle, what to speak of this single-handed Suyodhana?

10. By good luck, has he now come near your chariot; O Partha, slay him, O mighty-

armed hero, even as Purandara (Indra) slew Vritra (in days gone by).

11. O sinless one, this Duryodhana ever tried to bring down distress on you. Through deceitful measures, he defeated the very virtuous king Yudhishtira at the game of dice.

12. O bestower of honour, sinless though you all are, this one of sinful understanding had always injured you with many cruel wrongs.

13. Nobly resolving to fight, O you son of Pritha, slay without any hesitation, this perverse wretch who is ever vindictive and cruel and who is avarice incarnate.

14. O son of Pandu, put forth all your prowess, recollecting the despoliation of your kingdom through deceit, your exile in the woods and the woes of Krishna.

15. Through good fortune it is, that he now move within the range of your arrows. By good luck it is that, staying before you, he is striving to thwart you in the fulfilment of your purposes.

16. By good luck it is that he has come to know that he will have to fight with you! By good luck it is that all your desires, though not at present eagerly cherished, will meet with their fruition, O Pritha's son.

17. For these reasons, O Partha, slay you this disgrace to the race of Dhritarashtra, even as Indra slew the Asura Jambha in days gone by, in the battle between the celestials and the Asuras.

18. If this one be slain by you, you can penetrate through this array that will be then masterless. Let the *Avabhritha* of these hostilities be performed now; cut the root of these wretches of wicked souls.

Sanjaya said

19. Thus spoken to, Pritha's son answered him saying—"Let it be so. Even this will I do. Unmindful of anything else, drive where Duryodhana stands.

20. Putting forth all my prowess in battle, I will in this day's battle, cut-off the head of this wretch, who had enjoyed our dominions for a long period, without a single thorn in his side.

21. O Keshava, shall I not be successful in avenging the wrongs inflicted on Draupadi by her being dragged by the hair, undeserving as she was of such treatment?

22. Thus speaking to each other and filled with delight, the two Krishnas urged on their steeds of white hue and best breed, with a view to get at the ruler of the Kurus viz., king Duryodhana.

23. Your son, O foremost of the Bharatas, approaching them entertained no fear, although, O sire, there were reasons enough to fill him with terror.

24. Then all the Kshatriyas present there applauded him, inasmuch as he ventured to rush against Arjuna and Hrishikesha with a view to oppose them.

25. Then beholding the king proceed to the battle, all your troops, O ruler of men, raised a loud uproar.

26. When that loud and dreadful uproar was set up by your people, your son pressing his foe hard, began to impede his progress.

27. Opposed by that illustrious bowmen viz., your son, the son of Kunti became excited to the highest pitch of fury; also that afflicter of foes, your son, became highly angry upon Dhananjaya.

28. Then beholding Duryodhana and Dhananjaya, both enraged against each other, all the royal warriors of fierce appearance, began to look at them from all sides.

29. Beholding Partha and Vasudeva both filled with wrath, your son desirous of fighting with them, smiling, challenged them to the combat.

30. Thereupon he of the Dasharha race and Dhananjaya the son of Pandu filled with delight, uttered loud shouts and blew their best of conchs.

31. The Kaurava warriors then beholding their appearance reflect joy, became hopeless of the life of your son.

32. Then many among the enemies and the Kurus were filled with grief, as they then

considered your son to be like a libation poured into the mouth of fire.

33. Then your warriors beholding Krishna and Pandu's son filled with joy, out of fear, began to exclaim saying "the king is slain, the king is slain."

34. But Duryodhana, hearing that confusion created by his own men, said - "Let all your apprehensions be dispelled; I will send the two Krishnas to the abode of Death"

35. Having thus spoken to the soldiers, the king desirous of victory, addressing Pritha's son, out of anger, said these words-

36. 'O son of Pritha, if you are begotten by Pandu, then quickly display against me all weapons the use of which you learned from the celestials or on this Earth?

37. Exert all your might and prowess and let also Keshava do so, against me. I want to see your manliness.

38. Men speak of many feats achieved by you out of our view. Show all those feats to me that have rendered you worthy of the applause and reverence of others."

## CHAPTER 103

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The defeat of Duryodhana

Sanjaya said

1. Having thus spoken, the king pierced Arjuna with three shafts capable of penetrating to the very vitals; and then with another four arrows of great velocity, he pierced the latter's four steeds.

2. He also pierced the son of Vasudeva with ten arrows between his breasts. The cutting off the whip of the latter, he felled it on the ground.

3. Thereupon with perfect coolness, Pritha's son quickly sped at him four shafts of variegated wings and whetted on stone; but all these shafts were baffled by Duryodhana's armour.

4. Beholding those shafts repelled, Partha once more struck Duryodhana with another nine

and seven arrows of exceeding sharpness; but these also became baffled by Duryodhana's armour.

5. Then seeing those twenty shafts of Arjuna repelled, that slayer of hostile warriors Krishna, addressing Arjuna, said these words—

6. O Partha, now I see a sight never before seen by me, which is as wonderful as the moving about of hills. Winged shafts shot by yourself, are becoming abortive!

7. Is everything right with the toughness of the Gandiva, O foremost of the Bharatas? Are your grasp and the prowess of arms, as firm and strong as before?

8. Is not this to be the last time that you shall meet with Duryodhana your foe? Tell me all this; O son of Pritha, for I ask you.

9. Seeing all these shafts of yours falling upon Duryodhana's chariots without producing the least effect, O Partha, I have been filled with great surprise.

10. O son of Pritha what misfortune is this that your arrows, dreadful like the bolt of Heaven and capable of piercing through the body of the enemy, produce no effect today?

**Arjuna said**

11. I think, O Krishna, that Drona has donned this armour on Duryodhana. This armour, tied as it has been, is invulnerable by my weapons.

12. O Krishna, this armour contains in it the mighty of the three worlds. Drona only knows the mode of donning it and from that foremost of men, I also have learnt it.

13. This armour cannot be penetrated by arrows. Even, O Govinda, Maghavat himself cannot penetrate it in battle with his thunderbolt.

14. Knowing all this, O Krishna, why do you confound me. That which happened in the three world, that which now happens.

15. And that which will happen in the future, are all known to yourself. Indeed O slayer of Madhu, no one knows this better than yourself.

16. This Duryodhana, O Krishna, accoutered in this armour by Drona, is standing dauntlessly in battle, cased in this coat of mail.

17. But he knows not what is to be done with this armour, O Madhava, but wears this coat of mail even like a woman.

18. Behold, O Janardana, the prowess of my arms and the strength of my bow, in as much as I will vanquish the Kuru king, protected though he is with this coat of mail.

19. The lord of the celestials gave this effulgent armour to Angiras; from him Brihaspati obtained it; and from him again Purandara got it.

20. The lord of the celestials once more presented it to me with *mantras* to be uttered in donning it. Even if this armour were of celestial make or were forged by Brahma himself, yet it will not protect this wicked-minded wretch from the stroke of my arrows.

**Sanjaya said**

21. Having thus spoken, Arjuna inspired some shafts with *mantras* and then began to draw them on the bow-string.

22. But while he was thus drawing those arrows placed on the centre of his bow-string, the son of Drona cut them off with a weapon capable of baffling all other weapons.

23. Beholding those shafts severed from a distance by that reciter of the Vedas (Ashvatthaman) the owner of the cream-coloured steeds (Arjuna), filled with surprise, addressing Keshava thus spoke—

24. O Janardana! these arrows I cannot use twice; then they will slay me and my own troops.

25. Thereafter king Duryodhana, pierced the two Krishnas, each with nine shafts, resembling snakes of virulent poison.

26-27. Once more he poured upon Krishna and the son of Pandu in that battle a mighty shower of arrows; upon this all your troops became filled with joy and they struck up musical instruments and uttered their war-cries.



28. Thereat filled with fury, Pritha's son began to lick the corners of his mouth. He could then find no part of Duryodhana's body that was not covered by that armour.

29. Then with sharp arrows, resembling Death and duly discharged, Arjuna cut to pieces Duryodhana's horses and his two *Parshni*-drivers.

30. Then that highly powerful hero cut-off the latter's bow and the leathern gloves quickly. Savyasachin then began to cut his car into fragments.

31. Thereafter Arjuna pierced with two sharp arrows, the two palms of Duryodhana who had been deprived of the use of his car.

32. Then your warriors, beholding Duryodhana that foremost of bowmen, involved in great danger and afflicted with the arrows of Dhananjaya, rushed to his rescue.

33. Then they surrounded Dhananjaya with thousands of duly equipped chariots and elephants and horses and numerous divisions of infantry, all inspired with wrath.

34. Thereupon, neither Govinda nor Arjuna nor their car could be seen; for they were then covered with thick showers of weapons and surrounded with large bodies of troops.

35. Arjuna, Sri Krishna and their chariot all had become invisible due to a dense cover from all sides of arrows and the crowd of soldiers.

36. Then with the force of his weapons, Arjuna began to slaughter that host of your car-warriors and elephants, by hundreds. With their limbs cut-off, they began to fall fast on the field of battle.

37. Slain or in the act of being slain, they succeeded not in reaching that excellent car of Arjuna, which stood immovable full two miles away from the besieging troops on all sides.

38. Thereafter, the Vrishni hero quickly addressed Arjuna saying - "Do you tremendously stretch your bow for I will blow this conch of mine.

39. Then stretching his toughest bow Gandiva, Arjuna went on slaughtering his foes, shooting arrowy showers and producing loud din with his palm-strokes.

40. Then the mighty Keshava loudly blew his conch Panchajanya, with his eye lashes covered with dust and countenance shedding drops of perspiration.

41. In consequence of that twang of the Gandiva and the blast of that conch, all the Kuru-people, strong or weak, fell down on the Earth.

42. The chariot of Arjuna, thus freed from that press, looked like a cloud driven a head by the wind. Then the protectors of Jayadratha and their followers, beholding Arjuna became filled rage.

43. Then suddenly seeing Partha before them, those guards of Jayadratha the Sindhu-king, all mighty bowmen, uttered a fierce shout, causing the earth to tremble therewith.

44. The fierce whizz of arrows became mingled with the blast of conchs and other loud noises; the illustrious soldiers of your army then also uttered their war-cries resembling leonine roars.

45. Hearing that dreadful din raised by your troops, Dhananjaya and the son of Vasudeva blew their two best of conchs.

46. Then, O ruler of men, with that loud sound, the earth seemed to be filled, with its mountains, seas, islands and the subterranean regions.

47. Indeed, O foremost of the Bharatas, that sound filling the ten points of the compass, reverberated through the armies of the Kuru and the Pandavas.

48. Warriors of your host then, beholding Krishna and Dhananjaya, were very much terrified. Soon however, those mighty car-warriors recovered and put forth their activity and prowess.

49. Then your warriors beholding the two Krishnas cased in mail became excited with rage; and they rushed upon them both. All this looked wonderful.

**CHAPTER 104****(JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–  
Continued****The fierce-fight**

Sanjaya said

1. Your warriors, as soon as they saw those two foremost heroes of the Vrishni-Andhaka and the Kuru races, quickly advanced against them, each striving to be the first. So also, Vijaya rushed against those foe of his.

2. Mounted on their huge chariots adorned with gold, covered with tiger-skins, producing deep rattle their car-wheels and looking like blazing fires, they advanced, illumining the all points of the compass.

3. Armed, O monarch, with bows whose stave's were decked with gold and which, in consequence of their splendour were incapable of being looked at and settling up loud war-cries and being borne by mettled horses.

4. Bhurishravas, Sala, Karna Vrishasena Jayadratha, Kripa, the ruler of the Madras and that foremost of car-warriors viz., Drona's son.

5. These eight great car-warriors, as if devouring up the skies, illumined the ten quarters, with their excellent chariots covered with tiger-skins and decked with golden moons.

6. Accoutered in coats of mail, inflamed with rage, riding upon those chariots the rattle of whose wheels resembled the rumble of the clouds, they covered Arjuna on every side, with shower of sharps shafts.

7. Steeds of best breed and variegated hue and endued with great fleetness, bearing those mighty car-warriors, appeared beautiful as they illumined the ten quarters of heaven.

8. Their chariots drawn by excellent horses of great fleetness born in various countries and of diverse species-some bred in hilly tracts, some in river-lands and some in the Sindhu country.

9. Many foremost of car-warriors among the Kurus, swiftly rushed towards Dhananjaya's car, desirous, O king, of saving your son.

10. Those foremost of men taking up their huge conchs blew them and with blasts they filled the welkin and the earth with her all oceans.

11. Thereupon those two foremost of all gods, viz., Vasudeva and Dhananjaya also blew their conchs that were regarded as the best of all the conchs on the face of the earth.

12. Kunti's son blew his conch Devadatta and Keshava blew Panchajanya. The tremendous blare of the conch Devedatta, produced by Dhananjaya.

13. Filled the earth, the skies and the ten points of the compass. So also the blast of the Panchajanya, blown by the son of Vasudeva.

14. Surpassing all other sounds filled the welkin and the earth. And when the fierce and dreadful sound was still continuing.

15. Sound that struck the hearts of the cowards with terror and enhanced the delight of the brave and while drums, Jharajhwaras and cymbals.

16. And *Mridangas*, O mighty monarch, were sounded by thousands, great car-warriors, befriending the Kurus and desirous of Duryodhana's good.

17. All great bow-men, inflamed with anger and unable to bear the loud blasts of Arjuna's and Krishna's conchs, those kings come from diverse countries and accompanied by their troops.

18. Blew their huge conchs, desirous of answering with the blasts thus produced, the blasts produced by Keshava and Arjuna.

19. Then your army filled with the blasts of the conchs, had its car-warriors, elephants and horses filled with anxiety and O master, all who composed it, seemed to be ill.

20. Then that host filled with the blasts of conchs blown by heroic warriors, seemed to be like the welkin echoing with sounds of thunder and fallen down (through some natural cause).

21. That loud sound, O king, filled all the quarters with its echoes. It frightened the troops as if the end of the *Yuga* had come.

22. Thereafter Duryodhana and the other eight sovereigns, all mighty car-warriors,

surrounded Pandu's son for effecting the safety to Jayadratha.

23. Then the son of Drona pierced Vasudeva's son with seventy-three arrows and he also pierced Arjuna with three broad-headed shafts and the latter's steeds and standard with five arrows.

24. Then beholding Janardana pierced and excited to the highest pitch of fury, Arjuna struck his foe with six hundred arrows.

25. Piercing then Karna with ten and Vrishasena with three arrows, that highly puissant hero, cut-off Shalya's bow with arrows fixed on the string, near the grasp.

26. Thereupon taking another bow Shalya began to pierce Pandu's son. Then Bhurishrava with three arrows furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone.

27. Karna with thirty-two, Vrishasena, with seven, Jayadratha with seventy-three and Kripa with ten shafts and the king of the Madras with ten other shafts, pierced Phalguna in that battle.

28. Thereafter with a group of sixty arrows, Drona's son covered Partha. He then pierced Vasudeva with twenty and Partha again with five arrows.

29. Thereupon that foremost of men, that owner of white steed, who had Krishna for his charioteer pierced them all in return displaying great lightness of hand.

30. Piercing Karna with twelve and Vrishasena with three shafts. He cut-off Shalya's bow, once more near the handle.

31. He piercing Somadatta's son with three and Shalya with ten arrows and pierced Drona's son with eight shafts, well-sharpened and resembling tongues of fire.

32. He struck the son of Gautama with twenty five and the ruler of the Sindhus with a hundred arrows, once more he pierced Drona's son with seventy shafts.

33-34. Bhurishrava then inflamed with rage, cut-off the whip that Hari held and he then pierced Arjuna with a group of seventy-three arrows.

35. Thereat Dhananjaya owning white seeds and burning with rage, mangled those enemies

of his with hundreds of shafts, like a raging tempest tearing away masses of clouds.

## CHAPTER 105

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The description of the standards

##### Dhritarashtra said

1. O Sanjaya, describe to me the numerous standards, decked beautifully, belonging both to the warriors of the Parthas and to our warriors?

##### Sanjaya said

2. Hear from me of the diverse kinds of standards belonging to those illustrious warriors. Listen to me, as I go on describing their name, their appearance and their hue.

3. O king, on the chariots of those foremost of car-warriors were seen various kinds of standards shining like blazing fire.

4. Made of gold or adorned with gold or decked with garlands of gold, looking like the golden peak of the mighty Meru mountain. The standards of those warriors were of variegated hue and of great beauty.

5. Those standards also were adorned with fluttering flags on all sides. Having streamers of variegated hue tied to them all round, those standards appeared highly charming.

6. Those streamers also moved by the wind. Looked like beautiful damsels dancing in the midst of arenas erected for sport.

7. Resembling the rainbow in hue, those streamers, O best of the Bharata race, belonging to those car-warriors, fluttering in the air, beautified their cars.

8. The standard, having for its device the ape of fierce face and lion-like tail, of Dhananjaya, seemed to strike terror into the hearts of his foes. That foremost of apes, O king, adorned as he was with banners.

9. That device on the standard of the wielder of Gandiva, frightened all your troops, O king. We beheld the standard-top of Drona's son, resembling the tail of the lion and effulgent like the newly-risen sun, O Bharata.

10. Made of gold, fluttering in the air and of the effulgence of the device on the standard of Drona's son like the standard of Shakra floated on highly inspiring the foremost of the Kurus with delight.

11. The standard of Adhiratha's son bore the device of an elephants-girth made of gold. In that battle, it appeared O mighty king, to fire the whole firmament.

12. The banners attached to it decked with garlands of flowers and adorned with gold and moved by the wind, seemed to dance on the top of his chariot.

13-16. The preceptor of the Pandavas, that Brahman devoted to ascetic observances, viz., Kripa the son of Gautama, had for his device an excellent bovine bull. O king, the illustrious Kripa with that bovine bull on his standard, looked as effulgent as the Destroyer of the three-fortresses (Mahadeva) looks with his bull.

17. Vrishasena had for his device a peacock made of gold and decked with gems and jewels beautifying the van of the army it stood on his standard as if on the point of emitting its notes.

18. With that peacock, the car of that illustrious hero appeared as beautiful as the car of Skanda, O king, appears, being decked by his peacock.

19. The ruler of the Madras, we beheld, had on his standard-top, the unequalled and charming device of a plough-share, made of gold and looking like a flame of fire.

20. O sire, that plough-share mounted on his chariot looked beautiful. Like the Goddess of corn incarnate, endued with all beauty and producing every seed.

21. The device of a silver boar shone on the standard of the Sindhu king; it was decked with garlands of gold and was of the splendour of the rising sun.

22. With that device on his standard, Jayadratha appeared as beautiful. As Pusha in the days of yore, in the battle between the celestials and the Asuras.

23. The standard of Somadatta's son, ever devoted to the performance of sacrifices was

decked with the device of a sacrificial stake. It shone like the sun or the moon.

24. O king, that golden sacrificial stake decorating the banner of Somadatta's son, looked effulgent. Like the huge stake erected in that foremost of sacrifices, called the Rajasuya.

25. Shalya's standard bearing the device of a silver-elephant, O king, as adorned on all sides with peacocks made of gold. O foremost of the Bharatas, that standard enhanced the beauty of your troops.

26. Like the prodigious white elephant adorning the host of the ruler of the celestials. On the gold-decked standard of king Duryodhana, was the device of an elephant embossed with gems.

27. O king, that standard stood on the chariot of that hero, tinkling with the sound of a hundred bells. Then O monarch, in that battle with that huge standard, that foremost of the Kurus viz., your son appeared highly beautiful.

28. These nine excellent standards rose high amidst your troops and they lighted up your army, even like the suns that rise at the end of a Yuga.

29. The tenth standard there, was the mighty ape belonging to Arjuna with that standard Arjuna looked like a mountain lighted up by fire.

30. Then many mighty car-warriors all afflictors of their foes, quickly took up, for opposing Arjuna, their huge, white and variegated bows.

31. So also Pritha's son of godly achievements took up his bow capable of slaughtering the foe, namely the Gandiva; and all this was owing to your crooked policy.

32. Through your fault, in that battle, were slain numerous kings, invited from various countries, with their steeds and elephants and chariots.

33. Then roaring at one another they fall upon one another, headed as they were by Duryodhana on one side and by that foremost of the Pandavas on the other.

34. Then that son of Kunti having Krishna for his charioteer, inspired his foes with

wonder. Inasmuch as he, though single handed, dauntlessly encountered the numerous odds against him;

35. Then that mighty armed one appeared beautiful stretching his bow Gandiva desirous of defeating those best of men ranged against him and of slaughtering Jayadratha the ruler of the Sindhus.

36. That foremost of men, that scorcher of his foes, viz., Arjuna discharging his arrows by thousands, made all the soldiers of your army invisible.

37. Thereupon those mighty car-warriors, those best of men, also rendered Pritha's son invisible in that battle, with the shower of their shafts poured from all sides.

38. Thus when that foremost of the Kurus Arjuna had been surrounded by those foremost of men, the uproar that was raised in your army was indeed very great and deafening.

## CHAPTER 106

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The escape of Yudhishtira

**Dhritarashtra said**

1. When Arjuna had got the Sindhu king within reach, what, O Sanjaya, did the Panchalas, assailed by Bharadvaja's son, do, encountering the Kurus?

**Sanjaya said**

2. On that afternoon, O mighty monarch, in that hair-stirring battle that then raged between the Panchalas and the Kurus, Drona became as it were, the stake for which they fought.

3. Filled with delight and a desire for slaying Drona, the Panchalas, O sire, poured showers of arrows and uttered loud war-cries.

4. That battle between the Kurus and the Panchalas, dreadful, confused and wonderful, was like that which was fought between the Gods and the Asuras in days gone by.

5. Then all the Panchalas accompanied by the Pandavas, reaching Drona's chariot, displayed many mighty weapons, with a view to break through Drona's array.

6. Car-warriors mounted on their cars, causing the earth to shake under them and pouring their arrowy showers, proceeded towards Drona's car in a medium speed.

7. Then Vrihatkshatra, that mighty car-warrior among the Kekayas, rushed upon Drona discharging whetted arrows, resembling the thunderbolt of the great Indra.

8. Thereupon Kshemadhurti of illustrious renown quickly rushed against Brihatkshatra, shooting sharp shafts by hundreds and thousands.

9. Then again Dhristaketu that foremost among the Chedis, urged on by his great strength, quickly rushed against Kshemadhurti like the great Indra advancing upon the Asura Shambara.

10. Beholding this latter rush with great impetuosity like the Destroyer with mouth wide open, the mighty bowman, Viradhanva proceeded in all haste against him.

11. Then the valorous Drona began to resist king Yudhishtira and his troops, when they were exerting themselves for obtaining victory.

12. O master, your son Vikarna endued with great might assailed Nakula, endued with strength and versed in the art of fighting, who had been proceeding to fight.

13. That crusher of foes namely Durmukha, with many thousand swift-coursing arrows, covered Sahadeva who had been making towards himself.

14. Vyaghradatta held in check Satyaki that foremost of men and he caused the latter to tremble incessantly with his sharp shafts properly whetted.

15. The son of Somadatta resisted those best of men and foremost of car warriors viz., the sons of Draupadi, who filled with rage, had been shooting excellents shafts.

16. That mighty car-warrior the son of Rishyashringa, of dreadful appearance and fierce temper, opposed the enraged Bhimasena rushing upon Drona.

17. Then between that man and that Rakshasa, raged a fight that resembled, O king,

the one that took place between Rama and Ravana in days gone by.

18. Then, O Bharata, that best of the Bharatas, viz., king Yudhishtira pierced Drona on all his vital limbs with ninety shafts of depressed knots.

19. Thus exasperated by the illustrious son of Kunti, O foremost of the Bharatas, Drona struck him on the chest with twenty-five arrows.

20. Then once more, with twenty shafts, Drona pierced him and his steeds, charioteer and standards, before the very eyes of all the bowmen present.

21. Then that son of Pandu, of virtuous soul, with his own showers of arrows checked those discharged by Drona, displaying great lightness of hands.

22. Then that best of Bowman, viz., Drona excited to the highest pitch of fury, in that fight with the very virtuous king Yudhishtira, cut-off the bow of that illustrious warriors.

23. Thus depriving Yudhishtira of the use of his bow, that mighty warrior Drona quickly filled the pores of the latter's body with many thousand shafts.

24. Then beholding the king rendered invincible by the arrows of Bharadvaja's son, all creatures took him to be slain in battle.

25. Some thought that he had been compelled to turn his face away from the field. Some exclaimed saying- "That foremost of the king has been slain by the illustrious Brahmana."

26-27. Thus the very virtuous king Yudhishtira was put in a very dangerous position. Then leaving aside his bow cut-off by Bharadvaja's son in that battle he, took up another effulgent bow of celestial make and endued with greater toughness.

28. Then all those arrows shot by thousands by Drona that hero cut-off in battle. Indeed this looked wonderful.

29. O king, having cut-off all those arrows and with his eyes rendered coppery in rage. He took up a lance capable of penetrating even though the very mountains-lance, of which the

stave was of gold, which was terror-inspiring, dreadful and furnished with eight bells.

30. Wielding that lance that mighty warrior became filled with rage and uttered a loud war-cry. And O Bharata, with that war-cry of his, he seemed to frighten all creatures.

31. Beholding that lance raised by the very virtuous king in that battle, all creatures present, pronounced benedictions on Drona.

32. Then that lance hurled by the arms of the king, resembling a snake that has cast off its slough and illumining the cardinal and subsidiary quarters coursed towards Drona's division like a she-snake of fiery mouth.

33. Then O ruler of men, beholding that lance coursing towards himself with great force, Drona that foremost of all warrior versed in the use of weapons, invoked into existence the Brahma weapon.

34. That weapon, having burnt into ashes that terrible-looking lance flew quickly towards the chariot of the illustrious son of Pandu.

35. Thereupon king Yudhishtira endued with great prudence, O sire, baffled that weapon of Drona flying at himself, by invoking the Brahma weapon.

36. Then also piercing Drona with five depressed-knotted razor-headed shafts of great sharpness, he cut-off his mighty bow.

37. Thereupon Drona, that crusher of foes, leaving aside the severed bow hurled, O sire, quickly a mace upon the son of Dharma (Yudhishtira).

38. Then beholding that mace fall quickly upon himself, king Yudhishtira took up another mace and O afflicter of your foes, he also hurled it.

39. Those two maces hurled with force, clashing against one another emitted fire in consequence of the dash and then fell on the ground.

40. Then highly enraged, O sire, Drona slew the horses of the very virtuous king Yudhishtira, with four excellent sharp shafts of keen-points.

41. With another broad-headed shaft he cut-off the latter's bow that resembled the rain-bow.

He cut down his standard with a single arrow and afflicted Pandu's son with another three.

42. Then quickly jumping down from the chariot whose horses had been slain, Yudhishtira stood on the field, weaponless and with his arms upraised, O foremost of the Bharatas.

43. Beholding him careless and specially, weaponless Drona of firm vow and great lightness of hands held in bay all the enemy's soldiers, O lord.

44. By discharging numerous sharp arrows and like a fierce lion assailing a deer, he then assailed the king.

45. Beholding the king assailed by Drona that slayer of foes the Pandavas began to exclaim saying, 'Alas'.

46. The king is captured, the king is seized by the son of Bharadvaja. Even these were the cries that were then uttered by the Pandava troops, O Bharata.

47. Then ascending with quickness on the chariot of Sahadeva, king Yudhishtira the son of Kunti, fled away from the field of battle, being borne away by fleetest steeds.

## CHAPTER 107

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The fight of Satyaki

Sanjaya said

1. Then, O mighty monarch, Kshemadhurti, with numerous shafts pierced the advancing Brihatkshatra, that valorous prince of the Kekayas, on the breast.

2. Thereupon king Brihatkshatra, O monarch, desirous of breaking Drona's array, quickly pierced Kshemadhurti with ninety shafts of depressed knots.

3. Thereat Kshemadhurti excited to the highest pitch of fury, cut-off the bow of the illustrious ruler of the Kekayas with a well-tempered and well-sharpened arrow.

4. Then having cut-off his bow, he pierced that foremost wielder of the bow quickly in that battle with shafts of depressed knots.

5. After this Brihatkshatra smilingly taking up another bow deprived the mighty car-warrior Kshemadhurti of the use of his car, steed and charioteer.

6. Thereafter with a well-sharpened and well-tempered arrow he severed from the trunk of that king his head graced with resplendent ear-rings.

7. That head graced with curling locks and a beautiful diadem, suddenly cut-off, fell on the earth and shone like a meteor dropped down from the heavens.

8. Thus having slain his adversary, the mighty car-warrior Brihatkshatra became filled with delight; and he rushed quickly upon your troops, desirous of doing good to the Parthas.

9. The fierce bowman, Viradhvanan endued with great prowess, began, O Bharata, to oppose Dhrishtaketu proceeding against Drona.

10. Those two warriors, having arrows for their teeth and endued with activity, meeting each other began to strike each other with many thousand shafts.

11. Then those two foremost of men fought on with each other like two elephant leaders in rut, in a deep wood.

12. Then those two heroes endued with great prowess fought with each other out of desire for slaying each other, like two ferocious tigers fighting inside a mountain cave.

13. That awful fight, O ruler of men, indeed became a sight to look at; and Siddhas and Charanas, by thousands witnessed it with eyes expanded in wonder.

14. Then, O Bharata, Viradhvanan excited with rage smilingly cut-off the bow of Dhrishtaketu in twain with a broad-headed shaft.

15. Thereupon that mighty car-warrior the ruler of the Chedis, leaving aside the severed bow took up a huge lance of golden staff and iron head.

16. Then, O Bharata, balancing the lance of fierce energy with both his hands, he hurled it quickly at the car of Viradhvanan.

17. Wounded sore with that lance capable of killing all creatures, the latter with his heart rent

open, quickly fell down on the Earth from his car.

18. When that heroic and mighty car-warrior of the Trigarttas had been slain, O master, your army was completely broken and routed by the Pandavas.

19. Durmukha then hurled sixty shafts at Sahadeva and he uttered a loud war-cry defying in that battle that son of Pandu.

20. Thereupon the son of Madri excited with rage, smilingly pierced the advancing Durmukha, with many sharp arrows, the brother striking the brother.

21. Then beholding the mighty Durmukha fight with fury, Sahadeva struck him, O Bharata, with nine arrows.

22. Then that mighty hero, cutting off with a broad-headed shaft the standard of Durmukha, slew his four steeds with four arrows of great sharpness.

23. Then with another well-tempered and sharpened shaft, he severed the head of his charioteer from his trunk, head that was graced with effulgent ear-rings.

24. Cutting off with a sharp razor-headed arrow the mighty bow of the Kuru-descendant, Sahadeva pierced him with five arrows.

25. Thereupon the cheerless Durmukha leaving that chariot of which the horses had been slain, ascended, O king, upon the car of Niramitra.

26. Thereat the enraged Sahadeva, that slayer of hostile heroes, in that fierce battle, slew Niramitra with a broad-headed shaft, O prince.

27. Then Niramitra that son of the Trigartta king, fell down from the terrace of his car, afflicting your troops with woe.

28. Slaying him, the mighty-armed Sahadeva shone like Dasharatha's son Rama after he had killed the mighty Rakshasas Khara.

29. O ruler of men, beholding the son of their king, the mighty car-warrior Niramitra slain, the Trigarttas uttered loud cries of 'Oh and Alas.'

30. O king, Nakula then vanquished in a moment your son Vikarna of expanded eyes; that indeed seemed marvellous, O king.

31. Then in the midst of the troops Vyaghradatta rendered Satyaki, his horses, charioteer and standard, invisible, with numerous shafts of depressed knots.

32. Then the heroic grandson of Sini baffling those arrows like one accomplished in the art of fighting, felled with his arrows Vyaghradatta together with his horses, charioteer and standard.

33. Upon the fall of their prince the Magadhas, strive their best assailed Yuyudhana, O king.

34. Discharging arrows and *Tomaras* by thousands, as also *Bhindipalas*, lances and mallets and bludgeons.

35-36. Those heroes fought on with the invincible Satvata hero, in battle. Then indomitable Satyaki, that foremost of men endued with great strength without the slightest difficulty, smiling the while vanquished the Magadhas and the few that survived, fled in all directions.

37. Beholding this, O master, your troops already afflicted with the shafts of Yuyudhana, broke and fled. Then that best of the descendants of Madhu's race, slaughtering in battle your warriors.

38. And stretching his mighty bow shone beautiful, endued as he was with great renown. Then, O king, the army routed by the illustrious Satvata hero.

39. Refused to return to the fight, frightened as they were by that mighty-armed hero. Thereat Drona, highly enraged, quickly casting his glance on Satyaki, himself rushed upon that hero of wonderful feat, incapable of being defeated.

## CHAPTER 108

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The defeat of Alambusha

#### Sanjaya said

1. The illustrious son of Somadatta piercing each of those mighty bow men, the sons of Draupadi with five shafts, again pierced them with seven.



2. Thus deeply afflicted by that fierce warrior, the sons of Draupadi, O king, became confounded and knew not what to do in that fight.

3. Thereafter that crusher of foes, namely Nakula's son Shatanika piercing that best of men viz., Somadatta's son with two arrows, became filled with joy and uttered a loud roar.

4. The rest of the brothers, then exerting their best in battle, pierced the irate son of Somadatta, each with ten straight-flying arrows.

5. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, the illustrious son of Somadatta sped at them five arrows and with each of those struck each of the brothers on the chest.

6. Thereupon those five brothers pierced by the arrows of that high-souled one, surrounding the hero, wounded him soon with their arrows.

7. Then the son of Arjuna filled with rage dispatched the four horses of him to the region of Death with four whetted shafts.

8. The son of Bhimasena cutting off the bow of the illustrious son of Somadatta, uttered a fierce roar and pierced the latter with numerous sharp arrows.

9. The son of Yudhishtira felled his standard having at first cut it off; so also Nakula's son felled his charioteer from its place on the chariot.

10. Sahadeva's, son, then knowing him to be already vanquished by his brothers, cut-off, O king, his head with a razor-headed arrow.

11. Then that head fell down on ground beautifying the field of battle-head that was adorned with gold and that equalled in effulgence the newly-risen sun.

12. Beholding the illustrious son of Somadatta slain and his head roll on the ground, your troops, O king, greatly frightened, began to fly in all directions.

13. Alambusha filled with rage, fought on with the highly powerful Bhimasena, like the son of Ravana fighting with Lakshmana.

14. Beholding then that man and that Rakshasa engaged in fighting with each other, all creatures were filled with delight and wonder simultaneously.

15. Then, O king, with nine shafts of depressed knots, Bhima smilingly pierced, O king, that wrathful son of Rishyshringa, that foremost of Rakshasas.

16. Thereat the Rakshasa, thus pierced, uttering aloud fierce roars in that battle, rushed, supported by all his followers, upon Bhima.

17. That Rakshasa then piercing Bhima with five arrows of depressed knots, quickly slew three hundred car-warriors engaged in supporting Bhima.

18. Once more slaying four hundred warriors, he pierced Bhima with winged shafts. Then thus deeply pierced by that Rakshasa, the highly puissant Bhima.

19. Squatted down on the terrace of his car, being overwhelmed with a swoon. Regaining his senses, the son of Maruta, overwhelmed with rage.

20. Stretched his dreadful and excellent bow capable of bearing a great strain and then he wounded Alambusha on all parts of his body with sharp shafts.

21. Thus pierced with many shafts that Rakshasa resembling a heap of antimony looked beautiful, O king like a *Kinshuka* tree decorated with flowers.

22. Thus struck in that battle with arrows shot from Bhima's bow and recollecting the slaughter of his brother by that illustrious son of Pandu, the Rakshasa.

23. Caused his appearance to be dreadful and addressing Bhimasena spoke these words - "Stay, O son of Pritha, on the field of battle and behold today the prowess I am endued with.

24. O you of perverted understanding, I had a brother by name Baka who was the foremost of the Rakshasas and endued with great prowess. He was slain by you; but that transpired out of my sight.'

25. Having thus spoken to Bhima, he became invisible then and there; and then he covered the former with a thick shower of arrows.

26. Bhima also O king filled the welkin with arrows of depressed knots, when that Rakshasa became invisible in battle.

27. Thus wounded by Bhima, the Rakshasa soon got inside his chariot; and soon again he entered into the bowels of the earth and soon again becoming little, flew into the sky.

28. He assumed forms countless and large and small. Sometimes assuming a subtle, sometimes a gross and sometimes a huge form, he began to roar like the clouds.

29. He spoke diverse kinds of words and uttered speeches everywhere. From the welkin then fell thousands of arrowy showers.

30-31. As also darts, *Kunapas* lances, pikes axes, spears, rockets, spiked maces, short javelins, battle-axes, rocks, scimitars, treacle and swords and thunder bolts. That dreadful shower of weapons created by that Rakshasa.

32. Slaughtered the soldiers of Pandu's son on the field of battle. In consequence of showers of weapons, many elephants of the Pandava host were killed.

33. As also numerous steeds and foot-soldiers, O king. Slain by the shafts of the Rakshasa, many car-warriors were dislodged from their seats in the car.

34-35. The Rakshasa then caused a river to flow on the field of battle, the waters of which were constituted by blood and eddies by cars; which abounded in alligators constituted by the elephants, which has the umbrellas of car-warriors for its swans and the flesh and marrow of animals for its mire; which was infested with snakes formed by the severed arms of human beings; which was frequented by many Rakshasas and other cannibals; and O king, which carried with its currents numerous Chedis, Panchalas and Srinjayas.

36. O monarch, seeing him careering dauntlessly on the field of battle and beholding his prowess, the Pandava became filled with anxious thought.

37. The soldiers of your army were then filled with delight; the musical instruments were then struck up emitting fierce and deep sound, making the hair to stand erect.

38. Then hearing that mighty uproar of delight caused by your troops, the son of Pandu

(Bhima) did not tolerate it, even like a snake not tolerating the sound of the palm-stroke.

39. Then with his eyes coppery in rage and consuming the foe like fire itself, the son of Maruta invoked the *Tvashtira* weapon like the god *Tvashtiri* himself.

40. Thereupon a thousand shafts started into existence from all sides. Great was the carnage that was then created in your troops by those arrows of Bhima.

41. That weapon discharged by *Bhimasena* in battle, nullifying the mighty illusion of the Rakshasa, began to afflict the Rakshasa himself.

42. Thus that Rakshasa wounded by *Bhimasena* in all parts of his body, fled towards *Drona's* division, abandoning his antagonist.

43. Then, O king, when that foremost of the Rakshasas had been worsted by the illustrious *Bhimasena*, the Pandavas filled the quarters with the echoes of their war-cries.

44. Then filled with delight, they applauded the mighty son of Maruta as the Marutas themselves applauded *Shakra* after he had vanquished *Pralhada* in battle.

## CHAPTER 109

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The slaughter of *Alambusha*

*Sanjaya* said

1. *Alambusha* then began to career dauntlessly on another part of the field. And when he was thus careering, *Hidimba's* son rushed against and quickly pierced him with whetted shafts.

2. Then like the battle between *Shakra* and *Shambara* in the days of yore, the battle between those two foremost of Rakshasas became terrible, as they invoked into existence many illusions.

3. Highly excited, *Alambusha* began to strike *Ghatotkacha*. The battle between those two best and foremost of the Rakshasas that then raged.

4-6. O master, resembled that between Rama and Ravana, that took place in days gone. Thereupon Ghatotkacha piercing Alambusha on the breast with a score of *Narachas* uttered incessantly lion-like roars; so also, O king, piercing the invincible son of Hidimba repeatedly, Alambusha became filled with delight and he roared filling the welkin with his roars. Then those two foremost of the Rakshasas, both endued with might and both excited to the highest pitch of fury.

7. Fought on with each other, displaying numerous illusions and none getting any advantage over the other. Creating hundreds of illusions and therewith confounding each other.

8. Those two Rakshasas, versed in illusive combats, fought on displaying illusions O king; and in that battle whatsoever illusions Ghatotkacha created.

9-12. Alambusha nullified them with those of his own, O ruler of men. Then beholding that foremost of the Rakshasas, that one versed in the illusive mode of warfare, viz., Alambusha fight in that manner, the Pandavas became greatly enraged. Preyed upon by anxiety and excited with rage, Bhimasena and others, supported by many best car-warriors, assailed him with force. O sire, then they having completely surrounded him with the host of their cars covered him from all sides, with their arrows, like men covering an elephant with blazing brands. Checking the force of their weapons with the illusive weapons of his own.

13. Alambusha freed himself from the press of those cars, like an elephant freeing himself from a forest-conflagration. Then stretching his bow the twang of which resembled the roar of Indra's thunder, he

14. Pierced Maruta's son (Bhima) with twenty-five, Bhimasena's son with five, Yudhishtira with three and Sahadeva with five arrows.

15. Then again, O sire, piercing Nakula with seventy-three and the sons of Draupadi, each with five arrows, he uttered a loud and dreadful war-cry.

16. Thereupon Bhimasena pierced the Rakshasa with nine arrows; Sahadeva pierced

him with five and Yudhishtira with a hundred shafts.

17. Nakula pierced him with sixty-four and the sons of Draupadi each with three shafts separately. The son of Hidimba then piercing the Rakshasa (Alambusha), with five hundred arrows.

18. Once more pierced him with seventy arrows; and that highly powerful one sent up a loud roar. In consequence of that roar of his, the earth trembled.

19. With her mountains, forests trees and watery expanses. O king, pierced deeply by those mighty car-warriors, those fierce bowmen from all sides, Alambusha.

20. Pierced all of them in return with five shafts each. Then the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha became thoroughly enraged upon the enraged Alambusha.

21. And the former (the son of Hidimba) then pierced the latter with seven shafts. O king that foremost of the Rakshasas, endued with might viz., Alambusha, being pierced deeply by his powerful antagonist.

22. Quickly created numerous arrows, furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone. Those shafts of depressed knots then penetrated into the body of the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha.

23-24. Like angry snakes of great strength entering into a mountain summit. Thereupon, O king, the Pandavas and Ghatotkacha the son of Hidimba, filled with anxiety, began to sped sharp shafts at Alambusha from all sides. Wounded sore in battle by the Pandavas desirous of securing victory, Alambusha.

25. Mortal as he was, knew not what to do. Thereat that foremost combatant, the highly powerful son of Bhimasena.

26. Beholding him in that state, resolved to slay him. Then he rushed with great vehemence upon the car of that foremost of the Rakshasas (Alambusha).

27. Car that resembled in effulgence the summit of a burning hill or a broken heap of antimony. Burning with rage, Hidimba's son flew for his own chariot to that of his adversary and seized the latter.

28. He then took the latter up from his chariot like Garuda taking up a snake. Then dragging him up with his arrows and whirling him again and again.

29. Ghatotkacha dashed him against the earth like a man dashing a earthen jar full of water against a stone. Endued with might and agility and possessed of prowess.

30. The son of Bhimasena inflamed with rage, began to frighten all your troops. With all his limbs crushed, his bones broken and appearing dreadful.

31-32. And slain by the heroic Ghatotkacha the Rakshasa Alambusha looked like a Sala tree broken and uprooted by the wind. Upon the slaughter of that ranger of the night (Alambusha), the Parthas, filled with delight. Uttered loud roars and waived their garments in the air. Beholding that mighty foremost the Rakshasas slain.

33. And crushed like a mountain, your heroic warriors, O foremost of the Bharatas, uttered exclamations of Alas and Oh.

34. Filled with curiosity, people then came to seen that Rakshasa who was lying on the field like a piece of charcoal (no longer capable of burning).

35. That best of all beings possessed of might viz., the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha, slaying Alambusha like Vasava laying Bala, uttered by loud roars.

36. For having achieved that most difficult feat Ghatotkacha was greatly praised by his sires and his other relatives. Indeed having felled his foe Alambusha even like an *Alambusha* fruit, he became filled with joy.

37. Then there arose among the Pandavas a mighty din produced by the blare of conchs and the whizz of various kinds of weapons. Hearing that din the Kauravas uttered equally loud shouts in reply, filling completely the earth with their resonance.

## CHAPTER 110

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The words of Yudhishthira

#### Dhritarashtra said

1. Tell me in detail, O Sanjaya, how did Yuyudhana oppose in battle the son of Bharadvaja? I feel a great curiosity for knowing what happened then.

#### Sanjaya said

2. Hear, O highly intelligent king, the description of that hair-stirring battle that then took place between Drona on the one hand and the Pandavas headed by Yuyudhana on the other.

3. Then, O sire, beholding the troops slaughtered by Yuyudhana, Drona himself assailed Satyaki of prowess incapable of being baffled.

4. Thereupon Satyaki pierced with five and twenty short arrows that mighty car-warrior the son of Bharadvaja, who had been advancing furiously against him.

5. Drona also, fighting heedfully and putting forth his prowess, quickly pierced Yuyudhana, with five sharp arrows furnished with wings of gold.

6. These arrows piercing through the tough armour of Satyaki, drank the blood of Drona's enemy; and, O king, they then penetrated into the earth like snakes breathing furiously.

7. Then the long-armed Satyaki, like an elephant struck with the hook, became filled with fury; and he then pierced Drona with fifty *Narachas*, all resembling fire itself.

8. Pierced quickly by Yuyudhana in battle, the son of Bharadvaja, pierced Satyaki who had been fighting vigorously, with countless shafts.

9. Then again excited to the highest pitch of fury, that fierce bowman endued with great might, once more began to afflict him of the Satvata race, with arrows of depressed knots.

10. Thus repeatedly wounded by Bharadvaja's son in battle, O ruler of men,

Satyaki could not decide as to what he should then do.

11. Then, O king Yuyudhana's face became cheerless, as he saw Drona discharge numerous sharp arrows in battle.

12. Beholding Satyaki then in that plight, your sons your troops, O ruler of men, became greatly delighted at heart and they began incessantly to roar like lions.

13. Hearing that dreadful din and seeing that descendant of Madhu's race sorely afflicted, O Bharata, king Yudhishtira addressing his troops spoke to them thus—

14. "This foremost of the Vrishnis this hero Satyaki of indomitable prowess, is about to be destroyed in battle by the heroic Drona, like the sun by Rahu.

15. Charge and rush to the spot where Satyaki is fighting." Then that ruler of men, addressing the Panchala prince Dhrishtadyumna said -

16. "Why do you tarry O son, of Prisata? Assail Drona quickly? Can you not see the great danger to ourselves that has arisen from Drona?

17. This fierce bowman Drona is playing with Yuyudhana in battle, like a boy playing with a bird bound with a string.

18. Let every one of my troops headed by Bhimasena and others and accompanied by yourself, rush to the spot where Yuyudhana's chariot is stationed.

19. Supported by my divisions, I will follow behind you. Do you all rescue Satyaki today who is now within the very teeth of death."

20. Having thus spoken, the king, O Bharata, supported by all his troops, charged Drona in that battle, for the sake of rescuing Yuyudhana.

21. May good betide you; the din that then arose there, when the Pandavas and the Srinjaya rushed against the single-handed Drona, was indeed very tremendous.

22. Then, O foremost of men, encountering Drona that son of Bharadvaja, that mighty car-warrior, they began to pour upon him showers of sharp arrows furnished with wings of Kanka-feathers and the feathers of peacocks.

23. Then Drona received all those heroes smilingly, even as a host receives his welcome guest with water and the offer of seats.

24. Then like the guests becoming gratified with hospitality of their hosts, those heroes were gratified with the shafts sped at them by that bowman viz., the son of Bharadvaja.

25. They could not then behold the son of Bharadvaja, even as men cannot look at the midday sun of thousand rays, O lord.

26. Then that foremost of all wielders of weapons, viz., Drona afflicted all of them with his myriad shafts, even as the sun afflicts the objects of his earth with his myriad rays.

27. Slaughtered (ruthlessly), the Pandava and the Srinjayas, O mighty monarch, could not find a protector, like elephants sunk in mire.

28. Like the burning rays of the sun scattering in all sides, the mighty arrows of Drona were then seen to scatter on all directions.

29. In that battle were slain twenty-five best Panchala heroes, all reckoned among *Maharathas* and all enjoying the favour of Dhrishtadyumna.

30. People then beheld the heroic Drona slay in succession the best warriors among the Pandavas and the Panchalas.

31. Slaying a hundred warriors from the Kekaya hosts and routing them completely, Drona stood on the field, O king, like the Destroyer with his mouth wide open.

32. Then, O ruler of men, the mighty-armed Drona vanquished hundreds and thousands of the Panchalas, the Srinjayas, the Matsyas and the Kekayas.

33. Pierced by the arrows of Drona, the roar they then uttered, resembled that sent up by the denizen of the woods when the forest is burnt down by a conflagration.

34. Then, O king, all the celestials, the Gandharvas and the ancestral manes said - "Behold the Panchalas and the Pandavas, with their troops, fly away from the field of battle!"

35. Thus when Drona was slaying the Somakas in battle, none ventured to assail him and none was able to pierce him.

36. When that fight destructive of best and foremost heroes was thus raging with fury, Pritha's son Yudhishtira, suddenly heard the blast of the conch Panchajanya.

37. That prince of conchs viz., the Panchajanya, filled with the breath of Vasudeva's son, yielded loud blasts. When those heroes engaged in protecting the Sindhu ruler were thus fighting.

38. And when the Dharitarashtra warriors were roaring before Vijaya's chariot, the din was so great that the twang of the Gandiva could not be heard.

39. Then the royal son of Pandu (Yudhishtira); overwhelmed with great anxiety, began to reflect thus—"Surely everything is not well with Arjuna, as this conch-blast indicates.

40. And as the Kurus are roaring out rapturously every moment." Thus thinking and with a heart filled with anxiety.

41. Ajatasatru, the son of Kunti, addressing him of the Satvata race said these words. Though his voice was choked with the vapour of grief and though he was constantly overwhelmed with swoons, yet the king (Yudhishtira) then did not lose sight of what should be done next; and addressing that foremost of the Sinis he then spoke thus—

#### **Yudhishtira said**

42. O grandson of Sini, the hour for that duty which sages of the past have enjoined to be done towards a friend by a friend in times of need, has now arrived.

43. O foremost of the Sinis, thinking within myself, I cannot find out any one, among all my troops, who is a greater well-wisher of ours than yourself, O Satyaki.

44. He that is always well-affected, he that is always obedient, in my opinion, only he should be entrusted with the commission of a serious duty.

45. Just as Keshava is ever devoted to the interests of the Pandavas, so also are you, O you of the Vrishni race, who are equal to Keshava himself in prowess.

46. I am now going to place a heavy burden on you; and it befits you to bear that burden; it behoves you not to disappoint my hopes.

47. O foremost of men, do you now assist Arjuna involved in great distress, who is your friend, brother and your preceptor.

48. You are ever true to your vows and are endued with heroism and the giver of assurances to you friends. In consequence of your feats, you are renowned in the worlds as one devoted to truthful speech.

49. O grandson of Sini, he that casts off this mortal frame in fighting for the cause of friends, becomes equal to him that gives away the earth as a gift to the twice born ones.

50. We have heard of numerous monarchs who attained to heaven having duly given away this earth as a gift to the Brahmanas.

51. O virtuous-souled one, with folded palms, I do beg of you even this, viz., that you attain, O master, the merit of giving away the earth as a gift or of something better than that (by incurring the risk of being killed for the sake of Arjuna, you friend).

52. There is only one person, namely Krishna, that giver of assurances of safety to his friends, who is ever prepared to lay down his life for the sake of his friends. You, O Satyaki, are the second.

53. None but a hero volunteers to render help to another hero fighting courageously from a desire of winning fame. An ordinary man cannot do so.

54. O descendant of Madhu's race, when this is the course to be followed, I do not find any one else save yourself, who can become a help to Arjuna.

55. On one occasion, Arjuna applauding your achievements and repeatedly reciting them afforded me great pleasure.

56. He said - "Satyaki is endued with great lightness of hands; he is versed in all modes of warfare; he is very agile, prudent, acquainted with the use of all weapons and downed with bravery. He is never confounded in the course of a fight.

57. That high-souled and mighty car-warriors possesses broad shoulders, broad chest, long arms, large jaws, great strength and unrivalled prowess.

58. He is both my pupil and friend. I am dear to him and he is dear to me. And if Yuyudhana renders me help, I can then crush the whole Kuru host completely.

59-61. O foremost of kings, even if Keshava dons the armour for rendering us aid or if Rama, Aniruddha or the mighty car-warrior Pradyumna or Gada or Sarana or Samva with the Vrishnis does so, O mighty monarch, to assist us in battle. Yet I shall select that foremost of men, that grandson of Sini of unbaffled prowess to assist me, in exclusion of the others, for, there is none equal to him."

62. This is what Dhananjaya said to me in your absence in the Dvaita forest while applauding your virtue's truly in an assembly of the righteous.

63. O descendant of the Vrishni race, it behoves you not to disappoint Dhananjaya and myself and Bhima.

64. When, returning from a sojourn to all the sacred places, I went to Dvaraka, I saw your reverence for Arjuna.

65. When at Upaplava, O grandson of Sini, I did not mark any one else who showed us greater love and affection, than yourself.

66-67. For showing kindness, therefore, to one who is your friend and preceptor, O mighty-armed hero, it behoves you, who are of noble lineage and who cherish reverence for us, to act in a way, O great bowman, worthy of your friendship, prowess, nobility of birth and devotion to truth, O descendant of Madhu's race.

68. Accoutered in armour by Drona himself, Suyodhana has suddenly gone behind Arjuna. Ere this, the other mighty car-warriors of the Kauravas have pursued Arjuna.

69. We can also hear the defiant roars that the enemy is uttering against Arjuna. Therefore, O honoured hero, O grandson of Sini, it behoves you to hie yourself to Arjuna without delay.

70. Ourselves and Bhimasena supported by our troops, shall hold Drona in check if he tries to pursue you.

71. Behold, O grandson of Sini, the Bharata troops are broken and flying away; and as they fly, hear the loud wails they utter.

72. Like the very ocean in a Parva day agitated by a mighty tempest, the army of Dhritarashtra, O sire, is being agitated by Savyasachin.

73. The dust raised by the swiftly moving chariots, horses and foot soldiers, is gradually enveloping the entire army.

74. Behold the mighty Phalguna that destroyer of hostile heroes surrounded by the Sindhu-Souviras armed with lances and javelins and numbering countless heroes among their ranks.

75. Without defeating this army it will not be possible (for Arjuna) to vanquish the ruler of the Sindhus. All these warriors again are prepared to lay down their lives for the sake of the Sindhu king.

76. Behold the invincible army of the Dharitarashtras, teeming with lances, arrows, excellent standards, heroes and elephants!

77. Hear the roar of their drums and the full blasts of their conchs, the uproar of war-cries and the rattle of their car-wheels!

78. Hear also the roars of elephants the yells of infantry and the cries of hoes-men, as they proceed causing the earth to tremble underneath their tread.

79. In the front of Arjuna is the division of the Sindhus and in his rear is the division of Drona. The foes are so strong in number, O foremost of men, that they can even afflict the lord of the celestials.

80. Sunk in his fathomless ocean of troops, Arjuna may be deprived of his life. And if he be slain in battle, how can I live?

81. Is this great catastrophe, in the shape of Arjuna's death, to overtake me when you are alive? Of blue complexion, youthful in years, of curly locks and exceedingly beautiful is that son of Pandu.

82. Light-handed in using the weapons, acquainted with various modes of warfare, that mighty armed hero, O sire, has entered into the ranks of the Bharata troops at the hour of sunrise; and the hour of sun-set is approaching fast.

83. O you of Vrishni's race, I do not know whether he lives or not. The host of the Kurus is like the mighty ocean itself.

84. O sire, single-handed has the mighty-armed Vibhatsu entered into the Bharata army which cannot be encountered even by the celestials themselves in battle.

85. In this day's battle, my heart misgives me. Yonder also is Drona sorely afflicting my troops in battle.

86. You can see, O mighty-armed hero, how this twice-born one is careering in battle. When several tasks present themselves, you know perfectly which of them should be first attended to.

87. O bestower of honour, it behoves you to accomplish first that task which is the most serious, with great activity. Of all these tasks therefore, I do think the task of aiding Arjuna should be accomplished first.

88. The rescue of Arjuna therefore should be at first effected. I do not grieve for him of the Dasharha race, who is the protector and the Lord of the universe.

89. I tell you truly that foremost of men, is capable of vanquishing in battle all the three worlds united against him.

90. What to speak of this weak host of the sons Dhritarashtra? But, O you of Vrishni's race, Arjuna is sorely pressed by numerous odds in battle.

91. He may lose his life. For this reason it is that I am so cheerless. Therefore do you follow in his track, even as men like you should do.

92. For men like Arjuna, being urged on by men like myself. Of all the Vrishni heroes, two are reckoned as Atirathas in battle.

93. One among them is the mighty armed Pradyumna and the other is yourself, O Satvata hero, who both are well-known in the world. Equal to Narayana himself in the use of weapons, so Samkarshana in physical strength.

94. You are equal, O foremost of men, to Dhananjaya in bravery. You surpass Bhishma and Drona and others versed in all modes of warfare.

95. The wise speak of you, O foremost of all male beings, saying— *There is nothing unachievable by Satyaki*— O descendant of Madhu's race.

96. Thereupon, O mighty hero, do you perform what I say to you, viz., carry out the wishes of myself and of Arjuna and of all present here.

97. O mighty-armed one, it behoves you not to falsify our expectations. Disregardful of your dear life, do you begin to career like a hero in battle.

98. O grandson of Sini, the descendants of the Dasharha race never care for their lives in the course of fight. Avoidance of fight, indecision or hesitation to fight and flying away from fight.

99. These practices of the coward and the mean, are never resorted to by the scions of the Dasharaha race. O foremost of the Shinis, the illustrious Arjuna is your preceptor, O sire.

100. Vasudeva again is superior both to yourself and to Arjuna of great intelligence. Knowing this, I speak to you these words.

101. Do not disregard my words, for I am superior to all your superiors. Whatever I say to you, know that to be approved of by Vasudeva and by Arjuna.

102. All this I have spoken to you in right earnestness. Proceed where Dhananjaya is, O you of prowess incapable of being baffled, following these words of command uttered by me.

103. Do you, O sire, penetrate into this army of the wicked-minded sons of Dhritarashtra. Entering into it and meeting duly with mighty car-warrior in battle, display O you of the Satvata race, the feats that you are capable of achieving and that are worthy of yourself.



**CHAPTER 111****(JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–****Continued****The words of Yudhishtira****Sanjaya said**

1-2. Then that foremost of the Sinis viz., Satyaki, hearing those words of the very virtuous king Yudhishtira, words that were agreeable, salutary, fraught with sweet sounds, opportune, delightful and equitable, replied, O foremost of the Bharatas, to him, saying–

3. “O you of unfading glory, I have heard all the words you have spoken for Arjuna’s sake–words that are delightful, equitable and conducive to fame.

4. At a time like the present, beholding one devoted to you like me, it behoves you, O mighty monarch, to command me as much as you can command Partha himself.

5. For the sake of Dhananjaya, I am ever prepared to sacrifice my life. Commanded by you, what is there that I would not do in this great battle.

6. O ruler of men, commanded by you, I am ready to fight even with the three worlds with the Gods. Asuras and mortals therein, what to speak of this weak host of the Kurus?

7. I will, this day, fight with the entire army of Suyodhana and vanquish it in battle, O king. This I tell you for sooth.

8. Safely shall I reach Dhananjaya who is also safe and after the slaughter of Jayadratha, we both shall come back to you, O king.

9. But, O foremost of men, I think it a duty to remind you of the words which were spoken to me by Vasudeva and the highly intelligent Phalguna.

10. I was repeatedly and strongly solicited by Arjuna in the very midst of all our troops and at the hearing of Vasudeva’s son, in these words.

11. “O you of Madhu’s race, today, with a cool understanding and resolving to fight nobly and resolutely, do you protect the king, till I succeed in slaying Jayadratha.

12. O mighty-armed hero, making over the monarch to you or to the mighty car-warriors Pradyumna only, can I go to slaughter Jayadratha, with an easy heart.

13. You know how formidable Drona is in battle, Drona who is regarded as the foremost of the Kuru warriors. You also know the vow he made before the eyes of all, O master.

14. The son of Bharadvaja, eagerly longs to capture the very virtuous king Yudhishtira. Drona also is competent enough to afflict Yudhishtira in battle.

15. Now, making over the charge of the very virtuous king Yudhishtira, that best of men to you, I am today going to slaughter the ruler of the Sindhus.

16. Slaying Jayadratha in battle, I will return as soon as possible; O descendant of Madhu’s race, meanwhile see that Drona may not capture Yudhishtira.

17. O scion of Madhu’s race, if that foremost of men Yudhishtira be captured by the son of Bharadvaja, I shall not be able to accomplish the slaughter of the king of the Sindhus and my grief will be great.

18. If the truthful son of Pandu, that foremost of the Pandavas (Yudhishtira) be captured by Drona, it is evident that we shall have to go the forest in exile once more.

19. If Drona inflamed with rage succeeds in capturing Yudhishtira, it is evident my victory over Jayadratha will be productive of no good.

20. Thereupon, O scion of Madhu’s race, O mighty-armed one, do you undertake to protect the king in battle, for my sake and for the sake of winning victory and fame.

21. Thus do you see, O king, that you have been made over to me as sacred trust by Savyasachin, afraid as he ever is of the son of Bharadvaja, on your account.

22. I see every day, O mighty-armed one that except Rukmini’s son there is no one who can be a match for Drona in battle, O master.

24. I also am regarded to be a match for the intelligent son of Bharadvaja. So it is evident, I cannot falsify that reputation which I enjoy or disregard the behests of my preceptor Arjuna or

leave you, O king, alone. The preceptor Drona, covered with impenetrable armour as he is and endowed with great lightness of hands.

25. Obtaining you in battle, will sport with you as boy with an innocent bird. If that son of Krishna bearing the *Makara* as a device on his banner, were here with his bow.

26. I could have made you over to his protection and he could have protected, you like Arjuna himself. You should look after your own protection. Who shall protect you when I am gone?

27. Who will advance against Drona for protecting you, when I shall proceed towards Arjuna? Let no fear, O king, assail your heart today on Arjuna's account.

28. That mighty-armed one will never succumb under the heaviest of burdens. Those warriors that are ranged against him viz., the Souvirakas, the Sindhus, the Pauravas.

29. The Northerners, the Southerners and all other mighty car-warriors and O king, they that are headed by Karna and are regarded to be most excellent warriors.

30. All these warriors, taken together, cannot equal the sixteenth part of Arjuna, when he becomes angry. The whole earth rising against him, with her gods, Asuras and men.

31. And the Rakshasas, the Kinnaras and the reptiles, O king, in fact, with all the mobile and immobile creatures, cannot withstand Pritha's son Arjuna in battle.

32. Knowing this, O king, let your apprehension on Dhananjaya's account be discarded, O mighty-monarch. Where the two heroic Krishnas, both fierce bowmen and both of prowess incapable of being baffled are present.

33-34. There cannot happen the slightest impediment to their prowess incapable of being baffled are present. There cannot happen the slightest impediment to their purpose. Think of the celestial prowess, the accomplishment in the use of weapons, the vast resources, the fierceness, the gratefulness and the king-heartedness of your brother in battle. When I shall leave this place for proceeding towards Arjuna.

35. Think also of Drona, of the wonderful knowledge of weapons he will display in battle; O king, the preceptor earnestly longs to capture you in battle.

36. And, O Bharata, he endeavours to keep his vow inviolate and true. Would you be able to protect yourself? Who shall protect you when I am gone?

37. Who is he, whom I may entrust with your protection and then go towards Arjuna, O king? O mighty monarch, without making over the charge of protecting you in this battle, to somebody else.

38-39. I cannot go away, O you of Kuru's race. This I tell you truly; O foremost of persons gifted with intelligence, considering view with the help of your understanding and ascertaining your highest good, do you command me, O king.

**Yudhishtira said**

40. O descendant of Madhu's race, O mighty-armed one, it is even so as you say. But in spite of all this, my mind is not very sanguine regarding Arjuna that owner of white horses, O sire.

41. I shall try my best to protect myself. Do you go, commanded by me, to the spot where Dhananjaya has gone.

42. The protection of myself in battle and the necessity of rendering aid to Dhananjaya, weighing these two propositions in the balance of my understanding, I prefer that you should do the latter.

43. Therefore prepare yourself for proceeding to the spot where Dhananjaya has gone. The highly powerful Bhima will look after my protection.

44. The son of Prisata with his uterine brothers, these mighty kings and the sons of Draupadi, O sire, will certainly, protect me.

45. The five Kekaya brothers, the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha and Virata, Drupada and the mighty car-warrior Sikhandin.

46. Dhristaketu, the puissant Kuntibhoja and O sire, Nakula, Sahadeva and the Srinjayas.

47. These warriors all, with great care, will surely exert themselves for protecting me. Neither Drona at the head of his troops, nor Kritavarman.

48-49. Will be able to defeat or afflict us. Dhrishtadyumna also that scorcher of foes, putting forth all his prowess in battle will hold the enraged Drona in check like the banks resisting the mighty main. In battle, where that slayer of foes viz., the son of Prisata will present him.

50. There Drona will not be able to pierce with force, our troops. For the destruction of Drona, Dhrishtadyumna has come out of fire.

51. Cased in mail, armed with shafts, swords, bow and decked with many ornaments. Therefore, O grandson of Sini, go with an easy heart and entertain no anxiety on my account. Dhrishtadyumna himself will resist the enraged Drona in battle.

## CHAPTER 112

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The penetration of Satyaki into the Kaurava troops

Sanjaya said

1. Hearing those words of the very virtuous king Yudhishtira, that foremost of the Sinis, became afraid of the reproach he would incur at Arjuna's hands, if he would leave the king.

2. But seeing certainly of an imputation of cowardice by the people (if he were to disobey the words of Yudhishtira), he thus thought within himself. "Let not men say that I am afraid of proceeding to the rescue of Arjuna.

3. Thus thinking over the matter in various ways, that foremost of men, the invincible Satyaki, spoke these words to the very virtuous king Yudhishtira.

4. May good betide you, O king. If you think that these arrangements will be sufficient to ensure your safety, O ruler of men, then I shall go towards Vibhatsu and carry out your command.

5. There is nothing dearer to my soul in the three worlds, then that son of Pandu (Arjuna). This I tell you in all earnestness.

6. O bestower of honour, with your permission, I will follow his track. There is nothing that I shall not do for your sake.

7. O best of men, the commands of my preceptor are ever worthy of my attention. But your words are all the more so.

8. The brothers Krishna and Arjuna are ever engaged in achieving your good; O best of all kings, know me also to be devoted to your welfare.

9. Holding your behest on my head, I will, O lord, proceed piercing this impenetrable army, for rendering help, O best of men, to that son of Pandu.

10. Here shall, I plunge into the divisions of Drona, excited as I am with rage. I shall then dart through it like a fish through the ocean, O king, to the spot where king Jayadratha.

11. Stays, protected by his troops and trembling in fear of the son of Pandu and depending upon those foremost of car-warriors viz., Drona's son, Karna, Kripa and others.

12. This distance, O king, between this place and the spot where Arjuna is exerting himself for the slaughter of Jayadratha, measures full three *Yojanas*.

13. But though Partha is three *Yojanas* away from this place, yet I shall pursue his track with a firm heart and support him till the slaughter of Jayadratha is accomplished.

14. Unless commanded by his preceptors, what man goes to battle with his enemies? When again commanded, O king, like myself, by his preceptors, what man is there that would not fight?

15. I know the spot, O king, whither I have to go. Teeming as it does with plough-shares, lances, maces, darts, bludgeons.

16. Arrows and other weapons, I shall still agitate this ocean-like host. This elephant division, numbering a thousand elephants strong, that you see.

17. All belonging to the breed known as Arjuna and all possessed of great prowess and ridden by numerous Mlechchas delighting in battle and skilled in smiting down.

18. These elephants shedding the temporal juice like clouds pouring rain, they never turn back when goaded on by those on their backs.

19. They cannot be defeated unless they are slaughtered, O king. Then again your car-warriors thousands strong in number, whom you can see.

20. Are of royal extraction and are all recognised as *Maharathas*. All of them are owners of golden chariots. They are accomplished in the use of weapons, in fighting upon cars and on the backs of elephants, O king!

21. Masters in the art of bowmanship, they are well-skilled in fighting with their fist also. They are skilled in fighting with maces and also in close quarters.

22. They are equally active in fighting with the sword and falling upon the foe with sword and buckler. They are courageous, learned and inspired with a desire for outvieing one another.

23. O king, they every day conquer countless warriors. They are under Karna's command and devotedly follow Dushasana.

24. Even Vasudeva's son praises these men as mighty car-warriors. Always solicitous of doing good to the Kurus, they are obedient to Karna.

25. Returning, at Karna's command, from their pursuit of Arjuna of white steeds and so unfatigued and in-exhausted, those brave warriors, accoutered in impenetrable mail and armed with tough bows.

26. Are made to wait for me at Duryodhana's command. For your good, O foremost descendant of the Kuru race, crushing these warriors in battle.

27. I will follow from behind the track laid open by Savyasachin. Those other elephants, O monarch, full seven hundred in number.

28-29. That you can see, all covered with armours, ridden by Kiratas and adorned with

ornaments, were formerly presented by the king of the Kiratas, together with many servants, to Savyasachin; O King these were at first engaged in doing your good.

30-31. Behold the changes brought about by time, in as much as, they are now ranged to fight against you. The Kiratas indomitable, in battle are their guides. Skilful in guiding elephants and all sprung from fire, they were all unitedly defeated in battle by Savyasachin.

32. Obedient to the commands of Duryodhana, they are now waiting unitedly to receive me. Slaying, O king, these Kiratas indomitable in battle, by means of these shafts.

33. I will follow in the track of Pandu's son intent on the slaughter of the Sindhu king. Those other elephants sprung from the race of the Anjanas.

34. Of tough hide, well-trained and shedding secretions from their temples and mouth and covered with armours made entirely of gold.

35. Those elephants are all very useful in battle and equal to Airavat himself. These have come from the northern hills and are mounted by fierce robbers.

36-38. Possessed of strong limbs, cased in armours and all excellent fighters. There are, amongst them persons born of the cow, of the ape, or of diverse other creatures, including those born of men; that division of the sinful Mlechchas assembled together and come from the strongholds of the Himavat hill, appear to be like volumes of smoke from this distance. Obtaining these and numerous other Kshatriyas.

39. As also Kripa and Somadatta's son and that foremost of car-warriors viz., Drona and the ruler of the Sindhus and Karna, as partisans, Duryodhana disregards the Pandavas.

40. He also thinks himself to be already crowned with success, being impelled by Fate. But today, all these warriors, coming within the reach of my *Narachas*.

41. Will not escape alive, O son of Kunti, even if they be gifted with the fleetness of the mind. Always held in honour by king

Duryodhana ever-depending on the prowess of others.

42. They shall today meet with their destruction, being sorely afflicted by my arrowy showers. O king, those other warriors owning golden standards, whom you can see.

43. They are known as the irresistible Kambojas. They are brave, learned and practised in the use of the bow;

44. They are arranged in serried file and are resolved to stand firmly by one another. These Akshauhini of troops belonging to the sons of Dhritarashtra, all inspired with rage.

45. And expectantly looking for me, are awaiting my arrival, being supported by numerous Kuru heroes. They are all cool-headed, O monarch and long to receive me.

46-47. Them shall I consume, like fire consuming a heap of grass. Let, therefore, O king, those who are versed in equipping chariots, equip my chariot with numerous quivers and all other implements of war and let these weapons be placed in proper places. Weapons of diverse kinds will have to be used in the terrible fight that will commence, ere long.

48. Let the chariot be stuffed with necessities, five times more than what the professors of military science direct, in as much as, I shall have to encounter the united Kambojas resembling fierce snakes of virulent poison.

49. I shall also have to engage with the Kiratas armed with various implements of war, who resemble virulent poison, who are accomplished in striking down.

50. Who have been favoured by the king and who in consequence, ever desire to achieve the good of Duryodhana. I shall also encounter the Shakas who resemble Indra himself in prowess.

51. Who are fierce as fire and difficult of being repressed like a raging conflagration. I shall have also to meet numerous other warriors, all irresistible and resembling Death himself.

52. I shall have to encounter, O king, countless indomitable warriors. For these reasons, let excellent steeds of the best breed and graced with auspicious marks be harnessed to my chariot, after they had drank their fill and been groomed properly.

**Sanjaya said**

53. Then king Yudhishtira directed quivers full of shafts and various other kinds of weapons and all other necessities, to be placed in the chariot of Satyaki.

54. Then people caused the four excellent steeds yoked to his car to drink juicy and intoxicating liquors.

55. Having caused those four steeds to slake their thirsts and walk and bathe and eat and having decked them with garlands of gold, men plucked the arrows out of their bodies;

56. Those animals that had been unharnessed for these operations, that were of golden hue, well-trained, endued with great fleetness, cheerful and extremely docile, were gain properly yoked to his chariot.

57-60. On the top of that chariot was mounted a tall standard bearing the device of a lion of golden manes. The standard was decked with banners of the hue of white clouds and it was graced with golden circles and pearls and corals. An umbrella with a huge golden staff was also placed upon that car that was groaning under the burden of weapons. When those horses decked with golden caparisons had been yoked to the car, the younger brother of Daruka, who was Satyaki's friend and charioteer came and represented to him that the car was ready, even as Matali informs Indra about the equipment of his car.

61. Then Satyaki, having taken a bath and having purified himself and having under gone every auspicious ceremony gave away to the Snataka Brahmanas thousands of golden *Nikshasas*.

62-63. Then blessed with the benedictions the latter pronounced upon him, that foremost handsome looking men. That hero worthy of adoration, having drunk *Kailataka* honey,

appeared exceedingly beautiful with reddened eyes rolling in intoxication. Having touched a brazen mirror and being highly delighted, he became filled the double his ordinary energy and looked like the blazing fire.

64. Taking upon his shoulder his bow and arrows that best of car-warriors, covered in mail and adorned with ornaments, made the twice-born ones perform the rites of propitiation on his behalf.

65-67. Handsome damsels then adored him by covering him with a shower of fried paddy, perfumes and garlands of flowers. Thereafter that brave warrior with folded palms worshipped Yudhishtira's feet; whereupon the latter smelt his head. Having undergone all these ceremonies he mounted his chariot. Thereafter those horses, cheerful, plump, of the fleetness of the wind. Invincible in battle and of the Sindhu breed, were on the point of dragging that excellent chariot of Satyaki. Bhimasena also similarly, honoured by the very virtuous king Yudhishtira.

68. Set out with Satyaki, after having duly saluted the king (Yudhishtira). Beholding these two scorers of foes cast their glances on your army.

69. All your warriors ranged against them with Drona at their head, stood still and motionless. Then beholding Bhima accoutered in mail follow him from behind.

70-71. The heroic Satyaki saluting him said these delightful words. Then Satyaki with his person filled with delight, spoke these very words addressing Bhima— "O Bhima, do you protect the king, even this is your duty. I will proceed along penetrating through this host whose hour has come;

72. At present and in all future periods, it should be your first duty to protect the king. You know my prowess and I all know yours, O Subduer of foe.

73. Therefore, O Bhima, turn back, if you, desire to do my good." Thus spoken to Bhima replied to Satyaki saying "Go you then and be victorious and successful!

74. O foremost of men, I will protect the king to the best of my prowess." Being thus addressed he of Madhu's race, replied to Bhimasena saying—

75. "Turn back, turn back, O son of Pritha; my victory today is certain in as much as you, won over by my merits, are now intent to carry out my wishes.

76. These auspicious omens also indicate my victory. When the sinful ruler of the Sindhus will be slain by the high-souled son of Pandu (Arjuna).

77. I shall embrace the illustrious king viz., Yudhishtira." Having thus spoken to Bhima, the high-famed Satyaki left him. He then cast his eyes on your troops like a tiger looking at herds of deer.

78-79. O ruler of men, beholding him look at your army, your soldiers became once more confounded and they began to tremble. Thereafter Satyaki suddenly assailed your troops, desirous of meeting Arjuna, commanded by the virtuous king Yudhishtira to do so.

## CHAPTER 113

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The penetration of the Kaurava host by Satyaki

##### Sanjaya said

1. O monarch, when desirous of battle, Yuyudhana had proceeded against your army, king Yudhishtira the virtuous, supported by his troops.

2. Followed Yuyudhana from behind, with a view to reach the chariot of Drona. Thereafter, the son of the king of the Panchalas, that invincible warrior.

3. And king Vasudana began to shout loudly amidst the Pandava troops. 'Come, strike, rush upon the foe quickly.

4. So that the invincible Satyaki may proceed easily. Many mighty car-warriors will strive hard for vanquishing him.'

5. Thus speaking, the mighty car-warriors of the Pandavas impetuously dashed against us.

Indeed they then feel upon us exclaiming "we will conquer those who will rush against ourselves."

6. Then a mighty uproar was heard near the car of Yuyudhana. Your son's troops, then covered with the shafts of Satyaki, began to run away from the field of battle.

7. O mighty monarch, your troops were then broken to hundred straggling bodies by that hero of the Satvata race. While that army was thus confused, that mighty car-warrior, the grandson of Sini.

8-9. Crushed down seven fierce bowmen all endued with heroism in the vanguard of our army. He also, O monarch, dispatched, with his arrows resembling the tongues of fire, to the abode of death, many heroic rulers of diverse realms. Some times he pierced hundred warriors with a single shaft and sometimes a single warriors with a hundred shafts.

10. Elephant-riders and elephants, horse-men and horses and car-warriors and their steeds and charioteers, Satyaki slew like Rudra slaying the beasts.

11. None of your troops then ventured to encounter Satyaki who was achieving many feats with extreme lightness and showering torrents of arrows.

12. They were then seized with panic being crushed and mangled by that long-armed hero; and beholding that proud hero, they then began to run quickly away from the field of battle.

13. Although Satyaki was alone yet, your troops thought him to be multiplied into many. They were then confounded by his energy. Then with shattered chariots and crushed car-niches.

14. With *Anukarsha*, as bannerets, golden helmets, broken wheels, torn umbrellas and fallen standards.

15-16. And O ruler of men, with arms decked with sandal-paste, adorned with *Angadas*, with human thighs, resembling trunks of elephants or the plump bodies of snakes, the earth became literally covered over. With faces resembling the moon and with heads graced with beautiful ear-rings.

17. Of warriors possessed of expansive eyes, the earth appeared exceedingly charming. With the mountain-like bodies of huge elephants cut to pieces and fallen on the field.

18-19. The earth appeared beautiful as if strewn over with hillocks. Crushed by that hero of long arms, horses, deprived of life and prostrate on the field of battle, appeared charming with their traces of burnished gold decked with strings of pearls and with their breastplates of excellent make.

20. Then he of the Satvata race penetrated into the ranks of your army slaying troops of diverse kinds and crushing your army completely.

21. Then Satyaki desired to go by the very track by which Dhananjaya had gone But he was there opposed by Drona.

22. Then the war-like Satyaki, inflamed as he was with rage, did not recede getting Drona as an opponent, even as the waters of the ocean does not recede encountering an embankment.

23. Resisting that mighty car-warrior Yuyudhana in battle, Drona pierced him with five sharp arrows all capable of penetrating to the very vitals.

24. Thereupon, O king, Satyaki in that battle, pierced Drona with seven arrows whetted on stone and furnished with golden wings as well as with wings made of the feathers of the Kanka and the peacock.

25. Drona in return, with six arrows, afflicted him and his steeds and charioteer. Then that mighty car-warrior Yuyudhana could not brook that act of Drona.

26. Uttering his war-cry aloud, Satyaki then pierced Drona at first with ten, then with six and again with eight arrows.

27. Once more Yuyudhana pierced Drona with ten shafts, his charioteer with one, his four steeds with four other arrows.

28-29. O sire in that battle, he pierced Drona's standard with another arrows. Thereupon Drona quickly discharging his swift-flying arrows that resembled fights of locusts, covered Satyaki together with his steeds,

charioteer, chariot and standard. So also Yuyudhana with countless swift-coursing shafts.

30. Covered Drona fearlessly; then Drona addressing him said- "Your preceptor has gone before, shunning me in battle as a veritable coward.

31. He avoided me though I was fighting and proceeded keeping me in the right. You shall not, escape me today with life, provided you also do not shun me fighting, like your cowardly preceptor."

**Satyaki said**

32. At the command of the very virtuous king Yudhishthira, I am proceeding in the track of Dhananjaya. Good betide you, O Brahman. Let me lose no time.

33. The path which the preceptor follows is that which the pupil should follow. Therefore, I shall quickly follow that which my preceptor has followed.

**Sanjaya said**

34. Having thus spoken, that grandson of Sini, dashed forward avoiding the preceptor; and O king, then addressing his charioteer he said

35. "Drona will put forth every effort to check me in battle. So proceed very carefully. Hear also these words of mine of grave import.

36. Yonder is seen the highly resplendent division of the Avantis. Next to them is the mighty host composed of the warriors from the south.

37. Beyond this latter array is the division of the Valhikas, beyond which again stands the division of Karna, firmly resolved to fight.

38. O charioteer, though these divisions are distinct from one another, yet depending on one another, they are supporting one another.

39. Penetrating into these divisions, do you cheerfully urge the steeds on. O charioteer, carry me in a medium speed to the spot.

40. Where the Valhikas are seen stationed with weapons uplifted, where stand the numerous Southerners headed by Suta's son Karna;

41. And where stands that division teeming with elephants, horses and cars and foot-soldiers recruited from various realms.

42. Having thus spoken and avoiding the Brahmana, he advanced addressing his charioteer thus, 'Pass through the breach between those two divisions towards the mighty and fierce host of Karna.

43. Thereupon, inflamed with rage, Drona began to pursue the illustrious Yuyudhana who was proceeding steadily, discharging numerous arrows.

44. Then Satyaki afflicting Karna's mighty host with his sharp arrows, plunged into the infinite host of the Bharatas.

45. When Yuyudhana had thus entered into the ranks of your soldiers and when your soldiers were breaking away, Kritavarman inspired with rage opposed Satyaki.

46. The highly-puissant Satyaki struck him as he was advancing with six arrows; and then with four other shafts, he slew the latter's four steeds.

47. Then again Satyaki pierced Kritavarman on the breast, with sixteen swift-flying arrows of depressed knots.

48. O mighty monarch, thus pierced with numerous arrows of great fierceness by that Satvata hero, Kritavarman did not brook it.

49. Placing a Vatsadantha, capable of flying straight and resembling fire, O king, on the string of his bow, Kritavarman drew it back to his very ears and with that arrow then pierced Satyaki on the breast.

50. That arrow furnished with beautiful feathery wings, penetrating through the armour and body of Satyaki, entered the earth, being steeped in blood.

51. O monarch, then Kritavarman acquainted with many excellent weapons, cut-off by means of his arrows, the bow of Satyaki having arrows fixed on its string.

52. Then again inflamed with rage, he pierced, O king, Satyaki of indomitable prowess on the chest, with ten shafts of great sharpness.

53. Thereat that foremost of all creatures endowed with prowess, viz., Satyaki, seeing his



bow cut asunder, wounded the right arm of Kritavarman with an excellent lance.

54. Then taking up and stretching a bow of tougher make, Yuyudhana swiftly discharged at his enemy hundreds and thousands of shafts;

55. And with that arrowy shower, he then completely covered Kritavarman and his chariot. Thus covering the son of Hridika, O monarch, Satyaki in that battle.

56. Cut off with a *bhalla* the head of the charioteer of his opponent, from his trunk. Thus slain, the driver of Kritavarman fell down from his niche of the chariot.

57. At this, the steeds of Kritavarman no longer guided by the driver's reins, flew away with great speed, from the field of battle. Thereat, greatly annoyed, the ruler of the Bhojas, himself checked his horses.

58. Then that heroic warrior stood bow in hand, ready once more for fight, seeing which your warrior applauded him highly. Taking respite for a moment only, Kritavarman urged his steeds on.

59. Himself quite undaunted, he struck terror into the hearts of his enemies. By this time however, Satyaki had proceeded leaving him behind; whereupon Kritavarman fell upon Bhimasena.

60. O mighty monarch, Yuyudhana also emerging out of the division of the Bhojas, quickly proceeded against the strong host of the Kambojas.

61. There he was opposed by many heroic car-warriors; in consequence whereof, Satyaki of unbaffled prowess could not move even one step forward.

62. Thereafter uniting his troops and vesting the ruler of the Bhojas' with their command, Drona with a firm resolve for fighting with Yuyudhana, rushed against him.

63. Then beholding Drona follow Yuyudhana from behind, the foremost warriors among the Kurus filled with delight began to impede his progress.

64. Meanwhile the Panchalas commanded by Bhimasena, encountering that foremost of

car-warriors viz., Hridika's son, became greatly depressed at heart.

65. O king, then putting forth his energy, the heroic Kritavarman resisted all his foes who though depressed at first were then exerting vigorously.

66-67. With the shower of his arrows Kritavarman then checked the vehicles of his foes standing before him. The Pandava warriors though thus afflicted by the Bhoja king, yet stood like noble heroes, desirous on encountering the divisions of the Bhojas and of winning great renown in battle.

## CHAPTER 114

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The display of the prowess of Kritavarman

Dhritarashtra said

1. Our army is possessed of many excellencies; and it is composed of various kinds of troops; its efficiency is great. O Sanjaya, it is disposed of in order in perfect accordance to the rules of military science and it is strong in numbers.

2. The warriors therein are ever well-treated by us and they are attached to us very much. The army is not newly recruited and its aspect is wonderful. Its efficiency has been tested previously.

3-4. The warriors belonging to it are neither very old, nor very young; they are neither lean nor very corpulent. They are of active habits, well-built, strong-bodied and free from any disease. They are clad in cuirasses and well-equipped with offensive weapons. They are accomplished in the use of various weapons and are well practised in the exercise of all kinds of weapons.

5. They are experts in mountain upon and descending from vehicles, in moving forward and in falling back, in striking down effectually and in advancing and retreating.

6. They have before been examined in the management of steeds, elephants and cars; and

after due examination, they have been employed on pay.

7. And no for the sake of family relationship, nor from favour, nor from kinship. They have not come uncalled for, nor are they unpaid soldiers.

8. They are high-born, respectable, ever-contented, well-fed and submissive. They have been duly honoured and rewarded by ourselves. They are all endued with fame and intelligence.

9. They again, O sire, are defended by our best warriors and other's of pious practices, all of whom are foremost men and resemble the Lokapalas themselves.

10. Numerous kings solicitous of our welfare, who have, out of their own accord, joined us with all their forces and followers, also defend them.

11. Truly our army is like the vast ocean swelling with the waters of various stream flowing into it from all sides. It teems with chariot and steeds, which though devoid of wings are still capable of moving through the air like the winged rangers of the sky.

12. My army abounds in elephants with the temporal juice flowing down their cheeks. Then to what else, but Destiny, can the slaughter of such an army be attributed?

13. (Ocean-like as our army is), numerous warriors constitute its waters; and the various vehicles constitute its dreadful and surging waves. Innumerable maces, swords, darts, shafts and javelins constitute the oars plied on it.

14. Teeming with standards and ornaments, the combatants form the lotuses on it. The swift-moving steeds and elephants and chargers constitute the tempest that lashes in into fury.

15. Drona forms its fathomless cave, Kritavarman its mighty lake and Jalasandha its dreadful alligator and Karna, the rising of the moon that makes it swell with pride and energy.

16. O Sanjaya, on a single car that foremost of the Pandavas viz., Arjuna has gone piercing through my ocean-like host and Yuyudhana also has followed him;

17. And O Sanjaya, when Savyasachin has thus penetrated into my host and also that

excellent car-warrior Satyaki of the Satvata race has done so, I do not think that any one of my troops will be able to escape with his life.

18. Beholding those two heroes dash with speed through the vanguards of my troops and seeing the ruler of the Sindhus come within range of arrows shot from the *Gandiva* bow.

19. What course of action did the Kurus, goaded on to destruction by Fate then adopt? What became of them at that hour when the battle raged with fury?

20. O son, I consider the assembled Kaurava host already within the jaws of Death. Their prowess in battle is no longer seen to be what it once was.

21. Krishna and the son of Pandu have both entered into our troops, receiving not even the slightest wound. O Sanjaya, there is none also who can resist them.

22. Many mighty car-warriors and combatants have been admitted into our army after due examination. They all have been gratified by us with due remunerations and agreeable speeches.

23. There is none among my troops who has been maltreated. Every one receives his pay and ration, according to his abilities.

24. O Sanjaya, there is none who is not a good warrior, none who receives remuneration less than what he deserves or none who receives no pay.

25. The soldiers are honoured by me to the best of my resources, with gifts, honours and seats. My sons, relatives and my kinsmen, O son, all treat them in the same respectful manner as I do.

26. Even such troops, encountering Savayasachin in battle, are being vanquished by him; they are also being crushed by the grand son of Sini; what can it be but Destiny?

27. Those who are protecting and those who are protected, are following the same road, the defender and the defended!

28. Beholding Arjuna stand before the ruler of the Sindhus in hostile attitude, what measure did my highly foolish son adopt?

29. Beholding also Satyaki dash through his troops like one fearless, what measures also did Duryodhana consider to be suitable to the situation?

30. Beholding those two foremost of car-warriors, both beyond the reach of all weapons, thus penetrate into my host, what resolution did my troops then form

31. Meseems, beholding Krishna of the Dasarha race and that foremost of the Sinis, both exerting for the sake of Arjuna, my sons are giving way to grief.

32. Beholding him of the Satvata race and Arjuna pass through my divisions and beholding the Kurus fly in all directions, Meseems, my sons are giving way to grief.

33. Meseems my sons are giving way to grief, beholding the car-warriors routed and hopeless of conquering their foes and exert themselves in flying away.

34. Meseems my sons are giving way to grief, beholding the terraces of cars made empty by Satvata and Arjuna and also beholding the warriors slain (by thousands).

35. Meseems my sons are lamenting, beholding the steeds, the chariots, the elephants and thousands of heroic soldiers flying away in haste from the field of battle.

36. Meseems my sons are lamenting beholding the huge elephants of my army fly away smitten by the arrows of Arjuna and also beholding them fallen and falling.

37. Meseems my sons are lamenting seeing steeds deprived of riders and warriors deprived of chariots, by Arjuna and Satyaki.

38. Meseems my sons are lamenting seeing large bodies of steeds slain and routed in all directions in battle, by the son of Pritha and the descendant of Madhu's race.

39. Meseems my sons are lamenting, hopeless of their victory, by seeing the divisions of infantry fly with haste in all direction.

40. Meseems my sons are lamenting beholding those two invincible heroes pass in a moment through the division of Drona.

41. O son, I am indeed overwhelmed with a stupor upon hearing that Krishna and Arjuna of unfading glory together with Satyaki of the Satvata race, have entered into my divisions.

42. When that foremost of car-warriors among the Sinis had plunged into my host and when he had passed through the Bhoja division, what, O Sanjaya, did the Kurus do?

43. O Sanjaya, relate to me also how the battle raged there where Drona began to crush the Pandava host in battle.

44. Drona was a warrior of superior skill; he was endued with strength, accomplished in the use of weapons and indomitable in battle. How was it then possible for the Panchalas to pierce that hero in battle?

45. Solicitous of Dhanajaya's victory, the Panchalas were Drona's implacable foes, so also that mighty car-warrior the son of Bharadvaja was an inveterate enemy of theirs.

46. O Sanjaya, skilful as you are in narration, tell me all that in detail which Arjuna did for bringing about the slaughter of the Sindhu king.

#### Sanjaya said

47. O foremost of the Bharatas, it behoves you not to lament like an ordinary person, when you are overtaken, O hero, by a calamity which owes its origin to your own misconduct.

48. Formerly, many of your well-wishers including the wise Vidura, advised you saying, "O king, do not forsake the sons of Pandu's but to those advices you paid no heed."

49. He that sets at nought the advices of well-wishing friends, weeps like yourself when a calamity overtakes him.

50. O king, the descendant of the Dasarha race entreated you for the conclusion of peace. But the highly-renowned Krishna then did not obtain that boon at your hands.

51-52. Knowing your worthlessness, your partiality for your sons, your duplicity in virtue, your animosity against the sons of Pandu and ascertaining your crooked intentions against them and listening to many of your incoherent and delirious bewailings, O foremost of kings.

53. That puissant lord of all the worlds, that one conversant with the truth of everything in the worlds, namely, the son of Vasudeva, caused the drums of war to be sounded among the Kurus.

54. This awful destruction has overtaken you through your own faults; O giver of honour, it behoves you not to lay all blames on the shoulders of Duryodhana.

55. As these incidents developed themselves, no good action was performed by you either in the beginning, in the middle or in the end, O Bharata. The defeat that can be anticipated now, is entirely owing to your fault.

56. Therefore, knowing as you do, the fate of this world, quietly and attentively hear how the battle that resembled that between the gods and the Asuras, took place.

57. When Sini's grandson of invincible prowess had entered into your troops, the troops of the Parthas headed by Bhimasena, fell upon your troops.

58. Then the mighty car-warrior Kritavarman, single-handed, received in that battle, the enraged Pandava troops who had been rushing to the battle with their followers.

59. Just as the banks resist the surging waves of the sea, so did the son of Hridika resist the Pandava troops in battle.

60. Then we beheld the wonderful prowess of Hridika's son inasmuch as the united divisions of the Parthas were unable to bear him down in battle.

61. Thereupon the mighty-armed Bhima piercing Kritavarman with three swift-coursing arrows, blew his conch-shell, imparting thereby delight unto the Pandava troops.

62. Then Sahadeva pierced Hridika's son with twenty, Yudhishtira the virtuous with five and Nakula with a hundred shafts.

63. The sons of Draupadi pierced him with three and seventy, Ghatotkacha with seven and Dhristadyumna pierced Kritavarman with three arrows.

64. Virata, Drupada and Yajnaseni each pierced him with five shafts, Sikhandin also

pierced Hridika's son with five swift flying arrows.

65-66. He then once more smilingly pierced him with twenty shafts. Thereupon, O king, Kritavarman piercing each of these mighty car-warriors separately with five shafts, pierced Bhima with another seven shafts. Then he felled from the latter's car his standard and cut-off his bow.

67. Then that mighty car-warrior making haste and burning with rage, pierced Bhima whose bow had been severed, on the breast, with seventy sharp arrows.

68. That hero (Bhima) endued with prowess, thus deeply pierced by the excellent shafts of Hridika's son, began to tremble in the terrace of his car, like a mountain shaking during an earthquake.

69. Beholding Bhima thus involved in a dangerous situation, O king, the Pandava warriors headed by Yudhishtira, began to afflict Kritavarman by shooting numerous arrows.

70. Then impaling Kritavarman within a circle of chariots, the Pandava warriors, O sire, filled with delight, began to wound him with their arrows, out of a desire for rescuing the son of Maruta.

71. Thereafter the highly puissant Bhimasena regaining his senses, grasped, in that battle, a dreadful lance of golden staff and iron head.

72. Then he hurled from his own car that lance at the car of Kritavarman, with great force. That lance hurled by the arm of Bhima and resembling a snake that had recently cast off its slough.

73. began to burn dreadfully as it coursed towards Kritavarman. Then as that lance, effulgent like the fire that appears at the end of a *Yuga*, was coursing swiftly towards.

74. The son of Hridika, he cut it in twain with a couple of arrows. That dart decked with golden ornaments, thus severed, fell down on the earth.

75. And, O king, it there began to illumine the points of the compass like a mighty meteor dropping from the heavens. Thereat Bhima beholding his lance baffled, became excited to the highest pitch of fury.

76. Thereafter, taking up another bow of great toughness and emitting loud twang, the enraged Bhimasena in that battle began to resist the son of Hridika.

77. Then, O king, Bhima of awful prowess, pierced Kritavarman, on the centre of his breast, with five arrows. All this is the result of your wicked policy.

78. Then, O sire, the ruler of the Bhojas wounded on all parts of his body, appeared on the field of battle like a red Ashoka tree covered with blossoms.

79. Thereafter Kritavarman inflamed with rage, smilingly striking Bhimasena with three arrows, began, in return, to pierce the other warriors (with his arrows).

80. That mighty bowman then pierced those car-warriors exerting their best in battle, each with three shafts. They then also pierced him in return, each with seven shafts.

81. Then that mighty car-warrior of the Satvata race, inflamed with rage, smilingly cut-off the bow of Sikhandin with a razor-headed arrow.

82. Thereupon on the severance of his bow, Sikhandin burning with rage and hastening as much as possible, took up a sword and a buckler decked with hundreds of moons.

83. Whirling that mighty sword decked with gold, Sikhandin hurled it at the chariot of Kritavarman.

84. O king, then that mighty sword, cutting off his bow with arrows placed on its string, dropped, O king, on the ground like a luminous body falling down from the skies.

85. Meanwhile many mighty car-warriors, making haste began to pierce Kritavarman deeply and quickly with their arrows.

86. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, taking up a fresh bow and leaving the one cut-off, that slayer of hostile heroes, namely Hridika's son.

87. Pierced the Pandavas in battle, each with three straight-flying arrows. He then pierced Sikhandin at first with three and then with five arrows.

88. Then the highly renowned Sikhandin also, taking up another bow, covered the son of Hridika with swift-flying arrows. Furnished with heads resembling the mouth of tortoises.

89. Then, O king, the son of Hridika, excited with wrath, in that battle, quickly rushed upon that mighty car-warrior that son of Yajnasena.

90. Who had been, O king, the cause of death of the illustrious Bhima. Then the heroic Kritavarman displaying his prowess fell upon Sikhandin like a tiger falling upon an elephant.

91. Then those two subduers of foes, resembling two elephants guarding the points of the compass and looking like two blazing fires, attacked each other with their showers of arrows.

92. They stretched their two excellent bows and placed many arrows on their bow-strings. Like two suns shooting numerous rays, they also shot myriad arrows.

93. Those two mighty car-warriors afflicting one another with their sharp-arrows, appeared beautiful like two suns that rise at the end of a Yuga.

94. In that battle then, Kritavarman pierced that mighty car-warrior the son of Yajnasena at first with seventy three and then again with seven arrows.

95. Thus deeply pierced and extremely pained, the latter squatted down on the terrace of his car; and he lost hold of his arrows and bow and was overwhelmed with a swoon.

96. Then your troops, O foremost of men, beholding Sikhandin cheerless in battle, began to applaud Hridika's son and they waived their garments in the air.

97. Then knowing Sikhandin to be afflicted sore with the arrows of the son of Hridika, his driver, in all haste, carried that mighty car-warrior away from the field of battle.

98. Beholding Sikhandin overthrown on the terrace of his car, the Parthas in that battle

quickly surrounded Kritavarman with their chariots.

99. Then the mighty car-warrior Kritavarman filled his enemies with wonder, inasmuch as he alone succeeded in resisting the sons of Pritha and their followers in battle.

100. Conquering the Parthas, the mighty car-warrior Kritavarman vanquished the Chedis, the Panchalas, the Srinjayas and the valourous Kekayas.

101. Thus slaughtered by Hridika's son in battle, the Pandavas began to run hither and thither and they could not then fight steadily.

102. Conquering the son of Pandu viz., Bhimasena in battle, Hridika's son then remained on the field, like a blazing fire free from even a single curl of smoke.

103. Those mighty car-warriors routed by the son of Hridika, were compelled to turn their faces leack, afflicted as they were with incessant showers of arrows.

## CHAPTER 115

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The slaughter of Jalasandha

Sanjaya said

1. Hear, O king, with undivided attention, the reply to the questions you have asked me. When the Pandava troops had been routed by the illustrious son of Hridika.

2. When then Parthas had been shamefully humiliated and when your troops were filled with delight, it was Satyaki that became the protector of the Pandavas solicitous of protection, for the king was then in the fathomless depth of distress.

3. That hero viz., the grandson of Sini, hearing that fierce uproar of your army in that dreadful battle, quickly, O monarch, turned back and advanced against Kritavarman.

4. He filled with rage and fury said to the charioteer O Suta! Proceed my excellent chariot towards Hardikya.

5. Behold, he Angrily is crushing the army of Pandu. O Suta! I will come again with victory on them.

6. Having said these words O intelligent one! He proceeded towards Kritavarman in a moment.

7. Then Hridika's son Kritavarman inflamed with wrath, covered the grandson of Sini with clouds of whetted arrows. Thereupon Satyaki also became excited with rage.

8. Thereafter the grandson of Sini quickly sped at Kritavarman a whetted *bhalla* and four other shafts in that battle.

9. These arrows slew the steeds of Kritavarman and his bow was cut-off by the *bhalla*. Thereafter Satyaki pierced his charioteer and the supporter of his rear, with numerous sharp arrows.

10. Thereafter depriving Kritavarman of the use of his chariot, Satyaki of prowess incapable of being baffled, began to afflict his divisions with arrows of depressed knots.

11. Afflicted with the arrows shot by the grandson of Sini, the army then began to break away. Then Satyaki of unbaffled prowess proceeded with great velocity.

12. Hear, O king, what feats were achieved by that hero endued with great prowess, at the cost of your troops. O mighty monarch, passing through the ocean-like host of Drona.

13. And vanquishing Kritavarman in battle, that hero Satyaki filled with joy, addressed his charioteer saying "Proceed slowly without fear."

14. Then holding that army of yours teeming with car-warriors, horses, elephants and foot-soldiers, he again addressed his charioteer saying–

15. 'Yonder is the mighty division of elephants which you see on the left of Drona's host and which appears like a dark mass of clouds and which is headed by Rukmaratha;

16. O charioteer, they number many and are irresistible in battle. They have been deputed by Duryodhana to oppose me and are ready to cast off their lives any moment.

17. They are mounted by princely combatants who are all great bowmen and capable of displaying great prowess in battle. Born in the Trigartta country, they are all illustrious car-warriors owning golden standards.

18. Those brave combatants with their faces turned towards me, are waiting for me desirous of battling with me. O charioteer drive the horses, quickly take me to that spot.

19. Before the very eyes of the son of Bharadvaja, I shall fight with the Trigarttas." Then that charioteer obedient to the behests of that hero of the Satvata race, began to proceed as directed.

20. The excellent steeds obedient to the reins of the charioteer, then bore Satyaki to the battle, on an effulgent chariot decked with standards and looking the solar disc.

21. The steeds yoked to Satyaki's car resembled the wind in fleetness and were of the effulgence of silver or the moon or the lotus. Then as Satyaki advanced in battle being borne by excellent steeds of the hue of conch-shells.

22. The brave Kaurava warriors surrounded him with their elephant division, shooting sharp arrows of various kinds, all capable of penetrating through everything.

23. Satyaki of the Satvata race then fought on with that elephant division, discharging many whetted shafts; and he covered it with his arrows like clouds at the end of summer covering the mountain-breast with torrents of rain.

24. Wounded with arrows resembling in touch the thunderbolt of Indra shot by the heroic grandson of Sini, those elephants began to fly away leaving the field of battle.

25. With their tusks broken, bodies drenched with blood, heads and frontal globes rent open and ears, faces and trunks cut-off and themselves deprived of their drivers and standards.

26. With their skin lacerated their bells broken and their mighty standards cut-off and blankets thrown off, those elephants, O king, having none to ride them, began to fly away in all directions.

27. They uttered various yells and roars that resembled the rumble of rain clouds. With *Narachas*, with *Vatsadants*, with *Vallas*, with *Anja-likas*.

28. With *Kshurapras* and crescent-shaped arrows, they were then ript open by that hero of the Satvata race. Discharging urine and excreta and shedding blood copiously, they then began to fly away.

29. Some then began to roll about, some limped, some fell down and some became pale and cheerless. Thus that elephant division afflicted by Yuyudhana.

30. With his arrows that resembled the sun or the fire, began to fly away in all directions. When that elephant division was being thus slaughtered, the highly powerful Jalasandha.

31. With great force goaded the elephant he rode towards the car of Yuyudhana yoked with steeds of argentine hue. That hero then covered in a golden coat of mail, adorned with golden Angadas and purified.

32. And graced with Kundalas and a diadem and armed with a sword and anointed with red sandal paste and wearing round his head an effulgent garland of gold.

33. And bearing on his breast a *Niska* hanging by a lustrous chain round the neck and stretching his golden bow sitting on the back of the elephants.

34. Appeared as beautiful, O mighty, monarch, as a mass of clouds surcharged with lightning. Then that elephant of the Magadha king, that king was advancing with fury.

35. Satyaki checked like the continent resisting the surging waves of the sea. Then beholding the career of his elephant checked by the excellent arrows shot by Sini's grandson.

36-37. The highly puissant Jalasandha, O king, became greatly enraged. Then O mighty monarch excited with rage, Jalasandha pierced with tough arrows the grandson Sini on his broad breast. Thereafter with a *bhalla*, well whetted and tempered.

38-39. He cut-off the bow of that Vrishni hero (Satyaki). Then O Bharata, the heroic ruler

of the Magadhas pierced with five sharp arrows, Satyaki whose bow had been burst open. Then that highly powerful Satyaki being thus pierced with numerous arrows by Jalasandha.

40. Did not tremble in the least; that indeed appeared wonderful. Then that powerful hero thought fearlessly of the shafts he should use.

41. Then taking up another bow he said - wait. Having spoken these two words only, the grandson of Sini pierced Jalasandha on his broad chest.

42-43. With a group of sixty arrows, smiling all the while. Then with a razor-headed arrow of great sharpness, he cut-off the mighty bow of Jalasandha and then pierced him with three shafts, thereat Jalasandha casting off that severed bow and the arrows fixed on its string.

44. Quickly hurled a Tomara at Satyaki O sire. That Tomara piercing through the left arm of the illustrious Madhava in that battle.

45. Entered the earth, like a mighty and dreadful snake breathing fiercely. When his left arm had been thus pierced Satyaki of prowess incapable of being baffled.

46. Wounded Jalasandha with thirty extremely sharp arrows. Thereupon the mighty Jalasandha grasped a sword.

47. And a shield made of bull's hide and decked with a hundred moons. Then whirling that sword in the air, he let it go towards the grandson of Sini.

48. Cutting off the bow of Sini's grandson, that sword then fell on the ground; and lying on the surface of the earth, it then appeared beautiful like a circle of fire.

49. Then taking up another bow capable of piercing all kinds of things, large as a Sala offshoot and emitting twang resembling the rumble of Indra's thunder.

50-51. Satyaki inflamed with rage, began to stretch it; and then he pierced Jalasandha with the shafts shot from that bow. Then Satyaki that illustrious descendant of Madhu's race smilingly cut-off the two arms of Jalasandha, decked with various ornaments. Then those arms resembling two bludgeons were seen to fall down from the back of the elephant.

52-53. Like a couple of five-hooded snakes dropping down from a mountain. Then with another razor-headed arrow Satyaki lopped off his adversary head graced with beautiful teeth and with a pair of charming ear-rings. The headless and armless trunk of dreadful aspect.

54. Then drenched Jalasandha's elephant with blood. Having slain Jalasandha in battle, he of the Satvata race speedily.

55. Brought down the wooden structure from the back of that elephant. O king, steeped in blood, that elephant of Jalasandha.

56. Bore that precious seat hanging down from its back. Afflicted with the shafts of the Satvata hero, the huge animal crushed the ranks of its own party.

57. As it careered wildly uttering fierce yells of agony. Then, O sire, loud lamentations arose in the ranks of your soldiers.

58. At the sight of Jalasandha slain by that foremost of the Vrishnis. Your troops then turning away their faces began to fly away in all directions.

59. But hopeless of obtaining victory over the foe they immediately after resolved to fight to the bitter end. Meanwhile, Drona that foremost of all wielders of bow.

60. Approached the mighty car-warrior Yuyudhana, born by his fleet steeds. Many best warriors of the Kuru host, then beholding the grandson of Sini inspired (with pride and fury).

61. Rushed at him in rage, accompanied by Drona himself. Then, O king, there ensued a fight between the Kurus headed by Drona on one side and Yuyudhana on the other, that resembled the dreadful battle that was fought in days gone by, between the Gods and the Asuras.

## CHAPTER 116

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The defeat of Kritavarman

Sanjaya said

1. Then, O mighty monarch, all those warriors accomplished in smiting down the foe and united together, began to fight with



Yuyudhana quickly discharging numerous arrows.

2. Then Drona pierced Satyaki with seven and seventy shafts of great sharpness; Durmursana pierced him with twelve and Dussaha with ten shafts.

3. Vikarna pierced Satyaki with thirty whetted shafts furnished with wings of Kanka feather, on his left side and on the centre of his chest.

4. O sire, Durmukha then pierced Sini's grandson with ten shafts, Dushasana pierced him with eight and Chitrasena with a couple of arrows.

5. Then with a mighty shower of arrows Duryodhana, O king, afflicted that mighty car-warrior the descendant of Madhu's race. O king, other heroic warriors followed his example.

6. Thus opposed on all sides by your sons, all mighty car-warriors, he of the Vrishni race began to pierce them all in return with distinct groups of straight-going shafts.

7. Satyaki pierced the son of Bharadvaja with three arrows, Dussaha with nine, Vikarna with twenty-five, Chitrasena with seven.

8. Durmarsena with twelve, Vivinsati with eight, Satyavrata with nine and Vijaya with ten shafts.

9. Then that mighty car-warrior Satyaki, having pierced Rukmangada, stretching his bow quickly assailed your son Duryodhana who also was a mighty car-warrior.

10. Then with his arrows Satyaki deeply pierced the king of all creatures who is regarded as he best car-warrior in all the worlds. Thereupon a battle commenced between them.

11. Then those two mighty car-warriors discharging sharp arrows and placing other arrows on the bow-string, rendered each other invisible in battle.

12. Satyaki then pierced sore by the king of the Kurus, appeared highly beautiful. He shed blood copiously like a sandal tree discharging its sap.

13. Pierced with myriads of shafts by him of the Satvata race, your son appeared beautiful like a golden stake set up at a sacrifice.

14. Thereafter, O king, that descendant of Madhu's race, with a razor-headed shaft, cut-off in battle the bow of the Kuru king that best wielder of the bow, smiling all the while.

15. Then he pierced the king whose bow had been severed, with numerous shafts. Thereat mangled with the arrows of his light-handed enemy.

16. In that battle, he could not bear this sign of the success of his enemy. Then taking up another bow of great toughness and golden staff.

17. He pierced Satyaki quickly with a group of hundred arrows. Pierced deeply by that great bowman endued with might, viz., your son, Satyaki.

18. Under the influence of wrath began to afflict your son severely. Beholding the king thus afflicted, your other sons all mighty car-warriors.

19. Covered Satyaki with a shower of mighty arrows. Thus covered by your sons, all mighty car-warriors.

20. Satyaki piercing each with five arrows, again pierced each with seven shafts. He then quickly pierced Duryodhana with eight swift-coursing arrows.

21. Then smiling he cut-off Duryodhana's bow that used to inspire terror into the hearts of the enemy. Then with his arrows, he cut down the latter's standard and the elephant of pearls embossed thereon.

22. Then slaying with four sharp arrows the four horses of Duryodhana, that illustrious warrior felled the charioteer of the latter with a razor-headed arrow.

23. After this, filled with delight he began to cover the king of the Kurus, that mighty car-warrior, with numerous arrows, all capable of penetrating to the very vitals.

24. Thus pierced by the excellent shafts of the grandson of Sini, O king, your son Duryodhana suddenly fled away from the field of battle.

25. He then ascended the car of Chitrasena that great bowman. Then cries of Alas and Oh were uttered by your troops as they beheld the king in that battle.

26. Devoured by Satyaki, like Soma in the skies devoured by Rahu. Then hearing that woeful exclamation, the mighty car-warrior Kritavarman.

27. Quickly proceeded to the spot where that mighty-descendant of Madhu's race, was fighting. He came stretching his bow and urging his steeds.

28. And encouraging his charioteer with the words. Proceed in haste, Proceed in haste. Beholding him come like the Destroyer himself with mouth wide open.

29. O mighty Monarch, Yuyudhana addressed his charioteer saying—'Yonder is the heroic Kritavarman rushing at me on his chariot.

30. Encounter this foremost all wielder of bow and drive your car before him." Then urging to the top of their speed those horses duly equipped.

31. The charioteer drove the car towards the king of the Bhojas held in high honour by all bowmen. Then highly excited and looking like two blazing fires.

32. Those two foremost of men encountered one another like two tigers endued with great agility. Then Kritavarman wounded the grandson of Sini with twenty-six.

33-34. Sharp arrows all well-whetted; and his charioteer with five shafts. With four excellent shafts he pierced the four steeds of the Satvata hero, steeds whose teeth were graceful and that were of the Sindhu breed. Then stretching his mighty-bow of golden back, that one of golden standards.

35-36. Decked with golden Angadas and clad in a golden mail, covered Satyaki with arrow of golden wings. Thereafter the grandson of Sini quickly sped numerous shafts at Kritavarman, as he was longing to have a sight of Dhananjaya. Pierced deeply by his powerful adversary, that scorcher of foes.

37-38. Began to tremble like a mountain during an earth-quake. Then Satyaki of prowess incapable of being baffled quickly pierced his four steeds with sixty-three and his charioteer

with seven sharp arrows. Then Satyaki placed on his bow string a shaft furnished with golden wings.

39. That emitted great effulgence and looked like an enraged snake; that arrow that resembled the dart of Death, wounded Kritavarman sorely.

40. Then that fierce arrow, penetrating through the effulgent and gold-decked armour of Kritavarman, fell down on the ground, steeped completely in blood.

41. Covered all over with blood and afflicted with the arrows of the Satvata hero, Kritavarman, throwing aside his bow and arrow, fell upon his niche on the chariot.

42. That one of infinite prowess and of teeth resembling those of the lion, that foremost of men, then fell on his knees on the terrace of his car, being afflicted by arrows of Satyaki.

43. Thereafter Satyaki having successfully checked Kritavarman who resembled the thousand-armed Arjuna or the unagitable ocean itself, quickly advanced onwards.

44-45. Then passing through the division of Kritavarman, bristling with swords, lances and javelins and teeming with elephants, steeds and cars and shedding blood copiously, before the very eyes of all the troops that foremost of the descendants of Sini moved forwards like the slayer of Vritra passing through the Asura host.

46. Meanwhile the son of Hridika regaining his composure and grasping another mighty bow, stood on the field of battle checking the mighty Pandava hosts.

## CHAPTER 117

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA).—

#### Continued

#### The display of Satyaki's prowess

Sanjaya said

1. When the troops on those parts of the field through which Sini's grandson had passed were compelled by him to tremble, the son of Bharadvaja covered him with a mighty shower of arrows.

2. Then a fierce fight commenced between Drona and him of the Satvata race, before the very eyes of all the troops—fight that resembled that between Bali and Vasava fought in the day's of yore.

3. Then Drona pierced Sini's grandson on the forehead with three beautiful shafts wholly made of iron and looking like so many snakes of virulent poison.

4. O mighty monarch, with those straight-going shafts struck on the forehead, Yuyudhana appeared beautiful like a mountain with three peaks.

5. Then Bharadvaja's son, ever on the watch for an opportunity for defeating his foes, once more sped at Satyaki shafts whose whizz resembled the rumble of Indra's thunder.

6. Then he of the Dasarha race conversant with many excellent weapons, cut-off those shafts shot from Drona's bow and coming towards him, each with a couple of arrows equipped with excellent wings.

7. Then, O ruler of men, Drona beholding his light-handedness, smiled and then pierced that foremost of Sini's descendant with thirty sharp arrows.

8. Then once more he pierced him with fifty and hundred shafts successively, thus surpassing with his own lightness of hands the lightness displayed by Yuyudhana.

9. Just as, O king, mighty snakes excited to fury, plunge off from the ant-hills, so from the car of Drona numerous shafts were seen to fly.

10. Similarly hundreds and thousands of shafts all capable of drinking blood, covered the car of Drona being discharged by Yuyudhana.

11. O sire, we were then not able to detect which of the two, that foremost of the Brahmanas or he of the Satvata race, excelled the other in lightness of hands; but both of those best of men appeared to be equal.

12. Then excited to the highest pitch of fury, Satyaki struck Drona in battle with nine shafts of depressed knots. He also struck with sharp shafts, the standard.

13. And charioteer of Drona, before his very eyes. Then beholding the lightness of hands displayed by Yuyudhana, the mighty car-warrior Drona.

14. Piercing the charioteer of him of Madhu's race with seventy arrows and the horses with three arrows each, cut-off his standard with a single arrow.

15. Then with another broad-headed shaft equipped with golden wings, he cut off bow of that illustrious descendant of Madhu's race.

16. Thereat that mighty car-warrior Satyaki highly excited with rage, laid aside his bow and taking up a mighty mace, hurled it at the son of Bharadvaja.

17. Then Drona with numerous shafts of various appearance, baffled that mace made of iron and covered with silken cloth, as it coursed vehemently towards him.

18. Thereafter Satyaki of prowess incapable of being baffled taking up another bow, pierced the heroic son of Bharadvaja with numerous shafts whetted on stone.

19. Thus wounding Drona in battle he sent up his war-cry. But Drona that foremost of all wielders of weapons did not brook that war-cry of his.

20. Then taking up a lance of golden staff and iron-head, Drona hurled it vehemently at the car of that descendant of Madhu's race (Satyaki).

21. That lance resembling the Destroyer himself, without reaching the grandson of Sini, penetrated through his chariot and then fell on the ground, looking fierce and emitting a loud noise.

22. Thereafter O king, Sini's grandson pierced Drona on his right arm with many winged shafts. Thus, O foremost of the Bharatas, Drona was greatly afflicted.

23. In that battle Drona also, O king, with a crescent-shaped arrow cut-off the mighty bow of that descendant of Madhava; and he smote the latter's driver with a lance.

24. Satyaki's charioteer was then overwhelmed with a swoon in consequent of his

being struck with that dart. For a while, he lay senseless on his niche on the car.

25. Then, O king, Satyaki achieved a super-human feat, in as much as he fought on with Drona and held the reins of his horse like his driver simultaneously.

26. Then, O ruler of men, with a cheerful appearance, the mighty car-warrior Yuyudhana, pierced in that battle that Brahmana with a set of hundred arrows.

27. At him then Drona sped, O Bharata, five shafts and those dreadful shaft penetrating through his armour drank his life-blood.

28. Pierced deeply with those fierce arrows Satyaki became excited to the highest pitch of wrath; and then that hero began to shoot numerous arrows at him of the golden car.

29. He then felled Drona's driver by striking him with a single arrow; then with other arrows, he compelled his horses to run away from the field.

30. That resplendent chariot, O king, dragged over all parts of the field, began to describe various circles like the Sun in motion.

31. 'Rush,' 'seize the running steeds of Drona,' these were the words that were then uttered loudly by the kings and princes of the Kaurava host.

32. O king, then all those mighty car-warriors, leaving Satyaki in battle, proceeded to the spot where Drona was carried away by his horses.

33. Then once more seeing all those heroes routed and afflicted by the scion of the Satvata race, your troops once more began to give way, being overwhelmed with fear.

34. Drona, once more proceeding to the gate of the array of his troops, stationed himself there, borne away, as he was, by those steeds of the fleetness of the wind, that had been afflicted by the shafts of the Vrishni hero.

35. Then that highly puissant Drona, seeing his array shattered by the Pandavas and the Panchalas, did not try to check the grandson of Sini, but began to re-arrange his broken array.

36. Resisting the Pandavas and the Panchalas, the Drona-fire then, burning in rage, stationed himself there, consuming everything like the Sun that rises at the end of a Yuga.

## CHAPTER 118

(JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA).—  
Continued

### The slaughter of Sudarshana

Sanjaya said

1. Having defeated in battle Drona and other warriors of your army headed by Hridika's son, that foremost of men, that best scion of the Sini race, addressing smilingly his charioteer, said, O best of the Kurus, these words—

2. O charioteer, our opponents have already been consumed by Keshava and Phalguna. In defeating them again, we have only been (secondarily) instrumental. Slaying them already slain by that foremost of men, viz., the son of the celestial chief, we have but slain the slain.

3. Saying these words to his driver, that best of the Sinis, that illustrious bowman, that slayer of hostile heroes, that highly puissant warrior, shooting vehemently his arrows in all directions pounced upon the Kaurava host like a hawk swooping down upon a piece of meat.

4. The warriors of the Kaurava army, although they assailed him from all sides, were unable to resist that best of car-warriors resembling the thousand-rayed sun himself, that foremost of men, who having penetrated through the Kaurava array, was advancing, borne by his excellent steeds that were white like the moon or the conch-shell.

5. O Bharata, none amongst your warriors was then able to resist Yuyudhana of prowess incapable of being withstood, of unmitigating energy, of heroism equal to that of the thousand-eyed deity, looking like the autumnal sun in the firmament.

6. Thereupon that foremost of kings, named Sudarsana, versed in all modes of warfare, clad in golden armour, armed with the bow and the

arrows and inspired with wrath, proceeded against the dashing Satyaki and strove to check his career.

7. The encounter that then commenced between them was extremely awful. Both your warriors and the Somakas applauded it highly; and the immortals compared it to the one that took place in days gone by between Vritra and Indra.

8. Sudarsana striving hard sped at that foremost descendant of the Satvata race, hundreds of sharp arrows, but O king, that illustrious scion of the Sini race, cut down all those arrows, before they could ever reach him.

9. So also did, Sudarsana, riding on his own chariot of excellent make, severed, by means of his own arrows, in two or three parts, all the arrows sped at him by Satyaki who resembled Indra himself.

10. Then beholding his own arrows repulsed by the force of those shot by Satyaki, Sudarsana of fierce energy in order to burn down his adversary, angrily shot some beautiful shafts equipped with wings of gold.

11. Then he pierced his adversary with three beautiful arrows resembling fire itself and furnished with golden wings, discharged from the bowstring drawn back to the very ear. These arrows penetrating through Satyaki's armour mangled his body.

12. Once more that prince Sudarsana, fixing on his bowstring another four resplendent shafts, struck therewith the four steeds of Satyaki that were of argentine hue.

13. Thus afflicted by him, Sini's grandson, possessed of great agility and endowed with might equal to that of Indra himself, quickly slew with his own arrows the steeds of Sudarsana and sent up (then) a loud war-cry.

14-15. Then lopping off with a *bhalla* charged with the vehemence of Indra's thunder-bolt, the head of Sudarsana's charioteer, that best of the Sinis, with a razor-headed arrow resembling the fire that appears at the end of a *Yuga*, cut-off from Sudarsana's trunk his head graced with ear-rings, resembling the full moon and decked with an exceedingly charming face,

like the wielder of the thunder-bolt, O king, forcibly cutting off in day's gone by, the head of the Asura bala in battle.

16. Thus having slain that grandson of a prince, that illustrious Scion of the Yadu race became inspired with joy and shone resplendent, O king, like the chief of the celestials himself.

17. Then that best hero among men viz., Yuyudhana proceeded along the track by which Arjuna had gone before him, resisting as he advanced, by means of his myriad shafts, all your warriors and riding on that excellent chariot of his, O king, to which were yoked those best steeds and filling every body with wonder.

18. Then all the excellent warriors assembled on the field of battle, applauded that wonderful feat achieved by Satyaki, inasmuch as he consumed all opponents that came within the range of his arrows, like a blazing conflagration burning everything that falls in its way.

## CHAPTER 119

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA).—

#### Continued

#### The defeat of the Javanas

##### Sanjaya said

1. Thereafter that illustrious scion of the Vrishni race, the high-souled and intelligent Satyaki, having slain Sudarsana in battle, addressing charioteer thus spoke.

2-5. "Having crossed the almost uncrossable ocean of Drona's division abounding with chariots and steeds and elephants—ocean of which the waves are constituted by arrows and darts, fishes by swords and scimitars and alligators by the maces; which roars with the whizz of arrows and the clash of diverse weapons; an ocean that is fierce and destructive of life and resounds with the din created by diverse musical instruments; of which the touch is disagreeable and unbearable to warriors longing to have victory and of which the banks are infested by flesh-eaters represented by the

forces of Jalasandha— I consider that the remaining of the array yet to be crossed, can be crossed with great ease, like a stream-let of shallow water. Therefore do you dauntlessly drive the steeds forwards.

6. I think I am now within a hand's distance from Savyasachin. Having vanquished in battle, the indomitable Drona together with his followers.

7. As also that best of all warriors namely, the son of Hridika, I think I have already reached Dhananjaya. Though I see these numerous divisions of troops before me, fear does not assail my heart.

8. For, a raging forests conflagration shrinks not at the sight of numerous heaps of dried grass. Behold the ground through which the diadem-decked Arjuna, that best of the Pandavas has passed.

9. Rendered uneven by the slain foot-soldiers, horses, car-warriors and elephants. Yonder the Kaurava array is giving way being routed by that high-souled warrior.

10. O charioteer, behold a thick tawny cloud of dust raised by the flying cars, elephants and steeds.

11. I think myself to be very near to that one of white steeds whose charioteer is Krishna, inasmuch as I hear the twang of the bow Gandiva wielded by that one of infinite prowess.

12. From the omens that are revealing themselves to me, I can judge that Arjuna will slay the ruler of the Sindhus before the sun today goes below the horizon.

13. Without exhausting their strength, drive the steeds slowly to the spot where the hostile ranks are staying, that is, to the spot where yonder warriors headed by Duryodhana, their hands cased in leathern fences.

14. And yonder Kambojas of dreadful deeds, cased in mail and difficult to defeat in battle and these Yavanas armed with bows and arrows and accomplished in smiting.

15. And yonder Sakas and Kiratas and Daradas and Barbaras and Tamraliptakas and

numerous other Mlechchas armed with diverse weapons are staying.

16. To the spot (I repeat) where yonder warriors headed by Duryodhana, their hands defended by leathern gloves, are standing with their faces turned towards me and inspired with the resolution of encountering me.

17. Consider me, O charioteer as already passed through this dreadful strong-hold, having slain in battle all these warriors and cars, elephants, horses and foot-soldiers that are among them.

#### The Charioteer said

18. O scion of the Vrishni race, fear I have none, O you of prowess incapable of being withstood! If you had before you the enraged son of Jamadagni.

19. Or Drona that foremost of car-warriors or Kripa or the ruler of the Madras himself, even then fear would not enter my heart, O you of mighty arms, as long as I am under the shadow of your protection.

20. O slayer of hostile heroes, numerous Kambojas covered in coats of mail, of dreadful deeds and difficult of defeat in battle, have already been worsted by you;

21. As also numerous Yavanas armed with bow and arrows and accomplished in smiting, including Sakas, Kiratas, Daradas Barbaras, Tamraliptakas.

22. And many other Mlechchas, armed with various weapons. Never did I feel fear in any battle.

23. O you of great courage, why shall I then experience any fear in this battle, which is like the vestige of a cow's hoof. O long-lived one, by which track shall I carry you to the spot where Dhananjaya is?

24. On whom have you been angry, O you of the Vrishni race? Who are they for whom death is waiting? Who are they that are destined to repair to the mansion of death today?

25. Who are they that will fly away from the field of battle beholding you endowed with such prowess, resembling the Destroyer himself as he appears at the end of the *Yuga* and putting forth that prowess of yours? O you of mighty arms

who are they whom king Vaivasvat, has remembered today?

**Satyaki said**

26. I will slay these warriors with sharpened shafts like Vasava slaying the Danavas. Slaying the Kambojas, I will fulfill my vow. Carry me thither.

27. Today crushing the foe I shall repair to that son of Pandu who is dearly loved by me. Today the Kurus with Suyodhana at their head, will behold my prowess in battle.

28-33. When this division of the Mlechchas of shaved heads will be exterminated and the entire Kaurava army put to great distress. Hearing the loud lamentation of the Kaurava host today lacerated and shattered by me in battle, Suyodhana will be filled with great fear. Today I shall show to my preceptor, the high-souled Pandava of white horses, the skill in the use of weapons acquired by me from him. Beholding today thousands of foremost warriors slain with my arrows, king Duryodhana will be overwhelmed with grief. The Kauravas will this day behold the bow in my hand to resemble a circle of fire when, light-handed as I am, I will draw back my bow-string for discharging my numerous arrows. Beholding the continuous carnage of his troops bathed in blood and many filled all over with shafts, Suyodhana today will be filled with great grief. When I shall slay the best of the Kuru warriors wrathfully.

34-36. Suyodhana will today behold the world to contain two Arjunas. Beholding thousands of kings slain by me in battle, king Duryodhana will be overwhelmed with grief in this day's great fight. Slaying thousands of monarchs today, I will show love and devotion to those high-souled ones viz., the sons of Pandu. Today the Kauravas will know the extent of my prowess and energy and my gratefulness to the Pandavas.

**Sanjaya continued**

37. Thus spoken to, the charioteer quickly drove those well-trained steeds resembling the moon in hue and carrying the warrior Satyaki well.

38. Those excellent steeds, possessed of the fleetness of the wind or the mind, dashed forward seeming to devour the very skies and bore Yuyudhana to the spot where those Yavanas were,

39. Then those Yavanas endued with great lightness of hands obtaining in their midst the unretreating Satyaki, began to cover him with mighty showers of arrows.

40. Then Satyaki who was moving with great celerity, cut-off their arrows and weapons with his shafts of depressed knots. Indeed the arrows discharged by them could not then reach him.

41. The fierce Satyaki then began to lop off the heads and arms of the Yavanas, with sharp arrows equipt with golden wings or wings made of vulture feathers, all-flying straight.

42. Those arrows, penetrating through the iron or brass armours of the Yavanas as also their bodies, then fell down on the earth.

43. Thus slaughtered by the heroic Satyaki in that battle, the Mlechchas began to fall by hundreds on the ground deprived of their lives.

44. With his arrows discharged from his bow drawn to the fullest extent and flying in a continuous line, that brave warrior began to slay, five, six, seven or eight Yavanas at a time.

45. With the dead bodies of hundreds and thousands of Kambojas, Sakas, Souviras, Trigartas and Barbaras, O ruler of men.

46. The earth became impassable; and it was slippery with the flesh and blood that then constituted its mire. The grandson of Sini then caused a great carnage among your troops.

47. The ground was then strewn over with the head-gears of those robbers and the shaved heads that looked like unfledged birds in consequence of their long beards.

48. The field of battle overspread with headless trunks bathed in blood, appeared charming like the firmament overspread with coppery clouds.

49. Slain with the shafts of the heroic Satyaki, shafts whose touch resembled the thunder-bolt's stroke and whose knots were well-pressed and which were flying in straight

lines, the Yavanas covered the field of battle over.

50. The handful remnant of those mail-covered soldiers, defeated, O king, by the Satvata hero, became cheerless; and finding their lives on the points of being snatched away from them, they broke.

51. And fled away, urging, their steeds to the top of their speed, with their whips, goads & c out of great fear that then overwhelmed them.

52. Routing in battle the invisible Kamboja troops and O Bharata, the troops of the Yavanas and the mighty host of the Sakas.

53. That foremost of men, viz., Satyaki of prowess incapable of being baffled, penetrated into the heart of your troops, vanquishing them and urging his charioteer saying, "Proceed."

54. Beholding that feat achieved in battle by him—feat that nobody before ever performed, the Charanas and the Gandharvas began to applaud him highly.

55. Then, O ruler of men, beholding him proceeding as the rear-guard of Arjuna, the Charanas were filled with delight. Even your troops then began to applaud him.

## CHAPTER 120

(JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA).—

Continued

### The defeat of Duryodhana

Sanjaya said

1. Having defeated the Yavanas and the Kambojas that foremost of car-warriors Yuyudhana advanced after Arjuna right through the centre of your troops.

2. Then like a huntsman slaying deer, that foremost of men, viz., Satyaki, graced with beautiful teeth, cased in excellent armour and owning a beautiful standard, slew the Kaurava troops and struck terror into their hearts.

3. Advancing on his chariot, he began to shake his bow with force, bow the back of which was decked with gold, the toughness of which as great and which was beautified with golden moons.

4. His arms adorned with golden Angadas, his turban decked with gold, his body covered with a golden armour, his standard and bow variegated with gold, that hero appeared resplendent like the crest of the Meru-mountain.

5. Himself emitting great effulgence and wielding that bow drawn to a circle in his hands, he appeared like another autumnal sun.

6. That foremost of men graced with shoulders, tread and eyes, resembling those of the moon, appeared in the centre of your army, like a bull in the midst of a cowpen.

7. Him looking like and possessing the graceful tread of, an infuriate elephant and appearing like an elephant leader with open temples, standing in their midst.

8. Your troops desirous of slaying assailed with fury. After Satyaki had passed through Drona's division and the uncrossable ocean-like division of the Bhojas.

9. After he had passed through the son of Jalasandha's troops, as also the host of the Kamboja, after had escaped the alligator constituted by Hridika's son, after he had forded through that ocean like host.

10. Many car-warriors of your army inflamed with fury encompassed Satyaki on all sides. Duryodhana, Chitrasena, Dushasana, Vivnishati.

11. Shakuni, Dussaha, the youthful Durmarsana, Kratha and many other brave warriors, all well-versed in the use of weapons and difficult of being defeated.

12. Angrily followed Satyaki from behind as he proceeded onwards. Then, O sire, tremendous was the din that arose among your army.

13. Resembling the roar of the ocean in a Parva-day when it is lashed into fury by the wind. Beholding them all rush towards himself, that foremost of then Sinis.

14. Addressing his charioteer smilingly said - "Proceed slowly" this army of the sons of Dhritarashtra, swelling with fury.

15. And abounding in elephants, horses, chariots and infantry, is rushing at me with



vehemence, O charioteer, filling all the quarters with the clatter of its cars.

16. And causing the earth, the conclave dome and oceans to tremble. O Suta, this ocean like host I shall resist in battle.

17. Like the banks resisting the mighty main when it swells in the day of the full moon. Behold O charioteer, my prowess in battle with resembles that of Indra himself.

18. Behold me crush these hostile forces with my own sharp arrows. Behold these foot-soldiers, horses, car-warriors and elephants of the hostile force slain.

19. And mangled, by my sharp shafts whose touch resemble that of fire itself." When Satyaki of immeasurable prowess was thus speaking.

20. You warriors quickly approached him desirous of battling with him, saying, 'Slay'. 'Rush,' "Wait" 'Look look'.

21. Satyaki then fell to slaughter those heroes even when they were thus speaking, with his sharp arrows. He slew three hundred steeds and four hundred elephants.

22. That battle between Satyaki on the one hand and your warriors of the others, became awful like that between the gods and the Asuras fought in the days of yore. The carnage that attended it, was fierce in the extreme.

23. O sire, the grandson of Sini received the assault of your son's divisions resembling thick masses of clouds, with his shafts resembling snakes of virulent poison.

24. That valorous hero then covered over with net-work of arrows, O king, began to slay your troops by hundreds, nothing daunted.

25. O king, I then beheld an extremely wonderful sight there, inasmuch as, O lord, I saw not one shaft of Satyaki fail in striking its aim.

26. That ocean constituted by the troops of Duryodhana, teeming with cars, elephants and steeds and surging with waves constituted by cars, as soon as it came in contact with the bank formed by Sinis grandson.

27. That host consisting of terrified warriors, elephants and horses, carnaged on all sides by

the arrows of Satyaki, began to turn round repeatedly.

28. And wandered hither and thither like kine afflicted with the chill of winter. Among foot-soldiers, car-warriors, elephants and horse-men and horses.

29. We then beheld none who was not pierced with the arrows of Yuyudhana. Even Phalguna himself, O king, spread not such carnage in your troops.

30. As was done by Satyaki in your ranks. O foremost of men, Sini's grandson then fought, surpassing even Arjuna himself.

31. Completely fearless and displaying his lightness of hands and skill in the use of weapons. Thereafter king Duryodhana, with three arrows.

32. Pierced the charioteer of that Satvata hero; and then with another four sharp shafts, he pierced the latter's four steeds. Next piercing Satyaki himself with three arrows, he pierced him with a set of another eight shafts.

33. Then Dushasana pierced that foremost scion of the Sini dynasty with sixteen shafts, Shakuni pierced him with twenty-five and Chitrasena with five arrows.

34. Dussaha then pierced Satyaki on the centre of his chest with fifteen arrows. Then thus struck with those numerous shafts, that foremost hero among the Vrishnis, smiled.

35. And, O mighty monarch, pierced each of his assailers with three shafts. Thus piercing his foes with darts of fierce energy.

36. That grandson of Sini endued with great celerity, began to move about the field of battle, even like a hawk. Cutting off the bow of Suvalas son and severing his gloves.

37. He pierced Duryodhana on the centre of his chest with three arrows; he pierced Chitrasena with hundred and Dussaha with ten arrows.

38. That illustrious grandson of Sini next pierced Dushasana with twenty arrows. Thereafter O ruler of men, your brother-in-law, taking up another bow.

39-40. Pierced Satyaki first with eight and then with another five arrows. Then O king, Dushasana pierced Satyaki with ten, Dussaha

with three and Durmukha with twelve shafts. O Bharata, then Duryodhana, pierced that scion of Madhu's race with seventy-three arrows.

41. Next he pierced the latter's charioteer with three sharp arrows. Then all those mighty car-warriors who were fighting unitedly and heedfully.

42-43. Were pierced each with five arrows by Satyaki. Then that foremost of warriors struck the driver of your son with a broad-headed shaft. The latter then fell down on the ground slain. When his charioteer had been laid low, O master, that car-warrior, your son.

44. Was borne away from the field of battle by his steeds of the fleetness of the wind. Thereupon, your other sons and the troops, O king.

45. Looking at the chariot of the king, began to break away by hundreds. Then O Bharata, beholding the divisions routed, Satyaki.

46. Covered them with keen pointed arrows furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone. Thus, O king, crushing all the warriors of your army by thousands.

47. Satyaki flew towards the chariot of Arjuna owning cream-colored steeds. Even your troops then applauded him as they beheld him proceed shooting arrows and protecting himself and his charioteer.

## CHAPTER 121

(JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA).—

Continued

### The defeat of the mountaineers

Dhritarastra said

1. What, O Sanjaya, did my shameless sons do when they beheld the grandson of Sini proceed towards Arjuna, crushing as he advanced my troops?

2. How indeed did those dying wretches set their heart on fight, when Sini's grandson who is equal to Savyasachin himself appeared before them?

3. What indeed, did the Kshatriyas defeated in battle do? How indeed did the illustrious Satyaki penetrate through their ranks?

4. O Sanjaya, tell me also, how could the grandson of Sini proceed to battle when all my sons were alive and fighting?

5. What I have heard from you, O son, appears to be exceedingly wonderful viz., the battle between the one and the many the latter counting many mighty car-warrior among them.

6. O Suta, I think Destiny is adverse to the interests of my sons, in as much as they are now being slaughtered by that mighty car-warrior of the Satvata race.

7. Even all my troops united together were not competent enough to withstand the enraged Yuyudhana; not to speak of the sons of Pandu.

8. Like a lion slaying other inferior beasts Satyaki is slaughtering my sons, having first vanquished in battle Drona that warrior accomplished in weapons and versed in all modes of warfare.

9. Countless heroes headed by Kirtavarman himself, fighting heedfully, were not able to slay Satyaki in battle; so it is certain that the latter will vanquish my sons single-headed.

10. Even Phalguna himself did not fight in the manner in which the illustrious grandson of Sini has fought.

Sanjaya said

11. All this has been brought about by your wicked policy and by the vile deeds of Duryodhana O king. O Bharata, now hear attentively what I am going to say to you.

12. At the command of your son, all those warriors then taking tremendous vows to fight to the last, rallied and resolved upon fighting fierce.

13. Three thousand bowmen, commanded by Duryodhana himself and supported by a numerous body of Sakas, Kambojas, Valhikas, Yavanas, Paradasi.

14. Kulindas, Tanganas, Amvartas, Pisachas, Barbaras and mountaineers, O king, all inspired with rage and armed with stones.

15. Rushed against Sini's grandson like flights of insects falling upon a blazing fire. Five hundred other warriors united together, O king, then also assailed Satyaki.

16-17. Another large division consisting of a thousand chariots, a hundred mighty car-warriors, a thousand elephants, two thousand horses and innumerable foot soldiers, also assailed the grandson of Sini.

18. Then, O Bharata, Dushasana, urged those troops saying, 'slay him' and encompassed Satyaki there with.

19. Then we beheld the marvellous character of the prowess of Sini's grandson, in as much as single handed as he was he fearlessly fought on with the odds against him.

20. He then continually went on slaying the divisions of car-warriors elephants and horsemen and the robbers.

21- 23. Like the autumnal sky bespangled with stars, the field of battle then became covered with car wheels broken and smashed by means of his mighty weapons with innumerable Akshas and beautiful car-shafts crushed to pieces with mangled elephants and broken standards with coats of mail and bucklers scattered all about and O sire, with garlands and ornaments and attires and Anukarshas.

24-28. Many best elephants prodigious or mountainous and of the Anjanors, of the Vamana breed, O Bharata or of the Supratika Mahapadmat or Airavata or other breeds, many excellent tuskers, O king, lay prostrate on the ground, deprived of life. Satyaki then slew, O king, many foremost of steeds of the Vanaya, the mountain, the Kamboja and the Valhika breeds. The grandson of Sini also slaughtered foot soldiers there, in hundreds and thousands, born in various realms and belonging to various nationalities. Whilst those troops were being thus carnaged, Dushasana addressing the robbers said.—

29. 'Ye heroes, ignorant of the rules of fighting, fight on.' Why do you retreat? But seeing them break away in spite of all his commands your son Dushasana.

30. Urged on the heroic mountaineers skilled in fighting with stones saying—"You are all skillful in fighting. The Kauravas also are all ignorant of this mode of war-fare.

31. Do you slay then this hero who, desirous as he is of battle, is unacquainted with your manner of fighting. The Kauravas also are all ignorant of this mode of battle.

32. Rush upon Satyaki and fear not for he will not be able to reach you in battle. Thereupon all those mountain kings, all accomplished in fighting with stones.

33. Rushed upon the grandson of Sini like so many counsellors rushing in the train of a king. Then all those denizens of the mountains, armed with hollicks looking like the heads of the elephants.

34. Stood before Yuyudhana in that battle ready to strike others desirous of compassing the slaughter of the Satvata hero with their missiles.

35. They obstructed all the points of the compass, urged as they were by your son. Then as they rushed desirous of fighting with their stones.

36. Satyaki sped at them sharp arrows fixing them on his bow string. That awful shower of stones then discharged by the Mountaineers.

37. The foremost scion of the Sini race baffled with his Narachas resembling venomous reptiles. Then with those lustrous fragments of stones looking like a flight of fire flies.

38. Many of our soldiers were slaughtered; and O sire, cries of alas and Oh were heard in all directions. Then with heavy stones uplifted, five hundred heroic warriors.

39. Fell down, O king with their arms severed. Again a thousand warriors and other hundred thousand warriors.

40. Encountering Satyaki fell down with their arms bearing stones lopped off. Then many heroic warriors, accomplished in fighting with stones, began to fall down, with their purposes unsettled.

41. Stayaki then slew them by thousands and that appeared indeed wonderful. Then again many of them, returning to the charge, hurled at Satyaki showers of stones.

42. With swords and lances in their grasp, many Daradar, Tanjanas, Thasus, Lampakas and Pulindas, hurled their weapons at Satyaki.

43. But the latter well accomplished in the use of weapons cut all of them in pieces with his Narachns. Then as the stones were being broken in the air by sharp arrows.

44. The sound, that was created, caused many car-warriors, horses, elephants and foot-soldiers to fly away. Pelted in all directions by fragments of stones, men, elephants and horses.

45. Were unable to stand in the field of battle, in as much as they felt as if bit by bees. The survivors, bathed in blood and with their heads and frontal globes shattered.

46. Of the elephant hosts, then began to break away leaning the car of Yuyudhana. Then the noise that your troops created, O sire.

47. Afflicted as they were with the shafts of that descendent of Madhu's race, was tremendous like that of the Ocean in a Parvadayi. Then hearing the cry and that tremendous din, Drona, addressing his charioteer, said

48. "O charioteer, this mighty car-warrior, of the Satvata race inflamed with wrath, has shattered the host in many places and is now careering like the Destroyer in the field of battle.

49. O charioteer, drive my car to the spot whence this noise is coming. Surely Yuyudhana has now encountered these heroes that fight with the stones.

50. Yonder the car-warriors are leaving Satyaki being borne away by their flying steeds. Behold some are falling down on the spot with their bodies mangled.

51. Their drivers are not able to restrain their wild horses." The charioteer hearing these words of Bharadvaja's son.

52. Replied unto Drona that foremost of all wielders of weapons saying – "O long-lived one, behold the army of the Kauravas routed in all directions.

53. Behold the warriors rush in all directions deserting their ranks! But in fact you behold those heroic Panchalas and Pandavas.

54. Advance desirous of encountering yourself. O subduer of foes, now behave

yourself in the manner one should behave on such occasions.

55. Shall we proceed or stay here? Satyaki has gone far ahead of us." While the charioteer was thus speaking to the son of Bharadvaja, O sire.

56. The grandson of Sini suddenly came to view, engaged in slaughtering a large number of car-warriors. Those soldiers of yours while being thus slaughtered by Yuyudhana in battle.

57-58. They fled away from Yuyudhana's chariot towards the spot where Drona's division was placed. Those other car-warriors accompanied by Dushasana, all struck with panic, also rushed to the place where Drona's chariot was seen.

## CHAPTER 122

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The display of Drona's prowess

Sanjaya said

1. Beholding then the chariot of Dussana stationed near him, the son of Bharadvaja addressing him said these words–

2. "O Dussana, why are all these car-warriors, flying away? Is everything right with the king? Does the king of the Sindhus still live?

3. You are the son of a king, the brother of a king and a mighty car-warrior; why then do you fly away? Constitute yourself the Prince-regent (by making your brother the king)?

4. "You are our slave; you have been won by us as a stake in the game of dice; become you a courtesan; and engaged yourself as a bearer of attires to the king, my elder brother.

5. Your husbands do not live; they are like sesamum seeds without the kernel." O Dushasana, it was you who spoke those words to Draupadi. Why then do you now fly away.

6. Having yourself provoked inveterate enmity with the Panchalas and the Pandavas, why do you now fly, out of fear, obtaining Satyaki alone in battle for your opponent?

7. In days gone by, at the game of dice having taken up the dice, you did not divine that they would be changed into dreadful darts resembling snakes of virulent poison.

8. It were you who formerly abused the Pandavas in filthy language; you were the cause of all the woes of Draupadi.

9. Where are now your pride, your haughtiness and brag? Having provoked the Parthas who are like so many snakes of virulent poison, where do you intend to fly?

10. Both this army of the Bharatas and king Suyodhana are to be pitied, inasmuch as the latter own you who are now flying away as his brave brother.

11. Indeed, O hero, this army, shattered and afflicted with fear as it is, ought to be protected by you, by your own strength of arms.

12. But you now, leaving the fight, are affording delight unto your foes. O slayer of foes, when you, the leader of the host are flying away.

13. Who, seized with panic as he is, will care to remain, in the field of battle? Encountering that single-handed warriors of the Satvata race.

14-16. Your heart is inclined to fly away from battle. What then, O Kaurava, will you do when you will see the wielder of the Gandiva in battle or Bhimasena of the twins, Nakula and Sahadeva. The arrows of Satyaki, afraid of which you are seeking to fly away, are scarcely equal to those of Arjuna, that resemble the sun or the fire in effulgence? If your heart is intent on flying away.

17. O brave warrior! Go immediately and re-enter in the ovary of Gandhari, your mother. Because, there is no other place on this earth capable to defend you if you depart from the battle-field.

18. Then let the sovereignty of the earth be given to king Yudhishtira the virtuous shafts of Phalguna looking like snakes divested of their slough.

20. Penetrate into your body, let peace of Pritha slaying your hundred brothers snatch the

earth away by force, conclude peace with the Pandavas. Before king Yudhishtira is excited with wrath.

21. And Krishna also, that giver of joy, conclude peace with the Pandavas. Before the mighty-armed Bhima, piercing through this vast array of yours.

22. Seizes (and slays) your brothers, conclude peace with the Pandavas. Formerly Bhishma told your brother Suyodhana.

23. "The Pandavas are incapable of being vanquished in battle. O Gentle one, make peace with them." Your perverted brother Suyodhana however did not listen to him.

24-26. Therefore firmly resolved to fight, battle on heedfully with the Pandavas. I heard that Bhima will drink too your blood. Forsooth, it is true. O fool, do you not aware of the prowess of Bhima. You took the enmity with him, and now escape from the battle field? Proceed quickly on your car, where Satyaki is?

27. Deprived of your help, this host will fly away. For your own sake, fight with Satyaki of indomitable prowess."

28. Thus spoken to by Drona, your son spoke nothing in reply. Feigning as if he has not heard the words of Drona, Dushasana advanced to the spot where Satyaki was.

29. Supported by a mighty division of unretreating Mlechhas, Dushasana fell upon Satyaki and fought on vigorously.

30. Drona also, that best of car-warriors, inflamed with rage, proceeded against the Panchalas and the Pandavas in medium speed.

31. Then Drona, engaging himself in battle, began to crush the Pandava army slaying heroes by hundreds and thousands.

32. Thereafter, O mighty monarch, proclaiming his name in battle, he began to spread havoc among the ranks of the Pandavas, Panchalas and the Matsyas.

33. Thereat the effulgent Viraketu, the Panchala prince, encountered Drona the son of Bharadvaja who had been vanquishing his troops.

34. Piercing Drona with five shafts of depressed knots, he cut down his standard with

one and wounded his charioteer with seven shafts.

35. Then O mighty monarch, we beheld a wonderful sight in that battle, in as much Drona striving hard could not approach the Panchala prince.

36. O sire, then beholding Drona held in check, the Panchalas surrounded him O king, on all sides, desirous as they were of securing victory to the very virtuous king Yudhishtira.

37. They then began to pour upon Drona darts resembling fire, thick showers of Tomaras and numerous other weapons, O king.

38. Then baffling those thick showers of arrows by means of his own, like the wind scattering away mighty rain-clouds on the sky, Drona appeared exceedingly beautiful.

39. Thereafter that slayer of hostile heroes viz., Drona aimed at the chariot of Viraketu a dreadful shaft, resembling the sun or fire in splendour.

40. O king, then that shaft penetrating through the scion of the Panchala dynasty entered the earth, steeped in blood and burning like a flame of fire.

41. Thereupon that delighter of the Panchala race, quickly fell down from his chariot like a Champaka falling down from the crest of a mountain, being up-rotted by the force of the wind.

42. When that highly puissant and fierce bowmen, that prince of the Panchalas, had been slain, the Panchalas, in all haste, surrounded Drona on all sides.

43. Chitraketu, Sudhanvan, Chitravarman and O Bharata, also Chitraratha—all afflicted with grief at the calamity that had befallen their brother.

44. Unitedly and with a desire for fighting, rushed against the son of Bharadvaja, discharging their showers of shafts like so many clouds discharging their contents at the expiration of the summer season.

45. Thus wounded by those princes, all mighty car-warriors, that foremost of the regenerate wrought himself up with anger, for putting an end to their existence.

46. Thereafter Drona hurled at them a network of Arrows. Those princes, then pierced with those shafts of Drona shot from the bow string drawn back to the very ear.

47. Became embarrassed as to what they should do, O foremost of kings. Then when they were thus confounded, Drona with perfect ease.

48. Inflamed as he was with rage, deprived those princes of their chariots, charioteers and steeds. Thereafter that hero of world-wide fame, with his sharp arrows and Vallas.

49. Felled their heads, like one culling flowers. O king, those radiant heroes then fell down slain from their respective cars.

50. Even as the Daityas and Danavas fell, in the battle between the gods and the Asuras fought in the days of yore. Slaying them in battle, the valorous son of Bharadvaja.

51. Began to shake his excellent bow whose staff was golden and which was incapable of being approached. Then beholding those Panchala princes all mighty car-warrior and resembling the Pandavas themselves, slain.

52. Dhrishtadyumna was filled with rage and tears trickled down from his eyes. Then burning with rage, he rushed at the car of Drona.

53. Thereupon, O king, suddenly cries of Alas and Oh were heard there, for, then Drona was seen covered with the shafts of the Panchala prince Dhrishtadyumna.

54. Though covered on all sides by the illustrious son of Prisata, yet Drona flinched not, but fought on smilingly.

55. Then, O mighty monarch, the Panchala prince, overwhelmed with rage, pierced Drona on the breast with ninety shafts of depressed knots.

56. Pierced deeply by that powerful hero, the illustrious son of Bharadvaja, squatted down on the terrace of his chariot and fainted away in a swoon.

57. Then beholding him in that plight, Dhrishtadyumna, of fierce energy and great might, grasped his sword and left aside his bow.

58. Then that mighty car-warrior, jumping down from his chariot with quickness, O sire, ascended with agility upon the car of the son of Bharadvaja.

59. With his eyes rolling in rage and urged on by a desire for cutting off Drona's head from the trunk. Meanwhile the puissant Drona, recovering from the swoon, took up his bow.

60-61. But beholding Dhristadyumna inflamed with a desire for slaughtering him so near, he began to pierce him with arrows measuring a span only and so fit to be used in close quarter. Those arrows known by the name of Vaitastika and fit to be used in close quarters.

62. Where known to Drona only and by means of them, he succeeded in weakening Dhristadyumna's powers. Then the puissant Dhristadyumna wounded with those arrows.

63. Swiftly came down from Drona's chariot. That hero of fierce energy was then greatly robbed of his strength. Thereafter ascending his car and taking up a mighty bow.

64. The mighty car-warrior Dhristadyumna began to pierce Drona in battle; Drona also, O mighty monarch, pierced the son of Prisata with numerous shafts in battle.

65. Then a wonderful fight was fought between Drona and the Panchala prince, like what was fought between Shakra and the Prahlada, both longing to enjoy the sovereignty of the three worlds.

66. Both versed in various modes of warfare, they careered over the field, displaying various motions with their chariots and mangling one another with their shafts.

67. Then confounding the minds of the other warriors. Drona and Prisata's son began to pour their arrowy showers like rain-clouds purring their contents in the rainy seasons.

68. Those two high-souled warriors then covered the conclave dome, the earth and the quarters with their shafts. The creatures assembled there, then began to applaud that battle that was fought between them.

69-71. So also, O mighty monarch, the Kshatriyas and other soldiers praised that battle.

"Meeting Dhristadyumna in battle Drona will surely succumb to him." The Panchalas exclaimed, O king, speaking thus. Then Drona fighting with great agility cut-off the head of Dhristadyumna's charioteer, like one felling ripe fruits from a tree. Thereupon O king, the steeds of the illustrious Dhristadyumna ran away wildly.

72. When those steeds thus ran away bearing Dhristadyumna away, Drona of great might began to crush the Panchalas and Srinjayas (mercilessly).

73. Then the highly puissant son of Bharadvaja having vanquished the Pandavas and the Panchalas and having reformed his array of troops, stood at its mouth. O master the Pandavas then ventured not to vanquish him in battle.

## CHAPTER 123

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The defeat of Dushasana

#### Sanjaya said

1. Meanwhile, O king, Dushasana advanced upon the grandson of Sini, shooting thousands of arrows, like a mighty rain-clouds pouring its contents.

2. Having pierced Satyaki first with sixty shafts and next with sixteen, he could not make him tremble who was fighting steadily like the immovable Mainaka mountain.

3. Then that foremost of the Bharatas surrounded Satyaki with a mighty division of car-warriors born in various realms; he shot numerous arrows.

4. And filled the ten quarters with the clatter of his car-wheels, that resembled the rumble or rain clouds. Beholding that Kaurava hero advance upon him Satyaki.

5. Possessed of mighty arms, rushed against him and covered him with his own shafts. Then those warriors headed by Dushasana being thus covered by those arrowy showers.

6. Became seized with panic and began to fly away even before the very eyes of your son.

O monarch, when those warriors were thus flying, your son Dushasana.

7. Stood fearlessly before Satyaki afflicting him with his arrows. He then pierced the latter's charioteer with three and his steeds with four arrows;

8. Then piercing Satyaki himself with a set of hundred arrows, he uttered his war-cry. Thereupon O mighty monarch, that descendant of Madhu's race, being worked up with rage.

9. Rendered Dushasana's car, charioteer and standard invisible with his swift flying arrows. He then entirely shrouded the heroic Dushasana with his shafts.

10. That subduer of foes then quickly covered Dushasana with his arrows like a spider entangling a gnat in its web.

11. Beholding Dushasana thus covered by the shafts of Satyaki, king Duryodhana urged the Trigartas towards the car of Yuyudhana.

12. Then three thousand warriors of the Trigartas clan versed in battling and of cruel deeds, reaching the car of Yuyudhana.

13. Surrounded the latter with the mighty division of their car. They set their hearts firmly on fighting and took terrible oaths.

14. As they rushed to battle discharging showers of arrows, Yuyudhana crushed five hundred of their foremost warriors that marched in their front.

15. They then began to fall down slain quickly by the arrows of the foremost of Sinis, like trees broken by the force of the wind falling down from the top of the mountain.

16. The field of battle, overspread with mangled elephants, O king and broken standards and fallen bodies of horses furnished with golden traces and wounded and cut by the arrows of Sini's grandson and rolling in their blood, looked beautiful like a plain covered over with Kinsuka trees decked with blossoms.

17. Then all those warriors of yours, slain in battle by Yuyudhana, were unable to find out a protector like elephants sunk in deep mire.

18. Thereafter terrified all of them proceeded towards the car of Drona like mighty

snakes entering their holes from fear of the king of birds (Garuda).

19. Slaying five hundred warriors with his arrows resembling snakes of virulent poison, the heroic Satyaki proceeded slowly towards the car of Dhananjaya.

20. Then as that foremost of men was proceeding your son Dushasana pierced him quickly with nine shafts of depressed knots.

21. Him the fierce bowmen Satyaki pierced in return with five sharp shafts, all straight flying and furnished with golden as well as vulture wings.

22. But O Bharata, Dushasana, smiling a little, pierced Satyaki O king, first with three and then with five shafts.

23. Thereupon the grandson of Sini wounding your son with five swift-coursing arrows cut-off the latter's bow and then smiling a little proceeded towards Arjuna.

24-25. Thereat Dushasana, highly enraged and desirous of slaying the Vrishni hero as he was proceeding, hurled at him a lance capable of penetrating through all things.

26. But that dreadful lance hurled by your son, Satyaki cut-off, O king, with whetted shafts furnished with wings of the Kanka bird.

27. O ruler of men, then your son taking up another bow pierced Satyaki with his arrows and then uttered a loud war-cry.

28. Thereat Satyaki waxing wroth, stupefied your son and struck him on the centre of his chest with arrows resembling tongues of fire.

29. He then once more pierced Dushasana with eight arrows made completely of iron and of sharp heads. Dushasana in return pierced Satyaki with twenty shafts of eminent parts.

30. He, of the Satvata race of eminent parts O mighty monarch, again pierced him on the breast with three arrows of straight knots.

31. Then that mighty car-warrior, highly inflamed with rage, slew Dushasana's steeds with sharp arrows and his charioteer with numerous shafts of depressed knots.

32-33. Versed in the use of many excellent weapons Satyaki then cut-off Dushasana's bow with a single bhalla, his gloves with five and his



chariot and chariot shaft, with a couple of broad-headed arrows with sharp shafts he cut-off his two Parshni drivers. Then Dushasana, deprived of his car, with his bow burst open, his charioteer and steeds slain.

34. Was carried away by the commander of the Trigartta divisions on his own chariot. O Bharata, then the grandson of Sini once more assailed him.

35-36. But he refrained from slaying him remembering the words of Bhimasena. O Bharata, amidst the assembly Bhimasena before swore to slay your sons. Then Satyaki, vanquishing Dushasana, quickly proceeded in the track in which Dhananjaya had proceeded, O king.

## CHAPTER 124

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The fierce fight

##### Dhritarastra said

1. Was there then, O Sanjaya, no mighty car-warrior in my entire army who could resist or slay Satyaki as he proceeded forward?

2. Of indomitable prowess and possessed of strength equal to that of Indra himself, single-handed he achieved feats amidst my troops like Indra achieving feats amidst the Danavas.

3. Perhaps the track through which Satyaki passed was empty. Possessed of prowess in the true sense of the term, he alone has crushed numerous hosts, of mine.

4. Tell me O Sanjaya, how the single-handed grandson Sini passed through that host of mine, which was fighting vigorously against him?

##### Sanjaya said

5. O monarch, the exertion and din that were then made by your troops, O king, teeming with cars, elephants, foot-soldiers, resembled that which occurs at the end of a Yuga.

6. O bestower of honour, when your assembled host daily increased in numerical

strength before, I thought that another muster like that of your army had never been on earth.

7. The Gods and the Charanas that then came there said, "this muster will be the last of its kind on the earth."

8. O king, the array, which was formed by Drona in view of a slaughter of Jayadratha, was such that its equal had never been formed on the face of the earth.

9. Then the din that was made by the armies as they rushed to battle with one another, was as tremendous as one created by the ocean agitated with the vehemence of a mighty tempest.

10. In those two assembled hosts of the Pandavas and the Kurus, O foremost of men, innumerable rulers of earth, numbering by hundred and thousand, were enrolled.

11. Horripilating, dreadful and deafening was the uproar set up by those enraged heroes of resolute deeds, as they proceeded to battle.

12. Then Bhimasena, Dhrishtadyumna, Nakula, Sahadeva, the virtuous king Yudhishtira, O sire, exclaimed saying–

13. "Come, strike, rush quickly; the two heroes, scion of Madhu's race and the son of Pandu, have entered into the Kuru army.

14. Do you so act, as they may proceed easily towards the chariot of Jayadratha. Speaking thus, they urged their troops on.

15-16. (They again said) - "If those two heroes be slain, then the Kurus will have their objects fulfilled and we shall be defeated. Therefore do you united exert yourselves for agitating this host, like the tempest of tremendous vehemence agitating the ocean. O king, urged on by the Panchala prince and by Bhimasena.

17-18. They fell to slaughter the Kurus thoroughly disregarding their own dear lives. Possessed of great energy, all of them desiring death in battle, at the edge of weapon, with a view to attain to heaven, showed not the least regard for their lives in fighting for the good of their friends, so also, O monarch, your warriors, desirous of great renown.

19. And setting their hearts resolutely on battle, remained on the field, determined to to

fight to the bitter end. In that dreadful and horrible battle.

20-25. Satyaki having vanquished all the warriors advanced towards Arjuna. The combatants were compelled to turn their eyes away from the coats of mail covering the warriors, as the reflected the rays of the sun directly. O monarch, Duryodhana then penetrated through the mighty host of the illustrious sons of Pandu striving hard in battle. Then the battle that was there fought between him and them was extremely terrible and the carnage horrible.

**Dhritarastra said**

26. When the Pandava host was thus advancing and when he was involved in great danger, I hope, O son of a charioteer, Duryodhana did not turn his back on the field of battle.

27. That battle between the one and the many, that one again being a king by birth, seems to me to be very unfair.

28. Brought up in great luxury, attended with great prosperity and the ruler of the worlds, that single-handed son of mine, I hope, did not turn his face away from the field of battle, encountering odds in battle.

**Sanjaya said**

29. The battle, O king, that was then fought, between your son on the one side and the numerous Pandavas on the other, was indeed wonderful. Hear me as I relate it.

30. Then the Pandava troops were completely crushed by Duryodhana like a forest of lotuses destroyed by an elephant.

31. Then, O king, beholding the troops shattered by your son, the Panchalas headed by Bhimasena, rushed upon Duryodhana.

32. Thereupon your son pierced Bhimasena, the son of Pandu, with ten shafts and each of the twins Nakula and Sahadeva with three and the virtuous king Yudhishtira with seven.

33. He pierced Virata and Drupada with six, Sikhadin with a hundred, Dhristadyumna with twenty and the sons of Draupadi with three arrows each.

34. He then cut-off many other warriors hundreds in number and elephants and cars in battle with his fierce shafts, like the wrathful god of Death slaying the created beings.

35. Owing to his skill acquired through practice and to the powers of his weapons, he appeared, when striking down his foes, to wield his bow, continuously drawn to a circle whether when aiming or discharging his shafts.

36. Then men beheld his mighty bow of golden staff, as he slew his foes, to be always drawn to a circle.

37. Thereafter king Yudhishtira cut-off with a Pair of Vallas the bow of your son, who had been exerting to the best of his prowess in battle, O foremost of the Kurus.

38. He then pierced the latter with ten excellent shafts all well-directed. But striking against Duryodhana's armour they were shattered into pieces and fell down on the earth.

39. Then the Parthas filled with delight surrounded Yudhishtira, like the celestials and the sages surrounding Shakra on the occasion of the slaughter of Vritra.

40. Thereafter your highly puissant son Duryodhana taking up another bow and addressing king Yudhishtira saying "wait wait" rushed against that son of Pandu.

41. Then beholding your son rush to battle with fury, the Panchalas always intent on securing victory received him with delight.

42. Drona then encountered that division of the Panchalas, from a desire for rescuing the king, like a mountain with slanting masses of rain-charged clouds driven by the tempest.

43. Thereupon, O king, there commenced a awful combat making the hair stand erect between the Pandavas and your troops, O mighty-armed one.

44. The carnage was terrible like that when Rudra slays in sport all creatures at the end of a Yuga. Then arose a loud uproar the place where Dhananjaya was.

45. That sound surpassed all other sounds and O lord, made the hair stand erect. Thus, O

mighty-armed one, the battle between Arjuna and your warriors went on (with unmitigated fury).

46. Thus progressed the battle between Satyaki and your men, in the centre of your army and there also raged the battle between Drona and his enemies at the head of his array.

47. Thus continued that dreadful destruction of creatures when, O ruler of men, Arjuna, Drona and the mighty car-warrior Satyaki were excited with wrath.

### CHAPTER 125

#### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

##### Continued

#### The display of Drona's prowess

Sanjaya said

1. On the afternoon, O mighty monarch, a terrible battle was fought between Drona and the Somakas, battle whose din resembled the rumble of the rain cloud Parjannya itself.

2. That best of heroes among men, mounted on his chariot to which were yoked red steeds, viz., Drona then assailed the Pandavas, firmly resolved to fight with them.

3-4. That fierce Bowman, endued with great might and energy, that hero ever engaged in doing good to yourself, that one born in an excellent jar, that puissant son of Bharadvaja, slaying, O king, many best of heroes among the enemy, appeared O Bharata, to sport on the field of battle.

5. Him encountered Vrihadkshatra that mighty car-warrior among the Kekayas, the eldest of his five brothers and difficult of being resisted in battle.

6. Discharging sharp arrows incessantly, he afflicted the preceptor sorely, like a mighty cloud afflicting the mountain Gandhamadana by pouring its watery contents on it.

7. At him, O mighty monarch, excited with wrath Drona sped ten and five shafts, all whetted on stone and furnished with wings of gold.

8. Then Vrihadkshatra cheerful cut-off each of those arrows shot by Drona and looking like

so many enraged snakes of virulent poison, with five shafts of his own.

9. Then seeing his lightness of hands, that foremost of the regenerate ones smiled and once more, sped at him eight shafts of depressed knots.

10. Beholding those shafts shot from Drona's bow coursing swiftly towards himself, Vrihadkshatra baffled them in battle with an equal number of sharp arrows shot by himself.

11. Then your troops, O mighty monarch were filled with surprise, beholding Vrihadkshatra achieve that very difficult feat.

12. Thereupon, O king, applauding Vrihadkshatra, Drona invoked into existence the invincible Brahma-weapon of celestial make.

13. Beholding that weapon discharged by Drona in battle, the Kekaya prince, O foremost of kings, cut down that weapon with his own Brahma weapon.

14. Then O Bharata, when the Brahma weapon had been baffled, Vrihadkshatra pierced the Brahmana with sixty shafts, whetted on stones and furnished with wings of gold.

15. Then that foremost of men Drona directed several Nacharas at him; these Naracharas penetrating through his armour entered the earth.

16. Like, O best of kings, black snakes freed from their sloughs, entering into their holes in anthills, those arrows penetrating through the Kekaya prince entered the earth.

17. Then, O mighty monarch, deeply pierced with the arrows of Drona, the Kaikaya prince excited to the highest pitch of fury began to roll his charming eyes.

18. He then pierced Drona with seventy shafts whetted on stone and furnished with golden wings; he pierced the latter's charioteer in his vital parts with (fierce) darts.

19. O sire, Drona then pierced with numerous arrows by the Kekaya prince Vrihadkshatra, sped at his car many arrows of extreme sharpness.

20. Then confounding that mighty car-warrior Vrihadkshatra, Drona slew his four steeds with four winged shafts.

21. He then felled the former's charioteer from his niche of the car, with a single arrow. Cutting off his standard and umbrella with another two arrows, he felled them on the ground.

22. Then that foremost among the regenerate ones, with a well directed Naracha pierced Vrihatkshatra on his breast, where-upon the latter then fell down, with his heart torn open.

23. When Brihatkshatra that mighty car-warrior was thus slain, O king the son of Sisupala highly enraged addressing his charioteer said -

24. "O charioteer, proceed to the spot where the cuirassed Drona stands, slaughtering the Kekaya, the Panchala divisions."

25. Hearing those words of that foremost of car-warriors, the charioteer took him to the spot where Drona was, by means of his fleet steeds of Kamboja breed.

26. Then swelling with his might, that foremost of the Chedis, viz., slaughtering him, like a fly falling upon fire.

27. He then pierced Drona and his steeds. And once more he struck his adversary with sharp arrows, like a man rousing a sleeping tiger.

28. Then Drona, with a sharp razor-faced arrow winged with feathers of vultures. cut-off in the middle, the bow of that mighty warrior striving in battle.

29. Thereupon that son of Sisupala, that mighty car-warrior, taking up another bow pierced Drona with numerous shafts equipped with wings of the feather of the peacock and the Kanka bird.

30. Then Drona slaying with four arrows his four steeds, smilingly severed the head of his charioteer from his trunk.

31. He then pierced Dhristaketu himself with twenty five arrows. The prince of the Chedis then leaping off from his chariot, grasped a mace.

32-33. And hurled it at the son of Bharadvaja like an enraged she-snake.

Beholding that heavy mace endued with the strength of adamant and adorned with gold, course towards himself like the last night of a man's existence, the son of Bharadvaja cut it off with many thousands of whetted arrows.

34. Cut off by numerous shafts by the son of Bharadvaja that mace, O sire, fell down, O Kaurava, filling the earth with the noise it created.

35. Beholding the mace repulsed, the valiant Dhristaketu hurled at Drona first a lance and then a javelin decked with gold.

36. Drona then cutting off that lance with five shafts, cut-off the dart with another five. Then both those missiles cut-off, dropped on the ground like two snakes torn to pieces by Garuda.

37. Thereafter the highly puissant son of Bharadvaja shot a shaft for the destruction of Dhristaketu who was striving to slay him.

38. Penetrating through the breast plate and the breast of Dhristaketu of infinite energy, that dart entered the earth like a swan diving into a lake overgrown with lotuses.

39. Like a hungry jay catching and devouring a little insect, Drona of great heroism devoured Dhristaketu in that battle.

40. When the Chedi ruler was thus slain, his son versed in the use of excellent weapons became excited with wrath and sought to achieve the task his after left undone.

41. Him also Drona smilingly dispatched to the mansion of Death by means of his shafts, like a large and ferocious tiger slaying a young deer in the deep forest.

42. While the Pandava troops were being thus reduced in number, O Bharata, the brave son of Jarasandha rushed against, Drona.

43. Then with his arrowy showers he quickly rendered Drona in visible, like the clouds rendering the sun invisible.

44. Beholding that lightness of hands displayed by him, Drona, that crusher of Kshatriyas, began to discharge arrows by hundreds and thousands.

45. Then Drona completely covering that foremost of car-warrior name. Jarasandha's son

riding on a golden chariot, quickly slew him, before the very eyes of all the warriors.

46. Whoever was carried before Drona, he became his destroyer. And like Death at the time, of the dissolution, he wrested the lives out of all creatures.

47. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, proclaiming his name in the battle, Drona began to cover the Pandava troops with his thousands of shafts.

48. Shot by Drona, those arrows with his name engraved on them and whetted on stone, began to dispatch men, elephants and horses by hundreds in that battle.

49. Then like mighty Asuras slain by Takra, they were being slaughtered by Drona. The Panchalas then began to tremble like kine afflicted with the chill of winter.

50. Who, O foremost of the Bharatas, the Pandava troops were thus being slaughtered by Drona, a loud wail of agony was uttered them.

51. Scorched with the rays of the sun and wounded with the arrows of Drona, the Panchalas, panic struck as they were, became seized with anxiety.

52. Confounded by the net-work of arrows shot by Bharadvaja's son, the Panchala warriors then thought themselves to be seized by the thighs by alligators.

53. But after a while, O mighty monarch, the Chedis, the Srinjayas, the Kasis and the Kosalas, cheerfully rushed against the son of Bharadvaja from a desire for battle.

54. The Chedis, the Pandavas and the Panchalas then addressed one another saying—Drona is slain, Drona is slain. Thus speaking they assailed Drona.

55. Then those foremost of men fell upon Drona of great effulgence in that battle, desirous of dispatching the latter to the abodes of Death.

56. As those heroes were struggling against him, the son of Bharadvaja with his arrows, dispatched them to the regions of Death, specially those foremost among the Chedis.

57. When the best warrior of the Chedis were becoming reduced in number, the

Panchalas began to tremble, being afflicted by the shafts of Drona.

58. Beholding those terrible feats of Drona, O sire they began to exclaim aloud saying, 'O Bharata,' 'Oh Bhimasena,; 'O Dhrishtadyumna.'

59. They said - Surely this Brahmana has practised mighty ascetic austerities, by virtue of which enraged in battle he is consuming these foremost of Kshatriyas.

60. The duty of a Kshatriya is to fight and that of a Brahmana to practise severe austerities. He has practised austerities and is skilled in the use of weapons and so he burns down by his very glance.

61. The foremost of Kshatriyas entering into the blazing fire of Drona, dreadful and unquenchable, are being brunt down, O Bharata.

62. The highly effulgence Drona putting forth his prowess and his strength, is confounding all creatures and is slaying all our troops.'

63-64. Hearing those words of the Panchalas, Kshatradharma withstood Drona. Then the mighty Kshatradharma filled with rage, cut-off with a crescent-shaped arrow Drona's bow with shafts fixed on its string. Thereat excited to the highest pitch of fury that crusher of Kshatriyas viz., Drona.

65. Took up another bow, resplendent and capable of bearing great strain. Placing on its string a sharp arrow fatal to the foe.

66. The puissant Preceptor let it go drawing the bow-string back to the very ears. That arrow then killing Kshatradharman fell down on the Earth's surface.

67. With his heart cleft open, he fell down on the ground from his vehicle. Upon the Death of Dhrishtadyumna's son, the troops to tremble (in fear).

68. Thereafter the mighty Chekitana-counteracted Drona and piercing the latter with ten arrows, once more wounded him on the breast.

69. He wounded Drona's charioteer with four and his four steeds with another four

arrows. The preceptor then pierced the right arm of his adversary with sixteen arrows.

70. He pierced his standard with sixteen and his charioteer with seven shafts. When Chekitana's charioteer was killed, the horses ran wildly dragging the car along with them.

71. Then, O sire, beholding the horseless and the driverless chariot of Chekitana covered with Drona's arrow in battle.

72-73. The Pandavas and the Panchalas were seized with a great panic; then routing completely those assembled host of heroes consisting of Chedis, Panchalas and the Srinjayas, Drona appeared highly beautiful, O sire. With his hoary locks flowing down to the ear, blue in complexion, full eighty-five years of age.

74. The venerable Drona, though burdened with the weight of years then moved on the field like a youth of sixteen. Then O mighty monarch, as Drona careered fearlessly on the field of battle.

75. His adversaries considered him to be none other than Indra himself armed with the thunder. Then, O king, the intelligent, Drupada thus spoke—

76. 'Like a hungry tiger slaying inferior animals, Drona is slaying these Kshatriyas. Surely the wicked Duryodhana will obtain very miserable regions after Death.

77. It is through his covetousness that these foremost of the Kshatriyas are lying prostrate on the field of battle being slain by hundreds, like so many quartered bovine bulls.

78. Weltering in blood and being the food of the jackals and the dogs." O mighty monarch, thus speaking, that commander of a Aukshauhini, Drupada, placing the Parthas before him, quickly rushed against Drona.

## CHAPTER 126

(JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

Continued

### The anxiety of Yudhishtira

Sanjaya said

1. When the armies of the Pandavas were thus being agitated on all sides, the Pandavas

and the Panchalas, together with the Somakas retreated to a great distance.

2. When, O Bharata, that fierce and horripilating battle was raging furiously, it appeared that the hour of the world's dreadful dissolution had arrived.

3. When Drona was displaying his prowess in battle and constantly roaring and when the Pandus, the Panchalas were being slaughtered and reduced in number.

4. King Yudhishtira the virtuous could not find any protector for himself. And O foremost of kings, he thought—'how will it end.'

5. Then longingly looking on all directions with the desire of having a sight of Partha, Yudhishtira was disappointed and saw neither Arjuna nor Madhava.

6. He could not then find that foremost of men having the money-chief for the device on his banner; and could not also hear the twang of the Gandiva bow. He therefore became greatly depressed.

7. Without finding also that foremost of the Vrishnis namely Satyaki, that great car-warrior, king Yudhishtira the virtuous became overwhelmed with anxious thought and his limbs became weak.

8. Then getting no information whatever of those two best of men, the very virtuous king Yudhishtira obtained no peace of mind. The high-souled king then afraid of the reproaches of the world.

9. Began to think of the car of Sini's grandson—"In the track of Phalguna, I have sent.

10. Sini's grandson Satyaki, that one of true prowess, that giver of assurances to his friends. My anxiety that was for one only, is now for two, Satyaki and Arjuna.

11. I should now get information both of Satyaki and of Dhananjaya. Having sent Satyaki in the track of Pandu's son Arjuna.

12. Whom shall I now sent in the track of that Satvata hero, If now I strive to get information of my brother only.

13. Not taking any care for Yuyudhana, the world will blame me any say—"King

Yudhishtira the virtuous enquiring after his brother.

14-15. Neglects Satyaki of the Vrishni race, that hero of infallible prowess. Afraid as I am of the reproaches of men, I shall send Pritha's son Vrikodara in the track of the illustrious scion of Madhu's race. The affection I bear for that slayer of foes viz., Arjuna.

16. Is in no way greater than that I bear for that invincible hero of the Satvata race. That delighter of Sini's race, has been entrusted with a commission on my behalf.

17. That mighty-warrior has either for the sake of a friend's words or for the sake of his honour, has plunged into the Bharata host, like Makara entering into the ocean.

18. Hark the loud noise of the battle that the unretreating heroes are fighting with that intelligent champion of the Vrishni race!

19-20. Surely the odds are too many for him. It is therefore high time that I should think of rescuing him. It appears proper to me that armed with the bow, the son of Pandu viz., Bhimasena should proceed to the spot where those two mighty car-warriors are. There is scarcely anything on earth that Bhima cannot bear.

21. Exerting his best, he alone withstand all the bowmen of the world. Depending on the prowess of his own arms, he can make head against all enemies.

22. With the help of the strength of arms of that hero of illustrious soul, we have been able to come back from our exile and have never been defeated in battle.

23. If now Bhimasena goes to their rescue, Satvata and Phalguna will find a competent protector in his self.

24. Surely I should not cherish any anxiety of those two heroes, as both of them are versed in the use of all weapons and are protected by the son of Vasudeva himself.

25. However, it is my duty to make myself altogether unanxious on their account. Therefore should I engage Bhima to follow in the track of the Satvata hero.

26. Having done this, I should think my arrangements for the protection of Satyaki complete." Thus resolving in his mind, king Yudhishtira the virtues.

27. Thus spoke to his charioteer - "Take me to the spot where Bhima is." Hearing the words of the virtuous king Yudhishtira, the charioteer versed in the art of horse-driving.

28. Drove that chariot adorned with gold, near where Bhimas was. Reaching Bhima, the king remembering the exigencies of the hour.

29. Became totally overwhelmed with grief and entreated Bhima with numerous prayers. Then overwhelmed as he was with grief, the king summoned Bhima, near him.

30-31. Then Yudhishtira the son of Kunti addressing him said - "O Bhima, I do not see the banner-device of that younger brother of mine, who on a single car vanquished the celestials, the Gandharvas and the Daityas in battle." Thereupon Bhima addressing the virtuous Yudhishtira who was in that pitiable plight said

32. "Never before did I seen you afflicted with such great grief. In days gone by, you were our only comforter when we were afflicted with extreme distress.

33. Arise, arise, O foremost of king! Command me what act of yours shall I do? O giver of honours, there is nothing which I cannot accomplish.

34-35. O foremost of the Kurus, command me! Let not your heart give way to grief." Then king Yudhishtira, with a cheerless countenance and tearful eyes, said these words to Bhimasena sighing like a snake. 'In as much as I do hear the blast of the conch Panchajanya.

36. Filled with the breath of the illustrious and highly courageous son of Vasudeva, I infer that your brother Dhananjaya today is slain on the field of battle.

37. Upon the slaughter of Arjuna, surely Janardana is fighting. That hero on whose indomitable prowess the Pandavas rely.

38. He to whom we turn for help, like the celestials turning to the thousand-eyed deity at

the times of our sorest calamities, surely that hero is now agitating the Bharata hosts in search of the ruler of the Sindhus.

39. O Bhima, we have seen him (Arjuna) gone, but we shall never see him return! Alas for Arjuna of dark-blue complexion, who is youthful in years, possessed of curling locks exceedingly charming, handsome and a mighty car-warrior.

40. Of broad breast, mighty arms, possessed of the tread of an infuriate elephant, of eyes like those of the Chakara, that inspirer of terror into the heart of the foes!

41. Good betide you! O slayer of foes, this indeed is the cause of my grief, O mighty armed one, for the sake of Arjuna and for that of the Satvata hero.

42. My grief is ever increasing, like fire increasing when libation of clarified butter is poured on it. I do not see the device on his banner and this adds to my grief and anxiety all the more.

43. Know him a great car-warrior and lion among the men of Sattvata race, Your younger brother followed him. I do not see him and this adds to my grief and anxiety all the more.

44-45. Upon the slaughter to your brother, surely Krishna conversant with all modes of warfare, is battling with the Kurus. Bring me the intelligence of that foremost of men and of that mighty car-warrior of the Vrishni race. Who has ere now followed in the track of your brother that mighty car-warrior. I am also overwhelmed with distress on account of this last-mentioned mighty arm-hered.

46. O son of Kunti! do you hie yourself to the spot where Dhananjaya and Satyaki of great energy, have gone! This indeed is your duty.

47. O my most dutiful brother, carry out my behests as I am your elder brother. Think that Satyaki is dearer to you than your brother Arjuna (so try to help Satyaki the more).

48. O son of Pritha, desirous of doing me good, he has gone in search of Dhananjaya in an impossible track dreadful and in capable of being followed upon by warriors of inferior skill.

49. Beholding Krishna and Arjuna and the Satvata hero Satyaki sound and alive, inform me of the fact, O son of Pandu, by uttering your war-cry aloud.

## CHAPTER 127

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The entrance of Bhima in the Kaurava host and the display of his prowess

##### Bhima said

1. Riding on the chariot formerly ridden by Bharata, Ishana, Indra and Varuna, Arjuna and Krishna have proceeded to battle! They can have no fear.

2. However, placing your command on my head, behold, I proceed. do not give way to grief. Returning, I shall bring you intelligence of those foremost of men.

##### Sanjaya said

3. Having thus spoken, the highly powerful Bhimasena prepared to go having over the charge of protecting Yudhishtira to Dhrishtadyumna and other friends of the Pandavas.

4. The puissant Bhima then addressing Dhrishtadyumna said these words. "O mighty-armed one, it is all known to you, that Drona the mighty car-warrior.

5. Is ever watchful for capturing the very virtuous king Yudhishtira. O son of Prisata, when I am gone, there should be no other duty of yours.

6. Graver than that which enjoins you to look after the king-a duty which is vitally important to ourselves. King Yudhishtira, the son of Pritha, has commanded me to go. I venture not to contradict him.

7. Now I am proceeding to the spot where the doomed ruler of the Sindhus is. It is my duty to carry out the commands of the very virtuous king Yudhishtira to the very letters.

8. I am proceeding in the track of my brother and that intelligent scion of the Satvata race, namely Satyaki. So today, do you protect



king Yudhisthira the son of Pritha in battle, exerting to the best of your prowess.

9. This indeed should be your foremost duty in the course of this fight." O mighty monarch, Dhrishtadyumna then replied to Vrikodara saying—

10. "I will do, O Pritha's son, what you desire me to do. Go you with your heart at rest. Without slaying Dhrishtadyumna in battle, Drona.

11. Will never succeed in humiliating king Yudhishtira the virtuous," Thereafter making the charge of protecting the royal son of Pandu over to Dhrishtadyumna.

12. And saluting his superiors and elder brother, Bhima proceeded in the track of Phalgun. That son of Kunti was then, O Bharata, embraced by the virtuous king Yudhishtira.

13. The latter then smelt the crown of his head and pronounced blessings on him. Then circumambulating hosts of Brahmanas gratified and worshipped with presents.

14. And touching the eight kinds of auspicious articles and drinking Kailataka honey, that hero with his eyes rolling and red in intoxication, felt his strength to be doubled.

15. The Vipras performed propitiatory rites for his benefit. Omens indicative of victory greeted his sight. Beholding these indications he experienced the pleasures of victory in anticipation.

16. Auspicious winds began to blow indicating his success in the coming encounter. Then the mighty-armed Bhimasena covered with armour, graced with beautiful ear-rings.

17. Adorned with Angadas and his hands protected with leathern gloves, mounted on his car. His precious armour made of steel and adorned with gold.

18. Looked beautiful like a mighty cloud fringed with streaks of lightning. Attired beautifully in yellow, red, white and sable garments.

19. And with his neck protected with a neck-protector, he looked beautiful like a mass of cloud bearing the bow of Indra (rainbow).

When Bhima was on the point of proceeding to battle against your troops.

20. The fierce blare of the conch Panchajanya, O ruler of men, was once more heard. Hearing that dreadful blast capable of inspiring terror into the three worlds.

21. The very virtuous king Yudhishtira once more addressing Bhima of mighty arms said - "Hark the sound of the conch (water-born) blown by the foremost of the Vrishni race.

22. Reverberating through the terrestrial and the aerial regions! Surely Savyasachin having been involved in great danger.

24. The wilder of the mace and the discus in battling with the Kurus! Surely numerous inauspicious omens are today being seen by the venerable Kunti and Drupadi and Subhadra and all their friends. Therefore, O Bhima, at the top of your speed, proceed to the spot where Dhananjaya is.

25. O son of Pritha, the cardinal and subsidiary quarter appear to me to be void in consequence of my unsatisfied desire to see Dhananjaya and that hero of the Satvata race."

26. Then Vrikodara was repeatedly urged on by his elder brother, with the words "Proceed Proceed." Therefore O king, that highly puissant son of Pandu namely Bhimasena.

27. Covering his fingers with protectors made of leather, took up his bow. Urged on by his elder brother, that brother Bhimasena devoted as he was to the interests of his brothers.

28. Caused drums to be struck up. Then he blew his conch with great force and uttering his war-cries, began to twang his bow.

29. With that sound, causing the hearts of his enemies to be depressed, he rushed upon the foe, assuming a dreadful aspect.

30. Fleet steeds, obedient to the reins and of the foremost breed, neighing furiously, bore him. Those steeds of the fleetness of wind or the mind, were driven by Visoka himself.

31. Drawing and rubbing and stretching with his hands the string of his bow, that son of Pritha began to crush and kill the vanguard of the enemy.

32. Then as that mighty-armed one proceeded onwards, the Panchalas together with the Somakas, all endued with heroism, followed him from behind, like the celestials following Maghavat.

33-35. Then, O mighty monarch, the brothers, Dussala, Chitrasena, Kundavedhi, Vivinsati, Drumukha, Dussaha, Vikarna, Sala, Vindu and Anuvindu, Sumukha, Dirghavahu, Sudarsana, Mandurakas, Suhasta, Susena, Dirghavahu, Abhaya, Raudrakaman, Suvarman and Durvimochana, approaching Bhimasena, surrounded him from all sides.

36. Those foremost of car-warriors, those heroes and their following troops fighting heedfully and falling upon Bhimasena appeared highly beautiful.

37. Then that mighty car-warrior endued with heroism was surrounded by those warriors. Beholding them, the son of Kunti the highly powerful Bhimasena.

38. Furiously fell upon them like a lion attacking other inferior animals. Then those heroes displaying mighty weapons of celestial make.

39. Covered Bhima with their arrows like the clouds covering the sun. Passing through all those divisions, Bhima then rushed against that of Drona.

40. Then he poured his arrowy shower on the elephant division that was stationed in the front.

41. The son of the wind-god, mangling in no time that division of elephants, with his shafts, caused it to give way in all directions. Like beasts terrified at the roar of a Sarabha in the forest.

42. Those elephants began to fly away uttering distressful cries. Transgressing that division, he quickly assailed that of Drona.

43. Him then the preceptor checked like the continent checking the surging waves of the ocean; and then the latter smilingly pierced the former on the forehead with a Naracha.

44. Thereupon that son of Pandu appeared beautiful like the sun shooting his rays only in

an upward direction. Then the Preceptor considering that, like Phalguna.

45. Bhima would also worship him, addressed the latter saying—'O Bhimasena, you shall never succeed in penetrating into the host of your enemies.

46. Without, in the first instance defeating myself, O mighty one, who is now your foe. It was with my permission that your younger brother, with Krishna, has penetrated into this array.

47. But you shall never be able (of allowed) to enter into this division of mine." Thereupon the dauntless Bhima, hearing those words of the preceptor.

48-49. And waxing worth, quickly replied to Drona with his eyes looking like burnished copper—"O vilest of Brahmanas, it cannot be that Arjuna has entered this array with your permission. He is invincible and is competent even to penetrate through the army of Shakra himself. It was only for honouring you that he offered you worship.

50. But, O Drona, I am no lament Arjuna. I am Bhimasena your enemy. We used to regard you as our father, preceptor and friend and we were like your sons.

51. Thinking thus we used to humble ourselves to you. But as you speak such words today, it seems that all that has been changed.

52. If you take yourself to be our enemy, let it be as you think. Myself am Bhima and shall do towards you what should be done towards you what should be done towards a foe."

53. Then Bhima whirling his mace that resembled the mace of the Destroyer, let it go, O king, at Drona; but Drona had quickly jumped down from his car.

54. The mace then crushed Drona's chariot with his horses, charioteer and standard; then Bhima grinded numerous warriors, like the tempest crushing mighty trees.

55. But once more your sons surrounded that foremost of car warriors. Meanwhile that foremost of smiters, Drona mounting on another car.

56. Stationed himself at the gate of the array ready to fight with Bhima. O mighty monarch, thereupon the puissant Bhimasena waxing worth.

57. Covered the car division that was then placed before him, with a downpour of arrows. Then those mighty car-warriors, your sons, thus wounded in battle.

58-59. Endued as they were with great strength, fought on with Bhima, inspired with the hope of victory. Then Dushasana excited with wrath, hurled a lance at Bhima. Desirous of slaying the son of Pandu, he then threw that lance at the former—lance that was made entirely of steed and that was exceedingly sharp. Then the mighty lance hurled by your son when it was coursing towards Bhima.

60-63. Was cut in twain by the latter and that appeared indeed very wonderful. Then the son of Pandu endued with great prowess, with three sharp arrows, slew the three warriors, Kundavedhin, Susena and Dirghanetra. Then again he slew the heroic Manduraka the bravest of your sons and the enhancer of the glory of the Kurus; then Bhima with another three arrows slew three other of your sons viz., Abhaya, Rudrakarman and Durvimochana.

64. Thus slaughtered by the puissant Bhima, your sons, O mighty monarch. Once more surrounded Bhima that foremost of smiters.

65-69. Then they poured their arrows of Pandu's son of fearful deeds like clouds drenching the mountain breast with their contents at the end of summer. Like a mountain receiving a shower of stones, the son of Pandu then received that arrowy shower and that slayer of foes was none the less worse for it. Then the son of Kunti, as if smiling, dispatched with his arrows, Vinda and Anuvinda together with Suvarman to the abode of death. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, he pierced in battle, your heroic son Sudarsana, who fell down and died on the spot. Then in no time, the son of Pandu, casting his eyes on all directions, began to agitate that car-host with his (fierce) arrows. Then like a herd of deer, terrified at the loud clatter of ear-wheels.

70. Your sons, O ruler of men, began to desert their ranks; and afflicted with the fear of Bhima, they fled with all the speed at their command.

71. The son of Kunti pursued that mighty army of your sons from behind and, O king, he began to pierce the Kaurava hosts right and left.

72. O mighty monarch, your soldiers then thus slaughtered by Bhima, shunning him began to fly away, urging their excellent steeds to the top of their speed.

73. Vanquishing them in battle, the highly puissant Bhimasena that son of Pandu, sent up a loud war-cry and began to strike his palms against his arms.

74. The mighty Bhima then having caused that great slapping sound and there by striking terror into the host of the enemy and slaying many best warriors and passing through that division, hied towards of division of Drona.

## CHAPTER 128

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The joy of Yudhishtira

#### Sanjaya said

1. The Preceptor then, desirous of checking the progress of the son of Pandu, who had now crossed the car-host, began to cover him smilingly with his arrows.

2. Then seeming to drink in the arrowy showers shot from Drona's bow and confounding your troops by his illusive powers, he began to rush against your sons.

3. Urged on by your sons, many king all foremost bowmen, rushing with forces began to surround Bhima from all sides.

4-7. Then, O Bharata, surrounded by them, Bhima smiling and roaring like a lion, took up a dreadful mace. He then with force hurled at them that mace capable of destroying the foe, like Indra hurling his thunder against his enemies. Hurling with force and of great strength. That mace began to crush, O king, your troops in battle; and O king, it seemed to

fill the earth with its loud noise. Burning greatly, that dreadful mace terrified your sons. Then beholding that mace of great momentum wrapt up in blazing flames course towards themselves, your troops began to fly away uttering cries.

8-11. At the unbearable sound of that mace, O sire men began to fall down on the spot they stood; and many car-warriors dropped down from their cars. Slaughtered by Bhima armed with a mace in his hands, your troops began to fly away terrified from the field of battle, like deer attacked by a tiger. The son of Kunti then causing his brave adversaries to fly away, passed through that division with great force, like Suparna, that king of birds. While Bhima that leader of leaders of car hosts was thus spreading carnage in your troops. O mighty monarch, the son of Bharadvaja, viz., Drona rushed upon Bhima, checking the latter with his showers of arrows.

12-13. Then he uttered a loud war-cry, inspiring there with the Pandavas with terror. Then a dreadful combat commenced between the high-souled Bhima and Drona, that resembled that between the Gods and Asuras. Then with the sharp shafts shot from the bow of Drona.

14. Numerous heroes were slain by hundreds and by thousands. Then jumping down from his car and rushing with fury, the son of Pandu.

15-18. With his eyes closed, on foot, attacked Drona. Then like a bovine bull receiving a shower of rain without any pain whatsoever. Bhima that foremost of men received that shower of arrows, Proceeding from Drona's car. O sire, although wounded by Drona in battle, that puissant hero, catching hold of the shaft of Drona's car with his hands, over-threw it. Thereupon Drona thus over-thrown with vehemence by Bhima.

19. Mounted on another car, an flew towards the gate of the array and at that time, his driver urged his steeds to the top of their speed.

20-21. O foremost of the Kurus that feat achieved by Bhimasena was indeed wonderful.

Then the mighty Bhimasena, ascending once more his own chariot.

22. Rushed furiously upon the division of your son; like a tempest crushing rows of trees, he then began to crush that host of the Kshatriyas.

23-24. He then proceeded resisting the hostile troops like mountains checking the surging sea; then coming upon the division of the Bhojas, protected by Hridika's son.

25. O king, Bhimasena crushed it horribly and then passed through it. Terrifying his enemies with the sound of his palm-strokes, O sire.

26. Bhima defeated them all like a tiger defeating a herd of bulls. Then passing through the Bhoja and Kamboja divisions.

27-29. And through that of the countless Mlechchas, who were all accomplished in smiting, Bhima obtained sight of Satyaki, the mighty car-warriors engaged in fighting. He then advanced quickly and resolutely, desirous of having a sight of Dhananjaya.

30-31. Passing through all your divisions then, the son of Pandu obtained a sight of Dhananjaya engaged in battle. Then the highly puissant Bhima, that foremost of men, seeing Arjuna exerting vigorously for bringing about the slaughter of the king of the Sindhus, sent up a loud war-cry.

32-33. Like, O king, the clouds roaring at the rainy seasons. That dreadful roar of the roaring Bhimasena was then heard, O foremost of the Kurus, by Partha and the son of Vasudeva engaged in battle.

34. Those two heroes hearing at the same time the war-cry of the mighty Bhima themselves began to shout their war-cries, desirous of having a sight of Bhimasena. Then Pritha's son Arjuna and he of Madhu's race, both uttering their war-cries.

35-37. Rushed upon your army, O mighty monarch, like two bovine bulls. Hearing the shouts of Bhimasena and those of Phalguna the fierce bowman. The very virtuous king Yudhishtira, O monarch, became greatly

delighted. Hearing their shouts the king then was relieved of his burden of anxiety. That sovereign then become hopeful of Dhananjaya's success in the battle.

38. While the furious Bhima was thus roaring the mighty-armed Yudhishtira that foremost of all virtuous persons, that son of Dharma, reflected smilingly for a while and then thus worded the thought that then filled his heart.

39-40. "O Bhima, you have indeed sent me information; you have truly carried out the commands of your superior. O son of Pandu, they cannot have any hope of victory in battle, whose enemy you yourself are. It is indeed fortunate that Savyasachin, that conqueror of Kubera still lives.

41. It is also fortunate that Satyaki of indomitable prowess is sound and safe. It is fortunate that I hear the roars of the roaring Vasudeva and Dhananjaya. He who having vanquished Shakra in battle, gratified the God of fire. It is fortunate, that slayer of foes Phalgunas still lives. He depending upon whose prowess of arms we live.

42-47. Through good fortune, that Arjuna still lives and is slaughtering his foes. He who vanquished with a single bow the Daityas Nivata Kavacha who were in capable of being defeated even by the celestials themselves, it is indeed fortunate that son of Pritha still lives. He, who in the city of the Matsyas defeated the united Kauravas come with the intent of seizing the cows of the Matasya king, it is indeed fortunate that son of Pritha still lives. He who by the strength of arms slew the fourteen thousand Kekayas in battle, it is fortunate that the son Pritha still lives. He who for the sake of rescuing Duryodhana and vanquished with the force of his weapons the mighty king of the Gandharva, it is fortunate that the son of Pritha still lives. Decked with the diadem and garlands, endued with prowess, owning white steeds and having Krishna for his charioteer.

48. That Arjuna, ever dear to me, through good fortune still lives. Afflicted as he is sorely with the grief caused by the death of his son and striving to achieve a most difficult feat.

49. And even now endeavouring to compass the death of Jayadratha, he that has made a terrible vow, viz., Dhananjaya, will he succeed in slaying the king of the Sindhus in battle.

50. Shall I behold Arjuna again before the sun set, when he will return having fulfilled his vow through the help of Vasudeva's son?

51. Will the ruler of the Sindhus ever anxious for achieving the good of king Duryodhana, afford delight unto his foes, being slain by Phalgunas.

52. Will king Duryodhana, beholding the ruler of the Sindhus slain by Arjuna, conclude peace with ourselves?

53. Will the wicked Duryodhana beholding his brothers slain in battle by Bhimasena, conclude peace with us?

54. Will the wicked Duryodhana beholding many other mighty warriors slain and fallen on the field, repent for his own folly.

55. Will our enmity end with the sacrifice of Bhima's self alone? Will Suyodhana conclude peace for the safety of the rest of the Kshatriyas?"

56. When in his heart overflowing with compassion, king Yudhishtira was thus thinking, on the other part of the field.

## CHAPTER 129

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The defeat of Karna

#### Dhritarashtra said

1. What heroes of my army resisted the mighty Bhimasena when he was thus roaring like clouds surcharged with thunder?

2. O Sanjaya, I do not find that warrior in the three worlds, who can, stand before Bhimasena when he is excited with rage.

3. I do not, O son, find that warrior who can stand before Bhima when in battle with his mace uplifted, he stands like Death incarnate.

4. He that slays elephants with elephants, destroys cars with cars, who will stand before

that Bhima not excepting Indra of hundred-sacrifices?

5. Who amongst those devoted to the interests of Duryodhana, would withstand Bhimasena in battle, excited as he was with wrath and engaged in slaughtering my sons?

6. What persons, stood before the Bhima-conflagration when it was engaged in consuming the heaps of straw and grass constituted by my sons?

7. Who were they that surrounded Bhima in battle, beholding him crush my sons one after another, like Death's self-destroying all creatures?

8. I do not fear Arjuna or Krishna or Satyaki or him born of the sacrificial fire (Dhrishtadyumna) so much as I do Bhimasena.

9. O Sanjaya relate to me, what heroes advanced against the blazing Bhima-fire which so greatly consumed by sons?

#### Sanjaya said

10. When the mighty car-warrior Bhimasena was thus roaring, the mighty Karna rushed at him, himself uttering a loud shout (in response).

11. Unable to bear the roar of Bhima, he began to twang his bow capable of withstanding a great strain. Then the mighty Karna, out of a desire for battle displaying his strength.

12. Checked the career of Bhima; then beholding the son of Vikartana stand before him with hostile intentions, Vrikodara.

13. Became inflamed with wrath; and that mighty hero discharged at him numerous shafts whetted on stone. Karna received all those shafts and sped many in return.

14-15. In that battle between Bhima and Karna, hearing the sound of their Palm-strokes, the limbs of on-looking and fighting warriors and horsemen and elephants, began to tremble. Hearing the deafening roars uttered by Bhimasena on the field of battle.

16. The foremost of the Kshatriyas regarded the welkin and the earth to be filled completely by its echo. Then again at the dreadful cries uttered by the illustrious son of Pandu.

17. The bows of all the warriors fell down on the earth. Then, O mighty monarch, seized with panic and dejected, the steeds and elephants, repeatedly discharged urine and excreta. Numerous dreadful omens of evil then appeared to view.

18. During that fierce fight between Karna and Bhimasena, the sky became covered with flights of vultures and Kankas.

19. Karna then pierced Bhima with twenty arrows and next swiftly pierced the latter's charioteer with five arrows.

20. Then the highly puissant Bhimasena endued with great activity smilingly sped at Karna in that battle a set of sixty-four arrows.

21. Then at him, O mighty monarch, Karna shot four arrows. But before these arrows could reach him, with nine arrows of depressed knots, Bhima.

22. Cut them in numerous parts, displaying at the same time his great lightness of hands. Karna then shrouded him in a net-work of numerous arrows.

23. Thus although shrouded by Karna on all sides, that mighty car-warrior that son of Pandu, cut-off the bow of Karna near his grasp.

24. He then pierced him with many arrows of close knots. Then taking up another bow and stringing it, the son of the charioteer.

25. That mighty car-warrior of dreadful deeds, pierced Bhima in battle (with many arrows). Thereat highly enraged, with three arrows of depressed knots, Bhima.

26. Struck with force on the breast of the son of the charioteer. With those arrows struck on the centre of his breast, Karna appeared beautiful like.

27. A mighty mountain with its three peaks towering high. Pierced as he was with those excellent arrows, streams of blood began to flow down his person.

28-29. Like streams of liquefied red chalk flowing down the sides of a mountain. Afflicted with that might wound inflicted by Bhima, Karna was a little flurried.

30. Then fixing an arrow on his bow, O sire, he pierced Bhima therewith; and then shot arrows by hundreds and thousands.

31. Thus through then quickly covered with arrows by that resolute bowman namely Karna, yet that son of Pandu smilingly cut-off the bow-string of the former.

32. Then with a broad-headed shaft, Bhima dispatched Karna's charioteer to the abode of Death; then that mighty car-warrior deprived the latter's steeds of their lives.

33. Jumping down from the car of which the steeds were slain, O ruler of men, the mighty car-warrior Karna ascended the chariot of Vrisasena.

34. Then the valiant Bhima, having defeated Karna uttered a loud war-cry, that resembled the roar of the rain-cloud Parjanya.

35. Hearing that roar of his, Yudhishtira became filled with delight, as he thought that Karna had been defeated, O Bharata by Bhimasena.

36. Then the Pandava troops simultaneously blew their conchs. Hearing that sound of challenge emitted by the enemy, your own troops shouted aloud.

37-38. Pritha's son, (Arjuna) then twanged his bow and Krishna blew his water-born conch. But drowning all those sounds, the shout of Bhima rose and -

39. Was heard by all your troops, O sire. Then those two combatants, viz., Karna and Bhima each struck the other with straight-flying arrows. The son of Radha shot his shaft mildly, but the son of Pandu shot those of his with great vehemence.

## CHAPTER 130

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The battle between Duryodhana and the Panchalas princes

##### Sanjaya said

1. When his army had been shattered and when Arjuna, Bhimasena and the Satvata hero Satyaki had all gone after the ruler of the Sindhus, your son Duryodhana proceeded towards Drona.

2. On a single car and in all haste and reflecting on the various measures to be

adopted. That chariot of your son driven with great celerity.

3. And endued with the fleetness of the wind or thought, dashed towards Drona. Then your son with eyes red in rage addressing Drona said

4. Arjuna and Bhimasena and the invincible Satyaki and many other mighty car-warriors, having defeated all our troops.

5. Have succeeded in reaching near the ruler of the Sindhus, O slayer of foes. There they are fighting—all these indomitable and mighty car warriors vanquishing all our troops. But O giver of honour, how is it, that you have today been transgressed by Bhima and Satyaki?

6-7. O foremost of the Brahmanas, your defeat by that scion of the Satvata race and by Arjuna is wonderful like the drying up of the ocean itself!

8-9. People are saying—'How is it that Drona that master of archery has been defeated by Bhimasena indeed all warriors are thus speaking and it should be disgraceful to you. I see that the destruction of my unfortunate self is inevitable.

10-12. But when, O foremost of men, all the three mighty car-warriors have transgressed you, tell us what you have to say on the business at hand. Let by-gones be by-gones. O giver of honour, now think what is to be done at present. Speak quickly what should next be done for the ruler of the Sindhus on the present crisis and let that also be quickly carried out into action.

##### Drona said

13. O mighty monarch, there are many things to be thought of, but hear what should be done now. Three mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host have penetrated into our army.

14. We have as much cause of apprehension behind those three as we have before them. But to my mind the cause of apprehension is greater there where both Krishna and Dhananjaya are.

15. The Bharata army have simultaneously been attacked both from the van and the rear. At this crisis, I consider our foremost duty is to protect the ruler of the Sindhus.

16. Afraid as he is of the enraged Dhananjaya, he should be regarded as the primary object of our protection, O sire. The two heroes, Vrikodara and Yuyudhana have also proceeded towards the king of the Sindhus.

17. The dire result of the game of dice, planned by the ingenuity of Shakuni, has now overtaken you. There were no actual victory or defeat in the assembly in that game.

18. Now that we are engaged in this battle, we will reap victory or defeat. Those innocent things with which Shakuni played in the assembly of the Kurus. And which he knew to be dice, are in reality not dice, but mighty arrows incapable of being defeated. Those dice have now been changed into shafts capable of mangling your bodies.

19. Now in this field where numerous Kurus have been assembled, know the troops to be the players and arrows the dice, O ruler of men.

20. In this game of dice, know the ruler of the Sindhus to be the stake. Indeed Jayadratha is the precious stake for which we are fighting today.

21. For these reasons, O mighty monarch, it behoves us all to effect the protection of the Sindhu king at the very cost of our own lives.

22. O sire, there indeed will our victory of defeat be known where those fierce bowmen are exerting themselves in protecting the king of the Sindhus.

23. Therefore do you hie yourself to that spot and endeavour to protect those protectors of the Sindhus king. I shall stay here and dispatch others (for helping the Sindhu king).

24. I shall also engage with the Panchalas united with the Pandavas and the Srinjaya." Then at the command of the preceptor, Duryodhana quickly proceeded to the spot indicated by the former.

25. Attend by his followers and bent on achieving a fierce feat. Mean-while the two protectors of Arjuna's car-wheels, viz., the Panchala princes, Yudhamanyu and Uttamanjas.

26. Were proceeding towards Savyasachin, by the skirts of the Kaurava troops. The two

princes O monarch, were checked by Kritavarman.

27-28. When they were trying to find Arjuna who had penetrated into your army desirous of battle. The king of the Kurus, saw them proceeding by the skirts of his army.

29. Then the mighty Duryodhana of the Bharata race quickly began a terrible fight with those two brothers endued with great activity.

30. Then those two foremost of the Kshatriyas, both classed as Maharathas has assailed Duryodhana with bows ready for use.

31. Then Yudhamanyu pierced him with thirty arrows furnished with wings of the Kanka-feathers; the former then pierced the latter's charioteer with twenty and his four horses with four arrows.

32. Then with a single arrows Duryodhana cut-off the standard of Yudhamnya; and then with another arrow your son cut-off the latter's bow.

33. With a bhalla then he felled his adversary's charioteer from his nich in the car and with four arrows wounded the four steeds.

34. Thereupon Yudhamanyu excited with wrath pierced your son of the breast with thirty arrows in the quickness.

35. Similarly Uttamoujas waxing wroth pierced Duryodhana's charioteer with arrows decked with gold and dispatched him to the abode of Death.

36. Duryodhana also, O foremost of kings, slew the four steeds of the Panchala prince Uttamoujas and also both this Parshni-drives.

37. Having his horses and his charioteer stain, Uttamoujas ascended the car of his brother Yudhamanyu with great celerity.

38. Ascending the car of his brother, he wounded the horses of Duryodhana with numerous arrows and the horse then slain fell down dead on the ground.

39-40. Then that foremost of warriors Duryodhana, jumping down from his chariot of which the steeds were slain rushed at the Panchala princes with a mace in his grasp.



41. Beholding that enraged subduer of hostile cities make towards themselves, Yudhamanya and Uttamoujas jumped down from the terrace of their cars.

42. Then that one armed with the mace, with a stroke of his weapon pressed that excellent car decked with gold to the ground together with its horses charioteer and standards.

43. Thus having slain the steeds and charioteer of his adversaries, your son that afflicter of his foes having his own horses and charioteer slain, ascended the car of the ruler of Madras.

44. Those two foremost of Panchalas, those princes both mighty car-warriors, ascending two others cars, proceeded towards Vibhatsu.

## CHAPTER 131

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The defeat of Karna

**Sanjaya said**

1. When that hair-stirring battle continued to be fought and when all the warriors were filled with anxiety and were greatly afflicted.

2. O foremost of the Bharatas, Radha's son advanced against Bhima for battle, like one infuriate elephant rushing against a compeer in the same state.

**Dhritarashtra said**

3. How raged the battle, near Arjuna's chariot between those two mighty car-warriors, Bhima and Karna, both possessed of great strength?

4. Once before, Karna was vanquished by Bhima in battle, how could he then again assail Bhimasena?

5. How could Bhima proceed against Suta's son, that mighty car-warriors regarded as the foremost of all warriors on earth.

6. Having worsted Bhishma and Drona, the very virtuous king Yudhishtira entertained not so much apprehension from any body else as he did from Karna.

7. Thinking of the mighty car-warrior Karna, he passes many sleepless nights from fear. How then could Bhima proceed against that son of Suta?

8. O Sanjaya, how could indeed Bhima fight with Karna, that best of all warriors, that hero devoted to the Brahmana, endued with prowess and never flying away from fight.

9. How did those two mighty car-warriors Karna and Vrikodara fight with each other, in that combat that raged in the neighborhood of Partha's chariot?

10. Knowing his brotherhood towards the Pandavas and possessing a compassionate temperament and remembering the words of Kunti, how could the son of Suta fight with Bhimasena?

11. How did Bhima, that hero, fight with Suta's Karna, keeping alive the memory of the wrongs inflicted on him by the latter in days gone by?

12. O Suta, my son Duryodhana fondly cherishes the hope that Karna will obtain victory in battle over the united Pandavas.

13. How did that one, on whom my wicked son's hope of victory rested, fight with Bhimasena of fierce deeds.

14. How did Bhima also fight with that son of Suta, O sire, relying on whom my sons provoked hostilities with many mighty car-warriors?

15. How did Bhima fight with that son of a charioteer, remembering the numerous wrongs inflicted on them to have their cause in him?

16. How did Bhima fight with that highly puissant son of Suta, who on a single car had vanquished the three worlds?

17. How did Bhima then fight with that son of Suta who was born with a pair of (natural) ear-rings and covered in a coat of mail.

18. As you are conversant with these topics, O Sanjaya, tell me truly in detail how the battle between these two heroes, was fought and who obtained victory.

**Sanjaya said**

19. Abandoning then that foremost of car-warriors namely, the son of Radha, Bhimasena

strove to reach the spot where the heroic Krishna and Dhananjaya were.

20. Then as he was proceeding, the son of Radha assailing him began to shower shafts furnished with wings of Kanka-feather on him, like clouds showering rain on the mountain.

21. Then the valorous son of Adhiratha, with his beautiful face like a blooming lotus lighted up with a smile, challenged Bhimasena as he was coursing onwards thus—

**Karna said**

22. "O Bhima! your foes never thought of your fighting even in their dreams. Why do you show me your back from a desire for seeing Arjuna.

23. O delighter of the Panchalas! this conduct is not worthy of the son of Kunti. Confronting me do you cover me with a shower of arrows."

**Sanjaya said**

24. Bhimasena then did not put up with that challenge of Karna tamely. But wheeling his car in a semicircle, he began to fight with the son of Suta.

25. In that combat when that one conversant with all weapons and clad in mail viz., Karna was proceeding against him, the illustrious Bhima pierced him with straight-flying arrows.

26. Desirous of reaching the end of all those hostilities, he began to rob Karna's strength, out of a desire for slaying him. Having slain many other Kauravas the mighty Bhima.

27. That vindictive son of Pandu, excited with wrath, that slayer of foes, O sire, began to discharge at Karna many showers of fearful arrows.

28. Then the highly puissant son of Suta, by means of the illusion of his weapon devoured up all those showers of arrows poured by that one of the gaît of an infuriate elephant.

29. O mighty monarch, duly favoured by knowledge, then that fierce bowman Karna began to career on the field of battle like a teacher of the military science.

30. The wrathful son of Radha then seemed to insult with his smiles, Bhimasena who was fighting in great anger.

31. But the son of Kunti did not brook that derisive smile of Radha's, son in the midst of many other brave warriors, who were looking at that fight between them.

32. Excited to the highest pitch of rage, the mighty Bhimasena, with several Vatsadantas, pierced Karna on the centre of his chest, like a guide goring a mighty elephant with the hook.

33. Once more with twenty one whetted shafts furnished with wings and duly discharged, Bhimasena pierced Suta's son of variegated armour.

34. Then the heroic Karna pierced each of the steeds of Bhima with five shafts, steeds that were decked with golden caparisons and endued with the fleetness of the wind.

35. O king, thereafter, a net-work of arrows was woven, within the twinkling of an eye, around the car of Bhima by the mighty Karna.

36. O mighty monarch, the son of Pandu with his car, standard and charioteer, was covered all over with the arrows shot from Karna's bow.

37. Then with sixty-four arrows, Karna shattered the tough armour of Bhima to pieces; and waxing wroth he wounded Pritha's son with Narachas capable of penetrating through the very vitals.

38. Then the mighty-armed Vrikodara unmindful of all those shafts shot from Karna's bow, began to strike dauntlessly the son of Suta.

39. Bhima then with the body struck with the arrows discharged from Karna's bow, that resembled snakes of virulent poison did indeed feel no pain, O mighty monarch.

40. Then the highly puissant Bhimasena pierced Karna in that battle, with thirty-two Vallas of great sharpness and energy.

41. Then Karna, indifferently covered Bhima of mighty arms and desirous of the slaughter of the Sindhu king, with a tremendous shower of arrows.

42. In that battle the son of Radha fought mildly with Bhima, but Bhima fought with the former wrathfully remembering all their former hostilities.

43. Bhima excited with wrath, did not bear that insult; and that slayer of foes quickly sped a shower of shafts at Karna.

44. Those shafts then discharged by Bhimasena in that battle, fell upon the heroic Karna like so many humming birds.

45. Furnished with golden wings, keen points and discharged from the bow of Bhimasena, those arrows covered Radha's son like flocks of insects covering a blazing fire.

46. Then that foremost of car-warriors viz., Karna covered on all sides with those arrows, O king, O Bharata, shot numerous fierce arrows at Bhima.

47. Vrikodara then cut-off with many shafts all those arrows of Karna that ornaments of battle, arrows that resembled the bolt of heaven, before they could reach him.

48. But once more, O Bharata, that subduer of foes viz., Vikartana's son Karna, covered Bhimasena with a shower of arrows.

49. O Bharata, we then beheld Bhimasena thus pierced all over with arrows, resemble a porcupine with its quills erect.

50. Then that hero Vikodara held all those shafts, furnished with golden wings, whetted on stone and shot from the bow of Karna, like the sun holding his own myriad rays.

51. His body steeped in blood, Bhima then appeared beautiful like a Asoka tree in the spring covered all over with blossoms.

52. But the mighty armed Bhima with his eyes roiling in rage, did not for long, bear that conduct of Karna in battle patiently.

53. Thereafter he pierced Karna in battle with twenty five Narachas; pierced therewith Karna appeared beautiful like a white mountain with his sides covered over with snakes of virulent poison.

54. Then once more that one of prowess resembling that of the immortals, pierced that reckless son of a Suta in his vital limbs with two

sets of arrows numbering six and eight respectively.

55. Again the valiant Bhimasena with another arrow smilingly cut-off the bow of Karna with great quickness.

56. Quickly did he then slay with his arrows Karna's four steeds and charioteer. He then pierced Karna on the breast with Narachas of the effulgence of solar rays.

57. Those winged shafts piercing Karna through, fell down on the earth like the rays of the sun penetrating through masses of rain clouds.

58. Wounded with those arrows and with his bow cut open, Karna was afflicted with great pain; although proud of his manliness, he then proceeded to another part of the field.

## CHAPTER 132

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The battle between Bhima and Karna

##### Dhritarashtra said

1. Beholding, O Sanjaya, him on whom the hope of victory of my sons rested, compelled to turn his face away from the field of battle, what did king Duryodhana say?

2-3. Or that disciple of Parasurama is equipped with the merits as expected in disciple. He is even more valorous than his preceptor yet defeated by the son of Kunti, Bhimasena in play way. O Sanjaya! What did Duryodhana express on seeing the one expected to reap victory, so departing as a result of defeated body by Bhimasena?

4. How did the puissant Bhima ever proud of prowess, fight then? What did then Karna do, Beholding Bhima blaze forth like a mighty fire in battle?

##### Sanjaya said

5. Riding on another duly furnished car, Karna then rushed at Pandu's son, like the ocean lashed into fury by the tempest.

6. Then, O ruler of men, beholding Adhiratha's son excited with rage, your sons considered Bhimasena to be a libation poured on fire.

7. Then dreadfully slapping his palms and producing whizzes with his arrows, the sons of Radha began to shower arrows on the car of Bhimasena.

8. Once more, O king, the encounter between the heroic son of Vikartana and the high-souled Bhima, raged furiously.

9. Filled with wrath and desirous of slaying one another, O mighty-armed one, they began to look at each other as if to burn each other down with their glances.

10. Their eyes became fierce and red in rage and they breathed like two snakes. Those two slayers of enemies, those two heroes, then began to mangle each other with their arrows.

11. They fought on with one another like two furious tigers or two swift-flying hawks or two enraged Sarabhas.

12. Then that subduer of foes, viz., Bhima remembering the hardships undergone by him at the game of dice, during his exile in the woods and residence in the city of Virata;

13. And recollecting the despoliation of the kingdom swelling with prosperity and gems by your sons and various other injuries inflicted upon the Pandavas, by yourself and the son of Suta;

14. And bearing in mind the fact that you had conspired to burn the innocent Kunti with her sons and remembering the woes of Krishna in the midst of the assembly at the hands of those wretches;

15. As also the holding of her locks by Dushasana and the abusive speech uttered by Karna, O Bharata.

16. To this effect—"Take you another husband, for, all your husbands are dead; the sons of Pritha have merged into hell and are like sesamum seed without kernel."

17. Remembering also those words, O descendant of the Kuru race, that were uttered by the Kauravas in your presence and the fact

that your son had been desirous of enjoying Krishna as a slave.

18. Recollecting also those words, harsh and cruel, uttered by Karna, when the sons of Pandu were about to go to the forest, clad in deerskins;

19. And keeping alive in his remembrance the brag your vindictive and foolish son, then in prosperity, indulged in holding the woe stricken sons of Pritha in the light of mere straws—

20. Indeed the virtuous-souled Bhima that slayer of opponents recollecting all these hardships and those he had undergone since his childhood, became disregarding of his very life.

21. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, stretching his invincible and gold-decked bow, Bhima rushed at Krishna, reckless of his very life.

22. Then with a net-work woven with arrows whetted on stone, lustrous like the rays of the sun spread around the car of Karna, Bhima intercepted the rays of the sun.

23. Thereupon Adhiratha's son, smiling (in contempt) tore away Bhima's net-work of arrows, by means of his own winged shafts whetted on stone.

24. Then the mighty car-warrior of mighty arms and great strength, viz., that son of Adhiratha, pierced with nine whetted and mighty shafts that mighty warrior Bhima.

25. Assailed with those winged shafts, like an elephant assailed with the hook, Vrikodara then dauntlessly rushed against Suta's son.

26. Then as that foremost of the Pandavas was rushing with fury at him, Karna, excited with wrath, rushed at him like an infuriated elephant rushing at another.

27. Then blowing his conch whose blast resembled the sound of a hundred Bheris, he agitated the hostile array that resembled the surging sea.

28. Beholding his army teeming with elephants, horses, cars and infantry then agitated, Bhima approaching Karna began to cover him with arrows.

29. Karna thereupon caused his own horses of the hue of swans to be mingled with those of Bhimasena of the hue of bears and covered in his turn the son of Pandu, with his shafts.

30. Beholding those steeds of the hue of bears and fleet as the wind, mingled with those of Karna of the hue of swans, cries Oh and Alas, rose among the army of your son.

31. Those horses, fleet as the winds, thus mingled together looked exceedingly beautiful like white and black clouds, O king, mingled together in the firmament.

32. Beholding Karna and Vrikodara burning with rage with, their eyes coppery therewith, your mighty car-warriors began tremble with fear.

33. The field of battle where they fought, soon became dreadful like the abode of Yama; and O foremost of the Bharatas, it became as repulsive to the sight as the domain of the king of departed spirits.

34. Your warriors, who were then looking upon that battle as upon a sport in an arena could not find any of them get any advantage over other.

35. They only then saw the clash and the mingling of the mighty weapons shot by those warriors, as the consequence brought about by the wicked policy of you and your sons, O ruler of men.

36. Those two heroes of wonderful prowess, those two slayers of their foes, then-covering each other with their arrows covered next the welkin with the net-work of their arrows.

37. Desirous of slaying each other, those two mighty car-warriors shooting sharp arrows at each other became worthy of being looked at like two clouds surcharged with rain.

38. O Lord, those two subduers of foes shooting arrows decked with gold, illumined the welkin like meteors illumining the skies.

39. O king, the arrows, furnished with vulturine wings and discharged by Bhima, appeared beautiful like rows of maddened swans ranging through the welkin.

40. Then beholding Bhima that subduer of foes engaged with the son of Suta, Krishna and

Dhananjaya considered a heavy burden to be placed on the former.

41. As Karna and Bhima, desirous of baffling each other shot numerous arrows, many elephants, horses and men, wounded therewith, fell down dead;

42. And in consequence of those falling and fallen creatures, deprived of life and shouting by thousands, great was the damage that then spread in the ranks of your army.

43. O foremost of the Bharatas, the field became soon covered over with the corpses and carcasses of slain men, horses and elephants.

## CHAPTER 133

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The fight between Karna and Bhima

Dhritarashtra said

1. Indeed I consider Bhima's prowess to be very wonderful, inasmuch as he fought with Karna of great agility.

2. Indeed that Karna who is competent enough of resisting the celestials together with the Yakshas, Asuras and men all armed with numerous kinds of weapon.

3. How is it that Karna could not vanquish in battle that son of Pritha, of great effulgence? O Sanjaya tell me all you know about it in detail.

4. Tell me how the battle them raged-battle in which each staked his very life. Messemms each of them was capable of conquering or each mighty have suffered defeat, (at the hand of the other).

5. Obtaining Suta's son Karna to help him, my son Duryodhana is confident of securing victory over the Pandavas with Govinda and the Satwatas.

6. However, hearing of the repeated defeats of Karna by Bhimasena of dreadful deeds, a swoon seems to overtake me.

7. I regard the Kauravas as already slain, in consequence of the evil policy of my son. O

Sanjaya, Karna will never be able to vanquish the sons of Pritha, those illustrious bowmen.

8. In all the battles that Karna has fought with the sons of Pandu, the latter have worsted him on the field of battle.

9. The Pandavas are incapable of being vanquished even by the celestials led by Vasava himself. But my pervert son Duryodhana will not take cognisance of this fact.

10. Having robbed Yudhishtira the son of Pritha's who is like the Lord of wealth, of his wealth, my foolish son sees not the impending fall, like a searcher of honey (on the mountains).

11. Having robbed by means of his deceit, the kingdom of those high-souled ones, my son conversant with deceit, thinks it to be irrecoverably his own; and so always insults the Pandavas.

12. Those high-souled son of Pandu, who ever treaded the paths of rectitude, were also insulted by myself who am over-fondly attached to my sons and am of selfish temperament.

13. The foresighted Yudhishtira that son of Pritha, was ever desirous of peace. But my sons turned him out, taking him to be incapable (of launching on war).

14. Bearing in mind all those hardships and all other insults offered to the Pandavas, the mighty-armed Bhima fought with Suta's son.

15. O Sanjaya, relate to me, how Bhima and Karna, those two foremost of warriors fought with each other, desirous of taking each other's life.

#### Sanjaya said

16. Hear, O king, how the battle between Karna and Bhima raged like that between two elephants desirous of slaughtering each other in the forest.

17. O king, the enraged son of Vikartana then pierced with thirty arrows that chastiser of foes viz., Bhimasena who excited with rage, had been putting forth his prowess.

18. O foremost of the Bharatas, Vikartana's son then wounded Bhima with many shafts of

keen points and great impetuosity and decked with gold.

19. But when Karna was engaged in wounding him, Bhima cut-off his bow with three sharp shafts and then with a Bhalla felled his charioteer from the niche on the car.

20. Thereupon Vikartana's son longing to compass the slaughter of Bhimasena, took a lance with a staff variegated with gold and lapises.

21. Taking up that fierce lance that resembled a second dart of Death and tilting it and aiming it, the powerful son of Radha.

22. Hurlled it at Bhimasena, charging it with a force capable of taking out Bhima's life. Then like Indra hurling the bolt of heaven, hurling that lance, the son of Radha.

23. That puissant descendant of a charioteer's race, uttered a loud roar; and then your sons hearing that loud shout uttered by Karna, became filled with delight.

24. But as that lance of the radiance of fire or the sun was coursing through the skies, Bhima cut it off with seven swift-arrows.

25. Cutting off that lance resembling a snake just freed from its slough, Bhima, O sire, as if looking out for the opportunity of wrenching the life-breaths out of Suta's son.

26. Wrathfully pierced the latter with many arrows furnished with wings of peacock's feathers or of gold and whetted on stone and resembling darts of Death.

27. Karna also then taking up another terrible bow of golden staff, began to stretch it; and then that highly energetic one began to discharge arrows at Bhima.

28. But the son of Pandu cut-off those shafts, with nine shafts of depressed knots shot by himself. Having cut-off, O foremost of men, those arrows shot by Karna.

29. O mighty monarch, Bhima uttered a loud war-cry. Roaring at each other like two bulls for the sake of consorting with the same cow.

30. Or like two fierce tigers for the sake of the same peace of meat; they strove vigorously

to strike each other and each was desirous of finding out the laches of the other.

31. Like two mighty bulls in a herd of cows, at times they looked at each other with eyes flashing rage. At another time, like two prodigious elephants striking each other with the point of their tusks.

32. They assailed each other with their arrows shot from their bow drawn to the fullest stretch. O king, burning each other with their arrowy shower, they put forth their prowess against each other, at the same time looking at each other in great wrath.

33. Sometimes they laughed at each other, sometimes reproached each other and sometimes blew their conchs; and in this was they went on fighting.

34. O king, then once more Bhima cut-off the bow of Karna near the grasp and with his arrows dispatched the latter's steeds of the hue of conch to the regions of Death.

35. The former then felled the latter's charioteer from his niche on the car. Thereupon Vikartana's son was preyed upon by anxious thoughts.

36. His steeds and his charioteer slain and himself covered and compounded with a network of arrows, he knew what to do.

37. Beholding Karna in that predicament, king Duryodhana trembling in rage, addressing Durjaya thus comments on him—

38. "Durjaya, hie yourself to the spot yonder where Pandu's son is on the point of devouring up as it were, the son of Radha. Slay that beardless eunuch soon and inspire strength into Karna."

39. Thus spoken to, your son Durjaya bowed assent to the words of your royal son saying 'So be it then;' and then he rushed at Bhimasena engaged with Karna, covering the former with his arrows.

40. He wounded Bhima with nine, his horses with eight, his charioteer with six, his standard with three, then again himself (Bhima) with seven shafts.

41. Thereat excited with wrath, Bhima dispatched Durjaya, his horses and steeds to the abode of Death, piercing them to the vitals with his arrows.

42. Then Karna lamenting piteously circumambulated your son who decked with ornaments was then writhing like a slain snake on the earth.

43. Then having made that inveterate enemy of his (Karna) carless, Bhimasena smilingly covered him with numerous arrows and made him look like a Sataghni with numerous pikes on it.

44-45. Although thus mangled with those arrows, that slayer of foes, the Atiratha Karna, did not avoid the enraged Bhima in battle.

## CHAPTER 134

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continuous

#### The flight of Karna

#### Sanjaya said

1. Thus though deprived of his car and completely vanquished by Bhima, Karna mounting on another car began speedily to pierce the son of Pandu.

2. Then like two huge elephants goring each other with the ends of their tusks, those two heroes began to pierce each other with arrows shot from bows drawn to the fullest stretch.

3. Thereupon Karna covered Bhima with mriyads of shafts and then uttered a loud war-cry and once more pierced the latter on his breast.

4. In return, Bhima pierced him with ten straight-flying arrows and next with twenty arrows of depressed knots.

5. Karna again, O king, piercing Bhima on the centre of his chest with nine arrows, struck his enemy's standard with one sharp arrow.

6. Then with a group of sixty-three arrows Pritha's son, pierced Karna in return like a driver goring his elephant with so many hooks or a horseman lacerating his animal with so many whips.

7. Thus deeply pierced, O king, by the high-souled son of Pandu, the heroic Karna began to lick the corners of his mouth and his eyes became red in rage.

8. Therefore, O mighty monarch with a view to bring about the slaughter of Bhima, Karna sped at him an arrow capable of penetrating through all bodies, like Indra hurling the thunder.

9. That shaft or variegated wing shot from the bow of Suta's son pierced through the son of Pritha and then penetrating the earth went inside it.

10-12. Thereupon the mighty-armed Bhima with his eyes red in rage, hurled, without thinking for a moment, at the son of Suta, a heavy six-sided mace adorned with gold, measuring full four cubit in length and looking like the bolt of heaven. With that mace, that enraged descendant of the Bharata race slew the well-trained and excellent steeds of Adhiratha's son, like Indra slaying the Asuras with his thunder-bolt. Then O mighty monarch, with a couple of razor-headed arrows, the mighty-armed Bhima.

13. Cut down the standard of Adhiratha's son and then with other shafts he slew the latter's charioteer. Leaving that car of which the steeds and the charioteer had been slain and of which the standard had been cut down.

14. O Bharata, Karna with a cheerless heart stood before Bhimasena, stretching his bow. Then we beheld the wonderful prowess of Radha's son.

15. In as much as that foremost of car-warriors though deprived of his car, was successful in holding his enemy in check. Beholding then that foremost of men, that son of Adhiratha deprived of his car in that battle.

16. King Duryodhana, O monarch, addressing Durmukha said - "O Durmukha yonder is the son of Radha rendered careless by Bhimasena!

17. Do you supply that mighty car-warrior, that foremost of men with a chariot." Thereupon, O Bharata, hearing the words of Duryodhana, Durmukha.

18. Quickly rushed to the rescue of Karna, covering at the same time Bhima with his arrows. Beholding Durmukha approach to rescue the son of Suta in battle.

19. The son of the wind god became filled with delight and he began to lick the corners of his mouth. Then, O monarch, holding Karna at bay by means of his keen arrows.

20. The son of Pandu drove his chariot towards Durmukha. Then in the encounter that followed, with nine shafts of depressed knots.

21-23. And keen points, Bhima dispatched Durmukha to the abode of Death. Then upon the slaughter of Durmukha, the son of Adiratha mounting in the car of this slain hero, looked beautiful like the effulgent fire, O king. Then beholding Durmukha prostrate, with his vital limbs torn off and weltering in his blood, Karna with his eyes overflowing with tears, refrained from the fight for a while. Circumambulating that slain prince and passing over him.

24-25. The heroic Karna breathed hot and heavily and was embarrassed as to what he should do. At this opportunity O king, Bhimasena struck Suta's son with fourteen Narachas furnished with vulture feathers. Those Narachas of great impetuosity and furnished with golden wings, pierced through Karna's armour;

26. Those blood-drinking arrows decked with gold, then illumined the ten quarters and drank the life-blood of Suta's son.

27. Then passing through his body those arrows sank into the earth and looked like so many snakes urged on by Death, O foremost of men.

28-29. With only half their bodies inserted into their holes. Then the son of Radha, without a moment's reflection, pierced Bhimasena in return with fourteen fierce Narachas decked with gold. Those winged shafts piercing the left arm of Bhimasena.

30. Entered the earth, like Krouncha birds entering into a grove of trees. Entering the earth, those Narachas looked beautiful.

31. Like the burning rays of the sun while it courses towards the Western mountains. Pierced



in both the arms with those Narachas capable of cutting to the very quick, Bhima.

32-33. Shed blood profusely, like mountains ejecting streams of water. Then Bhima pierced Suta's son in return with three winged shafts endowed with the energy of Suparna and he then pierced the driver of his enemy with seven arrows. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, afflicted with Bhima's mighty and highly distressed, Karna.

34-35. Of illustrious renown fled from the field of battle, being borne away by his fleet steeds. Then Bhimasena, that Atiratha remained the master of the field, with his bow of golden staff stretched and looking like a burning fire.

### CHAPTER 135

#### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continuous

#### The display of Bhima's prowess

##### Dhritarastra said

1. I consider Destiny to be supreme. Fie on the useless exertions of man, inasmuch the son of Adhiratha striving vigorously, was not able to conquer Pandus's son in battle.

2. Karna is capable of conquering the Parthas together with Govinds himself; no where in the worlds do I find a warrior who is a match for Karna.

3. I have always heard Duryodhana speak in this strain. Karna is mighty, heroic, a resolute bowman and indefatigable in battle.

4. O Suta, This did my wretched son Duryodhana speak to me before. "Supported as I am by the heroic Vrisashena, even the celestials themselves will not be able to conquer me in battle.

5. What to speak of the sons of Pandu, whose energy is gone and whose strength has been robbed, O king." (This was said by Duryodhana say me.) So beholding Karna crushed like a poisonless snake.

6-7. And fled from the field of battle, what did then Duryodhana say? Alas, foolishly did Duryodhana send the unsupported Durmukha to battle, ignorant though he was of the mode of fighting, like one throwing in insect upon a

blazing fire Ashvatthaman, the Madra-king, Kripa and Karna, all united together.

8-10. Are not capable, O Sanjaya, of standing before Bhima. They all know the dreadful prowess, equal to that of ten thousand elephants of Bhima possessed of the energy of Maruta himself. They also know his cruel purposes. Why did then those then those warriors, cognizant of Bhima's mighty anger and energy, incite the anger of the hero of cruel deeds, that warrior resembling Yama at the end of a Yuga? I seems that are mighty-armed Karna, relying on the strength of his own arms.

11. Encountered Bhimasena in battle, totally disregarding him. He that has conquered Karna in battle, like Purandara conquering Asuras.

12. That son of Pandu is incapable of being conquered by any one else. He that has entered into my army having vanquished Drona single-handedly.

13. What persons desirous of his life with will venture to stand before that Bhima when he will proceed in search of Dhananjaya? O Sanjaya, what person venture to stand in front of Bhima.

14. For, what Danava will venture to stand before Mahendra with his thunder-bolt uplifted? It is possible for a man to come back from a visit of the regions of Death;

15-17. But it not possible for them to come back alive after an encounter with Bhima. Those who foolishly assail Bhimasena when he is inflamed with rage are like insects rushing on the blazing flames of a fire. Such thinking what the irate Bhima of fearful hands had said to the assembly in the hearing of the Kurus about the slaughter of my sons and beholding the defeat of Karna.

18-19. Dushasana and his brothers ceased to meet Bhima in battle out of fear. That pervert son of mine, O Sanjaya, who repeatedly said in the assembly these words—Karna and Dushasana and I myself will vanquish the Pandavas in battle—surely beholding Karna vanquished and deprived of his car by Bhima.

20. Is now repenting his rejection of Krishna's offer for peace. Beholding his mail-clad brother's slain in battle by Bhimasena.

21. In consequence of his own fault surely my son is being greatly afflicted. What person willing to live still, with hostile intentions, advance against Pandu's son.

22. Bhima, inflamed with rage and armed with dreadful weapons and standing in battle like Death himself? It is possible for a man to escape from Varava fire.

23. But it is not possible for one to fly from the presence of the enraged Bhima. Indeed neither Arjuna, nor the Panchalas, nor Keshava, nor Satyaki.

24. When excited with rage in battle, pays the least regard to his life. Alas, O son of a charioteer, the very lives of my sons are in danger.

**Sanjaya said**

25. O descendant of the Kuru dynasty, why are you now lamenting for the present carnage? Surely you are the root of this destruction of the worlds.

26. Accepting the counsels of your sons, it was you who provoked all those fierce hostilities. Though advised on the contrary, you did not pay any heed to those advices, like a dying man refusing to take proper medicines.

27. O best of men, O king, having drunk the fiercest and most indigestible poison, you should now feel the consequences.

28. The warriors of your army are fighting to the best of their prowess, yet you speak depreciatingly of them. Hear now, as I go on describing how this battle raged.

29. Beholding Karna defeated by Bhimasena, the following five and mighty bowmen all brothers.

30. Namely, Durmarsena, Dussaha, Durmada, Durdhara and Jaya, all clad in beautiful armours, rushed against the son of Pandu with hostile intentions.

31. Surrounding the mighty-armed Vrikodara on all sides, they began to cover the quarters with their arrows resembling flights of locusts.

32. Then Bhimasena smilingly received those princes of godly presence as they advanced furiously against him.

33. Then beholding your sons before the enraged Bhimasena, Radha's son rushed against the mighty-armed Bhima.

34. Although opposed by your sons, yet Bhima then quickly rushed against Karna shooting sharp arrows, furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone.

35. Thereupon the Kurus surrounding Karna, on all sides, began to shower upon Bhimasena, numerous arrows of depressed knots.

36. Then that fierce bowman Bhima, with twenty-five arrows dispatched to the abode of Yama, those foremost of men, with their steeds and charioteers.

37. They then fell down dead from their cars, after their charioteers, like so many mighty trees decked with flowers, overthrown by a hurricane.

38. Then we beheld the wonderful prowess of Bhimasena, inasmuch as he succeeded in slaying your sons and withstanding Karna with his arrows simultaneously.

39. Opposed on all sides by sharp arrows shot by Bhimasena, that son of Suta, O mighty monarch, began to eye Bhima.

40. Bhimasena also, with his eyes red in anger and stretching his bow, began to look to Karna.

## CHAPTER 136

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continuous

#### The fight between Bhima and Karna

**Sanjaya said**

1. Beholding your sons fallen on the field, the puissant Karna, overwhelmed with rage, became regardless of his very life.

2. The son of Adhiratha then considered himself to be guilty of the slaughter of your sons, in as much as they were slain by Bhima under his very eyes.

3. Then Bhimasena waxing wroth and remembering their former enmity, dauntlessly struck Karna with numerous sharp arrows.

4. Thereupon the son of Radha smilingly piercing Bhima with five shafts, once more pierced him with seventy shafts furnished with golden wings whetted on stone.

5. Without taking into consideration those shafts shot by Karna, Vrikodara pierced him with a hundred arrows of depressed knots.

6. Once more, O sire, piercing him on his vital parts with five sharp arrows, Bhima severed the bow of Suta's son with a broad-headed shaft.

7. Thereupon, O Bharata, highly dejected, Karna took up another bow and covered Bhima with arrows on all directions.

8. Slaying Karna's horses and his charioteer also, Bhima then laughed a tremendous laugh, having thus counter-balanced the feats of the former.

9. Then that foremost of men, cut-off the bow of Karna with his arrows; and O mighty monarch, that bow of golden staff, fell down, producing a great sound.

10. Thereupon the mighty car-warrior Karna descended from his chariot and taking up a mace hurled it at Bhimasena with great fury.

11. Beholding that mace course towards himself with great impetuosity, Vrikodara repulsed it with his arrows before the eyes of all the troops.

12. Then the puissant son of Pandu quickly shot thousands of arrows, desirous of accomplishing the death of Suta's son.

13. Checking those arrows with his own, in that battle, Karna cut down Bhima's armour with numerous arrows.

14. Then he pierced Bhima with twenty five small shafts before the eyes of all; and that seemed highly wonderful.

15. Thereupon, O sire, Bhima excited to the highest pitch of fury, sped at the son of Suta nine shafts of depressed knots.

16. Those sharp arrows penetrating through Karna's armour and piercing his right arm, sank into the earth, like so many fierce snakes entering their holes on ant hills.

17. Covered with the myriad shafts shot from Bhima's bow, Karna once more was compelled to turn away from Bhimasena.

18. Beholding the son of Suta turn away and walk on foot and covered with the arrows shot from the bow of Kunti's son, king Duryodhana thus spoke—

19. 'Hie yourselves quickly near the car of Pandu's son.' Thereupon, O king, your sons hearing those words of your son.

20. Rushed against Pandu's son in battle shooting numerous sharp arrows. They were Chitra, Upachitra, Chitraksha, Charuchitra, Chitrasana.

21-22. Chitrayudha and Chitravarman, all versed in various modes of warfare. Then the mighty car-warrior Bhimasena slew all your sons with a single arrows, as they were quickly proceeding against him. Slain they fell down on the earth like trees broken by the vehemence of the tempest.

23. Beholding your sons all mighty car-warriors slain, O king, Karna with a tearful countenance, began to think of those words of Khatva.

24. Then that puissant hero, mounting on another duly furnished car, quickly rushed at the son of Pandu.

25. Piercing each other with arrows furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone, those two heroes appeared beautiful like two clouds fringed with the rays of the sun.

26. Then Pandu's son, excited with rage cut-off the armour of Suta's son with thirty-six Vallas of great sharpness and energy.

27. The son of Suta O foremost of the Bharatas, the mighty-armed hero, pierced Kunti's son with fifty arrows of depressed knots.

28. Those two combatants then, smeared with red sandal-paste, covered with many wounds caused by each other's shaft and steeped in blood, appeared charming like the sun or the moon in full splendour.

29. Then Karna and Bhima, with their bodies steeped in blood and armour shattered

with arrows appeared beautiful like snakes freed from their sloughs.

30. Assailing each other like two tigers fighting with their teeth, those two foremost of men poured their showers of arrows on each other like two mighty clouds pouring rain.

31. Like two elephants goring each other with their tusks, those two subduers of foes mangling each other with their shafts, appeared highly beautiful.

32. Roaring at each other and covering each other with their arrows, those two foremost of car-warriors seemed to play with each other, causing their chariots to describe various circles.

33. Those two powerful heroes then appeared like two heifers roaring at each other for consorting with a cow in her season, those two foremost of men, endued with prowess, then looked like two mighty lions engaged with one another.

34. Looking at each other with eyes red in rage, those two heroes of mighty energy fought on with each other like Indra and Virochana.

35. Then the mighty-armed Bhima stretching his bow with both his hands, appeared beautiful like a mass of clouds charged with lightning flashes.

36. Then, O mighty monarch, the Bhima-cloud, having the twang of the bow for its peal of thunder and the arrows for showers of rain, began to drench the mountain constituted by Karna.

37. Then that son of Pandu, Bhima of terrible prowess, O Bharata, covered Karna with thousands of arrows shot from his own bow.

38-40. Then your sons beheld the prowess of Bhimasena, when he covered Karna with arrows decked with beautiful wings made of the feathers of the Kanka bird. Thus then Bhima fought on with Karna, affording delight there by to Arjuna and the illustrious Keshava and Satyaki and his two protectors of car-wheels. Then your sons, O mighty monarch, became depressed, seeing the prowess, the strength of arms and the patience of Bhima, who thoroughly knew his self.

## CHAPTER 137

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continuous

#### The fight between Karna and Bhima

Sanjaya said

1. Then the son of Radha hearing the sound of the twanging of Bhima's bow and of the slappings of his palm, did not brook it, like an infuriate elephant not brooking the roar of its rival.

2. Retiring for a moment only from the presence of Bhimasena, Karna looked at your sons felled by him.

3. O foremost of men, beholding them he became cheerless and filled with sorrow; then breathing like a snake, he once more assailed Bhima.

4. With his eyes coppery in rage and breathing like a fierce snake, Karna then shooting arrows, appeared beautiful like the sun shooting his myriad rays.

5. Vrikodara then, O foremost of the Bharatas, was covered with those shafts shot from Karna's bow, as if with the scattering rays of the blazing sun.

6. Diverse kinds of arrows furnished with wings of peacock-feathers and shot from the bow of Karna, then penetrated into the body of Pritha's son, like so many birds entering their nests on the tree.

7. Arrows of golden wings shot from the bow of Karna appeared everywhere, like rows of swans (flying through the welkin).

8. The arrows of Adhiratha's son were so numerous that they seemed to come out not only from his bow, but also, from his standard, Upaskara, umbrella and the shafts, yoke and bottom of his car.

9. Filling the sky, the son of Adhiratha showered arrows decked with gold and furnished with vulturine feathers, that ranged variously through the entire welkin.

10. Then reckless of his very life, Vrikodara got the better of his foe and then pierced the latter with a shaft as he was rushing like Death incarnate at him.

11. Then beholding the unbearable charge of Karna and the shower of mighty arrows shot by him, Vrikodara flinched not in fear, inasmuch as he was possessed of mighty energy.

12. Then that son of Pandu shot net-works of arrows at the son of Adhiratha. He pierced Karna with twenty sharp arrows.

13. As Pritha's son himself had been covered by Suta's son, even in the same manner was the latter now covered by the former with his arrows.

14. Beholding then the prowess of Bhimasena in battle, O Bharata, even your troops applauded him and the Charanas were filled with delight.

15. Then Bhurisravas, Kripa, the son of Drona, the ruler of the Madras, Jayadratha, Uttamoujas, Yudhamanyu, Satyaki, Keshava and Arjuna.

16. These ten best of mighty car-warriors of the Kuru and the Pandava hosts, applauding Bhima with shouts of 'well-done' 'well-done' uttered their war-cries.

17. When that dreadful and hair-stirring sound arose, your son, king Duryodhana, thus spoke.

18. Addressing the kings and princes of his army and specially his brothers. "May good betide you. Hie yourselves to the rescue of Karna from Vrikodara.

19. Yonder, the shafts shot from Bhima's bow are piercing Karna (to the quick). O mighty bowmen, do you all now exert vigorously for protecting the son of the charioteer."

20. Commanded by Duryodhana, O sire, seven uterine (Kaurava) brothers, rushing with fury at Bhimasena surrounded him on all sides.

21. Encountering the son of Kunti, they poured their arrowy torrents on him, like clouds pouring rain on the mountain breast during the rainy season.

22. Then those seven mighty car-warriors inflamed with rage, began to afflict Bhima, like the seven planets afflicting the Sun at the time of the universal annihilation, O king.

23. Thereupon, drawing his effulgent bow with great force and firm grasp, the son of Kunti.

24. Knowing that his adversaries were nothing but men, fixed seven shafts on his bowstring. And then the mighty Bhima sped those arrows radiant like the solar rays, at them.

25. Bhimasena then keep alive the memory of the former wrongs inflicted on them, sped those arrows as if for wrenching out the very lives out of your sons.

26. Those shafts furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone shot by Bhimasena, O Bharata, penetrating through the body of the Bharata princes, flew through the sky.

27. Those gold-decked arrows tearing their hearts, looked beautiful, O mighty monarch, like birds of beautiful plumage.

28. Those seven arrows of the effulgence of molten gold, steeped in blood, came out, O king after having drank the life-blood of your sons.

29. With their armour shattered by those arrows, your sons then fell down from their cars on the earth, like tall trees growing on the slopes of mountains, broken down by elephants.

30. Satrunjaya, Satrusaha, Chitra, Chitrayudha, Dridha, Chitrasena and Vikarna these seven sons of yours were then slain by Bhima.

31. Of all your sons thus slain, Vrikodara lamented piteously for Vikarna who was very dear to the Pandavas.

32. Bhima then said - "I vowed saying, You shall all be slain by me. O Vikarna, for this vow it is that you have been slain. And thus have I kept my bow inviolate.

33. O hero, you proceeded against me with hostile intentions, bearing in mind the duties of a Kshatriya. You were ever engaged in doing our, special the king's (Yudhishtira's) good.

34. It is therefore not fit that I should lament for you, O your of great effulgence." O mighty monarch then slaying them before the very eyes of Radha's son.

35-36. That son of Pandu uttered a dreadful war cry. The shout of that hero, then O Bharata,

carried to the very virtuous king Yudhishtira as if the intelligence of his victory. Hearing that loud cry of that fierce bowman Bhimasena.

37-40. The very virtuous king Yudhishtira obtained great delight in battle. Then highly delighted, that son of Pandu, O mighty monarch, received the sound of the war-cry of his brother with the beating of drums and other musical instruments. After Vrikodara had given him that intelligence by the hint agreed upon by both, that foremost of persons Yudhishtira versed in the use of all weapons, joyfully rushed against Drona in that battle. On the other hand, O monarch, seeing thirty-one of your son's slain in battle, Duryodhana recalled to mind the words of Vidura thus, "those salutary words spoken by Vidura are now being realised.

41-44. Thinking thus, king Duryodhana was unable to do what he should do. All those words that your wicked-minded and foolish son, urged on by Karna, said to that princess of the Panchala race, having brought her in the assembly shall; also all those harsh words which Karna himself addressed in the assembly hall to her before yourself and the sons of Pandu, O monarch, at your and the Kauravas' hearing words to this effect, 'O Krishna, the Pandavas are destroyed and they have fallen into eternal hell; so do you choose a second husband'—the result of all these has now overtaken you.

45-47. Then again, O you of Kuru's race, various abusive language like sessamum kernel, without seeds were directed by your enraged sons to those illustrious ones, viz., the sons of Pandu, Bhimasena vomiting forth the fire of wrath held in check for these thirteen years, is now achieving the destruction of your sons.

48. Entreating you repeatedly, Khattwa failed to bend you towards peace. O foremost of the Bharatas, now do you, together with your son, suffer the consequences (of your folly).

49. That you old, patient and capable of foreseeing the consequences of acts as you are, would not accept the well-meaning words of your friends, is due to the influence of (adverse) fate.

50. O foremost of men, it therefore behoves you not to weep. Yours is the greatest fault in the matter. In my opinion you are the cause of the ruin of your sons.

51. O foremost of kings, Vikarna and the puissant Chitrasena, have been slain; as also numerous other mighty car-warriors and your other sons have fallen.

52. O mighty-armed one, other sons of yours, who became the objects of Bhima's sight, were slain by him in a moment.

53. It was through your fault that I had to see our army consumed in thousands by the shafts discharged by Pandu's son and by Vrisha.

## CHAPTER 138

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continuous

#### The fight between Karna and Bhima

##### Dhritarashtra said

1. I see, O son of a charioteer, that mine has been the greatest fault in this matter; O Sanjaya, the consequences have now overtaken me, grieve though I may!

2. Hitherto I thought that what is gone for good. But, O Sanjaya, what measures is gone should now be adopted.

3. I have now become calm, O Sanjaya; relate to me how this slaughter of heroes is went on-slaughter that owes its origin to my evil policy.

##### Sanjaya said

4. O mighty monarch, then the two powerful heroes Karna and Bhima began to pour showers of arrows, like two rain clouds pouring their contents.

5. Then gold-winged arrows, whetted on stone and engraved with the name of Bhima, reaching Karna, penetrated thought him cutting him to the very quick.

6. Similarly Bhima was pierced hundreds and thousands of times by the arrows shot by Karna, that resembled snakes of virulent poison.

7. An agitation like that produced in the ocean, was then produced in your troops by the arrows of them both, falling on all sides.

8. O subduer of foes, shot from Bhima's bow, shafts resembling dreadful snakes, began to slay your troops amidst your own army.

9. With fallen elephants, horses and men, the Earth became covered and looked as if covered with trees broken by the force of the wind.

10. Wounded with the arrows shot from Bhima's bow, your troops then began to fly away from the field saying what is it?

11. That host composed of the Sindhus, the Souviras and the Kauravas, afflicted and wounded with the terrible shafts of Bhima and Karna, was then driven back to a great distance.

12. Then those heroes, with their ranks thinned and their horses and elephants slain, fled in all directions, leaving Bhima and Karna on the field.

13. 'Indeed for the sake of the Parthas even the gods are robbing us of our senses, inasmuch as those arrows shot both by Bhima and Karna and slaying us.'

14. Speaking such words, your warriors, struck with panic as they were, stood at a distance out of the range of arrows, for witnessing the combat.

15. Then on the field of battle a terrible river started up into existence and began to flow there adding to the joy of heroes and to the feat of the cowards.

16. It caused by the blood of elephants, horses and men. Covered with the lifeless bodies of men, elephants and horses;

17. With flag-staffs and car-bottoms; with ornaments of cars, elephants and steeds; with shattered chariots, wheels, axels and Kuvaras;

18. With gold-decked bows of fierce twang and with thousands of arrows and darts furnished with wings of gold.

19. Shot by Bhima and Karna and resembling snakes just freed from their sloughs; with numerous lances, javelins, swords and battle axes.

20. With maces and clubs and axes all adorned with gold; with standards of various descriptions and darts and piked bludgeons;

21-28. And with beautiful Sataghnis, the earth looked, O Bharata beautiful, strewn all over with ear-rings and neck-laces of gold and fallen-off bracelets and rings and precious gems worn on diadems and crowns and turbans and golden ornaments of diverse kinds and armours and leathern fences and elephant-girths and umbrellas dropped from their place and chamaras and fans; with the mangled bodies of elephants steeds and men; with arrows bathed in blood and with various other objects lying scattered about loosened from their places, the field of battle appeared beautiful like the sky bespangled with the planets. Beholding their inconceivable, wonderful and super-human feats, the Siddha and the Charanas were filled with surprise. The son of Adhiratha engaged with Bhima coursed on the field in the same way as fire helped on by the wind courses through an extended heap of fuel; both of them cut down numerous standards and chariots and slew countless horses, men and elephants. They fought on like a pair of elephants crushing forests of reeds, when engaged with each other. O ruler of men, then your host looked like a mass of clouds and the carnage caused by Karna and Bhima in that battle was terrible to the extreme.

## CHAPTER 139

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continuous

#### The fight between Karna and Bhima

Sanjaya said

1. Thereafter, O mighty monarch, Karna piercing Bhima with three arrows, began to shower torrents of arrows of various description.

2. The mighty-armed son of Pandu viz., Bhimasena, though thus pierced by the son of Suta, felt no pain, like a mountain having no sensation when cleft open.

3. Then O sire, he pierced Karna on his car with a sharp arrow. Well-tempered and washed with oil.

4. That dart, O mighty monarch, cut down one of the charming golden ear-rings of great luster belonging to Karna and it dropped down like a luminary from the sky.

5. Then excited to the highest pitch of anger, Vrikodara with the greatest ease struck Suta's son on the breast with a broad headed arrow.

6. Then once more, O Bharata, the mighty armed Bhima sped at him with great quickness ten Narachas resembling snakes just first freed from the sloughs.

7. Shot by him, O sire, those arrows penetrating through the forehead of Suta's son entered it, like so many snakes entering their holes in the ant-hills.

8. With those shafts struck upon his forehead, the son of Suta, looked beautiful, as he did before while his forehead was encircled with a chaplet of blue lotuses.

9. Thus deeply pierced by the son of Pandu endued with great agility, Karna held the Kuvara of his car for support and then shut his eyes.

10. But within a moment, that afflicter of foes Karna regaining his senses, found his body steeped in blood and became furious with rage.

11. Inflamed with rage in consequence of his being pierced thus by the firm bowmen Bhima, Karna endued with great activity, dashed against the car of Bhimasena.

12. Then, O king, the revengeful and enraged and mighty Karna, sped at Bhima a group of hundred arrows furnished with wings of the feathers of the vultures.

13. Thereat Pandu's son, disregarding the display of Karna's prowess began to shower fierce arrows on him.

14. Then, O afflicter of foes, the enraged Karna, O monarch, struck the irate Bhima on the breast with nine shafts.

15. Then both those tigers among men, resembling a couple of tigers with fierce teeth, showered upon each other, in that battle, their torrents of arrows like two mighty masses of clouds.

16. They tried to terrify one another in that battle, with the sound of their palms and with showers of arrows of diverse descriptions.

17. Inflamed with rage, each endeavoured to counteract the feats of the other in battle. Then that slayer of hostile heroes, viz., Bhima of mighty arms, O Bharata, cutting off with a razor-headed arrow the bow of Karna, uttered a loud war-cry. Then leaving aside that severed bow, the son of Suta that mighty car-warrior took up a tougher and stronger bow.

18-24. He also cut off that within a moment. Then he cut off one by one upto eighteen number of arrows respectively. Thus he cut off many arrows of Karna. Then Karna took up the bow in very moment. Then beholding the slaughter of the Sindhus and Souviras and the Kurus. And marking that the Earth was covered over with armours and standards and weapons lying scattered about and seeing also the dead bodies of elephants, foot-soldiers and horsemen and car-warriors on all sides.

25-26. The body of Suta's son blazed up with radiance, in consequence of wrath. Thereupon stretching his terrible bow decked with gold. The son of Radha. O monarch, looked at Bhima with eyes flashing rage. Inflamed with rage the son of Suta, while discharging his shafts, looked beautiful. Like the autumnal sun of burning rays at mid-day.

27-28. The body of the son of Adhiratha covered with various shafts, which appeared like a sun with its rays. While engaged in taking up an arrows, placing it on the bow-string, stretching the string and letting it off, no one could notice any interval between those acts of his.

29-30. While Karna was shooting his arrows right and left, his bow always appeared to be drawn to a circle like a dreadful circle of fire. Arrows of sharp heads, shot from the bow of Karna and furnished with wings of gold.

31-32. Covered, O monarch, all the quarters, intercepting the very rays of the solar orb. In the skies then were seen numerous groups of shafts, furnished with golden wings and shot from the bow of Karna. The arrows discharged from Karna's bow.

33-34. Then looked beautiful like rowe of cranes ranging through the skies. All the arrows discharged by the son of Adiratha were winged



with the feathers of vultures, whetted on stone, adorned with gold, endued with great impetuosity and furnished with exceedingly keen points. Thrown by the force of his bow-string, those gold-decked arrows.

35-37. Coursed in continuous lines towards the chariot of Bhima; those gold-decked arrows hurled by Karna, while ranging through the skies in large numbers, looked beautiful like continuous flights of locusts. The shafts shot from the bow of the son of Adhiratha, as they flew through the heavens, appeared like one long arrows poised in the sky. Like a cloud covering the mountain breast with torrents of rain.

38-40. Karna, excited to the highest pitch of fury, poured on Bhima his arrowy showers; then O Bharata, your sons and their soldiers all beheld the mighty energy, prowess and perseverance of Bhima inasmuch as the latter, unmindful of that shower of arrows resembling the furious ocean, dashed with wrath against Karna. O monarch, Bhima then wielded a bow that was formidable and the back of which was adorned with gold.

41. In consequence of his repeated stretching, the bow looked like a circle and it resembled the bow of Indra himself. From it then were shot shafts that filled the entire welkin.

42. Then with his gold-winged arrows of depressed knots, Bhima constructed a festoon in the welkin that looked like a veritable garland of gold.

43. Then the net-work of arrows spread in the skies by Karna, began to be shattered and torn, being struck with the winged arrows of Bhimasena.

44. Shot both by Bhima and Karna, myriads of arrows of the touch of fire-sparks and straight-coursing.

45. And furnished with golden wings, entirely covered the welkin over. The sun then did not shine, nor did the wind blow.

46. The welkin being shrouded in that net-work of arrows, nothing could be then

distinguished. Then the son of Suta covering Bhima with arrows of various descriptions.

47. And totally unmindful of the latter's prowess, strove to prevail over him. O sire, those myriads of arrows, discharged by both those warriors.

48. Appeared to clash against one another like two contrary currents of wind. Consequent on that clash of arrowy showers shot by those two foremost of men.

49-50. A fire, O foremost of the Bharatas, was engendered in the welkin. Desirous of slaying Bhima, Karna then, sped at the former numerous arrows, furnished with golden wings and cleansed by the forger himself. Bhima, however, with his own shafts, cut every one of Karna's arrows into three fragments.

51-52. And then obtaining some advantage over the son of Suta, he cried out saying wait, wait, then the irate and powerful son of Pandu, like an all-destroying fire once more shot excitedly showers of arrows. Then a loud sound was produced there, in consequence of the leathern gloves of the combatants striking against their bow-strings.

53. Then tremendous became the sound of their slapping palms, dreadful the sound of their war-cries and fierce the clash of their war-cries and fierce the clash of their cars and the twang of their bows.

54. Then O king, desirous of beholding the prowess of Karna and that son of Pandu who were striving to slay each other, the other combatants giving up fighting became spectators.

55. The celestial sages, the Siddhas and the Gandharvas, applauded them both saying 'Excellent, Excellent'; and hosts of Vidyadharas then showered flowers on those two heroes.

56. Thereafter, the mighty-armed and wrathful Bhima of resolute prowess, repulsing the weapons of Karna by his own, began to pierce that son of Suta.

57. Karna also, that mighty hero, baffling Bhima's darts, wounded Bhima with nine Narachas resembling snakes of virulent venom.

58. With as many winged shafts, Bhima then cut-off those Narachas sped by Suta's sons when they were coursing through the sky and said wait, wait.

59. Then the mighty armed Bhima possessed of great valour, shot at Adhiratha's son a shaft looking like the enraged god of Death and resembling a mace second to that wielded by Yama.

60. The son of Radha, however, O king, smilingly cut-off that dart of Pandu's son as it flew through the sky with three shafts of his own.

61. The son of Pandu then once more shot showers of dreadful arrows; and Karna also dauntlessly received all those weapons of his.

62-63. Inflamed with wrath, Karna, the son of Suta by virtue of the illusion of his weapons, cut-off in that combat, with his straight arrows the pairs of quivers and the bow-string and the traces of the steeds of the fighting Bhima. Thereafter slaying his antagonist's steeds, Karna pierced the latter's charioteer with five shafts.

64-65. Thereupon the charioteer running in haste, ascended the car of Yudhamyu. Burning with wrath, Radha's son, whose effulgence then equaled the effulgence of the Yuga-fire, cut-off the standard of Bhima and felled his banner, smiling the while. Deprived of the use of his bow, Bhima then grasped a fearful lance.

66-68. Inflamed with rage, he balanced it in his hands and then hurled it vehemently at the chariot of Karna. Adhiratha's son then with ten shafts, cut-off that glad-decked dart hurled by Bhima, as it was flying swiftly towards him like a blazing meteor; that lance then fell down, severed into fragments by those sharp arrows of Suta's son Karna, that warrior versed in all modes of warfare, then engaged in the fight for the sake of friends. Then the son of Kunti grasped a buckler adorned with gold.

69-70. And a resplendent sword, desirous of reaping either victory or death. But O Bharata, Karna again smilingly cut-off that effulgent buckler of Bhima with numerous dreadful

arrows. Bhima then deprived of the use of his car and his shield, became infuriate in wrath.

71. Then with great vehemence he hurled at Karna's chariot that sword; that mighty sword then cutting off the stringed bow of Suta's son.

72-74. Dropped down on the earth like O king, an angry snake from the heavens. Then the son of Adhiratha, inflamed with rage in that battle, smilingly grasped another bow destructive of foes, having a tougher string and stronger than the one that had been cut-off. Desirous of slaying the son of Kunti, O king, Karna, then began to discharge by thousands, arrows furnished with golden wings and endued with great impetuosity. Wounded with those shafts shot from Karna's bow, the puissant Bhima.

75. Bounded up into the air, thereby filling Karna's mind with great pain. Beholding that conduct of the victory-desiring Bhima, Karna.

76. The son of Radha deceived Bhimasena by hiding himself inside his chariot. Beholding Karna hide himself in the terrace of his car with a frightened heart.

77. Bhima, catching hold of the former's flag-staff, remained on the ground. Then all the Kurus and the Charanas applauded that feat of his, viz.,

78. His attempt to snatch away Karna from his car, like Garuda snatching away a serpent (from its hole). Then Bhima, with his bow burst open and car useless but still observant of his duties.

79. Remained on the field, keeping his car behind him and firmly resolved to continue that battle. In that combat, the son of Radha once more rushed.

80. In rage, against that son of Pandu who stood before him in the attitude of fighting. O mighty monarch, those two highly puissant heroes, looking at their respective feats and encountering each other.

81. Began to roar at each other like two rain clouds at the end of the summer season. The combat between those two foremost of men who were excited to the highest pitch of fury.

82. And who would not brook each other's feat, looked like that between the gods and the Danavas. His stock of weapons exhausted, Kunti's son (Bhima) was assailed by Karna.

83. Then deprived as he was of his weapons, beholding the huge mountain-like elephant slain by Arjuna lying on the field, he entered into their midst for impeding the progress of the car of Karna.

84. Entering into that host of elephants, that was inaccessible to a chariot, the son of Pandu desirous of saving his life, did no longer strike the son of Radha.

85. Then searching eagerly for protection, that subjugator of hostile cities, that son of Pritha, uplifting an elephant slain by the arrows of Arjuna, stayed on the field of battle.

86. Looking like Hanumat holding the (Gandhamadana) mountain over-grown with Oshadhis. But Karna, then cut that elephant, to pieces with his sharp arrows.

87. Then the son of Pandu began to throw at Barna, limbs of slain elephants and horses and car-wheels and everything he saw lying on the field.

88. The son of Pandu then inflamed with rage, threw at Karna, everything that then came within his reach. But all those things hurled at him, Karna cut-off with sharp arrows.

89. Bhima also raising his clenched fists endued with the force of thunder and terrible desired to kill Suta's son. But he then came to recollect the vow of Arjuna (for slaying Karna).

90. Thus the son of Pandu, though competent, did not slay Karna, desirous of keeping inviolate the vow that Arjuna had made.

91. But the son of Suta then repeatedly caused the already afflicted Bhima, to lose his senses by striking him with his sharp arrows.

92. Recollecting the words of Kunti, Karna then did not slay Bhima who was then weaponless but with the handle of his bow he poked and pierced him.

93. Soon as he was struck with the end of Karna's bow, Bhima was inflamed with rage and breathing like a snake and snatching away

Karna's bow, he began to strike him on the head.

94. Stuck by Bhimasena, the son of Radha with his eyes red in rage smilingly spoke these words to the former.

95. Over and over again, Beardless eunuch, ignorant fool, glutton, without any skill in the use of weapons, do you never again venture to fight (with any one)? You are but a boy, a laggard in battle!

96. O son of Pandu where there are various kinds of food and drink and edibles, that is really the place fit for you and not the field of battle, O wicked-souled one!

97. Devouring esculent roots, fruits and flowers, it is proper that you should engage yourself in the observance of vows and rites, in the woods. O Bhima, you know not how to fight!

98. Vast is the difference, O Vrikodara, between fighting and the occupation of a hermit. So, do you repair to the forest O master; you are not capable of fighting and have an inclination for dwelling in the wood.

99. Urging cooks and servants and orderlies to make haste in making your dinner ready, O Vrikodara, you are capable of striking and reproving them.

100. Becoming a hermit, O Bhima, do you began eating fruits, O wicked-minded wretch. O son of Kunti, betake to the forest, for you are incapable of fighting.

101. You are fit, O Vrikodara, for eating large quantities of esculent roots and for receiving and welcoming guests, O Vrikodara, I do not consider you fit for wielding weapons."

102. O monarch, he was also reminded by Karna in harsh language, of all the wrongs done to him in his days of childhood.

103. And once more as Bhima greatly weakened stood there, Vrishasena poked him with horn of his bow and smilingly addressed these words to him.

104. O child, you should fight with others and not with men like myself. Those who fight with men like myself, have to undergo this and many things else.

105. Hie yourself to the spot where the Krishnas are and they will then protect you in battle. Or, O son of Kunti, return to your home, O child what is the good of fighting?"

106. Then hearing those very harsh words of Karna, Bhima smilingly spoke these words to him at the presence of every body.

107. "O wicked fool! You have been repeatedly defeated by me, how then can you indulge in this vain brag? The ancients have seen the victory and defeat of the mighty Indra himself!

108. O scion of a mean family, come and wrestle with me. Then even as I have slain the mighty and luxurious Kichaka.

109. I will slay you before the very eyes of all the kings. "But knowing Bhima's intention, that foremost of intelligent beings Karna.

110. Refrained from that fight before they very eyes of the bowmen present. Thus O king, making Bhima carless, Karna reproved him in such harsh language.

111-112. In the presence of that best of the Vrishnis and the son of Pritha. Then O king, the ape-bannered Arjuna, being urged on by Keshava, sped a the son of Suta numerous arrows whetted on stone. Then those gold-decked arrows hurled by the force Partha's arm.

113. And issuing out of the Gandiva, penetrated into Karna's body like so many cranes entering into the Krouncha mountains. Wounding Karna with those arrows shot from the Gandiva, that entered his body like so many snakes.

114. Dhananjaya, drove away the son of Suta from the vicinity of Bhimasena. Then with his bow burst open by Bhima and pierced sore with the arrows of Dhananjaya.

115. Karna fled away from Bhima being borne hastily on his swift-coursing car. Bhima also, O foremost of men, ascending Satyaki's Vehicle.

116-117. Followed his brother Savyasachin the son of Pandu in battle. Then Dhananjaya with his eyes red in rage and with great celerity sped at Karna a Naracha like the Destroyer urging death forward. Then like Garuda ranging through the welkin in quest of a mighty snake.

118. That Naracha shot from the Gandiva, flew through the sky towards Karna in all quickness. Then the son of Drona cut-off that Naracha as it coursed through the sky, with a singed arrows.

119. Desirous as he was of freeing Karna from his fear of Dhananjaya. Thereupon Arjuna inflamed with rage, pierced Drona's son with sixty-four arrows.

120-123. Whetted on stone and O monarch addressed the latter saying 'Fly not'. But afflicted with the arrows of Dhananjaya, Drona's son quickly entered into the army teeming with infuriated elephants and numerous chariots. Then the puissant son of Kunti drowned the sound of the other twangs of bows decked with gold, with the tremendous twang of his own bow Gandiva. Then the mighty Dhananjaya pursued Drona's son from behind who was thus flying and who had not then proceeded to a long way, frightening him all the way with his shafts. Tearing open the body of men, elephants and steeds with his Narachas.

124-125. Furnished with wings made of the feathers of the peacock and the Kanka, Arjuna began to agitate that army of yours. O foremost of the Bharatas, Partha, the son of Pakasasani (Indra) then began to carnage that host of yours, consisting of horses elephants and men.

## CHAPTER 140

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continuous

#### The slaughter of Alambusha

Dhritarashtra said

1. Day by day, O Sanjaya, by blazing fame is dwindling away. Numerous warriors of my side are being slain. I consider all this to be due to the adverse influence of Fate.

2. Inflamed with wrath, Dhananjaya has entered into my host which is protected by Drona's son and Karna and which is therefore incapable of being penetrated into by the very celestials.

3. Dhananjaya's prowess has increased in consequence of his being united with that

foremost of the Sinis and those two of burning energy, namely Krishna and Bhima.

4. Like fire burning down a heap of dry grass, grief is corroding my heart since I have heard of Dhananjaya's entrance into my army. I see that all the king's of the earth with the ruler of the Sindhus amongst them, are under the influence of adverse Fate.

5. Having inflicted a terrible injury to the diadem-checked Arjuna, how could the ruler of the Sindhu's escape with his life, when he would become the object of Arjuna's sight?

6. O Sanjaya, I can imagine even now that the king of the Sindhus no longer lives. Therefore, tell me how in reality did that battle rage then.

7. He that had single-handed and unsupported entered into and agitated my army, even as an infuriate elephant enters and crushes a group of lotuses.

8. Tell me of the feats of that Vrishnipero, as he achieved them, struggling to help Dhananjaya in battle. O Sanjaya, you are an expert in narration.

**Sanjaya said**

9. Seeing that foremost of men namely Bhima, proceed, although pierced with the arrows of Vikartana's son in the midst of so many heroes, O monarch, that excellent warrior of the Sini race, followed him on his chariot.

10. Uttering thundering roars like the clouds at the expiration of the summer season or burning like the sun at the end of the rainy season, he began to slaughter his foes by means of his tough bow and caused the troops of your son repeatedly to tremble.

11. When that foremost of Madhu's race careered on the field on his chariot drawn by horses of argentine hue and roared fiercely, O Bharata, there was none amongst your troops who could then check him.

12. Then that foremost of kings namely Alambusha excited with wrath, untreatating in battle, armed with a bow and covered in a golden coat of mail, advancing against Satyaki checked his career in battle.

13. Then encounter that thereupon raged between them was unparalleled. Your soldiers and the enemy's troops, giving up the fight became spectators of that battle.

14. The foremost of all kings viz., king Alambusha, then sped at Satyaki ten shafts; but that foremost of scions of the Sini race, cut-off all those shafts, with those of his own, before they could reach him.

15. Thereupon, Alambusha pierced Satyaki with three sharp arrows furnished with beautiful wings blazing as fire and discharged from the bow drawn back to the very ear. These arrows penetrating through Satyaki's coat of mail mangled his body.

16. Then piercing Satyaki's body with those keen pointed and effulgent arrows, poisoned and of the energy of fire or the wind, Alambusha, with four other shafts, struck the four silver-white steeds of Satyaki with great force.

17. Possessing prowess and activity equal to those of that bearer of the discus (Krishna), the grandson of Sini, thus struck by Alambusha, slew the latter's four steeds with four keen arrows.

18. Then cutting off the head of Alambusha's charioteer, he severed with a broad-headed arrows fierce as the yoga-fire from the former's trunk his head graced with excellent ear-rings and beautiful as the full moon.

19. Having slain that scion of a mace whose descendants are all kings, the illustrious descendant of the Yadu race that hero capable of crushing the hostile army, advanced towards Arjuna, O king, checking in his progress of soldiers of the enemy.

20. O monarch, thus careering amongst his enemies, the Vrishni hero, when following in the track of Arjuna, was seen with his shafts to destroy repeatedly the Kuru host, like the raging tempest scattering masses of clouds.

21. Where-ever that foremost of men desired to go, he was borne thither by those best steeds of his that were of Sindhu breed, well-broken, tame, white as milk or the Kunda flower or the moon or the snow and that were decked with housings and traces of gold.

22. Then, O descendant of Ajamidas race, yours sons, united with other soldiers of your army, quickly rushed against Satyaki, making that foremost of warrior's viz., Dushasana their leader.

23. Those commanders of divisions surrounding the grandson of Sini on all sides, began to wound him viz., that foremost of the Satwata's; that hero Satyaki resisted them with showers of his arrows.

24-25. Resisting them all quickly with his shafts of fiery energy, that slayer of hostile heroes, the grandson of Sini uplifting his bow, slew the horses of Dushasana's chariot; then Arjuna and Krishna seeing that foremost of men Satyaki thus fight in battle became highly delighted.

## CHAPTER 141

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continuous

#### Satyaki's seeing of Arjuna

Sanjaya said

1-2. Then the mighty archers of the Trigartta clan, all owning gold-decked standards, surrounded on all sides the mighty-armed Satyaki—that hero who performed with activity everything that demanded promptness and who having penetrated into that host fathomless as the ocean, was advancing against Dushasana's chariot, for giving victory of Dhananjaya.

3. Then all those excellent bowmen waxing worth and surrounding him with hosts of cars on all sides, began to pour their arrowy showers on them.

4. But the unsupported Satyaki of prowess incapable of being baffled, then alone conquered his fifth antagonists, all princes of the Trigartta race looking very beautiful in battle.

5. Then he reached the centre of the Bharata host echoing with the sound of palm-strokes and abounding in swords, lances and maces and looking like the unfordable ocean itself.

6. We then behold the wonderful conduct of Sini's grandson, for beholding him now in the Western direction, we immediately after beheld

him in the Eastern direction, so great indeed was his lightness of movements.

7. Then as if dancing and resembling, although alone, a hundred car-warriors, that hero careered in the East, West, North and South and all the subsidiary directions.

8. Beholding that conduct of that one of lion-like prowess and tread, the Trigartta warriors greatly afflicted, fell back upon the division of their clansmen.

9. Thereafter the brave warriors viz., the Surasenas tried to resist Satyaki wounding him with arrowy showers, like a guide percing his mad elephant with the goad.

10. The illustrious Satyaki fought with them only for a while and then that hero of inconceivable prowess commenced his fight with the Kalingas.

11. Passing through the division of the Kalingas that was incapable being passed through, the mighty-armed Satyaki approached Dhananjaya the son of Pritha.

12. Then like an exhausted swimmer reaching land, the heroic Yuyudhana became comforted on obtaining sight of Dhananjaya that foremost of men.

13. Beholding Satyaki come near them, Keshava addressing Arjuna said - "There comes the grandson of Sini, O son of Pritha, pursuing the track (opened by you).

14. O your of true prowess, Satyaki is your friend and pupil. That foremost of men, holding all the warriors of the hostile host a pins fee, has vanquished them all.

15. Inflicting dreadful loss upon the Kauravas, Satyaki dear unto you like your own life, is coming towards you, O diadem-decked one!

16. Having worsted with his arrows, Drona and Kritavarman of the Bhoja race, this Satyaki is approaching you, O Phalguna.

17. Having slain numerous warriors all best of their class, the valorous Satyaki ever solicitous of the welfare of Yudhishtira and accomplished in the use of weapons, is approaching you, O Arjuna.

18. O son of Pandu, the puissant Satya is coming to you have achieved numerous difficult feats in the midst of the Kaurava host.

19. Having encountered on a single car many mighty car-warriors having Drona at their head, the heroic Satyaki is approaching you, O Arjuna .

20. Deputed by the very virtuous king Yudhishtira, O Partha, this Satyaki is coming to you, having penetrated through the Kaurava army, depending upon the mighty of his arms.

21. Invincible in battle, that Satyaki who has no match for him in the whole Kaurava army, is now coming to you, O son of Kunti!

22. Freed from the press of the Kaurava troops, like a lion from amidst a herd of kine, Satyaki is not approaching you, after having slain numerous hostile soldiers.

23. O son of Pritha, here comes Satyaki in all quickness, having covered the earth with the heads of thousand's of kings, graced with faces resembling blooming lotuses.

24. Yonder comes Satyaki, having conquered Duryodhana with his brothers and having slain Jalasandha in battle.

25. Yonder comes Satyaki, having created a river of blood with clots of blood for its mire and having disregarded the Kauravas like some any straws."

26. Hearing these words of Keshava Kunti's son although filled with delight replied to the former saying—"O mighty-armed one, I am not pleased to find that Satyaki is coming to me.

27. O Keshava, I do not know the where abouts of the very virtuous king Yudhishtira. I am doubtful whether he lives or not, being deprived of the help of this Satvata hero.

28. O mighty-armed one, it should have been this one's first duty to protect the king in battle. O Krishna, wherefore has then this one abandoning him has followed in my wake?

29. The king has been left to the mercy of Drona; the ruler of the Sindhus is still unslain and yonder does Bhurisaravas rush against Satyaki in battle.

30. I have still the heavies burden hanging on me, in the shape of my vow to slay the Sindhu king. It is my duty to inform myself of the where-about of the king. It is also my duty to protect Satyaki.

31. It is also my (self-imposed) duty to slay Jayadratha. Yonder is the sun going down (the horizon). As regards the mighty-armed Satyaki he is fatigued and his stock of weapons is also exhausted.

32. His horses are tired and O Madhava his driver is worn out with fatigue. On the other hand, O Keshava, Bhurisarava is not at all fatigued and moreover he is well supported.

33. Will Satyaki reap victory in this encounter? Having crossed the ocean itself will Satyaki of prowess incapable of being vanquished.

34. Will that foremost of scion of the Sini race, will that highly energetic one, succumb in crossing the little water contained in the vestige of a cow's hoof? Will Satyaki obtain good fortune having encountered Bhurisaravas that foremost of the Kurus, who is high-souled and accomplished in the use of weapons? That he should dispatch Satyaki after me, dismissing all his fears from Drona, O Keshava, I think this to be a mistake committed by the very virtuous king Yudhishtira. Like a hawk when ranging through the skies, ever trying to pounce upon a piece of meat, Drona is ever endeavouring to effect the capture of the very virtuous king. Will the king fare well?"

## CHAPTER 142

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continuous

#### The lopping of Bhurisarava's arm

#### Sanjaya said

1. Beholding that warrior indomitable in battle, that scion of the Sini race rush furiously to battle, O king, Bhurisaravas, inflamed with wrath, assailed him.

2. Then, O mighty monarch, that foremost of the Kurus (Bhurisaravas) addressing Sini's grandson thus spoke—"By good luck it is that

you have today come within the range of my sight;

3. Today, I shall realise in battle my long-cherish I hope; you shall not escape me alive if indeed you do not fly away from the battle.

4. O scion of the Dasarha race, today slaying you who ever boast of your prowess, I shall afford delight to Suyodhana, the king of the Kurus.

5. Today the heroes, Keshava and Arjuna, will both behold you prostrate on the field of battle, consumed with the fire of my barrows.

6. Today Dharma's son king Yudhishtira hearing you slain by me, would be covered with shame, for it was he who dispatched you on this mission.

7. Today Pritha's son Dhananjaya will come to know of my prowess when he will see you slain by me and lie weltering in your blood.

8. This encounter with you has long been desired by me, like that desired by Shakra with Bali, in the battle between the Gods and the Asuras in days gone by.

9. Today, O descendant of the Satvata race, I shall fight a terrible fight with you, whence you shall know my great mighty and manliness.

10. Slain by me in battle, you shall today go to the domains of the Samyamni, like the son of Ravana slain by the younger brother of Rama (Lakshmana).

11. Today Krishna, Partha and the virtuous king Yudhishtira, O Madhava, will abandon fighting and became despondent, in consequence of your slaughter.

12. O Madhava, today, slaying you with my sharp arrows, I shall afford delight to the wives of those who have been slain by you.

13. Just as a small deer coming within the range of a lion's sight cannot escape, so O descendant of Madhu's race, you shall not escape me alive, having come within the range of my sight."

14. Thereupon, O king, Yuyudhana smilingly replied to him saying—"O illustrious descendant of the Kuru race, I have no fear in fight.

15. I am not to be terrified by empty words. He will slay me in battle who will be competent to deprive me of my weapons.

16. He that will slay me in battle will ever be victorious. What is the use of vain boasts. Achieve in deeds what you say in words.

17. Like the rumbled of autumnal clouds, your roars are barren. So hearing your empty roars nothing beast my laughter is being excited.

18. O Kaurava, let the encounter which you looked so eagerly for, today take place; O sire, my heart that longs for the combat with you, cannot tolerate any more delay.

19. O wretch, I shall not abstain from the fight today without having slain you in battle." Thus those two foremost of men, stirring each other with their biting words.

20. And waxing wroth and desirous of slaying each other in battle began to smite each other. Then those two mighty bow-men both boastful of their prowess and both challenging each other.

21. Appeared like two infuriate elephants encounter each other, with a desire to consort with a she-elephant. Then those two subduers of foes, Bhurisravas and Satyaki began to pour.

22. On each other, dreadful showers of arrows like two mighty-clouds. Covering Sini's grandson with swift-coursing arrows, Somadatta's son.

23. O foremost of the Bharatas, desirous of slaying the former, pierced him with sharp arrows. Having pierced Satyaki then with ten arrows, Somadatta's son.

24-25. Out of a desire for slaying that illustrious scion of the Sini race, sped other sharp shafts at him. Then, O ruler of men, Satyaki with the illusion of his weapons devoured up all those up all those arrows, O lord, when they were ranging through the skies and before they had even reached him (Satyaki). Then those two heroes began to pour upon one another their showers of weapons.

26. Those two heroes, of noble extraction both enhancers of the fame of the Kurus and the



Vrishnis respectively, began to fight with each other like two tigers fighting with claws or two elephants fighting with their tusks.

27. With lances and with darts and javelins they inflicted wounds on each other. They mangled their bodies and shed blood profusely.

28. Then those two heroes checked each other in that battle which was like a gambling match in which their lives were the stakes. Thus those two enhancers of the glory of the Kuru and the Vrishni races (respectively).

29-31. Fought on with each other like two huge elephants, the leaders of two herds. Those two warriors, both desirous of attaining the highest of regions both longing to attain to the region of Brahma, thus roared at each other. Indeed Satyaki and Somadatta's son continued to cover each with their arrowy downpour in the sight of the delighted Dharatarastras. The people then witnessed that encounter between those two foremost of warriors.

32. Who were fighting like two leaders of elephant herds for the sake of consorting with a she-elephant in her season. Then each slaying the other's steeds and cutting off the other's bow.

33. And thus deprived of the use of their cars, encountered each other for sword fighting. Taking up two large and beautiful and variegated shields made of bull's hide.

34. And drawing out their swords out of their scabbards, they appeared beautiful on the field of battle. They moved in various motions and described in their montions, various circles.

35. Those two subduers of foes incessantly then began to strike one another out of rage. With their swords and covered in variegated coats of mail and adorned with Nikas and Angadas.

36. Those two renowned warriors displayed various kinds of motions. They wheeled about and jumped on high, made side thrusts, leapt forward whirled on high, ran and dashed forward and advanced upwards.

37. Those two subduer of foes began to smite each other with their swords and each was

on the alert for finding the weakness of other. Both of those two heroes jumped up superbly.

38. And both displayed their training agility and skill. Those foremost of warriors in that battle, made many skillful thrust at each other.

39. Then, O foremost of men, striking each other, they took respite only for a moment before the presence of all the troop.

40. Having, with their respective swords cut-off the variegated buckler of each other decked with hundred moons, those foremost of men engaged in a wrestling encounter, O ruler of men.

41. Possessed of expanded chests, long arms and both versed in wrestling, they fought on with each other with their arms that resembling iron-piked bludgeons.

42. They struck and seized each other with their arms and each seized the others neck with his arms. The skill that they had acquired by practice, afforded great delight to other warriors who then were turned into mere spectators.

43. The, O king, as those two foremost of men fought on with each other, the sound that then arose, was the like that caused by the striking of thunder against a mountain.

44-46. Like two elephants fighting with each other with the ends of their tusks, of like two bulls with their horns, those two high-souled and foremost warriors of the Kuru and the Satvata races, fought with each other, sometimes twining each other with their arms, sometimes striking each other with their heads, sometimes binding each other with their legs, sometimes slapping their arm-pits, sometimes scratching each other with their nails, sometimes embracing each other tightly, sometimes twining their legs round each others loins, sometimes rolling on the ground, sometimes going forward and sometime falling back, sometimes challenging each other, sometimes throwing each other down, sometimes rising up and sometimes jumping on high.

47. Then those two puissant combatant's displayed in that encounter all the thirty kinds of manoeuvres and acts that are the principal features of these kinds of encounters.

48. When during that encounter, the lock of Satwata's weapons was exhausted, Vasudeva's son addressing Arjuna said - "Behold this careless hero, viz., Satyaki, this foremost of all wielder of bow, engaged in fight.

49. O son of Pandu, he has followed you having penetrated into the Bharata host. O Bharata, he has fought with many mighty warriors of the Bharata host.

50. Bhurishravas who has made great sacrificial presents, rushing upon that foremost of warriors viz., Satyaki exhausted with fatigue, has no encountered him. This is indeed very unfair."

51. Then the indomitable Bhurishravas inflamed with rage, uplifting his sword struck Satyaki like a mad elephant striking another in the same state.

52. Those two foremost of car-warriors, both riding in their cars and both rushing with rage fought on with each other, Arjuna and Krishna being their witness.

53. Thereupon the mighty-armed Krishna addressing Arjuna, said. "Behold the foremost of the Vrishni and Andhaka races, viz., Satyaki succumb to the son of Somadatta.

54. Having achieved many difficult feats he now laid low on the field in consequence of his great exhaustion. O Arjuna protect the heroic Satyaki, your (renowned) pupil.

55. O foremost of men, O Arjuna, do you soon take that measure by which Satyaki many not succumb to Bhurishravas the performer of numerous sacrifices, O lord."

56. Then Dhananjaya, with cheerful heart addressing Vasudeva's son said - "Behold that foremost among the Kurus and that best hero among the Vrishni's, sport with each other.

57. Like a huge and infuriate elephant sporting in the woods with mighty lion." While Pandu's son Dhananjaya was thus speaking.

58. Loud cried of Oh and Alas arose among the troops, O an elephant, that foremost of the Ku foremost of the Bharatas, as the mighty-armed (Bhurishravas) striking vigorously had brought Satyaki down on the earth.

59. Then like a lion dragging ru race, namely Bhurishravas, that destroyer of darkness, looked beautiful in that battle as he dragged that foremost one of the Satwatas.

60. Then drawing his sword out of the scabbard and holding Satyaki by the hair, Bhurishravas struck the former on the breast with his legs.

61. Bhurishravas was then about to sever from Satyaki's trunk his head graced with earrings. For sometimes, that hero of the Satwata race rapidly whirling round with the rod.

62. Together with the arm of Bhurishravas that held it by the hair, like a potters wheel whirling round with the rod.

63. Beholding the Satwata hero thus dragged by Bhurishravas, Vasudeva once more addressing Arjuna said -

64. Behold O mighty-armed one, that foremost hero among the Vrishnis and Andhakas, that disciple of yours who is not inferior to you in bowmanship, succumb to the son of Somadatta.

65. Behold, O son of Partha, the weak Bhurishravas obtain advantage over the Vrishni hero Satyaki of prowess incapable of being baffled.

66. The mighty-armed son of Pandu thus spoken to by Vasudeva (Krishna), worshipped Bhurishravas in his minds.

67. (He then said to himself). 'Dragging this foremost of the Satwata race as if in sport, the enhancer of the glory of the Kurus (Bhurishravas) is filling me with delight.

68. Without slaying that foremost of the Vrishni heroes viz., Satyaki he is only dragging the former like the king of the beasts dragging a mighty elephant in the woods.'

69. Having thus mentally applauded that foremost of the Kauravas, Pritha's son, O king, the mighty Arjuna thus replied to Vasudeva saying-

70. "O Madhava, my eyes being fixed on the ruler of the Sindhus, I cannot see

Bhurisravas; but for the sake of that descendant of Yadu's, race, I shall perform a very difficult feat."

71. Having thus spoken and desirous of carrying out the words of Vasudeva, the son of Pandu placed a sharp razor-headed arrows on the bowstring.

72. That arrow shot by the force of Partha's arms and looking like a meteor dropping from the skies, cut-off the arm of that one devoted to the performance of sacrifice arm that was decked with Angadas and had a sword in its grasp.

### CHAPTER 143

#### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

##### Continuous

##### The slaughter of Bhurisravas

##### Sanjaya said

1. Then that arm with the sword in grasp and decked with beautiful Angadas, fell down on the earth, thereby inflicting great grief on the living creation.

2. In the act of striking, that arm was lopped off by the diadem-decked Arjuna, who himself remained invisible to Bhurisravas; thus cut-off, it fell down vehemently on the earth, like a five-hooded snake.

3. Then that descendant of the Kuru race, beholding himself incapacitated by Pritha's son, began, out of rage, to reprove the son of Pandu, having abandoned Satyaki.

##### Bhurisravas said

4. Alas, O son of Kunti, you have committed a cruel and heartless deed, in as much as, not being engaged with me and covertly, you have cut-off my arm.

5. Shall you have not to say to king Yudhishthira, the son of Dharma–'Bhurisravas when engaged with another was slain by me in battle?'

6. Was it for this that you learnt the use of weapons from the illustrious Indra or Rudra or Drona or Kripa. O son of Pritha!

7. It is said that you are better acquainted with the rules about the use of weapons than many others. Why then have you lopped off the arm of one who was not fighting with you?

8. The righteous never strike him who is careless or who is frightened or who is made careless or who implores mercy or who is involved in a calamity.

9. Why then, O son of Pritha, have you perpetrated this vile and difficult deed, that is only worthy of a mean fellow and is practised only by wicked people.

10. O Dhananjaya, respectable people look upon respectable deeds to be very easy of being accomplished. But a disrespectable deed is difficult of being perpetrated by a respectable person.

11. Men quickly imbibe the behaviours of those among whom they live, O Bharata, the truth of this proposition is verified in you.

12. Of royal extraction and specially descendant as you are of the Kuru race, how could you transgress the duties of the Kshatriya race, although you were well-behaved and observant of vows.

13. This vile act that you have today perpetrated for the sake of the Vrishni hero, is surely the result of Vasudeva's instigations. And it cannot possibly be reconciled to your nature.

14. What man, except he that calls himself a friend of Krishna would inflict such an injury on another who is engaged deeply in fighting with his adversary?

15. The Vrishnis and the Andhakas are vile Kshatriyas, ever engaged in perpetrating low deeds and are by nature wedded to shameful conduct. Why, O Partha, have you chosen them to be your model?" Being thus spoken to Partha then replied to Bhurisravas saying–

##### Arjuna said

16. 'Now it is clear that with the decay of body, the intellect of men also suffer decay, since, O master, you have uselessly directed all these reproaches to me.

17. Knowing myself and Hrishikesha perfectly well how is it that you reproach us

both? I am conversant perfectly with the rules of fair combat and I am acquainted with the meaning of all moral precepts.

18. So, it is impossible that I should commit a sinful act. Knowing this also, fight with their foes, being supported by their own men.

19. Such as their brothers, their fathers their sons and relatives and friends and kinsmen and companions and also relying on the strength of their arms.

20. Why then should I not protect, Satyaki my disciple and my dear relative who is fighting in this battle on our behave reckless of the very life that is so difficult of being laid down?

21. Why should I not protect "Satyaki who is, O king, like my own right arm to me? In battle, one should not look after his own protection only.

22. O ruler of men, he that is engaged on behalf of another, should surely be protected by that other. When such men are themselves protected they can look after the protection of the king (on whose behalf they fight).

23. If indeed I had passively beheld Satyaki's slaughter in this great encounter, then, at Satyaki's death, sin would have hanged on me for my negligence.

24-28. Why do you wax wroth upon me for my having protected him, who is every way deserves my protection? You are reproaching me, O king, saying, 'When engaged with another, I have yet been incapacitated by you.' In respect to this, I submit that I committed an error in my judgment. Satyaki was shaking his armour against you and was riding on his own car, drawing his bow-string he was fighting with the foes, in the midst of his enemies abounding in steeds and foot-soldiers and teeming with cars and elephants and echoing with the war-cries of combatants. Amongst friends and foes engaged with one another, how could it be possible that the Satvata hero was engaged with one person only? Having encountered many warriors and vanquished many mighty car-warrior.

29. Satyaki was fatigued and afflicted with weapons-wounds and cheerless in mind; his horses also were exhausted. Having, under these circumstances, defeated the mighty car-warrior Satyaki.

30. And having thus obtained advantage over him, you seek to establish your superiority. You desired to cut-off with your sword the head of Satyaki.

31-32. I could not possibly behold passively Satyaki reduced to that plight. It is proper that you should reproach your own self in as much as you neglected to protect yourself (when trying to injure another). Indeed O hero, how would you yourself have behaved towards one who would be your dependent.

**Sanjaya said**

33. Thus spoken to (by Arjuna), the illustrious and mighty-armed Bhurishravas bearing the device of a sacrificial stake on his banner, let Yuyudhana go and desired to enter upon the performance of Praya-Yoga.

34. Distinguished by many pious deeds, he then spread with his left hand a bed of arrows and out of a desire for going to the regions of Brahman, he committed his vital breaths to the care of the gods presiding over them.

35. Steadying his eyes on the sun, setting his mind on the purified water and meditating the Mantras contained in the Upanishads, Bhurishravas betaking himself to yoga, became reticent.

36. Then all the men in the army began to rebuke Krishna and Dhananjaya and applaud that foremost of men viz., Bhurishravas.

37. Though thus reproached by the general voice, the two Krishnas uttered not a single word, nor did the stake-bannered Bhurishravas feel any joy in consequence of those encomiums.

38-39. Then Dhananjaya otherwise called Phalguna, that son of Pandu unable to tolerate your sons speaking in that strain as also to put up with their words and the words of Bhurishravas, O Bharata, in sorrows and not at all-angry, spoke these words, as if for remaining them all.

40. All kings know of this my great vow, that no one shall slay any body of our party so long as the latter is within the range of my arrows.

41. Knowing this, O stake-bannered, one it befits you not to reproach me; without yourself knowing the rules of morality, you should not censure others.

42. That I have lopped off your arm while you, armed to the teeth, were on the point of slaying the unarmed Satyaki, is not at all against the rules of fair combat.

43. But what righteous man is there who will not condemn the slaughter of the body Abhimanyu specially when he was deprived of his weapons, his car and his armour?

44. Thus addressed by Pritha's son, Bhurishravas touched the ground with his head and offered with his left arm the right one that had been severed.

45. Then the stake-bannered Bhurishravas of great effulgence O king having heard those words of Partha, become silent with his face turned towards the earth.

**Arjuna said**

46. O eldest brother of Shalya, the love I bear for you is equal even to that I bear for king Yudhishthira the virtuous or Bhima that foremost of all mighty persons or Nakula or Sahadeva.

47. With my permission as also with that of the high-souled Krishna do you go to the regions of the righteous where Sivi the son of Usinara is.

**Vasudeva said**

48. You are ever devoted to the performance of sacrifices and Agnihotras; therefore repair quickly to those holy regions of mine that constantly burn with effulgence and that are coveted by the foremost of gods with Brahman as their head and becoming equal to myself by you carried on the back of Garuda.

**Sanjaya said**

49. Liberated from the grasp of Somadatta's son, the grandson of Sini rose and with a view

to cut-off the head of that illustrious hero, drew his sword.

50. Satyaki then desired to slay the sinless Bhurishravas, the eldest brother of Saira that giver of profuse presents at sacrifices, who was staying with his senses drawn back from the battle and who had already been slain by Arjuna the son of Pandu;

51. Who was sitting with his arm lopped off, like an elephant with his trunk cut-off. Then all the warriors reproached him loudly for his intention. But destitute of reason.

52. And although forbidden by the high-souled Partha and Krishna and Bhima and the two wheel protectors of Arjuna's car and Ashvatthaman and Kripa.

53. And Karna and Vrishasena and the king of the Sindhus and while the soldiers were still uttering loud shouts of denunciation, Satyaki flew Bhurishravas while engaged in the observance of the vow.

54. Indeed with his sword Satyaki lopped off the head of the Kuru warrior who had been deprived of his arm by Partha and who was then engaged in the Praya for liberating his soul from the body.

55. The soldiers then did not praise Satyaki for that act of his, viz., the slaughter of the perpetuator of the Kuru race, who already been slain by Pritha's son.

56-57. Then the Siddhas, the Charanas and the men present, as also the celestials, seeing the Indra-like Bhurishravas slain in battle when sitting in the observance of the vow Praya, began to praise him, struck with wonder at the feats achieved by him. Your troops also argued the matter saying—

58. In this matter no blame should be attributed to the Vrishni hero. What has been ordained must happen. Therefore we should not cherish wrath; since again wrath is the cause of a man's grief.

59. It was doomed that Bhurishravas would be slain by the heroic Satyaki. We need not judge of its propriety or otherwise. Satyaki has been made the instrument of Bhurishrava's death by the Creator himself.

**Satyaki said**

60. You, sinful Kauravas, vested in outward garments of virtue, you are telling me in words of virtue, that Bhurishravas should not have been slain.

61. Where did this righteousness of yours fly when you ruthlessly slew in battle that child viz., Subhadra's son when he was deprived to the use of his weapons;

62. In a certain fit of haughtiness I had vowed that he who would throw me down in battle alive and strike me in wrath with his knees.

63. Would be slain by me even though that antagonist of mine should adopt the vow of asceticism. Though I was fighting in battle with my arms and eyes in tact.

64. Yet you had taken me as already slain. It is indeed a great foolishness on your part. You foremost of the Kurus, the slaughter of Bhurishravas achieved by me, in indeed very proper.

65. Partha by lopping off the arm of this one, with sword in grasp, had fulfilled his vow of protecting his own partisans and has thereby robbed me of my glory.

66. What is ordained must come to pass. It is the hand of fate that works. Bhurishravas has been slain in the course of this battle. What sin have I perpetrated?

67. In days gone by, Valmiki sang this verse on earth viz., "You say, O ape, that women should not be slain!

68. In all times however men should always with resolute care do that which would give pain to this foes."

**Sanjaya said**

69. After Satyaki had said these words, none amongst the Pandavas and the Kauravas, O king, said anything; on the other hand they praised Bhurishravas in their mind.

70. Nobody present there countenanced the slaughter of Somadatta's illustrious son, who resembled an hermit of the woods and who had given away thousands of golden coins.

71. The head of that brave hero graced with beautiful blue locks and eyes red like those of pegions looked like the head of a horse cut-off in a horse sacrifice and placed on the sacrificial altar.

72. Purified through his prowess and death by the edge of weapons and in consequence of the boon accorded to him, Bhurishravas worthy of every boon went to the regions on high, shuffling off his mortal coil and filling the heavens with his illustrious fame.

**CHAPTER 144****(JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–****Continuous****The praise of Satyaki****Dhritarashtra said**

1. Having promised to Yudhishtira to do so, the heroic Satyaki crossed the ocean of my troops, unvanquished even by Drona, Radha's son, Vikarna and Kritavarman.

2. How was it then that Satyaki checked and humiliated by the scion of the Kurus namely Bhurishravas, was brought down on the ground with force.

**Sanjaya said**

3. Hear, O monarch, how the grandson of Sini came to being in days gone by as also how Bhurishravas was descended. O ruler of men, this will explain all your doubts.

4. Atri had Soma for his son and Soma's son was called Buddha. Buddha's son was Pururava whose effulgence was like that of the great Indra.

5. Pururava had a son called Ayush; and Ayush's son was Nahusha. Nahusha had Yayati for his son who was a royal sage equal to a celestial.

6. By his wife Deveyani Yayati had Yadu for his eldest son. In the dynasty of Yadu was born a son called by the name of Devamida.

7. Devamida of Yadu's race had Sura for his son, who was highly esteemed in all the three worlds. Sura had for his son that foremost of men namely the illustrious Vasudeva.

8. Foremost of all wielders of bows, Sura was equal to Kartikeya in battle. O king, in his race and equal to him in energy was born Sini, O monarch.

9. At this time, O monarch the Sayamvara of the daughter of the illustrious Devaka took place in which numerous Kshatriyas were present.

10. In that Sayamvara, Sini having vanquished the kings, placed the princess Devaki on his car, with a view to marry her to Vasudeva.

11. O foremost of men, O king, then beholding the princess Devaki on the car of Sini of Sura's line, the highly puissant Somadatta could not broke it.

12. Thereupon, O king, a battle was fought between then, that occupied half a day and was beautiful to look at. O foremost of men, a wrestling encounter then took place between those heroes endued with great heroism.

13. Somadatta then was seized upon and felled on the ground by Sini; and the latter raising his sword and holding the former by the hair, struck him with his legs.

14. In the midst of thousands of kings who were witnessing the combat, from all sides. Then out of mercy; the latter abandoned the former saying 'go, live.'

15. Reduced to that humiliating condition, O sire, Somadatta, influenced by anger began to offer worship to Mahadeva in order to propitiate him.

16. That foremost of all boon-giving deities namely Mahadeva became pleased with him and requested him to ask for his desired boon. The royal son of Somadatta then asked for this boon -

17. "I wish to have a son, O master, who will strike down Sini's son in the midst of thousands of kings in battle and who will strike the latter with his leg."

18. Hearing these words of Somadatta O king, the god disappeared then and there saying 'so be it.'

19. Through the virtue of that boon Somadatta afterwards got the liberal-minded and munificent Bhurisravas for his son; and it was thus that Somadatta's son succeeded in throwing down the descendant of Sini.

20. And in striking him with his legs in the presence of the whole army. O king now I have related to you what you asked me.

21. Indeed that scion of the Satvata race (Satyaki) cannot be worsted in battle by even the foremost of men. The Vrishni heroes are all of sure aim and are acquainted with all modes of warfare.

22. They can defeat the very gods the Danavas and the Gandharvas. They are never confounded; they fight depending totally on their own energy. They never seek other's help.

23. O lord, there is none in this world equal to the Vrishnis. O foremost of the Bharata's none, has been, are or will be a match for the Vrishnis in might.

24. They never condemn their kinsmen and are ever observant of the commands of the elders. Neither the gods nor the Asuras, nor the Gandharvas, nor the Yakshas nor the Rakshasas.

25. Can conquer the Vrishni heroes, what to speak of men! They never cast covetous-glances on the things of possessions of their kinsmen, preceptor or those of the Brahmanas.

26. They never covet also the properties of those that render them help on any time of distress. Devoted to the Brahmanas and truthful in speech, they never show any pride although they are wealthy.

27. Those who are really strong are regarded as weak by the Vrishnis and are rescued by them when involved in any danger. Ever devoted to the worship of gods, the Vrishnis are self-controlled munificent and shorn of pride.

28. For this it is that prowess of the Vrishni heroes are never thwarted. It is possible for one to carry on his shoulders the Meru mountain or the swim across the very ocean.

29. But it is impossible for him to obtain advantage over the Vrishnis in an encounter

with them. O lord, I have now explained to you everything in respect of which you entertained doubts. After all, O king of the Kurus, O foremost of men, yours is the great fault (that had bred this war).

## CHAPTER 145

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continuous

#### The fierce fight between Arjuna and Karna

**Dhritarashtra said**

1. When under these circumstances the Kuru warrior Bhurisravas had been slain, relate to me, O Sanjaya how the battle progressed.

**Sanjaya said**

2. After Bhurisravas had gone to the regions of the departed, O Bharata, that mighty-armed Arjuna urged Vasudeva saying–

3. O Krishna, urge the steeds to the top of their speed, so that they may soon carry me to spot where king Jayadratha is, O sinless one, it behoves you, to help me, in the fulfilment of my vow!

4-6. O mighty-armed one, the orb of the day, is quickly going towards the Western hills. O foremost of men, I have undertaken to achieve a mighty task. But the ruler of the Sindhus on the other hand is protected by many foremost warriors among the Kurus. O Krishna, do you drive the horses in such a manner that my vow may be fulfilled before sunset and that Jayadratha may be slain.

7-8. Then the mighty-armed Krishna versed in horse-lore, urged those horses of Argentine hue towards the car of Jayadratha. Then as Arjuna proceeded shooting swift-flying arrows ever hitting their marks. O mighty monarch, the foremost warriors of yours troops quickly proceeded to meet him. They were Duryodhana, Karna, Vrishasena, the king of the Madras.

9. Ashvatthaman, Kripa and the ruler of the Sindhus himself; encountering the Sindhu king who was standing before him, Vibhatsu.

10-11. Cast his eyes burning with rage on him and seemed to burn the former there with. Thereupon king Duryodhana addressing Radha's son quickly said. 'Beholding Arjuna exert himself for compassing the slaughter of Jayadratha.' O king, your royal son Suyodhana spoke these very words to Karna.

12. O son of Vikartana, the crisis in the battle has arrived. O high-souled warriors, now show your own strength. O Karna, do you so act as Jayadratha may not be slain in battle by Arjuna.

13. O foremost hero among men, very little remains of the day. Thwart the enemy now with the waves of your arrows. O foremost of men, if we can safely reach the expire of the day, victory will certainly be ours.

14. If the ruler of the Sindhus can be saved till the sun sets, then the son of Kunti, in consequence of his vow being baffled will fall upon.

15. O giver of honour, the brothers and the followers of Arjuna will not be able to live for a moment on the face of the earth, when he passes away from it.

16. When the Pandavas will be destroyed, O Karna, we shall enjoy this earth with its mountains, gardens and forests, without a thorn in our sides.

17. O bestower of honour, confounded by adverse Destiny and through the perversion of his judgment, Arjuna has made this vow without judging what is practicable and what impracticable.

18. Surely, O Karna, the diadem-decked son of Pandu had vowed the slaughter of Jayadratha for encompassing his own destruction.

19. O son of Radha, how can Phalguna succeed in slaying the ruler of the Sindhus, before sunset, when yourself indomitable in battle, is still alive?

20. How can Dhananjaya succeed in slaying in battle Jayadratha who is protected by the king of the Madras and the illustrious Kripa himself?

21. How can Vibhatsu, who it appears is urged on by Fate, reach the Sindhu-king, who is



protected by Drona's son and myself and Dushasana?

22. Numerous heroic warriors are fighting for the sake of Jayadratha and the sun is also hanging low. O giver of honours, Partha will not be able to reach the ruler of the Sindhus in battle.

23. Now, O Karna, supported by myself, by other heroic mighty car-warriors, by Drona's son, by the king of the Madras and Kripa himself.

24. Do you fight with Pritha's son in battle, exerting to the best of your capabilities." Having been thus spoken to by your son, O sire, the son of Radha.

25-26. Replied to Duryodhana that foremost of the Kurus in these words—My body has been mangled with numerous net-works of arrows in the battle by the heroic Bhimasena of resolute aim and of skillful bowmanship. O bestower of honours, I now stay in battle-field, only because it is my duty to do so.

27. Afflicted with mighty shafts there is not a single limb of mine that is not suffering excruciating pain; still I shall fight to the best of my abilities. My very life is for you.

28. I shall do that by which this foremost of the Pandavas will not succeed in slaying the Sindhu-king. So long as I shall fight discharging sharp arrows.

29. The brave Dhananjaya, who can shoot weapons even with his left hand, will not be able to reach the ruler of the Sindhus. Everything that a man bearing love and devotion to you and always anxious for your welfare, ought to do for you.

30. Shall be done by me, O you of Kuru's race. As regards our victory it is under the disposal of Destiny. I shall exert myself in battle today to the best of my abilities, for the sake of the Sindhu king.

31. And also for accomplishing what would conduce to your good, O monarch. But, O king, victory depends upon Destiny. Relying on my prowess, I shall today fight with Arjuna.

32-33. For your sake, O foremost of men, but victory is dependent on Destiny. O foremost

of the Kurus, let all the troops today witness the horripilating and fierce encounter that shall take place between myself and Pritha's son." When Karna and the king of the Kurus were thus talking to each other on the field.

34-35. Arjuna was engaged in slaughtering your army with his sharp arrows. He then cut-off with sharp Vallas the arms of unretreating heroes, arms that resembled bludgeons or trunks of elephants. That mighty-armed hero also severed many heads from the trunks of men with his arrows.

36-37. Vibhatsu also cut-off the trunks of elephants, the necks of steeds, the axels of cars and also horses and men steeped in blood and armed with lances, in two or three fragments with his Kshurapras. And horses and excellent elephants.

38. And standards and umbrellas and bows and chamaras and heads began to fall fast on all sides. The consuming your troops like fire consuming a heap of dry grass.

39-40. Partha soon made the earth deluged with blood. The mighty and indomitable son of Pritha of prowess incapable of being baffled, spreading a terrible carnage in that host of yours, soon reached the ruler of the Sindhus. Protected by Bhimasena and by Satvata, Vibhatsu.

41-42. O foremost of the Bharatas, appeared effulgent like a blazing fire. Then seeing Arjuna in that condition, all the fierce bowmen of your army, those foremost of men, possessed of the wealth of energy, could not brook him. Thereupon Duryodhana, Karna, Vrihasena, the ruler of the Madras.

43. Ashvatthaman, Kripa and the ruler of the Sindhus surrounded the diadem-decked Arjuna on all sides.

44-45. Then all those combatants skilled in fighting, placing the ruler Sindhus at their back and impelled by a desire for slaying Arjuna and Krishna, dauntlessly surrounded Partha, that hero versed in all modes of warfare., who then appeared to dance in the terrace of this chariot, emitting fierce sounds, with his bow-string and

his palms and resembling the Destroyer himself with mouth agape.

46. Meanwhile the sun and the heavens had assumed a crimson hue. Desirous of the speedy setting of the sun, the Kaurava warriors bending their bows with arms resembling the tapering bodies of serpents.

47-48. Discharged their arrows by hundreds, towards Phalguna, arrows, that resembled the rays of the sun. Cutting off all those shafts thus sped towards him, into two, three or eight fragments, the diadem-decked Arjuna, indomitable in battle, pierced them all (with his arrows). Then Ashvatthaman owning the device of a lion's tail in his banner, displaying his might.

49. Began, O monarch, to resist Arjuna. Indeed the son of the daughter of Saradvata, piercing Partha with ten shafts and Krishna with seven.

50-51. Impeded the progress of Arjuna's chariot, with a view to protect the ruler of the Sindhus. Then many foremost one among the Kurus all great car-warriors, surrounded Arjuna on all sides with a large number of chariots; stretching their bows and discharging numerous arrows.

52. They began to exert themselves for protecting the ruler of the Sindhus, at the command of your son. We then beheld the strength of the heroic Partha's arms.

53. The inexhaustibility of his shafts and the strength also of his bow Gandiva. Repulsing with his own weapons, those of Drona's son and of Kripa.

54. He pierced every one of your warriors with nine arrows. Thereupon Drona's son pierced him with twenty-five arrows and Vrishasena pierced him with seven.

55. Duryodhana pierced him with twenty, Karna with three shafts. And all of them roared at him and went on piercing him without remission.

56. Shaking their bows, they encompassed him on all sides and they also made their chariots to be drawn in a compact circle around him.

57. Desirous of the speedy setting of the sun, those mighty fighters of the Kuru host possessed of great agility, began to roar at Arjuna and shaking their bows.

58-59. Covered him with showers of sharp arrows like clouds pouring rain over the mountain-breast; those brave warriors, having arms like heavy bludgeons and showed on that occasion, O monarch, on Dhananjaya's body their celestials weapons. Having spread a great carnage in your army, the mighty.

60. And indomitable Dhananjaya, of prowess incapable of being baffled, came upon the ruler of the Sindhus. Karna however, O king, with his arrows, resisted him in that battle.

61-62. Before the very eyes, O Bharata of Bhimasena and Satvata. The mighty armed son of Pritha in the very sight of all the troops pierced the son of Suta, in return, with ten arrows, on the field of battle. Then Satvata, O sire, pierced Karna with three arrows.

63. Bhimasena pierced him with three and Partha again with seven arrows. Then Karna that mighty car-warrior pierced each of them with sixty shafts.

64. O king, then a terrible battle raged between Karna on one side and the many on the other; then, O sire, we beheld the wonderful prowess of the son of Suta.

65-66. Inasmuch as single-handed, he succeeded in checking the three mighty warriors in battle; then the mighty armed Phalguna struck Karna on the vital limbs with a group of hundred arrows. Thereupon, the puissant son of Suta, steeped all over his body with blood.

67. Pierced the heroic Phalguna in return with fifty arrows. Beholding that lightness of hands displayed by him, Arjuna did not brook him.

68. Then Pritha's son busting his bow open, pierced him on his chariot with nine arrows of depressed knots, with great speed.

69. Then with great lightness at a time when lightness was necessary, Dhananjaya in order to slay Karna, sped at him an arrows of the effulgence of the solar rays.

70. As that arrows was coursing with vehemence through the sky, Drona's son with a sharp crescent-shaped arrow cut it off; thus cut down it fell down, on the ground.

71. Then the highly puissant son of Suta taking up another bow, covered Pandu's son with thousands of arrows.

72. Then with his arrows, Pritha's son scattered the unrivaled shower of arrows that proceeded from Karna's bow, like the tempest scattering masses of clouds.

73. Then again Arjuna covered him with arrows, before the eyes of all warriors, displaying great lightness of hands.

74. Karna also that slayer of foes, desirous of counteracting the feats of his antagonist, covered Phalguna with thousands of arrows.

75. Roaring at each other like two bulls, those foremost of men, those two mighty car-warriors, covered the welkin with clouds of straight-going shafts.

76-77. Each made invisible by the other's arrowy downpour, they went on striking each other; they roared at each other and wounded each other with their sharp arrows respectively saying, I am Partha wait or I am Karna, wait, O Phalguna. Indeed those two heroes fought with each wonderfully, displaying great skill and agility.

78. The sight they then presented was such that all the other combatants became spectators of the battle. Then praised by the Siddhas and the Charanas and the Pannagas.

79. They fought on with each other desirous of slaying each other. Then Duryodhana addressing your warriors said

80. "Heedfully protect the son of Radha. Without slaying Arjuna in battle, he will not abstain. Even these words had Vrisha said to me.

81-82. In the meantime, O king, beholding the prowess of Karna, Arjuna of white horses, with four shafts shot from the bow-string drawn back to the ear, dispatched the four horses of Karna to the regions of Death. Then with a bhalla he felled Karna's charioteer from his niche in the car.

83. Then he covered Karna himself with a net-work of arrows, even before the very eyes of your son. Thus covered with arrows, the steedless and driverless Karna.

84-85. Confounded with arrowy showers was completely embraced. Beholding him made careless, Ashvatthaman, O monarch, caused him to ride on his own chariot and went on fighting with Arjuna. Then the king of the Madras pierced the son of Kunti with thirty arrows.

86. The son of Saradvata pierced Vasudeva with twenty arrows; he then struck Dhananjaya with twelve arrows.

87. The king of the Sindhus with four. Vrishasena with Karna, separately pierced O mighty monarch, Krishna and Pritha's son.

88. Dhananjaya, the son of Kunti then in return pierced Drona's son with sixty-four and the king of the Madras while hundred arrows.

89. He pierced the Sindhu ruler with Vallas and Vrishasena with three arrows and then piercing the son of Saradvata, Pritha's son uttered a loud war-cry.

90. Then your troops desirous of baffling the fulfillment of Savayasachin's vow, quickly fell upon him, all inflamed with rage.

91. Then striking terror into the hearts of the Dhritarastra's troops, Arjuna invoked into existence the Varuna weapon. Then Karna riding on his precious chariot, pouring showers of arrows, proceeded against the son of Pritha.

92. But, O Bharata, as that fierce stupefying and terrible battle progressed, the diadem-decked Arjuna reaching the Sindhu king did not loose his senses and sped his arrows continuously.

93. Desirous of getting back the kingdom and keeping in mind all the wrongs inflicted by the Kurus on them during twelve years past, the high-souled Savyasachin of immeasurable prowess, shrouded all the points of the compass with shafts shot from the Gandiva.

94. The welkin then seemed to be illumined by blazing meteors; countless crows began to shoot down on the bodies of the troops. Meanwhile the diadem-decked Arjuna

continued to slay the foe with his Gandiva of twany string like the wrathful Mahadeva slaying creatures with his Ajagara bow.

95. Then the highly-renowned Arjuna that subduer of hostile troops, scattering away the arrows of the son Drona by means of those shot from his own bow, slew many foremost warriors of the Kurus, mounted on their excellent steeds and elephants.

96. Then numerous monarchs taking up heavy maces and clubs of iron and swords and darts and many other kinds of strong weapons and assuming frightful appearance, advanced furiously upon Partha in that battle.

97. Arjuna bending his with the force of his arms, his terrible bow the Gandiva that resembled the bow of Indra and of which the twang was as loud as roar of clouds at the end of a Yuga, went on carnaging your soldiers and adding to the population of Death's domain.

98. Then that brave warrior caused those furious warriors with their cars and elephants and foot soldiers and bowmen supporting them, to be deprived of their arms and lives and thus considerable added to the population of Yama's kingdom.

## CHAPTER 146

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continuous

#### The slaughter of Jayadratha-vadha

##### Sanjaya said

1. Hearing the twang of Dhananyaja's bow, that resembled the loud call of Death or the sonorous rumble of the thunder.

2-3. Your troops, O monarch, agitated with fear and greatly confounded, became like the waters of the sea, with the fishes and Makaras within them, ruffled into huge waves and lashed to fury by the storm that blows at the end of a Yuga. Then the handsome son of Pritha, by name Dhananjaya began to career on the field of battle.

4-7. Displaying mighty weapons and simultaneously showing his presence in all the

different directions. O mighty monarch, indeed we could not then discern when the son of Pandu took out his arrows, placed them on the bowstring, drew the string back and let them off, so great was his lightness of hands. Thereafter the mighty-armed one, excited to the highest pitch of fury, invoked into existence the terrible Indra weapon and mighty monarch thereby inspired the Bharatas with terror. Hundreds and thousands of blazing arrows, of fiery heads and inspired with Mantras then began to start up into existence. Then with those shafts, shot from a string drawn back to the ear the resembling the rays of the sun or the flame of fire.

8. The sky became incapable of being looked at, as if covered with flashing meteors. Thereupon the darkness that the Kauravas had created with their arrows.

9. And that was incapable of being dispersed by other men even in their imagination. The son of Pandu, traversing the field and displaying his energy, dispelled by means of his arrows inspired by Mantras with the energy of celestial weapons.

10-11. Like the sun dispelling at day-break the darkness of night with his light-rays. The with those blazing arrowy rays of his, the puissant son of Pritha sucked the lives of your warriors, like the summer sun sucking with his scorching rays the waters of tanks and lakes. Then those arrows sped by him conversant in the use of celestial weapons.

12. Covered over the hostile troops, like the rays of the sun covering over the earth. Similarly other arrows of fierce energy shot by Arjuna.

13. Entered into the hearts of heroes, as if they were their intimate friends. Those of then ventured to encounter Arjuna.

14. Were destroyed like so many insects falling upon a blazing lamp flame. Thus crushing the lives and fame of his enemies.

15. Pritha's son careered on the field like Death incarnate. Heads decked with diadems,, huge arms adorned with Angadas.

16. And ears graced with pairs of ear-rings, of his enemies, Pritha's son cut-off with his shafts. The arms of elephant-riders, with Tomaras; those of horsemen, with Prasas;

17. Those of foot-soldiers with shields; those of car-warriors with bows; and those drivers, with whips and hooks, the son of Pandu then cut-off.

18. Dhananjaya then shone resplendent with his arrows of glittering tips that seemed to constitute his rays, like a blazing fire with incessant scintillations and raging flames.

19-21. The hostile kings then inspite of all their endeavours, could not even secure a sight of the handsome Dhananjaya, that foremost of all wielders of weapons, that hero equal to the king of the celestials, that best of men, seen at the same time in all directions on his chariot, shooting his terrible weapons, dancing in the terrace of his car and producing deafening sounds with his bow-string and palms and resembling the mid-day sun of burning rays in the heavens.

22. The diadem-decked Arjuna, armed with arrows of glittering tips shone resplendent like a mighty mass of cloud swelling with rain and bearing the rainbow on its bosom.

23. Then when that veritable flood of mighty weapons was created by Jishnu, many foremost warriors sank in that dreadful and uncrossable sea of weapons.

24. Strewn over with mangled faces and bodies and limbs, with lacerated arms, with arms deprived of palms and palms deprived of fingers.

25. With infuriate elephants having trunks and tusks severed and broken respectively, with horses deprived of riders and necks; with shattered chariots.

26. With bodies having entrails drawn out, legs cut-off and severed remaining still or moving unconsciously and with hundreds and thousands of corpses and car-casses.

27. The field where Partha fought was seen by us to resemble an area ravaged by Death and to enhance, O ruler of men, the fears of the cowards.

28. Or it then appeared like the sporting ground of Rudra where he slew creatures in days gone by. Portions of the field covered over with trunks of elephants, severed by Kshurapras, appeared as if covered by snakes.

29. Portions again strewn over with the heads of warriors graced with lotus like countenances, looked as if covered with garlands of flower. With beautiful head gears and crowns, with Keyuras, Angadas and Kundalas.

30. With armours decked with gold, with the caparisons and trappings of elephants and horses and with hundreds of diadems, strewn all over with these things.

31. The earth, highly beautified, appeared like a newly married bride. Having the marrow and fat (of slain creatures) for its mire, having blood for its current.

32. Full of limbs and bones and fathomless in death, having the hair of creatures for its moss and weeds and heads and arms for stones on its shore;

33. Decked with variegated standards and banners; having umbrellas and bows for its huge waves; stagnant with the huge carcasses of elephants.

34. Having innumerable cars for rafts to cross it; infested with the dead bodies of horses; rendered unfordable with car wheels, yokes, axels and Kuvaras;

35. Infested with snakes constituted by lances, darts, axes and arrows; having crows and Kankas for its sharks and jackals for its Makaras.

36. And vultures for its fierce aquatic animals; echoing with the yells of jackals; infested with dancing ghosts and Pisachas and Pretas, thousands in number.

37. Carrying away many, corpses of slain warriors, highly dreadful and fierce and awful and resembling the Vaitarani itself—

38. Such a river capable of striking terror into the hearts of the cowards, was then caused to flow on the field of battle. Then beholding the prowess of Arjuna, whose appearance then resembled that of the Destroyer.

39. A panic, such as had never occurred before, prevailed among the Kuru ranks. Thereupon the son of Pandu, receiving the weapons of heroes, with those of his own.

40. And achieving wonderful feats, proclaimed himself to be a warrior of terrible deeds. Then O king, Arjuna passed leaving all those foremost car-warriors of your army behind.

41. Then all the creatures were unable to look at Pandu's son, who then resembled the sun shining on the meridian.

42. Arrows shooting out of the Gandiva bow of that illustrious hero, were then seen by us to resemble rows of cranes ranging through the firmament.

43. Repulsing everywhere the weapons of heroes with those of his own and displaying his fierce feats, Arjuna then continued to achieve terrible deeds. Then impelled by the desire for killing Jayadratha, O king, Arjuna passed through the car-division, compounding your warriors with his Narachas.

44. Then the handsome Dhananjaya having Krishna for his charioteer, began quickly to career on the field, shooting his shafts in all directions.

45. Then hundreds and thousands of shafts shot by the heroic Arjuna of illustrious soul, appeared in the sky, flying in all directions and incessantly.

46. We then could not discern when that mighty bowmen, that son of Pandu begotten upon Kunti, took out his shafts, placed them on the bow-string and let them off.

47. Thereafter, O king, covering all the points of the compass with his arrows and afflicting all the car-warriors in battle, the son of Kunti dashed towards Jayadratha.

48. And pierced him with four and sixty straight-going shafts. The Kuru warriors then seeing Pandu's son rush upon Jayadratha.

49. Gave up fighting, becoming hopeless of Jayadratha's life. Whoever amongst your troops then rushed to encounter the son of Pandu in that battle.

50-52. Had his body pierced deep with the latter's arrows. Then the mighty car-warriors Arjuna, that foremost of victorious heroes made your ranks headless by means of his arrows resembling the flames of fire. Thus then, O foremost of kings, sorely afflicting your troops consisting of four kinds of forces, the son of Kunti rushed upon Jayadratha. He then pierced Drona's son with five hundred and Vrishasena with three arrows.

53. Compassionate as the son of Kunti was, he pierced Kripa with nine arrows. He pierced Slay with sixteen and Karna with thirty two arrows.

54. Then piercing the ruler of the Sindhus with sixty-four arrows, he uttered a roar like that of the lion. Then the ruler of the Sindhus, being pierced with the arrows shot from the bow of the wielder of the Gandiva.

55-56. And excited to the highest pitch of fury, did not to brook it, even like an elephant struck with the good. Then that one bearing the boar as a device on his standard quickly shot at the car of Phalguna straight-flying arrows furnished with vulturine feathers, rubbed by the smith and looking like so many enraged snakes and hurled from a string down back to the very ears.

58-60. Thereupon Arjuna, repulsing the sharp shafts shot by the ruler of the Sindhus; cut-off at the same time, with a couple of arrows, the head of Jayadratha's driver and his well-decked standard. Its stay cut-off and itself shattered and struck with arrows, that boars bearing standard of the Sindhu king fell down like a flash of fire. Meanwhile the sun was rapidly going towards the western hills.

61. Janardana quickly addressing Pandu's son said - "O son of Pritha, this Jayadratha has been placed in their midst by these heroic and mighty car-warriors.

62. O mighty-armed one, Jayadratha desirous of saving his life, is standing in the rear in their midst. O foremost of men, without vanquishing in battle these six mighty car-warriors.

63. You shall not be able to slay the ruler of the Sindhus, even if you exert yourself to the best of your powers, O Arjuna. Now I shall put forth my Yoga prowess for covering over the Sun.

64. In consequence of which the ruler of the Sindhus only shall behold the sun as already set. Filled with delight and sanguine of his life and desirous of seeing your destruction.

65. That wicked creature will no longer conceal himself. Taking advantage of that opportunity you should, O foremost of the Kurus, strike him.

66. You should not then give up the enterprise thinking the sun to have already set. "Then Vibhatsu replied to Keshava saying "let it be so."

67. Thereafter that lord of the kings viz., Krishna created a veil of darkness for covering the sun, by means of his Yoga prowess.

68. When Krishna had created that veil of darkness, thinking the sun to have set, your troops became delighted, O king, in view of the destruction of Pritha's son Arjuna.

69. Highly delighted, O King, your troops and king Jayadratha could not see the sun though they all stood with their heads thrown back.

70. When the ruler of the Sindhus was beholding the setting sun, once more did Krishna spoke these words to Arjuna.

71. Beholding, O foremost of the Bharatas, the heroic ruler of the Sindhus looked at the sun, freed from the fear he entertained to you.

72. O mighty-armed one this is the opportune moment to slay the wicked-souled weight. Now quickly lop off the head of this fellow and fulfill your vows.

73. Thus spoken to by Keshava the puissant son of Pandu, began to carnage your troops with arrows resembling the rays of the sun or the flame of fire.

74. He pierced Kripa with twenty and Karna with fifty shafts; he then wounded Shalya and Duryodhana each with six shafts.

75. He pierced Vrishasena with eight and the ruler of the Sindhus with sixty shafts. The mighty-armed son of Pandu.

76. Piercing your troops with his arrows, O king, assailed Jayadratha. Then beholding him within measurable distance like a swelling tongue of fire.

77. The protectors of Jayadratha became highly anxious (about his life). Then O mighty monarch, all your warriors desirous of victory.

78-80. Began to pour their arrowy showers of Pakasasani in that battle. Then that delight of the Kurus (Arjuna) was covered over. Thereafter, that foremost of men, Pakasasani began to shoot terrible net-works of arrows with a view to slaughter your troops. Then those warriors of yours mangled by that hero in battle.

81. Where greatly frightened and they abandoned the ruler of the Sindhus. They were so much confused that no two persons were seen to fly together. Then we beheld the wonderful prowess of Kunti's son.

82. Inasmuch as that high-souled warrior then achieved feats whose equals had never before been achieved or will be achieved in future. Elephants and elephant-riders and horses and horsemen.

83. And car-drivers, these then Arjuna began to slaughter like Rudra slaying the creatures. I could not find in that battle. O king.

84. A single elephant or horses of men that was not struck with the arrows of Partha. The vision of warriors were blinded with dust and darkness.

85. They were dreadfully confused and could not recognise one another. Your troops urged on by fate, having their vitals torn open by arrows.

86. Began to wander or lamp of fall down. Some became paralysed and some became pale. During that terrible carnage of creatures.

87-88. In that awful and fierce battle from which few escaped alive, the earth became deluged with blood and the dust that had then arisen disappeared in consequence of the showers of blood and the gale that blew over

the field of battle; so great was the shower of blood that car wheel sank in the mire caused thereby up to their naves.

89. Thousands of mad elephants possessed of great energy, O king, of your army, their riders slain the limbs mangled.

90. Began to fly away uttering shrieks of pain and crushing their own ranks under heath their feat. Riderless steeds and foot soldiers also, O monarch.

91-92. Fled away in fright, struck with the arrows of Dhananjaya. Indeed your troop with dishevelled hairs and shattered armours, with blood streaming out of their wounds, fled away from the field of battle, forsaking it out of fear. Some again deprived of the power of moving, remained there as if their lower limbs had been seized by alligators.

93. Some hid themselves behind and under the carcasses of slain elephants. Thus causing your troop to fly, O monarch, Dhananjaya.

94-97. Began to wound with dreadful shafts the protectors of the Sindhu ruler. The son of Pandu then covered with his arrowy showers Karna, Drona's son, Kripa, Shalya, Vrishasena and Duryodhana. Arjuna was quick in the use of weapons that none was able to notice when he took out his arrows, fixed them on the bowstring and stretched the bow and discharged them. Thus when he was engaged in wounding the foe, his bow was seen incessantly drawn to a circle. Thousands of shafts were seen to issue out from his bow and to scatter in all directions. Then severing off Karna's and Vrishasena's bow.

98-99. Arjuna with a broad-headed arrow felled Shalya's charioteer from his niche on the car. Then that foremost of victorious heroes viz. Dhananjaya, pierced with many arrows in that battle Kripa and Ashvathaman, related to each other as uncle and nephew. Thus sorely afflicting the mighty car-warriors of your army.

100. Pandu's son took up a terrible shaft of the splendour of fire. Appearing like the thunderbolt of Indra and inspired with sacred Mantras.

101. That dreadful arrow became capable of bearing any strain. It used always to be worshipped with perfumes and garlands of flowers. Duly charging it was the impetuosity of the thunder-bolt, that descendant of Kuru.

102. Namely the mighty-armed Arjuna, placed it on the Gandiva's string. When that shaft of fiery effulgence was fixed on the bow string.

103. Loud shouts were heard, O king, in the welkin. Then Janardana once more quickly addressing Arjuna said

104. O Dhananjaya quickly cut-off the head of the wicked-souled ruler of the Sindhus. The sun is on the point of going to the Western hills.

105. Listen however to the words that I am going to speak about the slaughter of Jayadratha. The father of Jayadratha is Vridhakshatra known all over the world.

106-108. It was after a long time that he got Jayadratha that slayer of enemies, for his son; on the occasion of his son's birth, a disembodied and unseen voice, deep as the rumble of clouds or the beat of the drums, said unto king Vridhakshatra— 'This your son, O master among men, in this world, will become worthy of the two races (the solar and the lunar) in respect of lineage, conduct, self-possession and such other attributes. He will become one of the foremost of Kshatriyas and will always obtain adoration from the heroes.'

109. But while struggling in battle; some one foremost among the Kshatriyas, some well-known person in the world, worked up with anger, will cut-off his head.'

110. That subduer of foes, viz., the old ruler of the Sindhus having heard these words became thoughtful for a while; filled with affection for his son, he summoned all his kinsmen and told them so.

111-112. That man who will caused the head of my sons to fall on the earth, struggling in battle, will be bearing a great burden. I say that the head of that man will crack into a hundred pieces.' Having spoken these words and having installed Jayadratha on the throne.



113. Vridhakshatra, retired into the woods and devoted himself to ascetic austerities. Possessed of great energy, he is still engaged in the observance of the austere of penances.

114. Outside the precincts of the Samantapanchaka, O ape-bonored one. Therefore, severing Jayadratha's head in this terrible fight, you.

115-116. O slayer of foes, should, O Bharata, by your fierce heaven-made weapons capable of achieving great feats, quickly throw that head adorned with ear-ring upon the lap of Vridhakshatra himself, O younger brother of the son of the wind-god. If you cause Jayadratha's head to fall on the earth.

117-119. Then your own head will certainly crack into hundred pieces. By me and of your weapons of celestial make do you accomplish your vow in such a way, that may not know that it is done. O Arjuna, indeed there is nothing which you cannot achieve or perform, O son of Vasava.

120-122. Having heard these words of Krishna, Dhananjaya licking the corners of his mouth. Shot the shaft he had taken up for slaughtering Jayadratha, shaft whose touch resembled that of Indra's thunder which was inspired with mantras, which was of celestial make, which was capable of bearing any strain and which had ever been worshipped with perfumes and garlands. That swift-coursing arrows shot from the Gandiva bow, snatched away the head of the ruler of the Sindhus like a hawk snatching away a little bird from the top of a tree. Dhananjaya then discharging other arrows carried that head along in the heavens.

123-125. Then that son of Pandu imparting delight to his friends and grief to his foes, made his head like a Kadamba flower. He fought with those six great car-warriors. O Bharata! There was wonder, he carried that head beyond the precincts of the Samantapanchaka by means of his continuous groups of arrows. Meanwhile king Vridhakshatra.

126-129. The father of your son-in-law, possessed of great energy, was engaged in perfuming his evening Sandhya. Adorned with

sable locks and graced with ear-rings, that head of Jayadratha was thrown upon his lap as he was uttering his prayers in a sitting posture. O subduer of foes, thus thrown in his lap, that head graced with beautiful ear-rings was not perceived by king Vridhakshatra, so when the intelligent Vridhakshatra, having finished his evening prayers, was rising up, the head fell down on the earth.

130. And as the head of that king's son fell down on earth. The head of that king also was cracked into thousand pieces, O subduer of foes. Then all creatures were greatly filled with wonder.

131-132. They then highly applauded Vasudeva and the mighty son of Pritha. Thus O king, when the king of the Sindhus was slain by the diadem-decked Arjuna. The darkness that Vasudeva's son had caused was withdrawn, O foremost of the Bharatas. O ruler of earth, thus your sons and their followers, afterwards came to know that.

133-134. That veil of darkness was only an illusion caused by Vasudeva's son, O foremost of men. Thus, O king, was your son-in-law, the ruler of the Sindhus slain by Arjuna of infinite energy, having caused the slaughter of eight Akshauhini of troops.

135. Then beholding Jayadratha the ruler of the Sindhus's slain, tearing of sorrow gushed out from the eyes of your sons. Thereafter, O king, when Jayadratha had been slain by Pritha's son, Keshava.

136. Blew his conch, as also the mighty Arjuna that afflicter of his foes. Bhimasena also, as if for informing Yudhishtira of that joyful news.

137. Filled the welkin with a mighty war-cry. Hearing that formidable war-cry, the very virtuous king Yudhishtira.

138. Considered the ruler of the Sindhus to be slain by the high-souled Phalguna. Then he imparted delight to his own warriors by means of the sound of his musical instruments.

139. He then rushed furiously against the son of Bharadvaja for slaying him. Then, O king, as the sun was hanging down the horizon.

140. A fierce battle between Drona and the Somakas commenced, capable making the hair to stand erect. Then putting forth all their energies for slaughtering the son of Bharadvaja.

141-143. The mighty car-warriors of the Pandavas fought on, O king, delighted at the slaughter of the Sindhu king. The Pandavas then obtaining victory and having slain the ruler of the Sindhus, fought on with Drona literally intoxicated with their good luck. O king, having slain the ruler of the Sindhus, long armed Arjuna also fought with those car-warriors.

144. Then the heroic Arjuna decked with a diadem and garlands, having fulfilled his principal; vow, began to slaughter your troops, even like the king of the celestials destroying the darkness of night.

## CHAPTER 147

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The battle between Karna and Satyaki

##### Dhritarashtra said

1. The heroic king of Sindhu being killed by that one who could draw the bow with his left hand (i.e., Arjuna), relate to me O Sanjaya, what the warriors on my side did–

##### Sanjaya said

2. O king, seeing the king Sindhu slain in battle by Partha, Kripa, the son of Saradvat, waxing wrath.

3. Surrounded the son of Pandu by a mighty discharge of arrows. The son of Drona too, seated on his car, rushed against Phalguna, the son of Pritha.

4. Those two best and most excellent of car-warriors from two sides, began to shower keen darts, from their cars (upon Arjuna).

5. That mighty-armed one, the best of car-warriors, sore oppressed by those mighty showers of arrows, experienced a great pain.

6. Dhananjaya, the son of Kunti, not liking to slay his preceptor (i.e. Kripa) and his (other) preceptor's son (i.e. Ashvatthama) in battle began to act like a preceptor (teaching the science of arms of his pupil).

7. And unwillingly warded off the weapons of the sons of Drona and Saradvat, by means of his own weapons and discharged at them arrows of milder speed.

8. Overcome by the numbers of arrows though discharged mildly by Arjuna, those two (warriors) were greatly afflicted.

9. Then, O monarch, the son of Saradvat, painted by the darts of the son of Kunti, lost all strength and fainted away on the terrace of his car.

10. Seeing his master afflicted with darts and devoid of senses and taking him for dead his charioteer carried him off (from the field of battle).

11. Then, O great king, Kripa being thus borne away from (the field of battle), Ashvatthaman too fled away in terror from the son of Pandu.

12. (Then), seeing the son of Saradvat faint away and afflicted with arrows, the mighty bowman Partha, (seated) on his car, gave way to doleful cries.

13. And with his face full of tears and in dejected spirit he said these words– "Anticipating all this, the greatly wise Kshatta (Vidura) said to the king (Dhritarashtra).

14. As soon as the destroyer of his race, the vile Suyodhana was born, 'Make away this destroyer of your race.

15. (Or), through him a great disaster will befall the best of the Kuru race. Now the words of that truthful one have proved true.

16. It is on his account, that I behold today my preceptor lying on an arrowy bed. Curse on the practices of the Kshatriyas and on my strength and manliness!

17. (For) is there any body, who is, like me, hostile to a Brahmana who is his preceptor as well? He is (moreover) the son of a sage, my preceptor and the dear friend of Drona.

18. Such a one lies (insensible) on the terrace of his car smitten with my darts. Although I did not wish it, (still), through me he has been crushed with the arrows.

19. (The sight of his) lying insensible on the terrace of his car greatly afflicts my heart.

Though sorely afflicted with his arrows, I should have looked at that one of great splendour (without striking him).

20. Afflicted with various darts he has gone to the way of all creatures. I grieve more over his than on the slaughter of my son.

21. O Krishna, beholding what a sad plight he is in, lying senseless of his car! Those most excellent of men, who after acquiring knowledge from their preceptors.

22. Bestow on them what they desire, attain to Godhead. (But) those basest of men who after acquiring knowledge from their preceptors.

23. Destroy them, are doomed to hell. Surely, what I have done today will lead me to hell.

24. In as much as I have overpowered my preceptor with showers of arrows. Formerly when teaching me the science of weapons, Kripa said to me.

25. "O scion of Kuru's race, on no account strike thy preceptor." (But, those words of my virtuous and high-souled preceptor).

26. I have disregarded and have struck him with showers of arrows. I bow down to that worshipful son of Goutama, who never flies away (from the field of battle).

27. O scion of Vrishni's race, fie on me who have struck him. While that one who could draw his bow as well with the left hand (i.e. Arjuna) was thus grieving for him.

28. The son of Radha beholding the king of Sindhu dead rushed against him. (Seeing?) the son of Radha make for the car of Arjuna.

29. The two Panchala princes and Satyaki came up to him. Seeing the son of Radha rush (against him), the mighty car-warrior Partha.

30. Said these words to the son of Devaki with a smile— "(Behold!) the son of Adhiratha is making for the car of Satyaki.

31. Surely, he cannot endure the destruction of Bhurisrava in battle. O Janaradana, drive the horses towards the place whither he goes.

32. Have a care that Vrisha cannot send the Satvata hero to the path of Somadatta." Thus addressed by that one who could draw his bow

as well with the left hand, Keshava, possessed of mighty arms.

33. And great energy, replied (to him) in words suited to the occasion "O Pandava, this mighty armed one (Satyaki) is alone capable of fighting with Karna.

34. (And), much more son, since this most exalted of the Satvatas is joined by the two sons of Drupada. O Partha, you need (therefore, not fight with Karna at present.

35. He has with him the blazing dart, like a terrible meteor, granted to him by Vasava. O destroyer of hostile warriors, he has preserved it (carefully) for (slaying) you and worships it.

36. Let, therefore, Karna march against the scion of Satvata's race as he wills. I am, O son of Kunti, conscious of the hour when this wicked-souled one will be struck down on the ground from his car (pierced) by keen darts.

**Dhritarashtra said**

37. How, after Bhurisrava and the king of Sindhu being slain, the heroic Karna and the scion of Vrishni's race, came incontact with each other.

38. And on what cars the carless Satyaki and the two Panchala princes, the protectors of (Arjuna's) car-wheels (respectively) mounted, relate to me, O Sanjaya.

**Sanjaya said**

39. I will relate to you faithfully all that took place in that terrible encounter. Listen calmly to (the consequences of) your own culpable conduct.

40. My Lord, Krishna knew it before hand, in his mind that the heroic Satyaki would be defeated by Yupaketu (i.e., Bhurisrava).

41-42. O king, Janaradana is conversant with the past and the future alike. Therefore, O king, that highly-powerful one summoned Daruka and ordered him thus—"Get my car ready tomorrow." Neither the Gods nor the Gandharvas nor the Yakshas, nor the Uragas, nor the Rakshas.

43-44. Nor men can conquer Krishna and Arjuna. Even the celestials with the (original)

Grandsire (Brahma) at their head and the Siddhas are aware of the matchless strength of those two. Now hear about the battle as it took place. Seeing Satyaki without a car and Karna prepared for the encounter.

45. Madhava loudly blew his conch in the Rishava note. Hearing the loud sound of the conch, Daruka understood the hint.

46-48. And brought to him the car adorned with a lofty golden flag with Keshava's permission. The grandson of Sini ascended that car guided by Daruka and resembling in splendour the son or the fire. (And) mounting on that car, resembling a celestial chariot yoked unto which were the foremost of horses, viz., Savya, Sugriva, Meghapuspa and Balahaka endued with great fleetness and adorned with golden trappings.

49. (Satyaki) discharging numerous arrows, rushed upon the son of Radha. Then Yudhamanyu and Uttamouja, the protectors of Arjuna's car-wheels.

50. Leaving the car of Dhananjaya, advanced against the son of Radha. (There upon) O monarch, the son of Radha too, began to discharge showers of arrows.

51. And wrathfully rushed against the undeteriorating grandson of Sini in that encounter. Neither among the celestials, the Gandharvas, the Asuras, the Uragas, nor among the Rakshas.

52. Was such a battle seen or heard in heaven or on earth as took place (between Karna and Satyaki.) The entire army consisting of cars, horses, men and elephants.

53. Beholding their exploits, O monarch lay (as if) entranced. All of them witnessed that superhuman battle.

54. Between those two best of men and the dexterity of Daruka as a charioteer. And the forward, backward, side long and circular movements (of the car).

55. Caused by the charioteer Daruka the Kasyapa's race, stationed on the car, struck (everybody) with wonder. The celestials, the Gandharvas and the Danavas stationed in the firmament.

56. Witnessed with rapt attention that encounter between Karna and the grandson of Sini. and for the sake of their friends those two powerful and highly-energetic ones challenged each other in that battle.

57. O mighty monarch, Karna who resembled a god and Yuyudhana Satyaki showered upon each other volleys of arrows.

58. First Karna, unable to endure the destruction of Jalasandha of the Kuru party, overpowered the grandson of Sini with downpours of shafts.

59. And heaving sighs like a mighty serpent smitten with grief and darting wrathful glance upon the grandson of Sini as if to consume him (therewith) in that encounter, Karna.

60. Rushed furiously again and again (towards him.) O chastiser of foes, seeing him greatly enraged, Satyaki smote him.

61-63. With mighty discharges of arrows as an elephant smites (with his tusks) his rival elephant. Those two most valiant of mortals, as agile as tigers and endued with matchless strength wounded each other in that battle. Then the grandson of Sini by means of shafts made entirely of iron, pierced Karna, the chastiser of his foes, all through his body over and over again and with a broad headed arrows smote his (Karna's) charioteer from his niche in the car.

64. (And he) killed the white steeds with sharpened darts. (Then) that most exalted of the Bharatas, cutting the standard (of Karna) into a hundred pieces.

65. Made him careless in the very presence of your son. Thereupon, O king, O most exalted of the Bharatas, the warriors on your side got dispirited.

66. (Then) Vrisasena, the son of Karna and Shalya, the king of Madra and the son of Drona surrounded the grandson of Sini on all sides.

67. Then such a confusion followed (on the battlefield) that nothing could be seen. The heroic son of charioteer being thus made careless by Satyaki.

68. The whose army set up a wail, O king. And Karna too, O monarch, greatly weakened by Satvatta's darts.

69. Got to the car of Duryodhana, heaving deep sighs, remembering his friendship, O king, with your son from his very childhood.

70-71. And striving to fulfill the promise that he had made on the occasion of the bestowal of the kingdom (of Anga) on him (by Duryodhana). But O lord of the earth, the self-restrained Satyaki did not slay Karna thus made carless (by him) and your valiant son with Dushasana at their head. Desirous of not falsifying the vow made by Bhima and Partha formerly.

72. He (simply) made them carless and destitute of energy, but did not deprive them of their lives. Bhimasena vowed to slay your sons.

73. And at the second game of dice Partha swore to do away with Karna. Though the car-warriors with Karna at their head tried (their utmost) to slay.

74. Satyaki, yet those foremost of car-warriors were unable to kill him. The son of Drona, Kritavarman and other great car-warriors.

75. And hundreds of the foremost of the Kshatriyas were defeated with only one bow by Satyaki, who was desirous of doing good to Dharmaraja and of attaining heaven.

76. Satyaki, the grinder of his foes, equal in prowess to either Krishna or Arjuna, defeated all your troops with a smile (i.e., very easily).

77. (To achieve such feats) there is no fourth to be seen, besides Krishna, the bowman Partha and that most exalted of men, the grandson of Sini.

#### **Dhritarashtra said**

78-79. Mounting on the invincible car of Vasudeva, guided by Daruka, Satyaki, proud of the prowess of his arms and equal to Vasudeva in battle, made Karna carless. Did Satyaki ascend any other car (after the defeat of Karna)?

80. I am desirous of listening to all this. You are a skillful narrator. I regard him invincible. O Sanjaya, relate to me this.

#### **Sanjaya said**

81-83. O king, listen to all this. The high-minded younger brother of Daruka soon brought (for Satyaki) another car duly furnished

with all necessities, having shafts attached to it by golden and iron chains and bands of silk, studded with a thousand stars, graced with a standard having the figure of a lion (painted on it) and to which were yoked horses fleet as the wind adorned with golden trappings and the rattling of which resembled the roar of the clouds.

84. The grandson of Sini, having mounted on it, advanced against your forces. And Daruka also, of his own will, went over to Keshava.

85-87. Then, O great monarch, a goodly car was also brought for Karna, drawn by fleet horses of the best breed, having the colour of the milk of the cow or conch and adorned with golden trappings. (The car was also) furnished with golden maces and standards, machines and flags. It had also an expert driver and was furnished with many weapons and accouterments. Having, O great king, mounted on this car, Karna too rushed upon his enemies. Now I have related to you all that you asked me.

88. Listen again to the (great) destruction (of creatures) brought about by your vile policy. Thirty-one of your sons have been destroyed by Bhimasena.

89-90. They had Durmukha at their head they were good warriors. Satvatta and Arjuna also destroyed hundreds of warriors,

91-92. With Bhima at their head and Bhagadatta too (has been slain). This great destruction of creatures O king, has been brought about by your evil counsels.

## **CHAPTER 148**

### **(JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continued**

#### **The showing of the field of battle**

#### **Dhritarashtra said**

1. When the warriors on their side and mine remained thus on the field of battle, what did Bhima do? Tell me, this O Sanjaya.

#### **Sanjaya said**

2. When Bhimasena was made carless by Karna, he was tormented with the words

poignant as a dart, of the latter. Now under the influence of passion he said these words of Phalgunā.

3-4. "O Dhananjaya, in your very presence, Karna has repeatedly said to me—(you are) a eunuch, fool, child, glutton, (you are) unable to endure (the fury of) battle. He, that would tell me so, would be my victim. O Bharata, he (Karna) has said to me these words (and therefore, he must be slain by me).

5. I have made this vow jointly with you, O mighty armed one. O son of Kunti undoubtedly, as they (these vows) are to you so they are to me.

6. Remember, O best of men, my words and fulfill them (i.e., the vows). O Dhananjaya, act in such a way that they may prove true."

7. Thus addressed by Bhima, Arjuna of matchless prowess, coming up to Karna in that battle, said to him (thus):

8. "O Karna, O son of a charioteer, you are of false sight, you praise your ownself, you are of wicked intelligence. Hear what I tell you now.

9. Warriors either meet with victory or defeat in battle. O son of Radha, even these two are uncertain. Even when Vasava himself fights, the case is not otherwise.

10. You where (ere long) made carless and deprived of energy by Yujudhana and were nearly dead. Knowing, however, that I have sworn to slay you he only defeated but spared your life.

11. By freak of fate, you succeeded in making Bhimasena carless. (And) you have committed a sin by abusing Bhima, O son of Radha.

12. Men, that are heroic, virtuous and most exalted, having defeated an enemy, neither boast of themselves with harsh words, nor indulge in abusive language.

13-15. O son of a charioteer, weak in intellect as you are, you have made use of these words. Again, the (abusive) epithets that you have hurled against the fighting Bhimasena, endued with prowess, heroic and ever devoted

to righteousness, are not true. In the very sight of the whole army of Keshava and myself.

16. You were several times, in battle, deprived of your car by Bhimasena. But the son of Pandu did never utter any harsh words to you.

17. As you have indulged in many harsh words against Vrikodara and as you have jointly with others, killed the son of Subhadra, when I was not present.

18. You will, therefore, very soon feel the consequences of your offense. O wicked minded one, it was for your own destruction that you cut-off his bow.

19. It is for this reason, O fool, that I will slay you together with your attendants, forces and beast of burden. Now (while yet there is time) perform what you ought to do, because a great calamity is hanging over you.

20-22. I swear truly by my bow that I will slay, in your very sight, Vrishasena and will destroy all those other kings, who through cloudiness of intellect will oppose me in battle. Fool, unwise and self-conceited that you are, the wicked Duryodhana will give way to lamentations seeing you slain on the field of battle. Arjuna having promised to kill the son of Karna.

23. There arose a great and tumultuous uproar among the car-warriors. And at the time of that dreadful battle.

24. The thousand-rayed (deity) with his rays dimmed entered into the setting hill. Then stationed at the head of the battle, O king, Hrishikesa.

25. Embraced Vibhatsu, who had fulfilled his promise and addressed him thus—"O Jishnu, it is by good fortune that you have been able to accomplish your great vow.

26. It is by good luck, again that you have slain the wretch Vridhakshatra together with his son. O Bharata, even the general of the celestials, if engaged with the force of Dhritarashtra.

27. In battle, would be quite stupefied. O Jishnu, there is no doubt of this. Even on

reflection, I do not find any individual in the (three) words.

28-29. Capable of encountering these forces, besides you, O most valiant of men. Numerous lords of the earth, endowed with great prowess and either equal or superior to you, have, at the command of Dhritarashtra assembled together. (But) those (warriors). clad in armour, could not withstand your wrathful self in battle.

30. Your strength and prowess, (therefore), resemble those of Rudra or Shakra. No one is capable of displaying so much prowess in battle.

31. As you have singly shown this day. O tormentor of foes, when the wicked-souled Karna together with his followers shall be vanquished (by you) I will thus.

32-35. O destroyer of Madhu, you are (ever) concerned in our welfare and we are (always) at your enemy." Arjuna then replied to him (thus) - "O Madhava, through your favour, I have fulfilled the vow, which even by the celestials can with difficulty be performed. O Keshava, it is no wonder that they, who have you for their lord, will win the victory. Through your favour Yudhishtira will recover the entire earth. O descendant of Vrishnis, (as) all this is due to your power, (so) O lord, this victory is yours. O destroyer of Madhu, you are (ever) concerned in our welfare and we are (always) at your service." Thus spoken to Krishna with a smile, slowly guided the steeds and showed to Partha the greatly cruel field of battle.

#### Krishna said

36. Longing for either victory or great renown, (many) heroic kings, struck dead by your shafts, are lying on earth.

37. Their weapons and ornaments lie scattered (all over the battle-field); their horses, elephants and cars are killed and shattered; and with their armour perforated and cut-off they are reduced to a woeful plight.

38. Some (of them) are already dead and some are still alive; and those lords of men whose life is extinct look live on account of their great splendour.

39. Look! the earth is entirely filled with their gold-winged shafts, their weapons of various kinds, their beasts of burden and with their arms.

40-41. (Behold) O Bharata, the earth became with armours, necklaces of gold, heads decked with ear-rings, head-gears and diadems, floral wreaths, gems worn on the crown, Kanthasutras, Angadas, lustrous collars of gold and with various other variegated ornaments;

42. (And with) Anukarshas and quivers, standards and flags and Upaskaras and Adhistanas, shafts and crests of cars.

43. With broken wheels and many variegated cars, yokes and trappings of horses, bow and arrows.

44. With elephants' trappings, Kudhas, Parighas and Ankushas, maces and Brindipalas, arrow-cases, spiked maces and Parasvadhass.

45. With Pashas and Tomaras, Kuntas and clubs, Sataghness and Bhusandeess, swords and battle-axes.

46. With Musalas and clubs, maces and Kunapas, whips decked with gold, O the most exalted of the Bharatas.

47. With the bells and many other ornaments of the best of elephants, garlands, various ornaments and costly dresses.

48. (With all these lying scattered all over the field of battle), the earth looks resplendent like the autumnal sky studded with planets and stars. Those lords of Earth who have sacrificed their live for his sake.

49. Lie slumbering on the earth and embracing her like a beloved wife. These elephants resembling mountain-peaks and huge as Airavat.

50. Are shedding a profusion of blood through the openings caused by weapons, as mountains discharge through the caves streams of liquid chalk.

51. Behold! struck down on the earth by your arrows, these (elephants) are writhing in agonies. Behold! the steeds also, adorned with golden trappings, are lying on the ground.

52-53. Behold, O Partha, O lord, these cars resembling the city of the Gandharvas, with their lords slain and their standards, banners and Akshas cut to pieces, deprived of their wheels and charioteers, with their yokes cut to pieces, with broken shafts and crests and looking (splendid) like the celestial vehicles.

54. Hundreds and thousands of foot-soldiers, O hero, are lying slain (on the ground) in a pool of blood wielding their bows and shields.

55. Clasp the earth with all their limbs and with their hair smeared with dust. Behold, O mighty-armed one, these warriors with their bodies mangled by your arrows.

56. O best of men, behold also the surface of the earth with dead elephants and horses and (broken) cars, muddy with a profusion of blood, fat and rotten flesh, affording delight to night of blood, fat the rotten flesh, affording delight to night-wanderers, dogs, wolves and Pisachas and dreadful to look at.

57. O lord, that foremost of the celestials, the performer of a hundred sacrifices who slay in great battle the Daytas and the Danavas and yourself only are capable of achieving such a fame-enhancing and glorious feat.

**Sanjaya said**

58. Krishna, thus showing the field of battle to Kiriti (i.e., Arjuna who wore a coronet) blew his conch Panchajanya before the gladdened army (of the Pandavas).

59. Janardana, the destroyer of foes, having (thus) shown to Kiriti the field of battle, speedily came over to the Pandavas Ajatastru (i.e., Yudhishtira who had no enemy) and informed him of destruction of Jayadratha.

## CHAPTER 149

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)– Informed of destruction of Jayadratha

**Sanjaya said**

1. The king of Sindhu being slain by Partha, (Krishna) then approached king Yudhishtira, the son of Dharma and worshipped him with a merry heart.

2. O king of kings, O best of men, by good luck your prosperity increases and your enemy has been slain. It is by good fortune too that your younger brother has fulfilled his promise.

3. Thus addressed by Krishna, king Yudhishtira, the conqueror of enemies cities, got down from his car with delight, O Bharata.

4. And with his eyes full of tears of joy he embraced Krishna and Arjuna; and wiping his white face of lotus-like lustre.

5. Said to Vasudeva and the Pandava Dhananjaya (thus)–"O mighty car-warriors, it is by good fortune that I behold you both after you have performed your heavy task in battle.

6. As good luck would have it, that vilest wretch among men, the king of Sindhus, has been slain. O Krishna and Arjuna, by good luck you have filled me with supreme bliss.

7. (And) it is by good fortune that our enemies are downed in a sea of grief. In the three worlds there is nothing which they cannot perform.

8. Who have you, that are the lord of all the words, for their protector, O slayer of Madhu. Govinda, through your favour we will conquer our enemies.

9. As in days of yore, through you grace the chastiser of the Asura) Paka (i.e., Indra) did (conquer) the Danavas. Whether it be the supremacy over the three worlds.

10. Everything is certain in the case of those who are in your good grace, O bestower of honours. Neither do they incur sin nor meet with reverses.

11-12. With whom, you that are the lord of the celestials, are pleased, O bestower of honours. O Hrishikesha, it is through your favour that Shakra, the lord of all the celestials.

13-14. Endowed with prosperity, obtained sovereignty over the three world in battle. And O lord of the celestials, it is also through favour that the celestials.

15. Have, O Krishna, obtained immortality and are in enjoyment of eternal regions. O destroyer of foes, it is by means of the prowess obtained through your favour.



16. That Shakra having destroyed thousands of Daityas acquired the kingship of the celestials. O Hrishiksha, it is by reason of your grace, the universe, with its mobile and immobile creatures.

17. Remaining in its own course is engaged in (religious) meditation and sacrifices, Originally, buried in darkness and one vast sheet of water.

18-19. As the universe was, it has become manifest through your grace, O mighty-armed one, O best of men. Those who look upon Hrishiksha as the creator of all the worlds, the Supreme Soul and as immutable are never subject to illusion. You are the Original Being, you are the Supreme God, you are the God of the gods and you are eternal.

20. Those that take refuge with you who are the lord of the celestials, are never subject to illusion; without beginning or end, divine, the lord of creation and immutable (as you are).

21. They that are your worshippers, O Hrishiksha (always) get rid of difficulties. Supreme and Ancient male being and the most exalted of the exalted as you are.

22. He that attains to your Supreme self enjoys the highest prosperity. The four Vedas sing of you and you are sung in the four Vedas.

23. By taking refuge with you, O high-souled one, I shall enjoy the most excellent prosperity. O Supreme God, O god of the highest gods, O lord of the creation, O lord of men.

24. O most supreme god of all gods, I bow down to you, that are the best of all male beings. You are the Supreme Being, you are the Lord of Lords, O Lord, O Madhava, may you prosper.

25. O Universal Soul, O large-eyed one, you are the origin of all. He that has Dhananjaya for his friend or he who is devoted to the welfare of Dhananjaya. Having attained to the protector of Dhananjaya, enjoys happiness."

26. O innocent Sri Krishna! An ancient sage Markandeya knows yours character and that brilliant sage had explained me your impression and magnificence to me at the time of exile.

27. You are explained as the best creator (Vidhi) by the sages like Asita, Devala, the great austerious Narada and my grand-father Vyasa.

28-29. You are splendour yourself, you are supreme Brahma, great penance truth, welfare, the best fame and sole cause for universe. You have created this entire movable and immovable world and this world merges again with you at the time of great devastation (Pralaya).

30. O lord of this entire world! The people learned to Vedas address you as without birth and death (Ajanama), divine form, lord of the great soul, everlasting and Vishvatomukh.

31-32. Yours is top and undisclosed mystery. You are the foremost cause and supreme lord of this universe. You yourself are supreme god, Narayana, supreme soul (Paramatama) and Ishvara. You yourself are Sri Hari in the form of knowledge, the supreme shelter to the people desirous of emancipation; Vishnu. Gods even are alien to your real form. You yourself are beyond Puranas and supreme Purusha of Purana.

33-34. Nobody either on this or heaven is capable to make a record of the acts executed in past, present and future and to calculate yours such qualities (gunas). All of us are always defendable by you as lord Indra provides the gods with proper defence. We have got you as a meritorious friend.

35. The great illustrious god Janardana reciprocated Yudhishtira the Dharmaraja in the following words as per his appreciation made.

36. O Dharmaraja! The evildoer Jayadratha has met to death because of your acute penance, supreme religion, gentleness and simplicity.

37. O chivalrous man (Purusha Simha)! your always sacrosanct feelings for all creatures has provided Arjuna with an impenetrable shield and he could kill Jayadratha after beheading several thousand warriors.

38. Nobody anywhere is comparable to Arjuna, the son of Kunti in respect of his knowledge in weaponry, physical stamina, smartness and target hitting savvy etc. qualities.

39. O the best in Bharata's dynasty! Owing to these qualities, your younger brother Arjuna

has today beheaded Sindhuraja and killed the army of enemy in fierce battle.

40. O king! King Yudhishtira, Dharmaputra (son of Dharma) then embraced in tight grip to Arjuna, wiped his face and told the following worlds in consolation.

41. O Phalguna! You have executed a rare act today as god Indra including all gods were unable to execute or take-one this anus on their shoulders (viz. it was impossible even for the king of gods).

42. O enemy suppressor! You have discharged today the burden of commitment as you have killed your enemy. It is really a matter of good luck. It is really pleasing to see that you have fulfilled the commitment by killing Jayadratha.

43. The great illustrious king Yudhishtira with these words to Arjuna, the conqueror of sheep, patted on his back with his hand with sheer love.

44. On his so delivered statement, Sri Krishna and Arjuna reciprocated the king in following words -

45. O king! The evildoer king Jayadratha was burnt into ashes in the fire of your fury and it was your grace that enabled us to suppress the huge army of Duryodhana in the battle-field.

46. O Bharata! all these Kauravas have been killed owing to your fury, these are killed and will killed in future too as the fire of your fury is blazing in fierce flames.

47. Duryodhana, the wicked will finally die in the battle-field with his friends, relatives and siblings as a result of infuriating you, the gallant capable to burn in ashes the enemy merely by a furious gaze.

48. Bhishma, the grandfather of Kuru family who earlier was tough to win even by gods, is now sleeping on the cot made of arrows owing to your destructive fury.

49. O son of Pandu! You are suppressor of enemy and victory in battle is scarce for those on whom your curse befallen. They have definitely enslaved to the death.

50. O honour giving king! The persons on being victim of your anger shall shortly see

their kingdom, life, property, son and a number of luxuries destroyed.

51. O pain giver to enemies! Being yours abiding to Rajadharma (the nationalism), I consider the Kauravas destroyed with sons, animals and siblings automatically in the fire of your anger.

52-53. The long armed Bhimasena and great chariot holder Stayaki with their bodies injured of arrows then bowed their heads on the feet of Yudhishtira and stood on the ground. Having seen those great archers with folded hands and in charms on their faces; Yudhishtira, the son of Kunti greeted them heartily.

54. He said - it is very opportuned time to see both of you duly crossed the ocean of enemy's army. That ocean of army is inaccessible due to presence of the crocodile Dronacarya and the Kritavarma etc. crags are dwelling in that ocean.

55. It is the time to laugh in exhilaration as all kings defeated in battle and I am seeing both of you as conqueror in this battle-field.

56-57. It was our destiny that supported and we could defeat Acarya Drona and Kritavarma in the battle. It was another support of destiny that Karna too was defeated in battle-field by virtue of your archery. O best gallants! Both of you have pressed Shalya to leave the battle-field.

58. It is pleasing to see you both warriors, best in chariot holders and efficient in war-craft returned safely from the battle-field.

59. It is high time to feel gaiety when I am seeing you both warriors duly crossed the army ocean. You hold obligation of my dignity and honour the directions issued by me.

60. You both warriors keep my words while competing with rivals and undefeated in the battle field. It is my high destiny to see you safe here.

61. Having said these words, O king! Yudhishtira, the son of Pandu embraced Satyaki and Bhimasena both and his eyes started shedding tears of joy.

62. O majesty! The whole army of Pandavas then encouraged, gaiety brought new zeal to

them and it concentrated whole-hearted on battling.

## CHAPTER 150 (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)- Continued

### The remorse of Duryodhana

**Sanjaya said**

1. O monarch, the king of Sindhu being slain, your son Suyodhana, with his eyes full of tears, became (greatly) dejected and despaired of defeating his enemies.

2. (And) with his mind weighted down with sorrow and breathing hot sighs like a snake whose (poison) tooth has been broken that offender, against the whole world, felt excruciating agony (if mind).

3. Seeing that Jishnu, Bhimasena and Satvatta were making a great and dreadful havoc of his army.

4. He turned thin and pale and became (greatly) dispirited. And with his eyes filled with tears he began to think that there was no warrior on earth who mighty be match for Arjuna.

5. Neither Drona, nor the son of Radha, nor Ashvatthama nor Kripa is capable of standing before him (Arjuna) when he is angry, O worshipful one.

6. (And Suyodhana, thought within himself.) No was able to resist him when having defeated all the great car-warriors on my side, Partha slew the king of Sindhus.

7. The son of Pandu has totally destroyed my vast army. (I think) even Purandara himself in person cannot protect it.

8. Even Karna, depending upon whom, I had engaged in this passage at arms in battle, has been defeated in encounter and Jayadratha slain.

9. Relying upon whose prowess I regarded that undeteriorating one (i.e., Krishna) who sued for peace, (something) like a straw, that Karna has been defeated in battle.

10. Thus dejected at heart, O king, O the most exalted of the Bharatas, your son, the

offender against the whole world, came to seen Drona.

11. He then told (Drona) all about the great slaughter of the Kurus, the victory of the enemies and the great disaster of the followers of Dhritarashtra.

12. "O Preceptor," (Duryodhana (continued), "Behold this great carnage of those whose heads have undergone the sacred coronation bath, headed by my heroic grandsire Bhishma.

13. The covetous Shiknandi, having killed him, has got his desire fulfilled and is (now) stationed at the head of his troops together with all the Panchalas.

14. Having destroyed seven Akshauhinis (of our army), another invincible disciple of yours, viz., Savyasachi has killed king Jayadratha.

15. Those allies of ours, desirous of our victory and welfare, have gone to the abode of Yama. How can I repay the debt (of obligation) that I owe to them?

16. Those lords of the earth, who desired for me the sovereignty of the earth, having abandoned all earthly prosperity, are lying on the earth.

17. Coward that I am I have caused this great slaughter of my friends; and (therefore) cannot encourage myself to believe that I shall be able to purify myself by celebrating even a hundred horse-sacrifices.

18. Desirous of securing victory (for me who am covetous and sinful and a rebel against virtue, these (kings) have gone to the abode of the sons of Vivasvata.

19. I have fallen from virtue; an evil-minded and an enemy to my friends as I am why does not the earth yield me a hole (to bury me in).

20. Among the kings, my grandsire with blood-red eyes (lies on an arrowy bed) what will that invincible hero, who has conquered the next world, say when he will meet me?

21. See that the great bowman Jalasandha has been slain by Satyaki. That hero and mighty car-warrior exerting his utmost for my sake, has (at last) lain down his life.

22. Beholding the king of Kamboja, Alambusha and many other friends lose their lives, what is the good of preserving my life?

23. Those unretreating warriors after exerting their utmost to vanquish my enemies and fighting for my sake have (at last) sacrificed their lives.

24. I will today repay the debts I owe them by exerting my utmost (in the battle) and will then offer oblation of Jamuna water to them.

25. O the foremost of those that wield weapons, I promise truly and swear by my good acts, my prowess and my sons.

26. That I will either obtain peace of mind by destroying the Panchalas together with the Pandavas or I will depart to the regions where they (i.e., my) friends have gone by being myself slain in battle.

27. I will go there whither those foremost of men, slain for may sake in battle by the fighting Kiriti, have departed.

28. Seeing they are not well protected our partisans are no longer desirous of supporting use. They deem the sons of Pandu are preferable to us, O mighty armed one.

29. That truth-abiding one (Bhishma) himself ordained his own death in battle. And your respectable self too does not exert your best because Arjuna is your disciple.

30. It is, on this account, that all those who were desirous of our victory have been slain. At present I seen that Karna alone is anxious for our success.

31. That man, of dull understanding who without the exercise of proper discretion, takes one for a friend and employs him in actions which can only be performed by real friends, has his object frustrated.

32. Covetous, sinful, crooked-minded and greedy of riches that I am, this affair of mine has been managed in this way by (so-called) best friend.

33. King Jayadratha, that powerful monarch, the son of Somadatta, the Ameeshahas, the Surasenas, the Curas and the Vysatis have (all) been slain.

34. I will today go there whither those best of the Bharatas, slain for my sake in battle by the fighting Kiriti, have gone.

35. There is no good of my life without those foremost of men. O preceptor of the sons of Pandu, permit me to do this.

## CHAPTER 151

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The reply of Drona

##### Dhritarashtra said

1. What, O Sanjaya, was the state of your mind when the king of Sindhu was slain in battle by Savyasachi and Bhurisrava (by Satyaki)?

2. Relate to me, O Sanjaya, what Drona did say after he had been thus addressed by Duryodhana in the midst of the Kurus.

##### Sanjaya said

3. Seeing the king of Sindhu and Bhurisrava slain, there arose a great tumult among your troops, O Bharata.

4. All of them censured the policy of your son, in virtue of which hundreds of foremost of men were destroyed.

5. Drona too, hearing those words of your son, became sad at heart. Then, O king of kings, reflecting a moment he said very sorrowfully (these words).

##### Drona said

6. O Duryodhana, why are you piercing me with words (keen) as darts? I have told you (repeatedly) that Savyasachi is uncognizable in battle.

7. We have got (sufficient) proofs of what Arjuna is, when protected by Kiriti, Sikhandi slew Bhishma in battle, O Kaurava.

8. Seeing that Bhishma, who could not be defeated by the celestials and the Danavas in battle, was slain (by Sikhandi), I understood that the Bharata army was doomed.

9. That person, whom we looked upon as the foremost of all the heroes in the three

worlds, being slain, who else there that can inspire us with confidence?

10. The dice with which Shakuni played in the assembly-hall of the Kurus, O affectionate one, are not (real) dice but their arrows destructive of foes. has ever been able to achieve.

11. Those arrows, O child, now discharged by Jaya are destroying us; you did not then understand when Vidura told you what those (dice) were.

12. You did not then pay heed to those auspicious words, which the magnanimous wise Vidura with tearful eyes said for your good.

13. In consequence of your disregard for those words, O Duryodhana, this dire, terrible and impending disaster has overtaken you.

14. That stupid person, who disregarding the wholesome advice of his trusted friends, follows his own inclinations, is very soon reduced to a pitiable plight.

15. (You) had dragged Krishna to the assembly hall in our very presence who was unworthy of such treatment, was born of a noble line and was devoted to every act of righteousness.

16. O son of Gandhari, this (calamity which you are now in) is the bitter fruit of that sinful act on your part. This (punishment) is but insignificant for in the world to come you will be visited with direr calamities.

17. (This disaster is also the outcome of) your deceit by means of which you defeated the Pandavas at the game of dice and exiled them to the forest clad in deer-skin.

18. Is there, in the world, any other Brahmana besides myself that would injure the (Pandavas) who are ever devoted to righteousness and are (as dear) to me as my (own) sons.

19. The wrath that you excited in the Pandavas with the assent of Dhritarashtra and associated with Shakuni in the midst of the Kurus.

20. Has been fostered by Dushasana together with Karna and had been repeatedly

fanned by you who never paid regard to the words of Khattva.

21. How was it that you, who stood by the ruler by the Sindhu and tried your utmost to withstand Arjuna, were all defeated and why was he (Jayadratha) slain in your midst?

22. How is it, O Kaurava prince, that when you, Karna, Kripa, Shalya and Ashvatthama are (all) alive, the king of Sindhu has been slain?

23. How was it that the king of Sindhu was slain in their midst, since for the purpose of rescuing him all the kings fought with fiery energy.

24. That lord of the earth looked especially to yourself and me for his rescue from Arjuna, O Duryodhana.

25. But he failed to have that rescue from (the clutches of) Arjuna. I too do not find any hope for my own life.

26. I see that I am (fast) sinking into the mire of Dhritadyumna's (cunning) until I can slay the Panchalas together with Sikhandi.

27. Since I myself am tormented with grief, wherefore are you piercing me with words (poignant) as an arrow, you who failed to rescue the king of Sindhu, O Bharata.

28. How can you hope for success, since you do not longer seen the golden standard of Bhishma endowed with untiring energy and (ever) firm in truth.

29. Since the ruler of Sindhu and Bhurisrava have been slain from the very midst of the mighty-car-warriors, you can (very well) anticipate what the result will be.

30. O lord of the earth, if, without following the path of the king of Sindhu, the irresistible Kripa be still alive, I praise him highly (for his escape with life).

31-32. When, O Kaurava king, I behold that Bhishma, capable of achieving the most difficult exploits and unslayable even by the celestials together with Vasava in battle, was slain in your very sight and in that of your younger brother Dushasana, I thought, O king, that the earth no longer belonged to you.

33. Behold! O king, O Bharata, the troops of the Pandavas and those of the Srinjayas are jointly advancing against me.

34. I will not lay down my armour without destroying all the Panchalas; (and), O son of Dhritarashtra, I will perform which acts in battle as will benefit you.

35. O king! Go and convey my direction for Ashvatthama that he should battle taking all care of his life and not let go living Somakas at all possible efforts viz. he has to kill them all definitely.

36. (Tell him also). "Observe the instruction that your father has given you. Be firm in charity, self-restraint, truth and straight forwardness.

37. Be diligent in (the exercise) religion, profit and pleasure without despising religion and profit and always perform those acts in which the exercise of religion is mostly required.

38. You should always propitiate the Brahmanas with presents and worship. Never do anything that will offend them; for, they are flames of fire.

39.. O destroyer of foes, afflicted as I am with your words darts I will now penetrate through the enemy's line in order to engage in a furious encounter (for your sake).

40. As for your, O Duryodhana, if you are capable, go and protect your army, for both the Kurus and the Srinjayas, that are furious (with rage) will fight even during the night.

41. Having said thus, Drona, like the sun drawing out the energy of the stars, advanced against the Pandavas and the Srinjayas in order to destroy the energy of the Kshatriyas.

## CHAPTER 152

### (JAYADRATHA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The commencement of a fresh battle

#### Sanjaya said

1. Then king Duryodhana, thus addressed by Drona, directed his mind to battle influenced by rage.

2. Your son Duryodhana, then, spoke to Karna. "See that Kiriti, the son of Pandu with the help of Krishna.

3. Penetrated into the array drawn up by the preceptor, which (array) was difficult of being penetrated through even by the celestials themselves. Moreover, in the very presence of yourself and the high-souled Drona engaged in battle.

4. And that of many other foremost warriors the king of Sindhu was killed. Behold, O son of Radha, many king-excellent warriors on earth.

5. Destroyed by Partha alone like numerous inferior beasts slain by a lion, even when the high-minded Drona and myself were fighting (in order to resist Arjuna).

6. My (once vast) army has been reduced to a handful of men only by the son of Shakra. How, when Drona was trying his utmost (to check him), could the Phalguna.

7. Arjuna fulfill his vow by killing the king of Sindhu? O hero, how could the son of Pandu, if Drona had not wished it.

8. Penetrate through that impenetrable array in battle when the latter was trying (to resist him). Indeed Phalguna is exceedingly dear to the high-souled preceptor.

9. It is, on this account, that he allowed him to enter (into the array) without offering any opposition to him. Behold my misery now; that tormentor of foes, Drona, first, promised protection to the king of Sindhu.

10-11. (But) The afterwards allowed Kiriti to enter into the array. If he had before given permission to the king of Sindhu to return home, this dreadful havoc would never have taken place in battle. Jayadratha was for returning home in order to save his life.

12-14. But relaying upon the promise of protection made by Drona, insensate fool that I was, I stooped him. Today my brothers Chitrasena and others, have in the very sight of our wretched selves, been destroyed by Bhimasena.

#### Karna said

15. Do not blame the preceptor. (For) the twice-born one is fighting to the best of his prowess and energy and heedless of his life.

16. If Shetavahana entered (into the array) after having overcome him the preceptor cannot be found fault with in the least (for that).

17. (Again, Arjuna) is accomplished, skillful, young, heroic, accomplished in arms and quick in movements. He was armed with celestial weapons and mounted on the ape-bannered car.

18. The steeds of which were guided by Krishna. And that puissant one was clad in impenetrable armour and wielding his celestial and undecaying bow Gandiva.

19. As Arjuna, proud of the prowess of his arms, sent forth keen darts, it was no wonder that he over came Drona.

20. (On the other hand), O king, the preceptor is old and incapable of quick movements and O lord of men, (he is) also unable to exercise his arms (for a long time).

21. It was on this account, that Setasva with Krishna as his charioteer was able to overcome him. I cannot, therefore, find any fault in Drona.

22. In my opinion the Pandavas are unconquerable in battle by Drona, (however) skilled in weapons (he may be) in as much as Shetavahana, surpassing him, entered (into our array).

23. My belief is that what is ordained by fate undergoes no alteration, when, O Suyodhana, in spite of our fighting to the very best of our power.

24. 24. The king of Sindhu has been killed in battle. It seems that fate is supreme. Though we have been making vigorous exertions with you on the field of battle.

25. (And though he have been) always trying (to achieve success) by means of prowess and deceit, fate makes all our efforts futile.

26. O king, whatever act, a person who is not favoured by fate, does, it is baffled by fate, in spite of all his exertions to accomplish it.

27. That, which a person having perseverance ought to do, should be performed by him in a fearless spirit, (though of course) success depends upon fate.

28. We beguiled the sons of Pritha by deceit as well as by administration of poison, O

Bharata. They were (again) burnt in the lac house and defeated at dice.

29. In pursuance of state policy they were exiled to the forest; though we did all these with the utmost care, they have been frustrated by fate.

30. Hurling defiance at fate, fight with (utmost) care. Between yourself and themselves, fate will espouse the cause of the party that will make the best exertion.

31. (It does not seem) that they (i.e., the Pandavas) have done anything good by reason of superior intellect; nor (does it appear) O hero, O perpetuator of Kuru-race you have done anything wrong through want of understanding.

32. It is fate that always bears testimony to our acts, whether good or evil. Fate which is (ever) bent on its purpose is wide awake even when everything else sleeps.

33. When the war began your soldiers and warriors were more numerous than those of the sons of Pandu.

34. By their small force numerous warriors on your side have been destroyed. I fear it is the work of Destiny by which exertion has been baffled.

**Sanjaya said**

35. When, O monarch, they were thus conversing about many other (subjects) the army of the Pandavas was seen on the field of battle.

36. Then, O monarch there ensued a furious encounter, the result of our evil policy, in which the infantry, cars and elephants of your party encountered those of the other.

## CHAPTER 153

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### The defeat of Duryodhana

**Sanjaya said**

1. O monarch, that impetuous elephant squadron of yours fought everywhere getting the better of the Pandava army.

2. The Panchalas and the Kauravas, determined to go to the next world, that is, the great region of Yama, fought with one another.

3. Heroes encounter (rival) heroes smote one another with arrows, lances and darts and quickly sent one another of the region of Yama.

4. Car-warriors were engaged in terrible battle, cause a dreadful flow of blood against (rival) car-warriors and smote one another.

5. Furious elephants mad with rage, O mighty monarch, advancing against one another, mangled one another with tusks.

6. In that dreadful encounter horsemen solicitous of high renown, pierced (rival) horsemen with spears, darts and battle-axes.

7. O mighty-armed one, O tormentor of foes, hundreds of foot-soldiers armed with weapons rushed against one another with vigorous efforts.

8. And, O worshipful sire; (in that terrible encounter) we could only distinguish the Kurus from the Panchalas by the names of their (respective) clans and families which we heard them utter.

9. The warrior moving about fearlessly on the field of battle sent one another to the next world by arrows, darts and battle-axes.

10. The sun having gone down, the arrows, O king, shot by thousands by them, did no longer illuminate the ten points as before.

11. The Pandava army, O Bharata being thus engaged in battle Duryodhana penetrated into them, O king.

12. Afflicted with great sorrow at the destruction of the king of Sindhu and determined to sacrifice his life, he entered into the enemy's army.

13. Causing the earth to tremble and resound with the rattle of his car, your son rushed against the Pandava army.

14. O Bharata, that dreadful clash between him and them caused a terrible slaughter of all the troops.

15. As the noon-day sun scorches (the world) with his rays, so, it seemed, that your son scorched (the Pandavas army) with flaming darts.

16. In that battle the Pandavas could not even look at their brother (i.e., Duryodhana) and despairing of conquering their enemy, they tried to flee (from the field).

17. The Panchalas, struck with gold-winged darts of blazing points, shot by your high-souled son armed with a bow, fled away.

18. The Pandava soldiers smitten with sharpened darts fell (dead). Indeed the sons of Pandu could never perform such exploits in battle.

19. As were achieved by your royal son, O lord of earth. In that encounter the Pandava army was crushed by your son.

20. As lotuses are torn and crushed by a tusker. As lotuses are shorn of their beauty in consequence of the water (over which they grow) being dried up by the sun and the wind.

21. The Pandava army became so by virtue of the prowess of your son. Seeing, O Bharata, that the Pandava army was being destroyed by your son.

22. The Panchalas led by Bhimasena advanced (against him). He then (pierced) Bhimasena with ten, each of the two sons of Madri with three.

23. Virata and Drupada each with six, Shikandi with hundred, Dhrishtadyumna with hundred, the son of Dharma with seven.

24. And the Kalkeyas and the Chedies with numerous keen darts, piercing Satvatta with five (arrows), each of the son of Draupadi with three.

25-26. And piercing Ghatotkacha too in battle he roared like a lion. Like the wrathful destroyer slaying the created beings, he cut down hundreds of other warriors and the bodies of horses and elephants in that terrific encounter. When he was thus destroying his enemies, his great bow, plaited at the back with gold.

27-28. O king! The soldiers in the army of Pandavas could not even put an eye on Duryodhana, the Kuru king who was glowing like a son in that great battle. O great king! King Yudhishtira then rushed fast with an



intention to kill your son, the king of Kuru, Duryodhana in furious mood.

29. Duryodhana, the warrior of Kuru clan and Yudhishtira both suppressor to enemy attacked furiously on each other with fantastic exhibition of valour for their respective interests.

30. Duryodhana infuriated enough, put ten arrows having bent knot on bow and shot at Yudhishtira. He was badly injured. He then shot an arrow again and cut-off the flag fixed on Yudhishtira chariot.

31. O king! He shot again three arrows at Indrasena, the loyal charioteer of Yudhishtira and injured his forehead.

32. Duryodhana again shot an arrow which had cut-off the bow with Yudhishtira and penetrated his four horses by another four arrows he shot at them.

33. King Yudhishtira infuriated enormous, picked up immediately at an wink, another bow and prevented Duryodhana with a sharp blow.

34. Revered king! Yudhishtira, the eldest Pandava splitted the huge bow, gold studded with Duryodhana up into three pieces by giving acute blows twice with Bhalla.

35. He concomitantly injured Duryodhana too with a shot of ten sharp arrows. These arrows penetrated the sensitive parts in Duryodhana's body, made their way from them and sank deep in the earth.

36. The warriors in Pandavas' army then returned again to battle as they once were fled away. They all took their position around Yudhishtira as all gods had gathered around Indra when the monster Vritra was killed.

37. O majesty! Yudhishtira, then shot a dreadful and target hitting arrow glowing like sun beams at your son, king Duryodhana with a declaration - "Oh! You are killed."

38. Duryodhana, the king of Kuru clan immediately lost conscious and seated with a thud at the rear part of his chariot when that arrow injured him.

39. Then a great and tumultuous uproar arose from among the Panchala soldiers. O king

of kings, that great noise was this "the king is slain."

40. And, O Bharata, sharp whiz's of arrows were also heard there. Then Drona speedily appeared there in that battle.

41. Duryodhana too with (great) joy grasping his bow firmly and shouting to the king (Yudhishtira) 'wait', 'wait' rushed against the Pandavas.

42. The Panchalas too desirous of victory speedily followed the king. In order to save the foremost of the Kurus, Drona received them (i.e., their charge).

43-44. And then destroyed them all like the possessor of rays destroying the clouds driven to and fro by a terrific hurricane. Then there took place, O king, a terrific battle causing great havoc between you and your enemy's assembled troops eager for fight.

## CHAPTER 154

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The fight by Drona

#### Dhritarashtra said

1. When the wrathful preceptor endued with prowess, having addressed my son Duryodhana, who (even) acts in opposition to my commands, thus entered into the Pandava army.

2. How did the Pandavas oppose that mighty bowman, the heroic Drona, who having entered it (i.e., the hostile army) was moving about (the field of battle) stationed on his car.

3. (And) when the preceptor was engaged in the terrible slaughter of the enemy in that great battle, who did protect the right wheel (of his car) and who the left?

4. Who were the heroes that guarded the rear of that warrior engaged in fight? Who were the enemies that were stationed in front of that car-warrior?

5. It seems to me that the experienced an excessive cold chill ill-suited to the proper season or I think they shivered like cows exposed to frosts.

6. When that unvanquished and mighty wielder of bow and that foremost of the wielders of weapons, dancing on the track of his car, entered among the Panchalas.

7. Consuming all the forces of the Panchalas like an angry comet, how did that foremost of the car-warriors, meet with death?

**Sanjaya said**

8. Having killed the king of Sindhu in the evening Partha saw the king (i.e. Yudhishtira) and then united with the great bowman Satyaki he advanced against Drona himself.

9. Then Yudhishtira together with the Pandava Bhimasena joined by their separate squadrons soon rushed against Drona himself.

10. Similarly, Nakula endued with intelligence and Sahadeva difficult of being conquered and Dhristadyumna with his army and Virata together with the Kekayas.

11. And the Matsyas and the Shalvas with their own divisions advanced against Drona for battle. protected by the Panchalas, Drupada.

12. The father of Dhristadyumna, O king, marched against Drona. Those mighty wielders of bow viz., the (five) sons of Draupadi and the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha.

13. Followed by their own troops proceeded against the highly resplendent Drona. The Prabhadrakas and the Panchalas, numbering sixty thousand (efficient) smiters.

14. With Shikhandi at their head, marched against Drona. Similarly (numerous) other foremost of men and mighty car-warriors on the side of the Pandavas.

15. O best of men, jointly proceeded against Drona. O best of the Bharatas, those warriors having proceeded for the fight.

16. The night became dark increasing the terror of the cowards. (And) that dismal (night) O king, proved destructive of (numerous) warriors.

17. And it then prove fatal to elephants horses and men. On that bitchy dark night jackals setting up (terrible) yells everywhere.

18-19. And with their gaping mouths all ablaze indicated dreadful terror. Specially

greatly terrible owls, screaming from the standards of the Kauravas, foreboded dreadful terror. Then, O king of kings, there arose a tumultuous uproar from among the troops.

20. (Mingling) with the loud beat of drums and sound of cymbals, the grunt of elephants and the neigh of horses.

21. And the noise of hoofs (that uproar) spread everywhere. Then there took place an awfully dreadful nocturnal battle.

23. Of great king, between Drona (on one hand) and all the Srinjayas (on the other). In consequence of the night being enveloped in darkness and of the dust raised by the soldiers nothing could be discerned. The blood of men, horses and elephant mingled together.

24. Stupefied with unconsciousness as we were we did not see any dust on the earth. Like the (creaking sounds) of a burning bamboo forest on a mountain during a night.

25. There arose a dreadful clanging noise of the clashing weapons. In consequence of the sounds of Mridangas, Anakas, Vallakis and Patahas.

26. And of the thundering shouts, of the combatants and the neigh (of steeds), O lord, everything was in utter confusion. O king, on account of darkness gathering fast, friends could not be distinguished from foes.

27. And at that night every one became as if seized with madness. O king of kings, then the dust on earth (soon) disappeared on account of (the profuse) flow of blood.

28. (Then), on account of the golden armours and the ornaments (worn by the warriors) the gloom was dispersed. Adorned with gems and gold the Bharata army then.

29. Looked like the firmament studded with stars during the night, O foremost of the Bharatas. (That field of battle) with maces and standards lying scattered all over, resounding with the howls of the Jackals.

30. Grunts of elephants and ringing with the striking of arms and shouts (of the combatants) appeared dreadful. Then there arose a great and tumultuous uproar, causing the hair to stand on end.

31-32. And filling all the points like the roar of Mahendra's thunder. (And) O great king, at that night the Bharata army illuminated with the Angadas, ear-rings, cuirasses and with the weapons could be (clearly) seen. There (on the field of battle) elephants and cars decked with gold.

33. Looked like clouds with lightning playing upon them during the night. Swords, darts, maces, scimitars, clubs, lances and axes.

34. Looked like blazing sparks of fire when they fell. Duryodhana was the precursory wind, cars and elephants were the clouds,

35. Sounds of musical instruments were the thundering noise, bow and standards were the lightning flashes; Drona and the Pandavas were the clouds, swords, darts and maces were the thunder.

36. And shower, both very hot and cold, of arrows and of (other) weapons were the gusts of wind—of that dreadful, marvellous and fierce (army) which was fatal to life and from which escape and not at all possible.

37. desirous of battle, warriors entered fearlessly into that host at that dreadful night resounding with numerous sounds.

38. And when that awfully terrible and fierce nocturnal battle was raging which struck terror into (the minds of) the cowards and increased the joy of the valiant.

39. The Pandavas and the Srinjayas united together rushed furiously against Drona. (But) O king, all those who confronted that high-souled one.

40. Were driven back and some were sent to the abode of Yama. Thousands of elephants, ten thousands of car-warriors.

41. Millions of foot-soldiers and hundreds of millions of horses were pierced with shafts by Drona alone at that night.

## CHAPTER 155

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The prowess displayed by Bhima

##### Dhritarashtra said

1. When, unable to bear (the destruction of the king of Sindhu), that one of unrivaled energy and difficult of being vanquished penetrated into the Srinjayas what became (the state of) your mind?

2. Having addressed my disobedient son Duryodhana thus, when that one of immeasurable energy entered (into the Pandava army) what did Partha do?

3. (You say that) on the slaughter of the heroic king of Sindhu as well as of Bhurisrava that unvanquished one (i.e., Drona) endued with great energy rushed against the Srinjayas.

4. What did (Partha) think on that invincible scorcher of foes having so entered? What also did Duryodhana think as to the most proper step that he could adopt at that time?

5. Who were they that followed the heroic bestower of boons, the foremost of the twice-born ones? Who, O charioteer, were the warriors that remained behind that fighting hero?

6. Who were they that fought in, his van when he was destroying the enemies? I think that afflicted with the darts of the son of Bharadvaja, all the Pandavas.

7. Like lean cows shivering in cold. Having entered into the Panchalas how that mighty wielder of bow, that grinder of foes and foremost of men came by his end?

8. When, on that night, all the soldiers joined together and (all) the mighty car-warriors, combined, were being separately crushed, (by Drona), who, were the intelligent men among you, that were then present?

9. (You say) that, in the encounter, my soldiers were (either) killed, Driven away or defeated and that my car-warriors were deprived of their cars in the encounter.

10. Crushed and deprived of senses by the Pandavas and buried in blinding darkness (as they were), what was (the state of) their mind?

11. You say that the Pandavas were full of joy and elated (with success) and that my partisans were cheerless, heartless and struck with terror.

12. How, O charioteer, O Sanjaya or that (dark) night could you unretreating sons of Partha and the Kurus?

**Sanjaya said**

13. O king, when that greatly furious nocturnal battle was going on, all the Pandavas together with the Somakas rushed against Drona.

14. But Drona, by means of his swift-going darts, sent the Kekayas and sons of Dhrishtadyumna to the region of the departed spirits.

15. And Drona sent all those mighty car-warriors, those lords of earth who confronted him to the region of Pitris, O king.

16. Then the powerful king Sibi furiously advanced against the heroic son of Bharadvaja, the mighty-car warrior Drona who was engaged in crushing (the enemy).

17. Seeing the great car-warrior of the Pandavas advance, Drona pierced him with ten arrows made wholly of steel.

18. Sibi (too) pierced him (i.e., Drona) in return by thirty shafts adorned with the plumes of the Kanka (bird) and struck down his charioteer with a smile by a broad-headed shafts.

19. (On the other hand) Drona, having killed the horses as well as the charioteer of that high-souled one, severed his head, adorned with a diadem, from the body.

20. Duryodhana then quickly ordered a charioteer (to guide Drona's car). The reins of the horses being taken by him, he (i.e., Drona) again proceeded against his foes.

21. Accompanied by the Kalinga forces the son of the king of Kalinga, excited with wrath for the destruction of his father by Bhimasena, rushed towards him.

22. Having (first) pierced Bhima with five shafts and then again with seven, he struck Vishoka (Bhima's charioteer) with three darts and his (i.e. Bhima's) standard with one.

23. Vrikodara, then fired with rage, leaped from (his own) car to that of the heroic prince of Kalinga, who also was (very) angry and killed him with blows from his fists.

24. All the bones of that one (i.e., the Kalinga prince) thus boxed to death by the powerful Pandava, suddenly fell down on the ground separated from one another.

25. Karna and all the brothers (of the Kalinga prince) could not bear that act of the part of Bhimasena. They (therefore) struck him with keen darts (as fierce) as poisonous snakes.

26. Bhima, then leaving the car of his enemy (i.e., dead Kalinga prince) made for the car of Dhruva and smashed Dhruva who was incessantly striking him, by a blow of his fist.

27. Thus struck by the powerful son of Pandu, he fell down (from his car). The highly powerful Bhimasena, O king, after slaying him.

28. Got up to the car of Jayadratha and repeatedly sent forth leonine roars. While roaring he hurled him down with his left hand.

29. And he (then) killed him with a slap in the very presence of Karna himself. Karna then shot a golden dart at that Pandava.

30. But the son of Pandu seized that (dart) with a smile. And in that encounter the invincible Vrikodara hurled that very dart of Karna.

31. (Then) Shakuni cut-off that dart while it was coming (towards Karna) by a shaft saturated with oil. Having performed such great exploits in battle, that one of marvellous prowess.

32. Returned to his own car and (then) rushed against your troops. When Bhima desirous of staying (your troops), was (thus) advancing furiously like the (grim) destroyer himself.

33. Your mighty armed-sons, those great car-warriors tried to check his career by enveloping him with mighty showers of arrows.

34. Then Bhima, with a smile, sent the charioteer and the steeds of Durmada in that battle to the abode of Yama with his shafts.

35. Durmada then got to the car of Duskarna. Those two brothers, the tormentors of foes, mounted on the same car.

36. Both rushed against Bhima in the van of the battle, as the lord of the water (i.e. Varuna) (had rushed against) Taraka, the foremost of the Daitayas (in days of yore).

37. Then your sons Durmada and Duskarna ascending the same car pierced Bhima with arrows.

38. Then in the very sight of Karna and Duryodhana and in that of Kripa, Somadatta and Balhika, the Pandava,

39. That chastiser of foes, buried the car of the heroic Durmada and that of Duskarna into the earth with the stroke of his foot.

40. Then striking furiously with the blows of his fits those two heroic and powerful sons of yours, Duskarna and Durmada, he crushed them (therewith) and sent forth thundering shouts.

41. Then your troops began to wail aloud and the kings seeing Bhima, said. "He is Rudra himself who assuming the shape of a Bhima is fighting with the troops of Dhritarashtra."

42. O Bharata, saying this, all the kings deprived, (as it were) of their senses and urging the animals (on which they rode), fled away (from the field) and no two then (so great was their terror) did run together.

43. The army (of the Kurus) being thus greatly crushed, in that night, the heroic and highly powerful Vrikodara, endued with full blown lotus-like eyes, being highly complemented by (many) foremost of kings, paid his regards to king Yudhishtira.

44. Then the twins (i.e., Nakula and Sahadeva), Drupada, Virata and the Kekayas as well as Yudhishtira experienced a great joy and paid high complements to Vrikodara as the celestials paid to Hara after the slaughter of Andhaka by him.

45. Then your sons resembling those of Varuna filled with wrath and eager for battle led

by (their) high-souled preceptor surrounded on all sides Vrikodara by cars foot-soldiers and elephants.

46. Then, O best of kings, on that dreadful night enveloped with darkness thick as clouds, there took place, between those high-souled ones, an awe-inspiring and terrible battle delightful to wolves, crows and vultures.

## CHAPTER 156

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)- Continued

#### Ashvatthama's fight

Sanjaya said

1. Enraged at the slaughter of his son, while he was sitting with the desire of dying without food, Somadatta said these words to Satyaki-

2. Why, O Satvata, without observing the Kshatriya duties as formerly laid down by the gods, have you taken to the practices of robbers?

3. How can a wise person, practising the Kshatriya duties, strike in battle one who runs away or is helpless or has laid aside his weapons or who begs (for his life)?

4. O Satvata, it is said that among the Vrishnis there are two principal and mighty car-warriors in battle, namely, the highly energetic Pradyumna and yourself.

5. Why then did you practise such a cruelty and commit such an act, that would lead to your downfall, towards one that had sat in prayer and whose arms had been cut-off by Partha?

6. O wicked one, suffer (now) the consequences of that act of yours in battle. Exerting my strength, O fool, I will today cut-off your head with arrows?

7-8. O Satvata, I swear by my two sons, by what is dear to me and by the virtuous deeds, if before this night comes to a close I fail to destroy you, you that so much pride on your heroism, together with your sons and younger brothers, unless you are backed up by Jishnu, the son of Pritha, then, O wretch of Vrishnis, may I fall into dreadful hell.

9. The highly powerful Somadatta, excited with wrath, having said thus, blew loudly (his) conch and sent forth roars like a lion.

10. Then the greatly powerful Satyaki endued with eyes (beautiful) as lotus petals and possessed of leonine teeth greatly enraged thus addressed Somadatta.

11. "O descendant of the Kurus, I entertain not the least fear in my heart whether fighting with you or with others.

12. I shall not experience the slightest pain, even if backed up by all your forces you fight with me, O scion of the Kuru race.

13. Observant of the practices of the Kshatriyas as I am, I can be terrified with words smelling of battle and insulting to the virtuous.

14. If, O lord of men, you are desirous of fighting with me, strike me with sharpened arrows and I also will strike you (in return).

15. O king, your son, the mighty car-warrior Bhurisrava has been slain. Then the heroic Shala and Vrisena too have been destroyed.

16. I will today destroy you also together with your sons and friends; you are a descendant of the Kuru race and are endued with great prowess. Now remain carefully in battle.

17. King Yudhishtira is always characterised by charity, self-restraint, purity, absence of cruelty, modesty, intelligence and forgiveness and all (the virtuous) that do not perish.

18. You, who have been already slain by the energy of that one who standard bears the mark of a drum, will be destroyed in battle together with Shakuni and Soubala.

19. I swear today by Krishna's feet and all the meritorious acts that I had done before, that I will wrathfully kill you in battle together with your sons, with arrows.

20. If, however, you run away (from the field), you may be freed (from me).' Thus addressing each other, with eyes reddened with rage.

21. Those two foremost of men began to discharge arrows (at each other, Then with a

thousand cars and ten thousand cars and ten thousand horses.

22. Duryodhana stood surrounding Somadatta. Shakuni, too excited with wrath and armed with all the weapons.

23. And surrounded by sons and grandsons and brother powerful as Indra himself (followed Duryodhana's example), Your youthful brother-in-law. O king, endued with a body hard as the thunderbolt.

24. And gifted with wisdom and who had with him one hundred thousand steeds of best breed, completely hemmed in that mighty bowman Somadatta.

25. Supported by those heroes, (Somadatta) covered Satyaki with arrows. Seeing him covered with straight arrows.

26. Dhristadyumna, followed by a large army, proceeded wrathfully (towards him). Like the roar of waters dashed into fury by a terrible hurricane.

27. There arose, O king, a great tumult among the (two) forces striking each other. Somadatta then pierced Satvata with nine arrows.

28. Satyaki too pierced that foremost of Kurus with nine shafts. Deeply wounded in battle by that powerful and firm wielder of bow.

29. (Somadatta) leaned against the terrace of his car and (then) swooned away and was deprived of consciousness. Seeing that he was deprived of consciousness, his charioteer, in great hurry.

30. Carried away the heroic and mighty car-warrior Somadatta from (the field of) battle. Beholding him deprived of senses and afflicted with the arrows of Yuyudhana.

31. Drona desirous of slaying the heroic (Yadu rushed (at him). Seeing (i.e. Drona advance), Yudhishtira (putting himself) at the head (of his troops).

32. With the desire of rescuing the high-souled perpetuator of the Yadu race surrounded him on all sides. Then there commenced a battle between Drona and the Pandavas.

33. Like that (which took place) in days of yore between Bali and the celestials (both) desirous of the conquest of the three worlds. Then covering the Pandava army with arrowy showers.

34. The highly-energetic son of Bharadvaja pierced Yudhishtira also . (Drona then struck) Satyaki with ten darts and the son of Prishata (i.e. Dhristadyumna) with twenty five darts.

35. (And he pierced) Bhimasena with nine, Nakula with five, Sahadeva with eight and Shikhandi with one hundred arrows.

36. That mighty armed one (then pierced) each of (the five) sons of Draupadi with five arrows, Virata the king of Matsyas with eight, Drupada with ten darts.

37. Yudhamanu with three and Uttamanja with six (arrows) in that battle. (Similarly) piercing many other soldiers (he) rushed against Yudhishtira.

38. (Thus) struck by Drona, the troops of the son of Pandu with loud wails fled away in terror in ten directions, O king.

39. Seeing that are army was being slaughtered by Drona, Phalguna Partha, enraged a little, advanced speedily against his preceptor.

40. O king, beholding that Drona too was advancing against Vibhatsu in that battle, the soldiers of Yudhishtira rallied again.

41. Then again commenced a battle between the sons of Bharadvaja and the Pandavas. Drona, O king, completely surrounded by your sons.

42. Began to destroy the troops of the Pandavas, as fire (consumes) a heap of cotton. (He then) looked like the radiant sun and was endued with the resplendence of a blazing fire.

43. O king, seeing Drona incessantly discharge fierce arrows like sparks of fire from his bow drawn to a circle and like the scorching sun.

44. Consume the evenings there was none among the army that could withstand him. Those persons who stood before Drona (in order to resist him).

45. Had their heads cut-off by Drona with arrows which (then) entered into the earth. The

army of the Pandavas thus slaughtered by that high-souled one.

46. Again ran away in terror (even) in the very sight of Savyasachi. Seeing his lines broken by Drona at (that) night, O Bharata.

47-48. Jishnu said to Govinda "proceed towards the car of Drona." Then that Dasarha (chief) drove the horses, looking like silver or milk of cows or like the Kunda flower, towards the car of Drona. Seeing that Phalguna was proceeding towards Drona, Bhimasena too.

49. Ordered his own charioteer to take him towards Drona's troops. Visaka (the charioteer of Bhima), hearing those words of his (master) guided the steeds.

50. Behind Jishnu of unerring aim, O foremost of the Bharatas. Seeing those two brothers resolutely rush towards Drona's division.

51. The Panchalas, the Srinjayas, the Matsyas, the Chedis, the Kauravas, the Kosalas and those mighty car-warriors, the Keykayas followed suit, O great king.

52-53. Then, O king, ensued a dreadful encounter, making the hair stand erect. Vivatsu, then, attacked the right and Vrikodara the left flank of your army with innumerable cars. Seeing those two foremost of men, viz., Bhimasena and Dhananjaya, (proceed towards Drona's troops).

54. Dhristadyumna as well as the highly powerful Satyaki rushed (at them) like the roar of waters dashed into fury by a terrible hurricane.

55. There arose a great tumult among the combatants striking each other. Seeing Satyaki in battle and enraged at the slaughter of the son of Somadatta.

56. The son of Drona rushed furiously against Satvatta at the van of battle. (Seeing) him proceed towards the car of the grandson of Sini in battle.

57-58. That gigantic Rakshasa, the son of Bhimasena, possessed of enormous strength, rushed (at him) mounted on a huge and awfully dreadful car made of black iron covered with

bear-skin, measuring thirty Nalvas in height and width, furnished with various machines and emitting thundering roars like those of a mighty (mass of) clouds.

59. (And it was) drawn by animals looking like elephants; but they were neither elephants nor horses. With its wings and feet outstretched and with expanded eyes and emitting (terrible) shrieks.

60. A prince of vultures sat on its towering standard. (That car) was adorned with red flags furnished with rows of bones.

61-62. And with eight wheels. (And he) sat down on this car surrounding by one Ākshauhini of terrible-looking Rakshasa armed with maces and clubs and carrying rocks and trees in their hands. The kings were (greatly) pained on seeing him (to advance) with upraised bow.

63. Look like the very destroyer himself, mace in hand, at the time of universal dissolution. (And he) resembled a mountain peak, was frightful to look at and dreadful.

64. (He) had terrible teeth and a dreadful face, was possessed of arrow-like ears, high cheek bones, shooting hair, un-natural eyes, flaming mouth and a sunken belly.

65. His oesophagus was deep as a yawning pit and his head was furnished with a coronet. He was dreadful to all creatures and his jaws were as wide as those of the Destroyer himself.

66. Seeing Gatatkacha, the lord of the Rakshasas endued with splendour and capable of striking terror into foes, advance upraising his great bow.

67. Your son's forces struck with panic became as much agitated as when the waves of Ganga (dashed into fury) by a tempest are agitated into whirlpools.

68. Struck with panic by the leonine roars sent forth by Ghatotkacha, the elephants began to pass urine and the kings were greatly distressed.

69. Hurling by the Rakshasa who became more powerful on night-fall, there began to fall from all sides showers of stones on the ground.

70. Showers of iron, wheels, Bhushundis, arrows, spears, Sataghness and axes also began to fall there incessantly.

71. Seeing that furious and terrible battle the kings, your sons and Karna too, being (greatly) distressed, ran away from the battle field).

72. There the haughty son, of Drona only proud of his prowess in weapons, stood without fear (and he) soon did away with the illusion created by Ghatotkach.

73-74. Enraged at the illusion being dispelled (by the son of Drona), Ghatotkacha began to discharge fierce arrows. Those (arrows) penetrated into (the body of) Ashvatthama. As snakes insensible with rage furiously (enter into) an ant-hill, those arrows penetrating through (the body of) the son of Saradvata became covered with blood.

75. And then speedily entered into the earth like serpents (entering) an ant-hill. The light-handed and powerful Ashvatthama too, excited with wrath.

76. Furiously pierced Ghatotkacha with ten arrows. Deeply pierced in the vital parts by the son of Drona, Ghatotkacha.

77. Became greatly afflicted and then took up a wheel furnished with one hundred thousand spokes. (this wheel) the edge of which was sharp as that of a razor and which was as resplendent as the morning sun and was studded with gems and precious stones.

78. Was hurled by the son of Bhimasena at Ashvatthama with the desire of slaying (him). cut-off into fragments by the son of Drona with arrows as it coursed with great speed (towards him).

79. If fell down on the ground like the purposes of an unlucky person. Seeing his wheel cut down, Ghatotkacha speedily.

80. Covered the son of Drona with shafts as Sarbhanu (i.e. Rahu) swallows the creator of light (i.e. the sun). The resplendent son of Ghatotkacha resembling a mass of antimony.

81. Arrested the advance of the son of Drona as the king of mountains (checks the career of) the wind. (Struck with arrows) by the



heroic Anjanaparva, the grandson of Bhimasena.

82. (The son of Drona) looked like the mountain Meru drenched with (copious) showers of rain from the clouds. Ashvatthama also endued with a prowess equal to that of Rudra or Upendra, becoming highly enraged.

83. Cut off the standard of Anjanaparva with one arrow, his two charioteers with two and his Trivenduka with four (arrows).

84-85. With one (arrow) he cut-off his bow and with four his four steeds. Deprived of his car, as he (i.e. the son of Ghatotkach) took up a scimitar studded with golden stars, in his hand and flourished it, (Ashvatthama) severed it into two parts of by a keen dart. Then, O king, the grandson of Hidimva speedily (took up) a mace decked with gold;

86-88. And whirling it, (he) hurled (that mace at Ashvatthama). But the son of Drona, striking it (with arrows) filled it (to the ground). Then, leaping up in the air and roaring like black clouds, Anjaniparva began to pour down showers of trees from the firmament. Then the son of Drona began to pierce that one capable of (creating) illusions by means of shafts in the sky as the sun (pierces) the clouds with his rays. Seated on his car again decked with gold, when that one of great strength.

89-90. Looking like a high and beautiful mountain of antimony, descended to the earth, the son of Drona slew the son of Bhima's son, Anjanaparva, clad in armour as Maheshvara (killed) the Asura) Andhaka in days of yore. Seeing his son of enormous strength killed Ashvatthama.

91. (Ghatotkacha), the ornaments of whose arms were falling down from rage, came up to the son of Drona who consuming the Pandava army like a raging forest-fire and fearlessly said to heroic son of Saradvati these words—

#### Ghatotkacha said

92. O son of Drona, 'wait, wait.' You will not escape alive from me. I will today destroy you as the son of Angi (i.e. Kartikeya) rived the (mountain) Krouncha.

#### Ashvatthama said

93. O son equal in prowess to a celestial, go and fight with others. O son of Hidimva, it is not proper for the father to fight with the son.

94. O son of Hidimva, I am in no way angry with you in my mind. But when a creature is excited with rage, it may (then) kill its own self.

#### Sanjaya said

95. Hearing those words, the son of Bhimasena who was filled with grief for the loss of son and whose eyes became copper-coloured in rage, addressed Ashvatthama thus—

96. "What! Am I like a common individual, unable to fight, O son of Drona, that you are terrifying me with words? These words of yours are (highly) improper.

97. I am born of Bhima in the great race of the Kurus and am the son of the Pandavas who never run away from battle.

98. I am the Emperor of the Rakshasas and equal to the ten-necked (Ravana) in prowess. O son of Drona, wait, wait, you will never escape alive from me.

99. I will, today, put an end to your desire for fight on the field of battle." Saying thus, that highly powerful Rakshasas, with eyes (red) as copper in wrath.

100. Rushed furiously against the son of Drona as a lion (rushes against) the king of elephants. (Then) Ghatotkacha began to discharge showers of arrows of the measure of the Aksha of a car.

101. At that foremost of car-warriors, the son of Drona, as a cloud (sends down) showers of rain. (But) the son of Drona allayed that down pour of arrows by means of his (own) shafts, before they could reach him.

102. It, then, seemed, that another fight was raging in the firmament between the arrows. In consequence of the sparks emitted forth by the clash of weapons, it seemed.

103. That the firmament was studded with glow-worms during the night. Beholding his illusion destroyed by the son of Drona, proud (of his prowess) in battle.

104. Ghatotkacha then disappeared from view again and created (another) illusion (by virtue of this new illusion); he assumed the shape of a towering mountain abounding with peaks and trees.

105. And having a great fountain of water from which spears, lances, swords and heavy clubs, flowed incessantly. The son of Drona, beholding that mountain looking like a mass of antimony.

106. From which innumerable weapons were being rained down, was not at all afflicted. The son of Drona, then, as if with a smile, invoked into existence the weapon of Bajra.

107. By means of that weapon he soon destroyed that prince of mountains. Then he (i.e., Ghatotkacha) wearing the shape of a blue cloud adorned with rain-bow in the firmament.

108. Covered the son of Drona with furious showers of stones in battle. Thereupon, aiming the Vayavya weapon, that foremost of those skilled in weapons (viz.,)

109. The son Drona destroyed that rising blue cloud covering all points completely with numerous arrows, the son of Drona.

110-111. That foremost of two-legged creatures, destroyed one hundred thousand cars. He (then) saw Ghatotkach come again fearlessly on a car bending his bow and surrounded by a host of Rakshasas, resembling (in shape) lions and tigers, endued with the prowess of infuriated elephants.

112. Riding on elephants, cars and horses and possessed of unnatural, faces head and necks. Those followers of the son of Hidimva.

113. Belonged to Pulasta and Yatudhana clans and like them, were (all) equal to Indra in prowess. (These Rakshasa) heroes wielded several (sorts of) armours.

114. Were dreadful to look at, excited with wrath and their eyes were rolling in ire. Accompanied by those Rakshasas difficult of being vanquished. (Ghatotkacha) appeared on the field of battle.

115. Seeing that your son grew (greatly) dispirited (at the sight of these Rakshasas; the

son of Drona thus addressed him. "O Duryodhana, wait. You need not entertain any fear (of the Rakshasas).

116-117. (Remain here) with your heroic brothers and with the kings equal in prowess to Indra himself. I will destroy your enemies. You will not meet with reverse; I tell you (this) truly. Now cheer up (your) army.

**Duryodhana said**

118. I do not deem it (i.e., what you say) wonderful because you have a large mind and (because), O son of Goutama's daughter, you are devotedly attached to us.

**Sanjaya said**

119. Thus addressing Ashvatthama, he then said to the son of Subala—"(*Arjuna*) is surrounded by one hundred thousand cars, adorning the (field of) battle.

120. Do you mark against Dhananjaya with one thousand cars, Karna, Vrisasena, Kripa as well as Nila.

121. And the warriors of the North, Kritavarma, the sons of Purumitra, Dusasana, Nikumva, Kundavedi, Purukrama.

122. And Puranjaya, Dridaratha, Pataki, Hemapusyaka, Shalya, Aruni, Indrasena, Sanjaya, Vijaya, Jaya.

123. And Kamalaksha, Parakrathi, Jayadharma, Sudarsana—(all) these will follow you together with sixty thousand infantry.

124. Destroy, O uncle, Bhima, the twins (i.e., Nakula and Sahadeva) as well as the Dharmaraj, as the Asuras. My hope of success lies in you.

125. (They) are already deeply wounded, their bodies are mangled with shafts by the son of Drona. O uncle, (now) destroy the sons of Kunti, as the son of Agni (i.e., Kartikeya) slew the Asuras.

126. Thus spoken to by your son, the son of Subala, desirous of doing your son good, marched quickly, O king, for the purpose of destroying the Pandavas.

127. Then commenced on that night a dreadful encounter between the son of Drona

and the Rakshasas (Ghatotkacha) like that (which had taken place in days of yore) between Shakra and Prahrada.

128. Then Ghatatkacha, excited with, anger struck the son of the daughter of Goutama on the chest with ten strong arrows (fierce) like the venom or the fire.

129. Deeply wounded by those arrows sent by the son of Bhima, he (i.e., Ashvatthama), like a tree shaken by the tempest trembled on the terrace of his car.

130. Again by means of a broad-headed shaft, Ghatotkacha soon cut-off that highly lustrous bow wielded by the son of Drona.

131. Then taking up another strong bow capable of sustaining a great strain, the son of Drona poured showers of keen arrows as the clouds (pour down) showers of rain.

132. Then, O Bharata, the son of Saradvati sent gold winged and sky-ranging arrows destructive of foes against that ranger of the sky.

133. That great host of the broad-chested Rakshasas, sore oppressed with his arrows, looked like a herd of furious elephants attacked) by a lion.

134. Like the god Agni consuming the creatures at the end of a Yoga, he began to consume with his arrows the Rakshasas together with (their) horses, charioteers, cars and elephants.

135. Consuming one Akshauhini of Rakshasa troops with his shafts, he shone like the divine Maheshvara in heaven when the latter had burnt down (the chief of) Tripura in days of yore.

136. Having consumed the hostile forces, the son of Drona, the foremost of victors, shone like the resplendent Agni burning all the creatures at the end of a Yuga.

137. Then Ghatotkacha, greatly enraged ordered that vast army of Rakshasas capable of achieving terrible feats, to slay the son of Drona.

138. In obedience to that order of Ghatotkacha, the Rakshasas, possessed of

blazing teeth, large faces and terrible features, capable of causing dread.

139. Having gaping mouths; long tongues and eyes burning in ire, causing the earth to tremble with great leonine roars.

140-142. And wielding several (sorts of) weapons rushed to slay the son of Drona. These Rakshasas, of gigantic strength and with eyes reddened with wrath, began to shower upon the head of the son of Drona hundreds and thousands of awfully terrible darts, Sataghness, spiked maces, Asanis, lances, axes, scimitars, maces, Bhindipalas, heavy clubs, battle axes, spears, swords, lances, Kunapas, polished Kampanas, sthulas, Bhushundees, stones, vessels of treacle, sthunas made of black iron and clubs (all) destructive of foes.

143-144. Seeing that dreadful shower of weapons was falling upon the head of the son of Drona your warriors were greatly distressed (at heart).

145. (But) Drona's son dauntlessly baffled that dreadful and impending shower of weapons by means of his own shafts, hard as the thunder-bolt and sharpened on stones.

146. Then that high-minded son, of Drona, quickly destroyed the Rakshasas with other gold winged shafts inspired with the mantras of celestial weapons.

147. The broad chested Rakshasa army, crushed by his arrows, looked like a herd of furious elephants oppressed by lions.

148. Sore oppressed by the son of Drona those Rakshasas, endued with enormous strength, became mad with rage and angrily rushed against Drona's son in order to slay him.

149. There, O Bharata, the son of Drona displayed such wonderful exploits as are incapable of being achieved by any other being among all the creatures.

150. In as much as single-handed the son of Drona, versed in great weapons, by means of blazing darts, burnt that Rakshasa army in a moment in the very presence of the Rakshasa king.

151. The son of Drona, while (thus burning that Rakshasa host in battle shone like the

Samvartaka fire (consuming) all the creatures at the end of a Yuga.

152. While engaged in consuming the forces with arrows (fierce) as poisonous snakes, among those thousands of kings on the side of the Pandavas, O Bharata.

153. None else could look at the son of Drona in that encounter except Ghatotkacha, the heroic and highly powerful king of the Rakshasas.

154. O best of the Bharatas, again he (i.e., Ghatotkacha), with eyes rolling in rage, striking his palms and biting his lip.

155-157. Said angrily to his charioteer "Bear me towards the son of Drona." Ascending that terrible looking (car) furnished with triumphal banners, that destroyer foes again marched against the son of Drona in order to engage in a single combat with him. Sending forth a thundering roar like that of a lion, that terribly-powerful Rakshasa, whirling a highly dreadful Asani of celestial make and furnished with eight bells, hurled it in that encounter at the son of Drona.

158. Placing his bow on the car and jumping down, the son of Drona seized it and hurled it back at him (i.e. the Rakshasa, (Seeing that Asani proceed towards him) he leaped down from his car.

159. That dreadful Asani of great luster having consumed to ashes the car together with the steeds, the driver and the standard, rived the earth and (then) penetrated into it.

160. Seeing the son of Drona achieve that (wonderful) feat all the creatures adored (him) inasmuch as leaping down from his car he seized that (Asani) made by Sankara. Then, O king, riding on the car of Dhritarashtra and taking up a dreadful bow like the formidable bow of Indra (himself), the son of Bhimasena.

161. Began again to discharge sharpened arrows at the high-souled of Drona. Dhristadyumna also, nothing daunted, discharged (arrows) fierce as poisonous snakes.

162. Furnished with gold wings and excellent at the chest of the son of Drona.

Thereupon Drona's son hurled at them thousands of Narachas.

163. (But) those two (i.e., Dhristadyumna and the Rakshasa) cut-off with their own shafts, having the touch of fire, the arrows discharged by Drona's son). (Then an awfully terrible battle took place between those two best of men.

164. And the son of Drona caused (a great) delight to the warriors, O best of the Bharatas. Then followed by one thousand cars, three hundred elephants.

165-166. And six thousand steeds Bhimasena made his appearance at that spot (where the battle was raging). But the virtuous-souled son of Drona, possessed of excellent prowess, continued to fight with the heroic son of Bhimasena and Dhristadyumna together with his younger brothers; there the son of Drona achieved the most marvellous exploit.

167-168. Incapable of being performed by any one among all the creatures. O Bharata, within the twinkling of an eyes, he destroyed by means of arrows one Akshauhini of the Rakshasa army together with horses, drivers, cars and elephants, in the very sight of Bhimasena, the son of Hidimva, the son of Prishatha.

169. The twins, the son of Dharma, Vijaya and Achyuta. Pierced deeply with the stright-coursing shafts.

170. The tuskers fell down on earth like mountains devoid of (their) peaks with the trunks of elephants chopped off (by arrows) that were still moving about here and there.

171. The earth being strewn it looked as beautiful as if strewn around with moving snakes; with golden staves cut (to pieces) and royal umbrellas (lying scattered all over the field of battle) the earth looked like.

172. The firmament studded with (many) suns, moons and planets at the end of a Yuga. Tell standards constituted the frogs, drums the large tortoises.

173. Huge elephants the stones, numerous elephants and horses the sharks, cars the

unstable and great banks, flags the beautiful trees.

174. Arrows, the fishes, lances, darts and swords the frightful snakes, marrow and flesh the deep mire, headless bodies, the rattlers;

175-176. Profusion of hair (of men and animals) the moss, lamentations of warriors the roar and blood flowing from the wounds formed the waves of that impetuous river of blood formed by the blood shedding from the bodies of huge elephants, horses and combatants and inspiring the coward with terror—which the son of Drona caused to flow there.

177-178. (It looked) frightful with the (dead) bodies of foot soldiers and (it flowed towards) that great ocean, that is, the abode of Yama. Having destroyed the Rakshasa the son of Hidimva with shafts.

179. Waxing worth again, Drona's son having pierced with numerous shafts those great car-warriors, the sons of Pritha including Vrikodara and the son of Prishata.

180-181. Killed, O Lord, one of the sons of Drupada, Suratha by name. Then in that encounter he killed the younger brother of Suratha, Satrunjaya by name and also Balmika, Jayanika and Jaya. Then again, roaring like a lion, the son of Drona, by means of sharpened arrows.

182-184. Slew Prishadhru and the proud Chandrasena. (Then) with ten (darts) he destroyed ten sons of Kuntibhoja with another three red-eyed arrow graced with beautiful wings he dispatched O king of kings, to the abode of Yama, Shrutayush. (He then) sent the powerful Satrunjaya to the abode of Shakra. Ashvatthama, then, greatly enraged, fixed a terrible and uncrooked (arrows) (on his bowstring). (And) drawing the string up to his very ear, he soon discharged from his bow that excellent and formidable (arrow) looking like Yamadanda at Ghatotkacha.

185. O Lord of earth, that great arrow furnished with beautiful wings, riving the heart of that Rakshasa, penetrated into the earth.

186. Seeing him fallen down and taking him for dead, the great car-warrior Dhristadyumna placed him upon another car and bore him away from the presence of the son of Drona, O king kings.

187-188. Thus the car-warriors of Yudhishtira were driven back O king. Vanquishing his enemies, the heroic son of Drona uttered thundering shouts and he was adored by all men and by your sons, O lord.

189. Scattered all over with the fallen bodies of the dead night-rangers struck down and mangled by hundreds of shafts, the earth looked dreadful and became impassable as if strewn with mountain-peaks.

190. Then the Siddhas, the Gandharvas, the Pishachas, the Nagas, the birds, the Pitris, ravens, the Rakshas, the ghosts, the Apsaras and the celestials all joined in adoring the son of Drona.

## CHAPTER 157

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The battle between Drona and Yudhishtira

Sanjaya said

1. Seeing that the sons of Drupada and those of Kuntibhoja as well as thousands of Rakshasas were destroyed by the son of Drona.

2. Yudhishtira, Bhimasena, Dhristadyumna, the son of Prishata and Yuyudhana (all) united together, re-engaged their attention to battle.

3. Growing angry again at seeing Satyaki in battle, O Bharata, Somadatta covered him with mighty discharge of arrows.

4. Then the battle that took place between your army and that of the enemy was dreadful and highly marvellous to look at, (in which) both parties were desirous of gaining the victory.

5. Bhima, for the purpose of (helping) Sattavat, pierced the Kaurava (Somadatta) with ten (arrows). Somadatta too struck that hero in return with a hundred (darts).

6-7. (Then) Sattavat, furious with wrath, struck that old one smitten with grief for the slaughter of his son (by Satyaki) and who was, like Yayati, the son of Nahusha, possessed of every noble quality, with ten sharpened arrows having the force of the thunder. After piercing him (with these ten arrows) with great might he (i.e. Sayiaki) struck him again with seven (more).

8. Bhimasena, also for the purpose of (helping) Satyaki, hurled a new and formidable Parigha at the head of Somadatta.

9. Sattvata too, in anger, discharged at the chest of Somadatta, in that encounter, a keen and excellent dart, furnished with beautiful wings and as (furious) as the fire itself.

10. Both the formidable Parigha and the arrow, having at one and the same time, fallen upon the body of the heroic Somadatta, that mighty car-warrior fell down.

11. His son being deprived of consciousness, Valhika, discharging showers of arrows like the clouds (pouring) torrents of rain during (the rainy, season), rushed at him.

12. Then Bhima, for the sake of Satyaki, tormented and pierced, in that encounter, the high-souled Balhika with nine arrows.

13. Like Purandara hurling the thunder bolt, the mighty armed son of Partha. (i.e., Valhika), smitten with ire, struck Bhima on the chest with an arrow.

14. Thus struck (by Valhika) Bhima trembled and (then) fell into a swoon. Then that powerful one, recovering his senses, hurled a mace at him.

15. That (mace) hurled by the Pandava (Bhimasena) smashed the head of Valhika. He (then) fell down dead on the earth like a tree struck by lightning.

16-17. That foremost of men, the heroic Valhika being (thus) slain, your ten sons, viz., Nagadatta, Dhridaratha, Viravahu, Ayobhuja, Dridha, Suhasta, Viraja, Pramatha and Ugrayayin; (each of whom) resembled the son of Dasharatha (i.e. Rama) began to torment Bhima.

18. Filled with ire on beholding them, Bhima, aiming at each of them one after the other, struck each of them in the vital parts with arrows capable of bearing much strain.

19. Pierced (with those arrows) they fell down from their cars deprived of life and energy as trees broken by a furious hurricane (fall down) from the mountain summits.

20. Having destroyed those (ten) sons of your with ten arrows Bhima covered Vrishasena, the beloved son of Karna (with downpours of shafts).

21. Then the renowned brother of Karna, Vrikaratha by name, pierced Bhima with arrows. (But) that hero (i.e., Bhima) soon slew him.

22. Then the heroic Bhima, having killed seven car-warriors among your brothers-in-law, with arrows, buried Satachandra into the earth (by main force), O Bharata.

23. Unable to put up with the destruction of that great car-warrior Satachandra, the brothers of Shakuni viz., the heroic Gavaksha, Sarava, Vibhu (and two others).

24. Rushing against Bhimasena, oppressed him with keen darts. Afflicted with those shafts like a mountain with torrents of rain, he.

25. Destroyed those five kings endowed with great prowess, with five arrows. Those foremost of kings (who were present in that battle) seeing the destruction of those five heroes began to waver.

26-27. Then Yudhishtira began angrily to crush your forces in the very presence of the Pot-born (Drona) and in that of your sons, O sinless one.

28. (And) in that battle Yudhishtira sent to the region of Death, the Ambhastas, the Malavas, the heroic Trigartas and the Sivis.

29. Chopping off the Abhishahas, the Surasenas, the Valhikas and the Vashatikas, he made the earth muddy with (their) flesh and blood.

30. (And), O king, in a moment he sent to the region of Yama, with a number of darts, the heroic Youdheyas, the Malavas and hosts of the Madrakas in battle.

31. Then a tumultuous uproar (such as) "Slay, seize, capture, pierce and cut to pieces"—arose in the direction of Yudhishtira's car.

32. Seeing Yudhishtira afflict your troops Drona, urged on by your son surrounded him (i.e. Yudhishtira) with arrows.

33. Drona also, exceedingly enraged, discharged at that Pandava the weapon presided over by Vayu. But he (i.e., Yudhishtira) destroyed that celestial weapon with (another) weapon.

34-36. That weapon being baffled by Yudhishtira, the son of Bharadvaja, in great rage, hurled at the Pandu the Varuna and Agneya. The Teshra and the Savitra weapon, with desire of destroying him. All those weapons that were (either) hurled (or) being hurled by the Pot-born, were dauntlessly baffled by that mighty-armed and righteous one. Desirous of accomplishing his vow the Pat-born.

37. Devoted to the welfare of your son, called into existence the weapons presided over by Varuna or Prajapati, in order to slay the son of Dharma, O Bharata.

38. (Then) the lord of the Kurus (i.e. Yudhishtira) walking like a lion or elephant endued with a broad chest and large red eyes and possessed of an energy not less (then that of Drona) called into existence the Mahendra weapon, by means of which he baffled the weapon of Drona.

39. All those weapons of his being baffled, Drona was filled with ire; and desirous of slaying Yudhishtira, he called into existence the weapon presided over by Brahma.

40. Being enveloped in a dismal darkness, we could not, then, discern anything. And, O lord of the earth, all the creatures experienced a terrible horror.

41. Seeing that the Brahma weapon was uplifted, Yudhishtira, the son of Kunti, baffled that weapon by means of Brahma weapon, O king of kings.

42. Then the principal warriors (of the two armies) praised those two most exalted of men,

those two great bowmen, viz., Drona and the son of Pritha, who were conversant with all the (arts of) warfare.

43. Leaving the son of Kunti, Drona, then, whose eyes became as red as copper in rage, began to destroy, by means of weapons, the army of Drupada.

44. The Panchalas, (thus) destroyed by Drona fled away in terror in the very presence of Bhimasena and in that of the high-souled Pritha.

45. Then Kiriti and Bhima, rallying their own army, all on a sudden attacked, with a great car-force, your army.

46. Vibhatsu attacking the right and Vrikodara the left flank (of your army), discharged at the son of Bharadvaja mighty downpours of shafts.

47. The Kakeyas, the Srinjayas and the highly energetic Panchalas, O great king, together with the Matsyas and the Sattvata followed suit.

48. Then the Bharata army, butchered by Kiriti and (overpowered) with sleep and darkness, dispersed again.

49. Although, O great king, Drona himself and your son tried to rally them, yet they were not capable of reducing the warriors to order.

## CHAPTER 158

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The colloquy between Kripa and Karna

Sanjaya said

1. Duryodhana, on beholding the vast army of the Pandavas-inflated with wrath and thinking it to be irresistible thus spoke to Karna.

2. The time is now, O you that are devoted to your friends (to seek your assistance). O Karna, save in battle all my soldiers and car warriors.

3. Who are not completely hemmed in by the wrathful Panchalas and the Keykeas and the Matsyas and by the mighty car-warriors of the Pandavas who are all listening like (angry) snakes.

4. These Pandavas, filled with ecstasy and desirous of victory and these numerous car-warriors of the Panchalas equal to Shakra in prowess, are (all) roaring.

**Karna said**

5. Even if Purandara himself comes here in person in order to deliver the son of Pritha, I will soon vanquish him and then slay the son of Pandu (i.e. Arjuna).

6. I swear this truly. Reassure your-self O Bharata. I will destroy the sons of Pandu together with all the assembled Panchalas.

7. I will secure to you victory as the son of Pavaka (i.e., Kartikeya) did to Vasava himself. In this battle which is now going on, I will do good offices to you.

8. Among all the sons of Pritha. Phalguna is the most powerful. I will hurl at him the unfailing dart made by Shakra.

9. When the mighty-bowman will be slain, his brothers, O bestower of honours, will either come under your away or depart to the forest again.

10. O lord of the Kauravas, since I am alive you need not give way to sorrow. I will, in battle, destroy all the Pandavas joined together.

11. The Panchalas, the Keykayas and the assembled Vrishnis. (And) cutting (them) off into pieces with arrows I will give the earth to you.

**Sanjaya said**

12. When Karna was saying all this the mighty-armed Kripa, the son of Saradvata smilingly said these words to the charioteer's son.

13. "Very well very well, O Karna. If words alone were to lead to success, then O son of Radha, with yourself as his supporter, this most exalted of the Kuru could be considered as sufficiently backed.

14. Frequently in the presence of the Kaurava (king) you boast (of your prowess). But neither your prowess nor the result of it has ever been witnessed.

15. You have been, on several occasions, seen to engage in battle with the sons of Pandu.

But, charioteer's son, you have, on all those occasions, been defeated by the Pandavas.

16. On the son of Dhritarashtra being taken prisoner by the Gandharvas, you yourself were the first to take to your heels although all the troops were fighting (to rescue the Kuru king).

17. Again, in the city of Virata, all the assembled Kauravas as well as you, O Karna, together with your younger brother were (all) defeated by Partha in battle.

18. You are, in battle, incapable of fighting with Phalguna alone. How can you, (therefore) hope to conquer all the Pandavas together with Krishna?

19. O Karna, O charioteer's son, you boast too much (of your prowess). Be engaged in fight. It is the duty of good (i.e. really brave) men to display their prowess without uttering (a single boastful word).

20. By roaring like the rainless autumnal clouds, O charioteer's son, O Karna, you show that you have no worth. But the king does not understand this.

21. Continue, O son Radha, to roar so long as you do not behold Partha; (for) you will cease roaring when you will see Partha near.

22. Continue to roar so long as you are out of the reach of Phalguna's arrows: (for) you will cease roaring when you will see Partha near.

23. It is by means of (the prowess of) their arms that the Kshyattras are heroes. The twice-born ones display their heroism by words. It is by means of this bow that Phalguna is a hero. But Karna is a hero by the wishes (he cherishes in his heart).

24. Who can resist Partha that has gratified even Rudra himself?" Thus reviled by the son of Saradvat.

25. Karna, the foremost of smiters, spoke these words to Kripa. Heroes always roar like clouds during the rainy season.

26. And they yield an early harvest like seeds sown into the soil (at the proper time). I do not find any fault with the warriors on the field of battle.



27. Boasting in several ways of themselves who bear a (great) burden in war. That person, who resolves in his mind to bear a burden.

28. Is surely helped by fate in carrying out his purposes, If resolving in my mind to bear a (great) burden.

29. That is (if wishing in my mind) to slay in battle the son of Pandu together with Krishna and Sattvata, I roar thus, what harm is there in it to you, O Brahmana?

30. Heroes do not roar in vain like the autumnal clouds. The wise, conscious of their own-strength, indulge in roars.

31. I am, too, resolved in my mind to conquer in battle today the Pandavas and Krishna joined together, by exerting my best. O son of Goutama, it is on this account, that I indulge in roars.

32. O Brahmana, witness the result of these roars of mine. Having slain in battle the sons of Pandu together with Krishna. Sattvata and (all their) followers I will deliver the (entire) earth with its thorns weeded out, to Duryodhana.

#### Kripa said

33. Your intentions being like the ravings (of a mad man) cannot be acceptable to me, inasmuch as you always tale to me, inasmuch as you always speak depreciatingly of Krishna, Arjuna and Dharmaraj, the son of Pandu.

34-36. O Karna, victory on the part of that person is certain who has on his side Krishna and the Pandava (Arjuna) both skilled in warfare and incapable of being vanquished in battle by the celestials, the Gandharvas, the Yakshas, the mortals the Uragas and the birds (even if all these fight) with their armours on). Yudhishtira the son of Dharma is devoted to the Brahmanas, (always) speaks truth, is self-restrained, worships the Pitris and the celestials, is devoted to truth and righteousness, well skilled in weapons, is possessed of intelligence and is grateful.

37. His brother (also) are powerful, well-skilled in all the weapons, devoted to the ministrations of their elders, wise, renowned and (they) always practice righteousness.

38. His relations and kinsmen too are powerful as Indra himself, are devotedly attached (to him) and are (efficient) smiters. Dhristadyumna, Sikhandi and Janamejaya, the son of Durmuksha.

39. And Chandrasena, Bhadrasena, Kirtivarma, Dhruva, Dhara, Vasuchandra, Damachandra, Singha-Chandra, sutejana.

40. And the sons of Drupada and Drupada himself skilled in great weapons and the king of Matsya together with his younger brothers are exerting their utmost on their behalf.

41-42. And Gajaneeka, Srutaneeka, Veerabhadra, Sudrasana, Srutadhvaja, Valaneeka, Jayaneeka, Jarapreya and Vijaya, Labdhalaksha, Jayasva, Rathavahana, Chandradaya, Kamaratha, the auspicious brothers of Virata.

43. And the twins, the (five) sons of Draupadi and the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha are fighting for their sake. They (therefore) cannot meet with destruction.

44-45. These and innumerable numbers of other kinsmen and relations) are on the side of the son of Pandu. Indeed, Bhima and Phalguna, by means of the prowess of their weapons, can easily destroy the whole universe together with all the celestials, the Asuras, the human beings and the Rakshasas, (other) created beings, the serpents and the elephants.

46-47. Yudhishtira, also by means of his angry looks, can consume the (whole). O Karna, how can you hope to vanquish these enemies in battle, for whose sake Souri of unrivaled prowess has armed himself? It is indeed a great impudence on your part, O Charioteer's son, as you always dare confronting Souri in battle.

#### Sanjaya said

48. Thus spoken to (by Kripa), Karna the son of Radha then replied smilingly to the preceptor Kripa, the son of Saradvat.

49. "O Brahmana, the words that you have (just) spoken about the Pandavas are true. Indeed the sons of Pandu are gifted with these and many other noble qualities.

50. The sons of Pritha are unconquerable in battle by the celestials together with Vasava (at their head), by the Yakshas, the Daityas and the Gandharvas (all) united together and by the Pishachas, the Urages and the Rakshasas.

51. Still I will vanquish the Parthas by means of the dart granted to me by Vasava. This unfailing dart was given to me, O twice-born one, by Shakra.

52. By means of this dart I will slay Savyasachi in battle. When this son of Pandu will be slain, Krishna, as will as his uterine brothers (i.e., Yudhishtira and Bhima).

53. Will not able to enjoy the earth without Arjuna. At the destruction of all these, this, earth together with her seas.

54. Will come under the sway of the lord the Kurus without any trouble (on his part), O son of Goutama. There is no doubt that in this world, a sound policy leads to success in everything.

55. Well aware of this (to be certain) I give forth (these) roar. O Goutama, you are much advanced in years, a Brahmana and unskillful in battle.

56. It is on account of your affection towards the sons of Pritha that you insult me (thus). If, O twice-born one, you speak such disagreeable words to me, as these again.

57. Then taking up my scimitar I will cut-off your tongue, O wretch. O Brahmana, you are desirous of praising the Pandavas, in battle.

58. In order to strike terror into (the hearts of) all the troops and the Kauravas, O evil-minded one, O son of Goutama, hear what I say on this point.

59. Where Duryodhana, Drona, Shakuni, Durmukha, Jaya, Dusasana, Vrishasena, the king Madra and yourself.

60. And Somadatta, Bhuri, the son of Drona and Vivingsati-all well-skilled in warfare, remain (prepared for battle) with their armours on.

61. Can any foe, be he as powerful as Shakra himself, vanquish all these (heroes) in battle? All these warriors that are heroes,

efficient in weapons, endued with strength, desirous of attaining the heaven.

62. Conversant with religion and well skilled in battle, would slay the very gods in battle. These will remain on the field of battle for the purpose of destroying the Pandavas.

63. With their armours on, for the Kaurava king, solicitous of victory I deem victory even with regard to those endued with great prowess to be dependent on fate.

64. Since the mighty-armed Bhishma lies (on the field) struck by a hundred arrows, (and since) Vikarna, Chitrasena, Valhika, Jayadratha.

65. And Bhurisrava, Jaya, Jalasandha, Sudakshina, Sala, the foremost of car-warriors, the puissant Bhagadatta.

66. These and numerous other heroes difficult of be being vanquished by the very gods and more powerful than the Pandavas themselves-lie slain in battle.

67. To what do you, that are the basest of men, attribute all this except the hand of fate? O twice-born one, as to the enemies, Duryodhana whom you always extol.

68. Hundreds and thousands of warriors on their side also have been destroyed. The troops of both the Kurus and the Pandavas are diminishing.

69. I do not see in it any prowess on the part of the Pandavas. Those whom you, you that are the basest of men, always deem powerful.

70. I will confront in battle putting forth my utmost prowess for the welfare of Duryodhana. As regards success, it is dependent on fate.

## CHAPTER 159

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The address of Duryodhana

#### Sanjaya said

1. Seeing his maternal uncle thus insulted by the charioteer's son, the son of Drona brandishing his scimitar ran furiously towards him.

2. Then, excited with a great rage, the son of Drona, like a lion (rushing at) an infuriate elephant, rushed against Karna, even in the very presence of the Kuru king.

**Ashvatthama said**

3. O basest of men, in spite of his speaking of the qualities that Arjuna is really endowed with, you, that are of very wicked understanding, have insulted my heroic maternal uncle through (sheer) malice.

4. Without reckoning any of the words of bowmen in battle, puffed up with pride as you are, you are boasting today of your manliness.

5. Where was your prowess and where your weapons, when defeating you in battle, the wielder of Gandiva killed Jayadratha in your very presence?

6. O wretch of a charioteer, you are in vain hoping in your mind to conquer him, who formerly fought with the very Mahadeva himself.

7. Since the combined celestials and the Asuras headed by Indra are incapable of defeating that foremost of the wielders of weapons, having Krishna for his ally.

8. How can you, O Suta, backed up by these earthly kings, indulge in hopes of vanquishing in battle, the unconquerable Arjuna, the foremost of all the heroes in the world?

9. Look, O Karna of wicked understanding, O vilest of men stay here now. I will presently cut-off your head from your body.

**Sanjaya said**

10. The highly-energetic king Duryodhana himself and that best of men, Kripa, prevented him (i.e., Ashvatthama) who was rushing furiously (at Karna).

**Karna said**

11. Let this basest of Brahmanas, who (thinks that he) is a hero, boasts of his prowess in battle and is of wicked understanding, taste of my prowess. Do leave him, O best of the Kurus.

**Ashvatthama said**

12. O charioteer's son of wicked understanding, we forgive you of this (fault).

Phalguna will destroy this swelling pride of yours.

**Duryodhana said**

13. O Ashvatthama, O bestower of honours, be gratified; do forgive (him). O sinless one, you should not be angry with the charioteer's son.

14. To you and Karna and Kripa and Drona and the king of Madra and to the son of Subala, a heavy task is entrusted. O best of the twice-born ones, be gratified.

15. O Brahmana, all the Pandavas, desiring to fight with and shouting to the son of Radha (to give battle) are coming (against him) from all sides.

**Sanjaya said**

16. Thus appeased by the king, the high-minded son of Drona, O great king, who was filled with a furious rage subdued his anger.

17. Then the large-heated preceptor, whose mild disposition soon returned (to him) an account of his being (naturally) of a peaceful temper, said these words (to Karna)—

**Kripa said**

18. O Charioteer's son of very wicked understanding, you are pardoned by us of this (fault). But Phalguna will (soon) destroy your swelling pride.

**Sanjaya said**

19. Then, O king, the Pandavas and the renowned Panchalas, united together and sending forth thundering roars, poured in by thousands.

20-21. The puissant and energetic Karna too taking up his bow and surrounding by the foremost of the Kauravas, like Shakra by the celestials, awaited (their charge) relying on the strength of his own arms. The battle, that then took place between Karna (on one side) and the Pandavas (on the other).

22. Was hot and furious and ruining with thundering shouts, O great monarch. Then, O king, the Pandavas and the renowned Panchalas.

23. Seeing Karna, possessed of mighty arms, sent forth loud shouts. (And the

said)—"This is Karna! where is Karna! O Karna, stay in this great battle.

24. O wicked-souled one, O vilest of men, give us battle. Others, with eyes burning in ire on beholding Karna, said.

25. This arrogant son of charioteer having but a little sense should be killed by all these foremost of kings. He has no need of life.

26. This sinful person is always an inveterate enemy to the sons of Pritha, abides by the advice of Duryodhana and is the root of all these evils.

27-28. "Slay him!" Thus saying, mighty Kshatriya car-warriors, at the command of the son of Pandu, rushed to slay the charioteer's son, enveloping (all the points) with a heavy downpour of arrows. Seeing all those highly powerful sons of Pandu (rush towards him).

29. The charioteer's son was neither pained nor struck with terror. Beholding that wonderful army, vast as a sea and looking like Death itself.

30. That puissant, light-handed and highly powerful one, devoted to the good of your sons and never vanquished in battle, by means of showers of arrows.

31. Began to check (the career of) that army on all sides, O most exalted of the Bharatas. Then the Pandavas also, discharging downpours of shafts checked, (him).

32. Shaking hundreds and thousands of bows, they battled with the son of Radha as the Daityas (fought with) Shakra in days of yore.

33. That downpour, of shafts discharged by the kings on all sides, was destroyed by the puissant Karna with a heavy shower of arrows.

34. Then a marvellous battle, in which each party was desirous of warding off the blows of the other and which resembled the fight between Shakra and the Danavas in the war between the gods and the Asuras, took place between them.

35. There we beheld of wonderful light-handness of the charioteer's son : for, all the hostile forces, exerting their utmost, could not subdue him in that battle.

36. That mighty car-warrior, the son of Radha, checking those downpours of arrows discharged by the (hostile) kings, shot at their yokes, umbrellas, cars and steeds, dreadful arrows, marked with his own name. Then, afflicted by Karna and not knowing what to do, those (hostile) kings.

37-40. Wandered about there (on the field of battle) like cows pained with cold. Innumerable horses, elephants and car-warriors afflicted by Karna were seen to drop dead there. The entire field was strewn on all sides with the fallen heads and arms of the unretreating warriors, O king, with the dead and the dying and the waiting (combatants) lying on all sides.

41. The field of battle looked like the region of the son of Vivasvata, O king. Then, O monarch, beholding the feats of Karna, Duryodhana.

42. Approached Ashvatthama and then said these words—"Yonder Karna, with his armour on, is seen (fighting) with all the (hostile) kings.

43. Behold, the (enemy's) army, oppressed with the arrows of Karna, is, like the Asura force afflicted by Kartikeya, running away (in all the directions).

44. Witnessing the defeat of his army by the intelligent Karna, Vibhatsu, in order to slay the charioteer's son, is advancing (against him).

45. Adopt such measures that the son of Pandu may not kill that mighty car-warrior, i.e., the charioteer's son in battle in our very sight."

46. (Hearing these words of the king), the son of Drona and Kripa and Shalya and that mighty car-warrior, the son of Hridika, advanced against Partha in order to protect the charioteer's son.

47. Seeing that the son of Kunti was coming against them like Shakra against the Daitya force. Then, O king of kings Vibhatsu also surrounded by the Panchalas marched against Karna like Purandara (marching against) Vritra.

**Dhritarashtra said**

48. Seeing the wrathful Phalguna looking like Yama, the destroyer of time, what

measures, O charioteer, did Karna, the son of Vikartana, adopt?

49. That mighty car-warrior (i.e. Karna) always challenged Partha and hoped that he has powerful enough to vanquish Vibhatsu.

50. Thus meeting all on a sudden his inveterate enemy, what measures, O charioteer, did Karna, the son of Vikartana adopt?

**Sanjaya said**

51. Seeing the son of Pandu (advance against) his rival elephant, Karna dauntlessly fell upon Dhananjaya.

52. Partha then enveloped Karna who was thus furiously advancing against him, with straight-coursing arrows furnished with golden wings.

53. (And) the son of Pandu covered Karna with a dense shower of arrows. Then Karna greatly excited with rage pierced him with three darts.

54-56. The mighty car-warrior (Partha) witnessing this nimbleness on his part could not endure it. That scorcher of foes, then, shot thirty arrows sharpened on stone, having flaming points and coursing straight, at the charioteer's son. That puissant and mighty one, then, as if with a smile, pierced him angrily with another long arrow in the end of his left arms. From that hand of his which was (thus) pierced with (great) force, his bow fell down.

57. Taking up that bow within half the time of the twinkling of an eye, that highly powerful one, with great nibleness of hand, covered Phalgun with downpours of arrows.

58. The arrowy shower, sent forth by the charioteer's son, was baffled by Dhananjaya with discharges of arrows, as if with a smile, O Bharata.

59. Those two mighty wielders of bow desiring to baffle each other and coming up to catch each other enveloped each other with a (perfect) deluge of arrows.

60. Then a marvellous encounter took place between Karna and the son of Pandu resembling that between two wild elephants for the sake of a she-elephant in the time of her passion.

61. Then that mighty bowman Partha, witnessing the prowess of Karna, speedily cut-off that part of his bow at which it is grasped.

62. (And) that scorcher of (his) foes (i.e. Dhananjaya) sent his horses to the abode of Yama with broad headed shafts and severed the head of his charioteer from the body.

63. Then Partha, the son of Pandu pierced that one (i.e., Karna) deprived on his steeds and driver and whose bow was cut-off with four arrows.

64. Afflicted with arrows of Kripa that foremost of men jumped down from the car of which the steeds were slain, quickly got up to another car.

65. Afflicted with (Arjuna's) darts, that most exalted of men hastily jumped down from his steedless car and got up to the car of Kripa.

66. O best of the Bharatas, witnessing the defeat of the son of Radha, your Partisans, (already) mangled by the shafts of Dhananjaya ran away in ten directions.

67. Beholding that they were running away King Duryodhana himself rallied them and spoke these words.

68. Heroes, do not take to flight! O best of the Kshatriyas, stay! I am myself going against Partha in order to slay him in battle.

69. I will myself destroy Partha together with the Panchalas assembled (under his banners). In the battle that I will today fight with the wielder of Gandiva.

70. The son of Pritha will behold my prowess resembling that of the destroyer at the end of a Yuga. Today the arrowy showers that I will discharge by thousands.

71. In battle, will be seen by the sons of Pritha to resemble (thick) flights of locusts. Today, when wielding my bow, I will continue to rain down arrows.

72. My soldiers will behold me like a cloud discharging torrents of rain at the end of the summer. Today I will, by means of straight arrows, conquer the sons of Pritha.

73. Brave warriors, stay in battle. Shake off your fear of Phalguni. Encountering my prowess, Phalguni will not be able to stand it.

74. As the ocean, the abode of the Makaras reaching the point between the high and the low tide-marks, is unable to get beyond it. Saying this, the king, surrounded by a mighty army, marched.

75. Furiously with his eyes reddened in wrath, against Phalguni. Seeing that mighty-armed one advance (against Arjuna), the son of Saradvatta (i.e. Kripa).

76. Approaching Ashvatthama said these words—"This mighty-armed king, under the influence of rage and insensible with ire.

77-78. Resorting to the practices of the insects, (which heedless of danger rush into fire) is desiring to fight with Arjuna (heedless of his life). Prevent the Kaurava king (from doing this) before he sacrifices his life in our very sight by encountering Partha in battle. So long as he does not present himself within the range of Kirit's shafts.

79-80. The heroic Kaurava king can only remain alive in battle. Prevent the king (from taking this rash step) before he is burnt to ashes by the dreadful arrows of Partha looking like snakes that have just cast off their sloughs. It looks very improper, O giver of honours, that when we are here.

81-82. The king will go in person to fight in battle like one having no support. I think it will be (as) greatly difficult for Kaurava king to escape with life while fighting with Kiriti in battle, as it is in the case of an elephant (fighting with) a tiger. Thus addressed by his maternal uncle, the son of Drona, who was the foremost of those that could wield weapons.

83. Quickly approaching Duryodhana, said these words—"O son of Gandhari so long as I am alive, it is not proper for you to fight.

84-85. Disregarding me who am always devoted to your welfare. O Kaurava king, you need at all be anxious for vanquishing Partha. I will myself check Partha. Stay (here), O Suyodhana.

#### **Duryodhana said**

86. The protector protects the sons of Pandu as if they were his own children. You also never manage in right earnest with my enemies.

87. It is either owing to my ill luck or owing to your desire to do good to the Dharmaraj that your prowess diminishes in battle, though I do not know what is the true cause.

88. Fie on my avaricious self on whose account all the friends, solicitous of my welfare, are, being vanquished (in battle), now experiencing great misery.

89. What person is there, O son of Goutama's daughter, who though capable yet would not destroy my enemies, besides you that are the foremost of those that wield weapons and are equal to Maheshvara himself in battle.

90. O Ashvatthama, be gratified. Destroy my enemies. Neither the celestials nor the Danavas are capable of staying within the range of your weapons.

91. O Drona's son, destroy the Panchalas as well as the Somakas together with all their followers. Protected by you we shall slay the rest.

92. Look, O Brahmana, the Somakas and the renowned Panchalas are ranging furiously amidst my troops like a forest fire.

93. O mighty-armed and most excellent of men, check (the career of) these and also of the Kaikayas, before, they, backed up as they are by Kiriti, destroy (all our forces).

94. Ashvatthama, O chastiser of foes march (against them) speedily. Earlier or latter this take should be accomplished by you, O Brahmana.

95. As, O mighty-armed one, you have sprung into existence in order to slay the Panchalas, you will surely, exerting your utmost, make the earth devoid of the Panchalas.

96. It will surely come to pass as the worshipful sages who have attained (ascetic) success have said this. Therefore O most valiant of men, destroy the Panchalas together with their followers.

97. Not to speak of the sons of Pritha together with the Panchalas, even the very celestials together with their allies cannot stand within the range of your weapon. I speak this truly.

98. I will tell you truth, O hero, that the Pandavas together with the Somakas, are incapable of fighting with you, even though they put forth their (utmost energy).

99. O mighty-armed one, go, go. Do not waste time. Your forces, afflicted with Parthas' shafts, are taking to flight.

100. O mighty-armed one, O bestower of honours, you are (No doubt) capable, by virtue of your own celestial energy, of chastising the sons of Pandavas as well as the Panchalas.

## CHAPTER 160

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The prowess of Ashvatthama

##### Sanjaya said

1. Thus addressed by Duryodhana, the son of Drona invincible in battle, tried to destroy the enemies like Indra the Daytas.

2. (And) that mighty-armed one said these words to your son. O Kaurava of mighty-arms, what you have said is indeed true.

3. The sons of Pandu are always dear to me as well as to my father. Similarly, we too also dear to them. But this is otherwise in battle.

4. O affectionate one, putting forth our (utmost) strength we engage in fight dauntlessly regardless of our very lives. Myself Karna, Shalya, Kripa and the son of Hridika i.e., Kritavarma.

5. Can destroy the army of the Pandavas, O most excellent of kings, in the twinkling of an eye. And O best of the Kurus, O mighty armed one, they too can destroy the army of the Kauravas within the twinkling of an eye, if we are not present in battle. We are fighting with Pandavas putting forth our utmost prowess and they too are battling with us to the best of their might.

6. (Therefore) one energy encountering the other is neutralising (each other). O Bharata. (We are) incapable of putting down the Pandava's army by force.

7. So long as the sons of Pandu are alive. What I tell you is true. The sons of Pandu are fighting for their own sake and they are very competent also.

8. Why will not they, therefore, destroy your troops, O Bharata? O descendant of Kuru, O king, you are most avaricious, deceitful.

9. Self-conceited and suspicious of everybody. It is for this reason that you suspect ourselves too. O king, I deem you are a mean, wicked-souled and sinful person.

10. As you are mean and your thoughts are sinful you suspect ourselves and others. (However) for your sake, regardless of my very life I will do my best.

11. O foremost of Kurus, I am now going to fight for your sake. I will engage with your foes and destroy a large number of your enemies.

12. In order to do what is agreeable to you, O chastiser of foes, I will fight with the Panchalas, the Somakas as well as with the Kaikeyas and the Pandavas, in battle.

13. Today the Chedis, the Panchalas and the Somakas, scorched with my darts, like cows afflicted by a lion, will fly on all sides.

14. Witnessing my prowess today, king (Yudhishtira), the son of Dharma, together with the Somakas, will deem the whole world full of Ashvatthamas.

15. Beholding the destruction of the Panchalas as well as of the Somakas in battle, Yudhishtira, the lord of Dharma, will experience a great pain.

16. O Bharata, I will destroy all those that will confront me in battle. O hero, afflicted with the prowess of my arms no one shall escape.

17. Having thus addressed your son Duryodhana, that one, possessed of mighty arms (i.e., Ashvatthama), distressing all bow men, proceeded to battle.

18. (And) that foremost of those that bear life was desirous of doing what was agreeable to your sons. Then the son of Goutama's daughter said thus to the Panchalas together with the Kaikeyas.

19. All of you, O mighty car-warriors, strike me in the body and displaying your dexterity in handling weapons engage in battle with calmness.

20. Thus addressed (by Ashvatthama), all of them, O great monarch, began to discharge showers of weapons upon the son of Drona as clouds pour down showers of rain.

21. having destroyed those (showers of weapons), the son of Drona, even in the very presence of the sons of Drona, even in the very presence of the sons of Pandu and in that of Dhristadyumna, slew ten (warriors) among them in battle, O lord.

22. Sore oppressed in battle, the Panchalas and the Somakas, abandoning the son of Drona, took to flight in ten directions.

23. Witnessing the flight of those heroes that is, the Panchalas and the Somakas, Dhristadyumna, O great king, rushed against the son of Drona in that battle.

24. Then surrounded by one hundred heroic and unretreating car-warriors riding on cars adorned with gold and the rattle of which resembled the roar of clouds full of rain:

25. That great car-warrior, Dhristadyumna, the son of the king of Panchala, beholding the carnage of his warriors, said these words to the son of Drona.

26. O son of the preceptor, O you that are possessed of wicked understanding, why are you slaughtering the common soldiers? If you are (really) a hero, then fight with me in battle.

27-29. I will (surely) slay you. Now stay (here) and be quiet." The puissant Dhristadyumna, the, struck the son of the preceptor with keen and highly dreadful arrows capable of piercing the vital parts. (And) those thick flights of arrows, moving swiftly, furnished with golden wings, having keen points and capable of riving all the parts of the body, pierced (through the body of) the son of Drona like maddened black-bees seeking for honey—entering into a flowering tree.

30. The proud and dauntless son of Drona, (thus) deeply pierced (with Dhristadyumna's

arrows) became as enraged as a serpent crushed by foot and (then), arrow in hand, thus said

31. O Dhristadyumna, wait a moment quietly before I send "you to the abode of Yama with sharpened darts."

32. having thus addressed the son of Prishata, the son of Drona, the slayer of hostile heroes, like one endued with great nimbleness of hand, covered him completely with deluges of arrows.

33. Thus covered (with arrows) in that battle by the son of Drona, the son of the Panchala king, invincible in battle, thundered forth these words to the son of Drona.

34. O Brahmana, you are neither aware of my promise nor of my origin. Of wicked understanding as you are, I will slay you after killing Drona.

35. I will not therefore slay you today in battle, since Drona is alive. O man of greatly vicious understanding, at the expiration of this night, when the bright dawn will appear.

36. I will (first) slay your father and then send yourself too, in battle, to the abode of the departed spirits, I chariot this (thought) in my mind.

37. Now assuming a quiet attitude show all your hatred towards the sons of Pritha and your devotion towards the Kauravas. You will not escape alive (from me).

38. That twice-born one, who giving up the practices of the Brahmana, gives himself up to the practices of the Kshaytrias, deserves to be slain by all the Kshaytrias like you, O vilest of men."

39. That foremost of the twice-born ones (i.e. Ashvatthama), thus addressed in harsh words by the son of Prishata, became terrible excited with wrath and said (to Dhristadyumna) "Wait, wait."

40. (And) as if to burn the son of Prishata with his eyes, he gazed at him. Heaving sighs like a snake he covered (Dhristadyumna with arrows) in that battle.

41. Though that foremost of car-warriors, the son of Prishata, who was surrounded by all



the Panchala troops, was (thus) struck with arrows by the son of Drona in that battle.

42. (Yet) that mighty-armed one did not tremble; (but) resorting to his own prowess discharged at Ashvatthama numerous arrows.

43. Those two (warriors), who resisted each other, baffled the arrowy showers of each other and could not tolerate each other, were engaged in the game of battle in which the wager was life itself.

44-45. Those two mighty wielders of bow poured down showers of arrows on a sides. Beholding the fight between the son of Drona and that of Prishata which was awe-inspiring and dreadful to look at, the Siddhas, the Charanas and the (other) sky-ranging creatures highly extolled them. Filling the firmament and (all) the directions with a downpour of arrows.

46. And creating a great darkness with the shafts, they fought with one another unobserved (by other combatants). As if dancing in battle and drawing their bows to circles.

47. And bent on killing each other and filling all the creatures with consternation, those two mighty-armed (heroes) fought admirably and with (great nimbleness and dexterity).

48. (And they) were highly adored by thousands of foremost of warriors in battle. Seeing them engaged in battle like two wild elephants (encountering each other) in the forest.

49. Both the armies experienced a great delight. The soldiers emitted forth roars like lions and blew their conches.

50. And sounded hundreds and thousands of musical instruments. And in that terrific battle enhancing the terror of the coward.

51-52. The encounter (between the sons of Drona and Prishata) seemed to go on equally for a moment only. Then O mighty monarch, the son of Drona, cutting off the bow, the standard, the umbrellas, the two Parshni drivers, the charioteer and the four steeds of the high-souled son of Prishata in battle, rushed against him.

53-54. And that one, of immeasurable soul, began to afflict all those Panchalas in hundreds and thousands with his straight coursing arrows. Then the army of the Pandavas, beholding that brilliant exploit, resembling that of Vasava, achieved by the son of Drona in battle, became greatly dejected, O the most exalted of the Bharatas.

55. Destroying one hundred mighty car-warriors of the Panchalas with a hundred arrows and slaying three foremost of (their) men with three sharpened arrows.

56. In the very presence of Phalguna and of the son of Drupada, the son of Drona slaughtered all those Panchalas who had confronted him.

57. Thus slaughtered in battle, the Panchalas together with the Srinjayas fled from the son of Drona, on their cars with their standards cut down.

58. Having defeated his enemies in battle, that mighty car-warrior, the son of Drona, began to send forth thundering roars like those of the clouds at the end of summer.

59. Having destroyed numerous heroes, Ashvatthama shone like the fire at the end of a Yuga after having consumed all the creatures.

60. Highly adored by the Kauravas after having vanquished thousands of enemies in battle, the puissant son of Drona shone like the lord of the celestials himself after the destruction of his foes.

## CHAPTER 161

(GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)-

Continued

### The close engagement

Sanjaya said

1. Then, O great monarch, king Yudhishtira and Bhimasena the son of Pandu hemmed in the son of Drona on all sides.

2. King Duryodhana, then, accompanied by the son of Bharadvaja, advanced against the Pandavas in battle. Then commenced a fight.

3. Terrible to look at, highly dreadful and increasing the terror of the cowards. Large numbers of the Ambhastas, the Malavas the Vangas, the Sivas and the Trigartas.

4-5. Were wrathfully sent by Yudhishtira to the region of Death. Cutting off (into pieces) the Abhisahas, the Surasenas and (other) Kshatriyas invincible in battle Bhima made the earth muddy with blood. (And) O king the Yaudheyas, the mountaineers, the Madrakas and the Malavas.

6. Were sent by the diadem-decked Shetavahana to the domains of Death. Deeply pierced with straight-coursing arrows.

7. The tusked dropped (dead) on the ground like mountain peaks, with the chopped-off trunks of elephants, still moving to and fro (in convulsions).

8. The earth, being strewn all over, seemed to be full of snakes, moving about, with the fallen royal umbrellas decked with gold.

9. The field, being scattered all over looked (beautiful) like the firmament studded with (innumerable) suns, moons and stars at the end of a Yuga. "Slay, strike dauntlessly, pierce and cut to pieces."

10. These (and similar other) tumultuous uproars arose near the car of Shonasya (i.e. Drona). Getting terribly enraged, Drona also, by means of Vayaveya weapon, in that encounter.

11. Began, like a furious hurricane (chasing away) the clouds, to destroy his enemies. (Thus slaughter by Drona, the Panchalas fled away from terror.

12. In the very presence of Bhimasena and of the high-souled Partha. (Then) that one who wore a coronet (i.e. Arjuna and Bhimasena, rallying (their troops) all on a sudden.

13. Attacked the large army (of Drona) with a mighty car force. Vibhatsu attacking the right and Vrikodara the left flank (of Drona's army).

14. They rained upon the son of Bharadvaja two mighty downpours of arrows. Then the Srinjayas and those great car-warriors, the Panchalas.

15. And the Matsyas together with the Somakas followed. In like manner, (many) car-warriors, who wore (efficient) smiters on the side of your son.

16. (Followed) by a vast army, O king, proceeded towards the car of Drona. Then that Bharata army slaughtered by Kiriti (i.e., Arjuna who wore a coronet).

17. (Overcome) with sleep and bewildered by darkness began once more to disperse. In spite of (the endeavours of) Drona and your son himself to prevent (their fight),

18. They were unable to rally the combatants, O mighty monarch. That vast army, slaughter with arrows by the son of Pandu.

19. Took to flight in all directions when the world was enveloped in darkness. Hundreds of kings, leaving their conveyances, fled away, O great monarch, in terror, on all side.

## CHAPTER 162

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)- Continued

#### The slaughter of Somadatta at the nocturnal fight

Sanjaya said

1. Seeing Somadatta angrily shake his great bow, Satyaki said to his charioteer "Bear me towards Somadatta.

2. O charioteer, I will not return from battle today without killing my enemy—the vilest of the Kurus, the son of Valhika. These my words are true.

3. Thereupon, (his) charioteer drove to the battle those horses of Sindhu breed endowed with great fleetness, having the colour of the conch and capable of bearing all the weapons.

4. Those (steeds), fleet as the mind or the wind, carried Yuyudhana (to the field of battle) as the horses of Indra, O king, had, in days of yore, borne him who was preparing to slay the Asuras.

5. Beholding Sattvata quickly proceed against him to battle, Somadatta, O mighty monarch, confronted him undauntedly.

6. Discharging a shower of arrows as the clouds (pour down) torrents of rain, he (i.e., Somadatta) covered the grandson of Sini like the clouds (covering the sun).

7. O best of the Bharatas, the dauntless Satyaki also completely covered that most exalted the Kurus with arrowy showers in that battle.

8. Somadatta also pierced the descendant of Madhu in the chest with sixty arrows. Satyaki, too, O king, pierced him with keen darts.

9. Pierced by each other with each other's arrows, they looked like two blossoming Kinsuka trees in the following season.

10. With their bodies covered all over with blood, those two renowned descendants of Kuru and Vrishni eyed at each other as if (desirous of) consuming each other with their glances.

11. Those two dreadful-looking grinder of foes ranging on their cars coursing in circles, looked like two clouds pouring (torrents of) rain.

12. With their bodies pierced, mangled and wounded with shafts, they looked, O king of kings, like two hedge hogs.

13. Pierced with shafts endued with golden wings, those two (heroes), O monarch, looked as (beautiful) two lords of the forest covered with glow-worms during the rainy season.

14. Their bodies looking resplendent with arrows (they were pierced with) those two great car-warriors appeared in that battle, like two furious elephants with their bodies covered all over with (blazing) meteors.

15. Then, O great monarch, in that encounter, the mighty car-warrior Somadatta cut-off with crescent-shaped arrows the great bow of the descendant of Madhu.

16. (He) then pierced him with twenty five darts and at that time when speed was (urgently) necessary, he again speedily pierced him with ten (more) arrows.

17. Thereupon Satyaki, taking up a very strong bow, speedily pierced Somadatta with five arrows.

18. Then again, O king, Satyaki, as if with a smile in that battle, cut down with another broad-headed shafts the golden standard of the son of Balhika.

19. Seeing his standard cut down Somadatta fearlessly pierced the grandson of Sini with twenty-five arrows.

20. Filled with wrath, Satyaki also, in that engagement, cut-off with a keen and razor-faced shaft, the bow of the (great) bowman Somadatta.

21. He then, O great king, pierced him (i.e. Somadatta), who then looked like a snake with its fangs broken, with one hundred straight-coursing arrows furnished with golden wings.

22. Thereupon the greatly puissant Somadatta, the great car-warrior, taking up another bow, covered Satyaki with downpours of shafts.

23. Satyaki also, getting greatly excited with wrath, pierced Somadatta in that battle. Somadatta, on his part, afflicted Satyaki with showers of arrows.

24. Bhima also, for the sake of Sattvata, struck the son of Valhika with ten arrows. And the dauntless Somadatta also pierced Bhima with sharpened arrows.

25. Thereupon Satyaki, excited with wrath, discharged at the chest of Somadatta. a new, strong and formidable Parigha furnished with a golden handle.

26. (But the descendant of Kuru), as if with a smile, cut-off into two parts, in that engagement, that dreadful-looking Parigha so it was advancing against him.

27. Thus severed into two parts, that great Parigha of iron, fell down (on the ground) like the great peak of a mountain riven by thunder.

28. Then, in the engagement, O king, Satyaki cut-off the bow of Somadatta with one broad-headed arrows and with another five the leathern case that sheathed his fingers.

29. Then with four darts he speedily sent before the lord of the departed spirit the four excellent horses (of Somadatta).

30. And, O Bharata, that foremost of car-warriors, as if with a smile, cut-off, with a broad-headed and straight-coursing arrow, the head of his charioteer from the trunk.

31. He then discharged (at Somadatta himself) a highly dreadful arrow, blazing like the fire, furnished with golden wings, bathed in oil and sharpened on stone.

32. Shot with great force by the grandson of Sini that excellent and formidable shaft, darted like a falcon, at the chest of Somadatta.

33. The great car-warrior Somadatta, deeply pierced by the puissant Satvata, fell down (from his car) and died, O great king.

34. Seeing Somadatta slain there, your soldiers proceeded against Yuyudhana with a large number of cars.

35. The Pandavas also, O mighty monarch, accompanied by all the Prabhadrakas and by a large army, made a rush upon Drona's division.

36. Then, Yudhishtira, filled with rage, began to crush the troops of the son of Bharadvaja with arrows in the very presence of Bharadvaja's son.

37. Seeing his troops put to rout by Yudhishtira, Drona, with eyes, blood-shot in wrath, furiously rushed against him.

38. Then, (Drona) pierced the son of Pritha with seven sharpened darts. Yudhishtira also, inflamed with rage, pierced him in return with five (arrows).

39. That mighty bowman, being (thus) deeply pierced, for a moment licked the corners of his mouth and (then) cut-off the standard and also the bow of Yudhishtira.

40. Deprived of his bows, that excellent king took up another tough and strong bow, with great speed when speed was highly necessary.

41. Then with a thousand shafts, the son of Pandu pierced Drona together with his horses, charioteer, standard and car and this (feat on the part of Yudhishtira) seemed marvellous.

42. In consequence of the strokes of those darts, Drona, the foremost of the Brahmanas,

being (greatly) pained, sank unconsciously for a moment on the terrace of his car.

43. Then regaining his consciousness, heaving sighs like a snake and excited with a terrible wrath, he brought into existence the weapon presided over by Vayu.

44. But the dauntless and puissant son of Pritha, in that fight taking up his bow, checked the career of that weapon with one of his own.

45. And the son of Pandu also cut-off the large bow of that Brahmana. Drona, the grinder of the Kshatriyas then, having taken up another bow.

46. The best of the Kurus cut-off that also with a keen and broad-headed shaft, Then Vasudeva, addressed Yudhishtira, the son of Kunti, thus—

47. "O mighty armed Yudhishtira, hear what I tell you. O foremost of the Bharatas, do not fight with Drona.

48. Drona has been all along trying to capture you in battle. I do not think it proper for you to fight with him.

49. He, that has been created for his destruction, will slay him. Leaving your preceptor go (to the spot) were king Suyodhana is (fighting).

50. Kings ought to fight with kings (only); and they should not desire to fight with those that are not kings. O son of Kunti, surrounded by elephants, horses and cars, go to that spot.

51. Where Dhananjaya and that most valiant of men, Bhima, with myself only to help them are fighting with (all) the Kauravas.

52-53. Hearing these words of Vasudeva, the virtuous king Yudhishtira reflected for a moment and then proceeded towards the spot where the battle was raging hot and furious and where, Bhima, the slayer of his foes, taking up his station, was destroying your warriors like the (grim) Destroyer with gaping mouth.

54. Ringing the surface of the earth with the thundering rattle of his car like the roar of the clouds at the end of summer, that king of kings, Yudhishtira.

55. The son of Pandu, took up his station at the flank of Bhima who was destroying the foes. Drona also began, at that night, to destroy his enemies, the Panchalas.

## CHAPTER 163

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The lighting up of the troops

**Sanjaya said**

1. That terrible and awe-inspiring battle having taken place when the world was enveloped with darkness and dust, O lord of the earth.

2. The warriors, who remained (on the field of battle) could not distinguish one another. It was by conjecture and uttering their names that those foremost of the Kshatriyas fought with one another.

3. When that terrible destruction of men, horses, elephants and foot-soldiers was going on, those heroes viz., Drona, Karna, Kripa, Bhima, the son of Prishata and Satvata.

4. Began, O best of the Bharatas, to afflict each other and the troops. The soldiers, (thus) terribly slaughtered by those great car-warriors.

5. And surrounded by that dense gloom, took to flight in all directions. And with their minds (greatly) agitated (with terror) they ran away on all sides.

6. And, O great king, while flying away in all directions they were (pursued) and killed. In that engagement thousands of great car-warriors slaughter one another.

7. (And) in that blinding darkness, (the soldiers) lost their senses. (All this is no doubt due to) the evil counsels of your son. And that (dismal) darkness prevailing all around, all the creatures, may the very foremost of the combatants themselves, O Bharata, were seized with terror and their senses forsook them, O Bharata in that battle.

**Dhritarashtra said**

8. When drowned in that blinding darkness you were agitated by the Pandavas and were

deprived of your energy, what became the state of your minds?

9. When the world was thus enveloped with darkness, how, O Sanjaya, their and my armies were disclosed to view again!

**Sanjaya said**

10. Then all the survivors of the slaughtered army (of the Kurus) were, in obedience to the order of their commanders, again drawn up in battle array.

11. And Drona (took his station) at the van, Shalya at the rear and the sons of Drona and Subala (respectively placed themselves) at the right and left flanks (of that array). And king (Duryodhana) himself, O monarch, was, during that night, engaged in protecting all the troops.

12. (And) consoling all the foot-soldiers and also the lords of the earth, Duryodhana said to them "leaving aside your great weapons, take in hand blazing lamps."

13. In obedience to the command of that foremost of kings they gladly took (burning) lamps, in their hands. large numbers of celestials, sages, Gandharvas and Rishis and hosts of Vidyadharas, Apsaras.

14. Nagas, Yakshas, Urugas and Kinnaras, stationed in the firmament, cheerfully took up lamps. Lamps, filled with perfumed oil, were seen to fall from (the lands of) the regents of the cardinal points.

15. Specially Narada and Parvata sent down for the sake of the foremost of the Kurus many such lamps, dispelling the darkness. On that night, the army (of the Kurus) looked brilliant by virtue of the lustre of these lamps.

16. The precious ornaments (worn by the combatants) and of the blazing celestial weapons that were hurled (by the Kaurava army against their enemies). Five lamps were placed on each car and three on each maddened elephants.

17. Upon each horse (was placed) a huge lamp. It was in this way that the Kuru warriors were illuminated. The lamps, being thus placed in due order, very lighted up your army.

18. Nay, all the troops thus disclosed to view by the foot-soldiers carrying oilified lamps in their hands, looked as brilliant as the clouds in the firmament during the night with flashes of lightning (plying amidst them).

19. When the army was thus lighted up, Drona, like the fire, scorching everything around, looked resplendent, O king of kings, with his golden armour on, like the mid-day sun of blazing rays.

20. The lustre of the lamps (falling upon the golden ornaments) the bright cuirasses and bow and the will-tempered weapons, was reflected from them.

21. The rays (of these lamps) falling upon maces entwined with strings, bright Parighas, cars and darts as they whirled along, created innumerable lamps.

22. O king, umbrellas and yak-tails and scimitars and flaming brands and necklaces of gold as they were being whirled looked exceedingly brilliant.

23. And, O king, that army illuminated by the lustre of the weapons, by the splendour of those lamps and by the brilliancy of the ornaments, looked highly resplendent.

24. Well-tempered and beautiful weapons dyed with blood and wielded by the warriors shed a blazing lustre like flashes of lightning in the firmament at the end of the hot season.

25. The faces, of the combatants who were trembling by the impetuosity of their speed and rushing furiously against their enemies striking them down, shone at that time like great lotuses shaken by the wind.

26. On that dreadful night that army blazed up (by the light of those lamps) looked as terrible as the splendour of the sun during the progress of the conflagration of a great forest teeming with trees.

27. Seeing our army (thus) lighted up, the sons of Pritha urging all their foot-soldiers through their entire army, acted in the same way (as we did).

28. (And they) placed seven lamps on each elephant, ten on each car, two on the back of

every horse and many on the flank and rear and the standards.

29. (Innumerable) blazing lamps were placed on the flanks and the rear and the van of and within and all around the entire army. Thus were the two hosts lighted up.

30. Through the entire army, the infantry became mixed up with throngs of elephants, cars and horses. And like them (i.e. the foot-soldiers) several other persons, also taking flaming brands in their hands, lighted up the army of the son of Pandu.

31. By virtue of (the lustre of) those lamps that army became fiercely blazed up like a blazing fire made fiercely illuminated by the rays of the sun, the maker of day.

32. The splendour of those two (armies) reaching beyond the earth, the firmament and all the cardinal points began to increase. By that light their army as well as yours became clearly disclosed to view.

33. Ali the celestials, the Gandharvas, the Yakshas, the gods, the Siddhas and the Apsaras, awakened by that light which reached the skies, appeared on the scene.

34. The field of battle, thronged with the celestials, the Gandharvas, the Yakshas, the Siddhas, the Apsaras and the spirits of the dead combatants about to enter the celestials regions, appeared like a second heaven.

35. Crowded with cars, horses and elephants lighted up by these lamps and (teeming with) furious warriors and steeds slain or careering madly, that mighty host, consisting of men, horses and elephants drawn up in battle array, looked like the array of the celestials and the Asuras (in days of yore).

36. That nocturnal battle between the god-like combatants raged furiously like a tempest. The rush of arrows formed its fierce winds, the mighty car-warriors and elephants its clouds, the shafts its showers and the blood (of the combatants and the animals) its torrent of rain.

37-38. In that encounter that foremost of the Brahmanas, he magnanimous (Drona) endued with the energy of a great fire began to afflict

the Pandavas like the noon day sun, (scorching everything) at the end of the rainy season.

## CHAPTER 164

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The close fight

##### Sanjaya said

1. The field of battle, which had been before buried in darkness and dust, being thus lighted up (by the lustre of those lamps, heroic combatants, desirous of slaying one another, encountered one another (in battle).

2. Taking up their lances, swords and (other) weapons and encountering one another, they looked wrathfully at one another in battle, O king.

3. With thousands of lamps shedding their lustre all around and placed upon golden steeds adorned with gems and fed with fragrant oil.

4. And with the lamps sent down by the celestials and the Gandharvas which were more lustrous and brilliant, the field of battle, O Bharata, looked as beautiful as the firmament studded with planets and stars.

5. The field of battle, lighted up by hundreds of blazing brands, looked resplendent. Indeed, the earth seemed to be on fire like what happens at the time of universal destruction.

6. All the points illuminated by (the light of) those lamps all around, looked (beautiful) like trees teeming with glow-worms on an evening of the rainy season.

7. The, O monarch, brave warriors engaged with brave warriors. Elephants encountered elephants, horsemen (encountered) horsemen.

8. and car-warriors joyfully engaged with one another, during the dreadful night at the command of your son.

9. Terrific, (indeed) was the clash of the two armies, (each) consisting of four (kinds of) forces. Then, O great king, Arjuna, vanquishing all the kings (on your son's side), began quickly to destroy the army of the Kauravas.

##### Dhritarastra said

10. What, (O Sanjaya) became the state of your minds when, filled with rage, the invincible one (i.e. Arjuna) entered into my son's army?

11. What did (my) forces do then when that sorcerer of foes penetrated into them? (And) what course, (best) suited to that occasion, did Duryodhana think to adopt?

12. What chastisers of foes opposed (the career of) that hero? Who were they that protected Drona when Shetavahana entered (into our army)?

13. Who were they that protected the right and the left car-wheels of Drona? Who were those heroes that protected the rear of that hero when he was engaged in fighting?

14-15. Indeed, when that invincible, puissant and mighty bowman, endued with the valour of a tiger, penetrated into the midst of the Panchalas, dancing as it were along the track of his car and destroying his enemies in battle, who were they that came to his front? How did Drona who consumed large troops of cars of the Panchalas.

16. Like a wrathful meteor, meet with his death? You always describe my enemies as cool, unvanquished.

17-18. Cheerful and impetuous in battle. But, O Sanjaya, you do not speak so of my warriors. You speak of them as slain, pale and routed and of my car-warriors as (always) made car-less in the battle?

##### Sanjaya said

19. Aware of the intentions of Drona as desirous of fighting during that night, Duryodhana, O mighty monarch, addressed his obedient brothers.

20. (Namely) Vikarna, Chitrasena, Suparsa, Durdharsha and Dirghabahu and all their followers saying–

21. O powerful (heroes), all of your carefully protect Drona from the rear. Let the son of Hridika (protect) his right car-wheel and Shalya the left.

22. Then your son commanded all the survivors of the heroic Trigarta warriors to place themselves in the van (saying).

23. The preceptor is of benevolent disposition and the Pandavas are trying their utmost (to slay him). United together you will protect him while he will be engaged in destroying his enemies in battle.

24. Drona is powerful in battle, is endued with nimbleness of hand and is puissant. Not to speak of Pandavas united with the Somakas, he is competent to vanquish even the very gods in battle.

25. United together and exerting your very best in (this) dreadful engagement, all of you protect Drona from that invincible and mighty car-warrior Dhristadyumna.

26. I do not find any one among the warriors of the Pandavas except Dhristadyumna, that is capable of defeating Drona in battle.

27. I therefore think we should apply our whole heart and soul to protection of the son of Bharadvaja. (If) protected (by us) he will gradually destroy the Somakas as well as the Srinjayas.

28. When all the Srinjayas, (placed) in the van of the (Pandava) army will be destroyed, the son of Drona will undoubtedly slay Dhristadyumna in battle.

29. Similarly the great car-warrior Karna will vanquish Arjuna in battle. (And) I will myself destroy Bhimasena and others clad in mail in battle.

30. The remaining Pandavas, destitute of energy, will be easily subjugated by (my) warriors. My success, then, will last for a long time. 30. Therefore protect (carefully) the mighty car-warrior Drona in battle." Thus addressing (his soldiers), your son Duryodhana, O foremost of the descendants of Bharata.

31. Then commanded his army (to act in obedience to his orders) during that dreadfully dark night. Then, O most exalted of Bharatas, took place a battle.

32-35. Between the two armies, both desirous of victory, O king, Arjuna, (then),

began to sorely assailed the army of the Kauravas and Arjuna, with numerous (sorts of) weapons. (And) in that engagement the son of Drona began to cover the Panchala king and the son of Bharadvaja, the Srinjayas, with straight arrows. (And) O Bharata, as the armies of the Pandavas and the Panchalas (on one side) and that of the Kauravas (on the other).

36. Fell to destroying one another there arose a dreadful uproar. Neither ourselves nor those who preceded us, had (previously) witnessed such a furious and dreadful battle as took place during that night.

## CHAPTER 165

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)– Continued

#### The retreat of Yudhishtira

Sanjaya said

1-2. When, O lord of the earth, that terrific nocturnal battle, destructive of all the creatures, was raging, Yudhishtira, the son of Dharma, spoke to the (other) Pandavas and the united Panchalas and Somakas, O monarch, for the destruction of men, cars and elephants, "make a rush upon Drona only in order to slay him."

3. In obedience to the commands of the king, the Panchalas as well as the Srinjayas O monarch, sending forth thundering roars, rushed against Drona alone.

4. We two, on our part, roaring in return and filled with wrath, rushed against them, in battle, to the full measure of our prowess, enthusiasm and courage.

5. Kritavarman, the son of Hridika, rushed against Yudhishtira as he was advancing against Drona like a mad elephant against its infuriate rival.

6. (Similarly), O king, Bhuri, the crusher (of his foes) in battle who belonged to the Kuru party rushed against the grandson of Sini (as he came forward) scattering showers of arrows on all sides.

7. Again, O king, Karna, the son of Vikartana, checked that mighty car-warriors



Sahadeva, the son of Pandu, as he, actuated with the desire of taking Drona, was advancing (against him).

8. Duryodhana himself rushed against Bhimasena, the foremost of car-warriors, in that engagement, who was advancing on his car (against Drona) like the grim Destroyer.

9. Shakuni, the son of Subala, O king, quickly opposed Nakula, the best of warriors and skilled in every (sort of) battle.

10. Similarly, in that encounter, Kripa, the son of Saradvata, opposed Shikhandi, the foremost of car-warriors, (who was) advancing on his car, O king.

11. In like manner, O great monarch, Dushasana, with utmost exertions, checked Prativindhya, who was resolutely advancing (on his car drawn by) heroes, (beautiful) as peacocks.

12. Similarly, O mighty monarch, Ashvatthama checked the career of the son of Bhimasena, viz., the Rakshasa (Ghatotkacha) skilled in a hundred sorts of illusions.

13. In that engagement Vrishasena resisted the highly puissant Drupada, (who) accompanied by his troops and retainers, (advanced forward) with the desire of slaying Drona.

14. O Bharata, O great monarch, the king of Madra, inflamed with rage, opposed Virata who was advancing quickly for slaying Drona.

15. Similarly, in that encounter, Chitrasena, with showers of arrows, checked the impetuous Sataneeka the son of Nakula, as he was advancing for the purpose of taking the life of Drona.

16. O great king, Alambusha, the lord of the Rakshasas, resisted the rapid career of the mighty car-warrior Arjuna, the foremost of warriors.

17. Then Dhristadyumna, the son of the Panchala king, gladly resisted the mighty bowman Drona (who was) destroying his enemies.

18. Similarly, O king, your car-warriors energetically opposed other great car-warriors

of the sons of Pandu, who were advancing (Against Drona).

19. Hundreds and thousands of warriors, mounted on elephants, speedily encountering riders on elephants in that great engagement, began to fight with and crush one another.

20. O king, at dead of night, horses, rushing furiously against one another, looked like mountains endued with wings.

21. O mighty monarch, taking up lances, darts and swords in their hands and sending forth loud shouts, horsemen closed with horsemen.

22. There (on the field of battle) large numbers of men destroyed one another in heaps, by means of maces, short clubs and several other weapons.

23. Kritavarma, the son of Hridika, inflamed with rage, resisted Yudhishtira, the son of Dharma, as the place between the high and the low tide-marks (resists) the ocean.

24. Yudhishtira, also piercing the son of Hridika with five darts and again piercing him with twenty (more), said - "wait, wait."

25. O worshipful sire, Kritavarma too, fired with rage, cut-off the bow of the Dharmaraja with a broad-headed dart and then pierced him with seven (arrows).

26. Then that mighty car-warrior, that is, the son of Dharma, taking up another bow, struck the son of Hridika on the arms and the chest with ten arrows.

27. Pierced in (that) battle by the son of Dharma, O worshipful sire, the descendant of Madhu (i.e. Kritavarma) trembled in ire and (then) afflicted (Yudhishtira) with seven arrows.

28. The son of Pritha (however), cutting off his bow and armlet, shot at him, O king, five keen and broad-headed shafts sharpened on stone.

29. Penetrating through his precious armour ornamented with gold, those fierce shafts entered into the earth like snakes (entering into) ant-hill.

30. Taking up another bow in the twinkling of an eye, he pierced the son of Pandu with six and again with ten arrows.

31. Then that Pandava, of immeasurable soul, placing his mighty bow on the car, hurled at him (i.e. Kritavarman) a dart (fierce) as a snake.

32. Hurling by the son of Pandu that formidable (dart) ornamented with gold, penetrating through the right arm (of Kritavarma) entered into the bottom of the earth.

33. In the meantime, the son of Pritha, taking up his mighty bow covered the son of Hridika with straight shafts.

34. Then there (on the field of battle) that hero, that foremost car-warrior among the Vrishnis, within half the time of the twinkling of an eye, deprived Yudhishtira of his horse, driver and car.

35. Then the eldest son of Pandu took up a sword and shield. But the descendant of Madhu cut-off those two with sharpened and broad headed shafts in that battle.

36. Thereupon, taking up a formidable lance furnished with a golden handle, (Yudhishtira) hurled it, quickly in that engagement, against the high-souled son of Hridika.

37. (But) the light-handed son of Hridika, as if with a smile, cut-off into two parts, that (formidable lance), as it, hurled by the hand of Yudhishtira careered impetuously along.

38. Then, in that encounter, he covered the son of Dharma with hundreds of shafts; (and then), inflamed with ire he cut-off the armour of (Yudhishtira) with showers of arrows.

39. Cut off into a hundred fragments with the arrows of the son of Hridika, (the armour of Yudhishtira) ornamented with gold, fell down, scattered in that battle, O monarch (from its body) like a cluster of stars (dropping from) the sky.

40. With his coat of mail cut-off, deprived of his car and afflicted with the arrows of Krigavarma, Yudhishtira the son of Dharma, quickly withdrew from (the field of) battle.

41. Having defeated Yudhishtira, the son of Dharma, the mighty car-warrior Kritavarma again engaged himself in protecting the car-wheels of Drona.

## CHAPTER 166

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The retreat of Duryodhana

#### Sanjaya said

1. Bhuri also, O monarch, in (that) engagement, checked the grandson of Sini who was rushing along like an elephant (descending) from a gradually sloping ground.

2. Inflamed with wrath, Satyaki, then, pierced him in the heart with five sharpened arrows. (Thus struck) his blood began to flow.

3. Similarly, the descendant of Kuru (i.e. Bhurij, in (that) engagement, quickly pierced the grandson of Sini invincible in battle, in the chest, with ten darts.

4. (And), O great king, their eyes blood-shot in rage and drawing their bows powerfully, those two (heroes) began to mangle each other.

5. Inflamed with wrath and looking like Death (itself) or the sun, those two (warriors) commenced (to shower upon each other) terrible downpours of shafts, O mighty monarch.

6. The battle, O great king, between those two (heroes), who, covering each other (with arrows) stood (face to face) in (that) encounter, went on equally for a moment only.

7. Then, O mighty monarch, the grandson of Sini, fired with rage, cut-off, as it were, with a smile, the bow of that high-souled descendant of Kuru, in (that) engagement.

8. Then he quickly pierced that (warrior) whose bow was cut-off, in the chest, with nine sharpened arrows and said (to him) "wait, wait."

9. That scorcher of foes, (thus) deeply pierced by his powerful antagonist, took up another bow and pierced Satvata in return.

10. O lord of the earth, having pierced Satvata with three arrows, he cut-off his bow, as

it were, with a smile, by means of a very keen and broad-headed shaft.

11. O great king, his bow being (thus) cut-off, Satyaki, insensible with wrath, hurled an impetuous dart at the broad chest of that (Kuru hero).

12. His body being riven by that dart, he fell down from his excellent car like the blazing Mars (dropping down) from the firmament.

13. The mighty car-warrior Ashvatthama witnessing the slaughter of that hero, rushed impetuously, O descendant of Bharata, against the grandson of Shini.

14. O lord of men, saying "wait, wait" to Satyaki, he (i.e. Ashvatthama), covered him with downpours of arrows, like the clouds covering the breast of the (mountain) Meru with (showers of) rain.

15. (Thereupon), the mighty car-warrior Ghatotkacha, sending forth a loud shout, said to him (i.e., Ashvatthama) who was rushing furiously towards the car of the grandson of Shini.

16. "Wait, wait. O son of Drona, you shall not escape alive. I will presently destroy you as the six-faced (Kartikya) slew the (Asura) Mahisha in days of yore).

17. I will today put an end to your desire for fight on the field of battle." Saying this, the Rakshasa (Ghatotkacha), the slayer of hostile warriors-with his eyes red like copper in wrath.

18. And inflamed with rage, rushed against the son of Drona like lion (rushing against) a lord of elephants. Ghatotkacha (then), began to shower arrows, measuring the Aksha of a car, upon.

19-20. The son of Drona, the foremost of car-warriors as the clouds (pour down) showers of rain. The son of Drona, however, in that engagement, quickly baffled that arrowy down pour by means of shafts resembling poisonous snakes. Then with a hundred keen darts, capable of piercing the vital parts and coursing rapidly.

21. (He) pierced the subduer of foes, that is Ghatotkacha, the lord of the Rakshasas. The Rakshasa, thus pierced with shafts by him on the field of battle.

22. Looked, O great monarch, like the porcupine with its quills standing erect. Thereupon, the puissant son of Bhimasena, excited with rage.

23-26. Lacerated the son of Drona with fierce shafts emitting loud roar like those of the thunder. (and Ghatotkacha) showered (upon Drona's son) numerous sorts of weapons, some having heads like razors, some of the form of the crescent, some long and pointed, some with faces like the frogs, some resembling the bear's ear, some barbed and some of other species. The son of Drona, (however), without his senses being in the least affected, frustrated that formidable down pour of weans emitting loud roar like those of the thunder and which were being unremittingly hurled (upon, him), by means of (his own) dreadful shafts inspired with mantras peculiar to the celestial weapons, as, O mighty monarch, the wind (chases away) mighty masses of clouds. Then it appeared that another encounter was going on in the firmament between the arrows (shot by those two rival heroes).

27. Which (encounter) was of terrible aspect and which, O great king, enhanced the joy of the combatants with the sparks scattering all around generated by the clash of weapons hurled by those two (warriors).

28. The firmament looked (as beautiful) as if adorned with glow-worms during the night. Covering all the directions with innumerable arrows, the son of Drona.

29. In order to do good to your sons, shrouded the Rakshasa (Ghatotkacha). Then, between the son of Drona and the Rakshas, again took place a battle.

30-32. During that pitchy-dark night, like that (which had taken place) between Shakra and Prahada (in days of yore). Then, in that engagement, Ghatotkacha, inflamed with wrath, struck the son of Drona in the chest with ten arrows resembling the Yuga fire. The son of Drona, endued with great strength (thus) deeply pierced in that encounter by the Rakshasa, became (greatly) afflicted and trembled like a

tree shaken by the wind. Leaning against his flag-staff (for support), he fell into a swoon.

33. Thereupon all your forces, O lord of men, set up a loud wail. (And) all your partisans, O lord of the earth, thought him to be dead.

34. Seeing Ashvatthama in that state, the Panchalas as well as the Srinjayas, in that encounter, sent forth roars like lions.

35. Regaining his consciousness, that grinder of foes, the mighty car-warriors Ashvatthama, drawing powerfully his bow with the left hand.

36. Shot quickly from his bow, the string of which was) stretched up to the very ear, an excellent arrow, formidable as the rod of Yama, which was aimed at Ghatotkacha.

37. Riving the heart of the Rakshasa that excellent and formidable arrows, adorned with graceful wings, penetrated, O king, into the earth.

38. O great monarch, the puissant lord of the Rakshasas, pierced home by the son of Drona, proud of (his feats in) battle, sat down on the terrace of his car.

39. Seeing that the son of Hidimva had lost his consciousness, his charioteer, struck with fear, hastily removed him from the field of battle and from the presence of the son of Drona.

40. Having, in that engagement, thus pierced Ghatotkacha, the lord of the Rakshasas, that great car-warrior, the son of Drona sent forth a highly dreadful roar.

41. O Bharata, adored by your sons and all the warriors, his body shone brilliantly like the noon-day sun.

42. King Duryodhana himself pierced with keen arrows Bhimasena who was fighting his way, through your army, towards the car of the son of Bharadvaja.

43. O Bharata, Bhimasena pierced him in return with nine darts. Duryodhana also pierced him with twenty arrows.

44. Those two (horses), shrouded with arrows on the field of battle, looked like the sun

and the moon covered with masses of clouds in the firmament.

45. Then king Duryodhana pierced Bhima, O foremost of the descendants of Bharata, with five arrows and said (to him) "Wait, wait."

46. But Bhima, cutting off his bow and his standard with sharpened arrows, pierced the lord of the Kauravas with nine straight darts.

47-48. Thereupon, O best of the Bharatas, excited with rage, Duryodhana took up another bow of a battle quality and began to afflict Bhimasena (stationed) at the front (rank) of that battle with keen darts, in the very sight of all bowman. Bhima, (however) destroying those arrows shot from Duryodhana's bow.

49-50. Oppressed him with five and twenty short arrows. Duryodhana also, O worshipful sire, inflamed with ire, cut-off his bow with razor-shaped dart and then pierced him in return with ten (darts). Thereupon, the highly-powerful Bhimasena, taking up another bow.

51. Pierced quickly the king with seven sharpened arrows. But he (i.e. Duryodhana), displaying great nimbleness of hand, quickly cut-off that bow also.

52-53. Similarly, O mighty monarch, he cut-off the second, the third, the fourth and the fifty bows taken up by Bhima. And O great king, your son, desirous of success and swelling with pride, cut-off another bow as soon as it was taken up by Bhima. His bows being thus again and again cut-off (by Duryodhana) he i.e. Bhima.

54-55. In that engagement, hurled a formidable dart, made wholly of iron (at the Kaurava king).—The king of the Kurus, (however), cut into three fragments that dart, before it could reach him, that dart blazing like a flame of fire, looking (terrible) like the sister of Death herself and dividing the firmament with its fire like splendour into two parts like the trees of a woman parting the hair of her head.

56-58. In the very presence of all the world and before (the very eyes) of Bhima himself. Thereupon, O great king, Bhima, flourishing his

heavy and blazing mace, hurled it with great impetuosity at the car of Duryodhana. Then, in that engagement that heavy mace, all on a sudden, crushed the charioteer, the horses and the car (of the king). O lord of kings, your son, then afraid of Bhima, took to flight.

59. Mounted on another car belonging to the high-souled Naduka. Then Bhima, thinking Suyodhana to be dead amid (the darkness of) that night.

60. Roared furiously like a lion challenging the Kauravas. Your partisans and soldiers also thought that the king was slain.

61. And all of them set up a loud wail all around. Hearing the lamentation of all the combatants struck with terror.

62. And hearing also the yells of the high-souled Bhima, O monarch, king Yudhishtira, also, considered Suyodhana to have been slain.

63. And hastened with all speed to the place where Vrikodara, the son of Pritha was. Then, the Panchalas, the Srinjayas, the Matsyas as well as the Keykeyas.

64. Desirous of slaying Drona, rushed with all their mighty (against him). There also took place a highly dreadful encounter between Drona and his enemies. And the combatants, (of both sides) buried in pitchy darkness, began to slaughter one another.

## CHAPTER 167

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### Prowess of Sahadeva

#### Sanjaya said

1. Karna, the son of Vikartana, O king, checked in battle the great car-warrior Shahadeva who was advancing with the desire of slaying Drona.

2. Shahadeva, also piercing the son of Radha with nine arrows, pierced him again in that encounter with nine straight (shafts).

3. Karna (also) pierced him in return with a hundred straight arrows and then with great light-handedness quickly cut-off his strangled bow.

4. Thereupon the puissant son of Madri taking up another bow, pierced Karna with twenty shafts and this appeared wonderful.

5. (Then) Karna, having destroyed his horses with straight shafts, quickly sent his charioteer, with a broad-headed dart, to the abode of Yama.

6. Made carless (thus), Shahadeva then took up a scimitar and a shield. But (Karna) cut-off those (things) also with a smile.

7. Thereupon the highly-puissant Shahadeva, in that engagement, hurled a heavy and formidable mace ornamented with gold, at the car of the son of Vikartana.

8. Karna, however, cut-off with shafts that mace which, hurled by the Shahadeva, was making for him with great force and caused it to fall on the ground.

9. Seeing that his mace was cut-off, Shahadeva, with great haste, hurled a dart at Karna. But that too was cut-off with arrows (by Karna).

10. The son of Madri, then, speedily jumping down from his excellent car and burning with indignation, as it were, at the sight of Karna stationed (before him).

11. And taking up a car-wheel, discharged it at the son of Adhiratha. That (wheel), which was careering impetuously (towards him), like the upraised wheel of Death.

12. Was cut-off by the charioteer's son with many thousands arrows. The car-wheel being thus cut to pieces, Shahadeva then, O worshipful sire.

13-14. Aiming at Karna, hurled at him the shaft of his car, the harnesses of his steeds, the yokes of cars, the limbs of elephants and horses and also dead human bodies. (But) Karna destroyed all these with shafts. Well aware that he had no weapons (to fight with), the son of Madri, that is.

15. Shahadeva, resisted with arrows (by Karna) withdrew from the battle. The son of Radha, (however), pursuing (and overtaking) him, quickly in a moment, O best of the Bharatas.

16. Addressed these very cruel words with a smile, to Shahadeva—"O hero, do not engage in fight with superior car-warriors.

17. O son of Madri, you ought to fight with your equals (only). Do not mistrust my words." Then touching him with the end of his bow, he said again—

18. Yonder Arjuna is fighting resolutely with the Kurus. O son of Madri, either go there or return home, which ever you like.

19. Having addressed him thus, Karna, the foremost of car-warriors, advanced smilingly against the troops of the Panchala king.

20. Remembering the words of Kunti, that mighty car-warrior and slayer of foes in battle, firm in truth, did not, O king, slay the son of Madri though he could do so.

21. With his mind ill at ease, afflicted with darts and smitten with the words of Karna (poignant) as darts, Shahadeva lost all love for life.

22. (And) that great car-warrior in that battle, with great haste mounted the car of Janamejaya, the high-souled Panchalas.

## CHAPTER 168

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)—

#### Continued

#### Fight of Sahadeva

Sanjaya said

1. The king of Madra, with a down-pours of arrow, covered on all sides Virata, who, accompanied by his division, was proceeding quickly for (the slaughter of) Drona.

2. (And) between those two strong bowmen ensued a battle, O king, like that which had taken place between Bali and Vasava in days of yore.

3. The king of Madra, O great monarch, displaying great alacrity, quickly wounded Virata, the chief of a great force, with straight arrows.

4. King (Virata also) pierced him in return with nine sharpened arrows, again with seventy-three and once more with a hundred.

5. The king of Madra, (also) destroying the four horses of his car, cut down with two shafts, in that engagement, the umbrella and the standard (of Virata).

6. That lord of the earth (i.e., Virata) jumping down from his car, the steeds of which were destroyed, stood, drawing his bow and shooting keen darts.

7. Witnessing the destruction of his brother's steeds, Shatanika quickly came up (there), in the very sight of all the troops.

8. That lord of the earth, that is, the king of Madra, having with numerous shafts pierced Shatanika who was advancing (against him), sent him to the abode of Yama.

9. The heroic (Shatanika) being slain, Virata, the chief of a great force, (abandoning his steed-less car, ascended to that (of his brother). Then, his eyes rolling (in ire) and his strength doubled with indignation, (he) quickly covered the car of the king of Madra with arrows.

10. Therefore the king of Madra, inflamed with wrath, struck Virata, the chief of a large force, furiously in the chest with a hundred straight arrows.

11. The mighty car-warrior Virata thus pierced home by the puissant (Shalya) sat down on the terrace of his car and soon fainted away.

12. His charioteer then bore him (i.e. Virata) away who was mangled with arrows in battle. Then, O Bharata, during that night, that large army (of Virata) began to take to flight.

13. Slaughtered with hundreds of arrows by Shalya, that ornament of battle, witnessing the flight of that army, Vasudeva and Dhananjaya.

14. Came to that spot, O king of kings, where Shalya was. Against them both, O king, advanced Alambusha, the lord of the Rakshasas.

15. Riding on an excellent eight-wheeled car drawn by terrible-looking Pishachas having faced like those of cows.

16. That terrible car was furnished with blood-red banners, adorned with garlands made of black iron and covered with bear skins.

17. And it was furnished with a tall standard on which sat a fierce vulture of spotted wings,

having eyes wide open and shrieking incessantly.

18. That Rakshasa, who, O monarch, looked like a loose heap of antimony, checked the advancing Arjuna as the (mountain Meru (resists) a hurricane .

19. By incessant discharges of arrows, O king, on the head of Arjuna. The battle that commenced between the man (i.e. Arjuna) and the Rakshasa was exceedingly hot and furious.

20. Causing delight to all the lookers on there, O Bharata and filling the vultures and the crows and the ravens and the owls and the Kankas and the jackals with joy.

21. Arjuna, (then), struck Alamvusa with his arrows and with ten keen darts cut down his standard.

22. (And) with three darts he cut-off his charioteer, with three more his Trivenu, with one his bow and with four his horses.

23. (The Rakshasa) took up another stringed bow again but (Arjuna) cut it off in two fragments. Then O foremost of the Bharatas, with four sharpened arrows.

24. The son of Pritha pierced the lord of the Rakshasas, who, thus pierced, took to flight in terror. Having defeated him, Arjuna quickly advanced towards Drona.

25. Discharging numerous arrows, O king, at men, elephants and horses. O mighty monarch, slaughtered by that renowned Pandava.

26-27. The soldiers fell down like trees levelled (on the ground) by a storm. Thus slaughtered by that renowned Pandava all the soldiers (of your son) ran away like a terror-stricken herd of deer.

## CHAPTER 169

(GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)–

Continued

### The fight by Satnika and others

Sanjaya said

1. O Bharata, your son Chitrasena withstood Satnika, the son of Nakula, who was consuming your troops with keen arrows.

2. The son of Nakula pierced Chitrasena, with five arrows. He (i.e. Citrasena) also pierced him i.e. in return with ten sharpened arrows.

3. Once again, in that engagement Chitrasena, O mighty monarch, pierced Satanika in the chest with nine keen darts.

4. The son of Nakula, (also), with straight arrows cut-off his armour from his body and this feat seemed marvellous.

5. His armour being cut-off, your son O monarch, O lord of kings, looked as beautiful as a snake with its slough cast off in proper time.

6. The, O great king, the son of Nakula, cut-off, with sharpened arrows, the standard and the bow of that one i.e., Chitrasena who was exerting his utmost in that engagement.

7. That mighty car-warrior, deprived of his car and coat of mail and his bow cut-off, took up another very strong bow capable of piercing every foe.

8. Then Chitrasena, that great car-warrior among the Bharatas, quickly pierced the son of Nakula, in battle, with straight arrows.

9. The highly powerful Satanika, then inflamed with wrath, destroyed the four horses and also the charioteer of Chitrasena O Bharata.

10. Jumping down from his car, the highly-renowned Chitrasena, possessed of (great) strength, oppressed the son of Nakula with twenty-five arrows.

11. When he (i.e. Chitrasena) was achieving this feat, the son of Nakula, in that engagement, cut-off, with a crescent-shaped arrow, his shaft furnished with gold.

12. His bow cut-off and deprived of his car, steeds and charioteer, he (i.e. Chitrasena) quickly mounted on the car of the high-souled son of Hridika.

13. Then, O great king, Vrishasena, covered that great car-warrior Drupada, who, followed by his army, was advancing against Drona.

14. Yajnasena also, O lord, pierced in that battle, that mighty car-warrior, the son of Karna, in the arm and the chest with six arrows.

15. Thereupon inflamed with wrath, Vrishasena soon struck Yajnasena, stationed on his car, in the centre of his chest with numerous arrows.

16. O great king, those two heroes mangled with shafts and their bodies looking prickly with the darts sticking to them, looked beautiful like a couple of hedgehogs with their quills erect on their bodies, in that encounter.

17. Covered all over with blood flowing from the wounds caused by straight arrows furnished with golden wings and keen points, those two warriors in that great engagement, looked beautiful.

18. Like a pair of highly graceful and radiant Kalpa trees or a couple of Kinsuka trees rich with their burden of flowers.

19. Vrishasena them, O king, having pierced Drupada with nine arrows, pierced him again with seventy and once more with another three shafts.

20. Then, discharging thousands of arrows in that battle, the son of Karna, O mighty monarch, looked like cloud pouring torrents of rain.

21. Thereupon, Drupada, excited with wrath, cut-off the bow of Vrishasena into fragments by means of a sharpened and well-tempered broad-headed arrow.

22. He (then) taking up another new and strong bow, plaited with gold and taking out of his quiver a shining, well-tempered, strong, keen and broad-headed dart.

23. And adjusting it to the string and aiming at Drupada and drawing (his bow-string) up to the very ear, discharged it, striking terror into (the hearts of all the Somakas.

24. (That dart) riving his heart penetrated into the earth. The king (Drupada), thus wounded by Vrishasena, with dart, fell into a swoon.

25. Remembering the duty of (all) charioteers, his driver bore him away. O lord of kings, that great car-warrior among the Panchalas being (thus) defeated.

26. All the warriors (on your side), on that frightful night, rushed against the army of

Drupada having their coats of mail cut to pieces with arrows (of the enemy).

27. In virtue of the (lustre of the) lamps abandoned (by the combatants) and which were burning all around, the field shone resplendent like the cloud-less firmament studded with planets and stars.

28. Similarly, O great king, (strewn all over) with the fallen Angadas of the combatants, the field looked beautiful like a (mass of) clouds (enlivened) with flashes of lightning during the rainy season.

29. Then, seized with the fear of the son of Karna, (the Panchalas troops) ran away in all directions as the Danavas agitated with the fear of Indra (had fled away) in the battle between the gods and the Asuras.

30. Crushed in that battle by him (i.e. Vrishasena) the Panchalas together with the Somakas, illuminated by lamps, shone resplendent.

31. Having, O Bharata, defeated them in battle, the son of Karna, looked like the sun of scorching rays when he reaches the meridian.

32. Amongst the thousands of kings belonging to your party and that of your enemy, the puissant Vrishasena alone stood (on the field) like the blazing fire.

33. Having vanquished (innumerable) horses as well as those great car-warriors the Somakas, he (i.e. Vrishasena) hastened to the spot where king Yudhishtira was.

34. Your son Dushasana stood against that mighty car-warrior, the advancing Prativindhya, consuming his enemies in battle.

35. O king, the clash between looked as marvellous as that between Mercury and Venus in the cloudless sky.

36. In (that) battle, Prativindhya, who was achieving frightful feats, was pierced by Dushasana in the forehead with three arrows.

37. Pierced deeply by that powerful bowman, that is, your son, Prativindhya, O mighty monarch, looked like a mountain furnished with a peak.

38. The great car-warrior Prativindhya (also), in (that) battle, having pierced



Dushasana with nine arrows, pierced him again with seven.

39. There, O Bharata, your son performed a difficult feat in as much as he struck down the steeds of Prativindhya with fierce shafts.

40. (He then), with a broad-headed shaft, O king, struck down the charioteer and the standard and cut-off into minute fragments the car of that bowman.

41. (And), inflamed with rage (he) cut-off into very small fragments, with straight arrows, the flags, the quivers, the strings and the terraces, O lord, (of Prativindhya,s) car.

42. Made careless, the virtuous-souled (Prativindhya) stood, bow in hand and fought with your son by discharging many hundreds of shafts.

43. Your son, then) with (great) nimbleness of hand cut-off his bow with a razor-shaped arrow and then smote that one whose bow was cut-off, with ten darts.

44. Witnessing that (sad) plight that their brother was in, his brothers, who were great car-warriors, followed by a large army, rushed furiously to that place.

45. He then mounted the resplendent car of Sutasoma and O great king, taking up a bow, pierced your son.

46. Thereupon, all your warriors surrounding your son (in order to protect him) and followed by a great force, rushed (against the Pandavas).

47. Then, at that frightful hour of midnight, there commenced an encounter swelling (the population of) Yama's domains between your (army) and theirs.

## CHAPTER 170

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)- Continued

#### The hand of hand nocturnal fight

Sanjaya said

1. The son of Subala (i.e. Shakuni), excited with wrath, rushed against Nakula who was

slaughtering your troops with (great) impetuosity in battle and said (to him) "Wait, wait."

2. Those two heroes, between whom was excited a bitter enmity, desirous of slaying each other, struck each other with arrows discharged (from their bows) drawn to their fullest stretch.

3. In (that) battle, O king, the son of Subala displayed as much dexterity in discharging showers of arrows as Nakula (god).

4. With arrows striking (to their bodies) like prickly thorns, they, O mighty monarch, looked, in (that) engagement, like a couple of porcupines with erect quills.

5. Their coats of mail cut-off with shafts having straight points and wings of gold and themselves covered all over with blood, (those two heroes) looked as beautiful as.

6. A fair of beautiful Kalpa trees or a couple of handsome Kinsuka trees laden with flowers, on the field of battle.

7. Then, O great king, both the heroes pierced with shafts (sticking to their bodies) looked beautiful like a couple of Salmali trees (covered) with prickly thorns.

8. O king, looking delightedly at each other with expanded eyes which became red in wrath, they seemed to consume each other (with their fiery glances).

9. Inflamed with wrath, your brother-in-law, pierced, as it were with a smile, the son of Madri in the chest with keen and barbed dart.

10. Your brother-in-law wielder of bow, wounded Nakula extremely. He fell down on his chariot and filled with very grief.

11. Beholding his bitter and haughty foe in that (pitiable) plight, Shakuni roared there like the clouds at the end of summer.

12. Then, Nakula, the son of Pandu, recovering his senses once again rushed against the son of Subala like death itself with gaping mouth.

13. He, (then), O best of the Bharatas, wrathfully pierced Shakuni with six (arrows) and again with a hundred long shafts, in the centre of the chest.

14. (He then cut-off) his bow with the arrow fixed (on the string) into two fragments, at the points at which it is grasped. (Then), quickly cutting off his standard, (he) caused it to fall from his car to the ground.

15. Nakula, the son of Pandu, (then), having pierced his thigh with a sharpened, will tempered and keen dart.

16. Caused him to fall down as a hunter (causes) a winged hawk to drop down. O great king, (thus) pierced deeply, he sank down on the terrace of his car.

17. Claspings the flag-staff, like a lustful person (embracing) his lady-love. O sinless one, seeing your brother-in-law lose his senses and drop down.

18. His charioteer quickly carried him away on his car from the van of battle. Then sons of Pritha and all those who followed them gave utterance to a loud roar.

19. On the defeat of his foe in battle, Nakula, the scorcher of foes, said to his charioteer "convey me towards Drona's division."

20. Hearing those words of the son of Madri, his charioteer, conveyed him to the spot where, O king, Drona took his stand.

21. Kripa, the son of Saradvata, rushed with great impetuosity and resoluteness, against the highly-powerful Shikhandi who was advancing in order to slay Drona.

22. Shikhandi, the subduer of foes, pierced as it were with a smile the son of Goutama advancing furiously (again him) towards the vicinity of Drona, with nine arrows.

23. The preceptor, devoted to the welfare of your sons, having, O great monarch, pierced him with five shafts, struck him again with twenty (more).

24. (Then), O lord of the earth, the encounter that ensued between them was as dreadful as that between the (Asura) Samvara and the lord of the immortals in the war between the celestials and the Asuras.

25. Invincible in battle, those two heroic and great car-warrior covered the firmament with

arrowy nets like the clouds (covering the sky) at the end of summer.

26. That night which was naturally of a terrible aspect became more dreadful, O best of the Bharatas, to the combatants engaged in battle.

27-28. That awfully-dreadful night striking terror (into very heart) seemed to be the death-night (of all the combatants). Then, O great monarch, Shikhandi cut-off the great bow of the son of Goutama with a crescent-shaped (dart) and poured down sharpened arrows (at him). Kripa, then, O monarch, excited with rage, hurled a formidable dart.

29. Furnished with a golden handle, having keen point and polished by a black-smith. (But) Shikhandin severed it, as it was making for him, with ten darts.

30. That dart ornamented with gold, dropped down to the ground. Thereupon, the son of Goutama, that best of speakers, taking up a fresh bow.

31. Covered Shikhandin, O great monarch, with sharpened arrows. (Thus) covered (with shafts) by the high-souled son of Goutama in that battle.

32. Shikhandin, the foremost of car-warriors, sank down exhausted on the terrace of his car. Kripa, the son of Saradvata, seeing himself exhausted in that engagement.

33. Struck him with numerous arrows, O Bharata, (actuated) with the desire of slaying him. Witnessing defeat of that great car-warrior, the son of Jainasena in battle.

34. The Panchalas as well as the Somakas surrounded him on all sides (for rescuing him). In like manner, your sons also surrounded that excellent Brahmana.

35. With a vast force. Then there took place a battle again, O king, between car-warriors engaged in striking one another.

36. And O lord of the earth, O Bharata, there arose a tumultuous uproar, like the roar of the clouds, as the horse-man and elephants rushed against.

37. And slaughtered one another. The battle, the, O monarch, became terrific. In

consequence of the tread of foot-soldiers rushing along, the earth.

38. O great king, began to tremble like an affrighted lady. Ascending their cars, car-warriors rushed furiously against.

39-40. And, O king, attacked numerous (other car-warriors), as crows (attack) winged insects. In the same manner, elephants, with the juice trickling down their bodies, resolutely attacked great elephants (of the opposite side) with juice trickling down their bodies, O Bharata. Horsemen approaching horsemen and foot soldiers (approaching) foot soldiers.

41-42. In that battle, angrily encountered one another, without getting the better of one another. Terrific indeed as the sound caused by the rush, retreat and return of the combatants at dead of night. (Innumerable) blazing lamps placed upon cars, elephants and horses.

43. Looked, O great king, like large meteors drooping from the firmament. O foremost of the Bharatas, that night blazed up by those lamps.

44. Looked as (bright as) day, O king, on the field of battle. As the sun dispels dense darkness hanging all over.

45. So that pitchy darkness pervading the field of battle was destroyed by those blazing lamps. The firmament, the earth, the cardinal and the minor points.

46. (Hitherto) buried in darkness and dust, again blazed with the lustre (of those lamps). The lustre of weapons, armours and gems belonging to the high-souled (combatants).

47. Was cast into shade by the light of those blazing (lamps), when during that night, the battle was raging hot and furious.

48. No one of the combatants could distinguish the men of his party, O Bharata. (And) O best of the Bharatas, in (that) battle, father killed (his) son.

49. Son (his) father and kinsmen (killed kinsmen, friends (slew) friends and maternal uncles (killed) sister's sons, through ignorance.

50. (And) O Bharata, warrior killed warriors of the same party and enemies killed their own men. O king, in that awful nocturnal

engagement (the combatants) lost all regard for one another.

## CHAPTER 171

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The fierce fight

Sanjaya said

1. Then, O mighty monarch, when the battle raged hot and furious Dhristadyumna rushed against Drona.

2. Wielding his strong bow and twanging its string often and often, he rushed against Drona's chariot decked with golden trappings.

3. And as Dhristadyumna rushed against Drona, O mighty monarch, the Panchalas together with the Pandavas surrounded him, with a view to put an end to Drona's life.

4. Then beholding that foremost of preceptors Drona, thus hemmed in on all sides, your sons, exerting their best, protected Drona in that battle.

5. Then those two sea of troops encountering each other at the dead of night resembled two dreadful seas agitated by the tempest with all the creatures within them dreadfully terrified.

6. Thereafter, O king, the prince of the Panchalas quickly pierced Drona on the breast with five arrows and then uttered his war-cry.

7. Thereupon, O Bharata, Drona piercing him with twenty-five shafts, cut-off his lustrous bow with another broad-headed shaft.

8. Pierced sore by Drona, Dhristadyumna, O foremost of the Bharatas, threw quickly aside the (severed) bow and bit his lips (in anger).

9. Then, O mighty monarch, excited to his highest pitch of fury, the puissant Dhristadyumna grasped another strong bow, desirous of accomplishing Drona's destruction.

10. That handsome warrior, the slayer of his foes, then drawing back the string of that bow to his ears, let go a dreadful shaft capable of achieving Drona's destruction.

11. In that terrible battle that shaft, shot by his strong arm, flooded the Kuru troops with its lustre like the risen sun.

12. Beholding that dreadful shaft, O king, the Gods, the Danavas and the Gandharvas said these words viz., "May good betide Drona."

13. Then as that shaft coursed towards the chariot of Drona, O king Karna like one endued with great lightness of hands, cut it off into twelve fragments.

14. O king, that shaft of Dhristadyumna severed into numerous pieces, quickly fell down on the earth like, O sire, a snake without its poisonous fangs.

15. In that battle, cutting off arrows with his own close-knotted shafts, Karna then began to pierce Dhristadyumna with sharp arrows.

16. Drona's son pierced Dhristadyumna with five, Drona himself with five, Shalya with nine and Dushasana with three Vallas.

17. Duryodhana pierced him with twenty and Shakuni with five arrows. Thus all the mighty car-warriors (of your army) quickly pierced the Panchala prince.

18. Dhristadyumna was then pierced by the seven heroes who strove to protect Drona in battle. He also in his turn, pierced each of them with three shafts.

19. O mighty monarch, with the greatest quickness, Dhristadyumna then pierced Drona, Karna, Drona's son and your son, in that terrible battle.

20. Thus pierced by that bowman, your warriors again unitedly pierced Dhristadyumna in that battle, uttering terrible war-cries.

21. Inflamed with fury, O king, Drumasena then pierced Dhristadyumna with an arrow and then again quickly piercing the latter with sharp shafts he said- "wait, wait."

22. Dhristadyumna pierced him in return with three sharp straight-flying arrows, winged with golden feathers, whetted on stone and capable of destroying life.

23. Next with another broad-headed shaft, he lopped off from Drumasena's trunk, his head graced with glimmering ear-rings of gold.

24. That head with its lips bitten, then fell on the field like a ripe palm-fruit thrown down by a raging tempest.

25. Thereafter the heroic Dhristadyumna piercing his opponent warriors with well-shapened shafts cut-off with broad-headed arrows, the bow of Radha's son versed in various modes of war-fare.

26. But Karna did not brook that severance of his bow even as a fierce lion does not brook the chopping off of its tail.

27. Taking up another bow, with eyes red in rage and breathing fiercely, he poured a shower of arrows on the highly puissant Dhristadyumna.

28. Then beholding Karna wrought up with rage, the other six heroic foremost car-warriors, quickly surrounded the son the Panchala king with a view to slay him in battle.

29. O lord, the troops then considered Dhristadyumna to be already within the jaws of Death, as he was then confronted by the six foremost car-warriors of your army.

30. At this juncture, Satyaki that scion of the Dasarha race, advanced to the rescue of the puissant Dhristadyumna, shooting numerous arrows (in all directions).

31. Beholding that Satvata warrior indomitable in battle advance, Radha's son pierced him in battle, with ten shafts.

32. Him, O mighty monarch, Satyaki pierced in return with ten shafts before the eyes of all the heroes present and said - 'Fly not-stay.'

33. O king, that encounter between the powerful Satyaki and the high-souled Karna looked like the encounter between Bali and Vasava.

34. That foremost of the Kshatriyas Satyaki, then pierced the lotus-eyed Karna terrifying the Kshatriya warriors with the clatter of his car.

35. On the other hand, O mighty monarch the puissant son of Suta fought on with Satyaki, causing the earth to tremble with the tremendous twang on his bow.

36. Karna then pierced that scion of Sini's race with Vipatkarnis, Narachas, Vatsadantas, Kshuras and hundreds of other kings of arrows.

37. So also Yuyudhana that foremost of the Vrishni warriors, covered Karna with his shower of arrows. The combat was an equal one (in all respects).

38. Placing Karna in front of them, your sons then, O ruler of men, began to pierce Satyaki simultaneously with sharp arrows.

39. Baffling their as well as Karna's weapons with those of his own, O lord, Satyaki quickly pierced Vrishasena on the centre of his chest.

40. Pierced with the shaft of Satyaki, the highly effulgent and puissant Vrishasena fell down on his car, losing hold of his bow.

41. Thereupon Karna taking Vrishasena the mighty car-warrior to be slain, was afflicted with grief on account of his son's death and began to afflict Satyaki.

42. The mighty car-warrior Yuyudhana then afflicted sore by Karna, forcibly pierced Karna with numerous shafts over and over again.

43. Piercing Karna with ten and Vrishasena with five shafts, the Satvata hero then cut-off their bow as well as their gloves.

44. Thereupon they both having strung another pair of bows dreadful to the foe, began simultaneously to pierce Yuyudhana with sharp arrows.

45. When that dreadful destruction of heroes was progressing, O king, the terrible twang of the Gandiva bow was heard, arising above the din of battle.

46. Having heard the sound of the Gandiva and the clatter of (Arjuna's) car, O king Suta's son addressing Duryodhana said these words—

47. This is the tremendous twang of the Gandiva bow, emitted by Arjuna, as he has slain our entire army, many foremost of men and numerous warriors of the Kurus.

48. The clatter of his chariot is also heard, like the rumble of roaring clouds. Evidently the son of Pandu is achieving feats worthy of himself.

49. O mighty monarch, this son of Pritha will completely crush our mighty host. Many troops are already scattered and none stays on the field.

50. Our host is being shattered like risen masses of clouds by the raging tempest; encountering Savyasachin in battle, it is being split like a bark on a (rough) sea.

51. Hark, O king, the terrible wails of foremost warriors as they fly or fall in battle in consequence of shafts shot from the Gandiva bow.

52. Hark, O foremost of monarchs, the roar of drums near Arjuna's chariot, resembling the rumble of clouds at the dead of night.

53. Hear also, numerous sounds, cries of woe and alas and loud war-cries, near the chariot of Arjuna.

54. But here in our middle stays Satyaki the foremost of the Satvatas; if this object of our aim could be smitten down, we might obtain victory over our foes.

55. There the Panchala Prince surrounded on all sides by heroic and foremost of car-warriors, has engaged himself with Drona.

56. If we can slay Satyaki and Prisata's son Dhristadyumna, then, O mighty monarch, undoubtedly victory will be ours.

57. Impaling these two heroic and mighty car-warriors, the descendants of the Vrishni and the Prishata race respectively, like the son of Subhadra, we will, O king strive to slay them.

58. But yonder comes Savyasachin, O Bharata, towards this division of Drona knowing that Satyaki is here encountered by many foremost warriors of the Kurus.

59. Let now a detachment of mighty and foremost car-warriors intercept Pritha's son, so that he may not advance to the rescue of Satyaki now surrounded by many.

60. Let those mighty heroes be quick in shooting their arrows, so that this scion of Madhu's race may be dispatch to the next world.

61. Knowing this to be the opinion O, Karna, your son addressed Subala's son even as

the highly illustrious Indra addressed Vishnu, on the field of battle.

62. "Supported by a host of ten thousand unretreating elephants and also by a detachment of ten thousand car-warriors, do you proceed against Dhananjaya.

63. Dushasana Durvishaha, Subahu and Durshpradharshana - these supported by numerous of infantry will follow you.

64. O my uncle, slay me those fierce bowmen, the two Krishnas the very virtuous king Yudhishtira and Nakula and Sahadeva and Pandu's son Bhimasena.

65. My hopes of victory rest on you as those of the gods rest on their lord Indra. O uncle, slay the sons of Kunti, even as Pabaka's son slew the Asuras."

66. Thus addressed and urged on by your son, he (Subala's son) covered in mail, proceeded against the sons of Pritha, being himself supported by your sons and a large army.

67. In order to please your son he proceeded to battle, desirous of consuming the sons of Pandu. Then commenced a terrible battle between your warriors and the foe.

68-69. When, O king, Subala's son had going against the (main) army of the Pandavas, the son of Suta supported by a mighty force, quickly rushed upon the Satvata hero in battle, shooting many hundreds of shafts. Your troops then gathering together encompassed Satyaki.

70. The son of Bharadvaja also advancing against Dhristadyumna's car commenced at that night, O foremost of Bharatas, a most terrible and wonderful battle with the heroic Dhristadyumna and the Panchalas.

## CHAPTER 172

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The pierce fight

Sanjaya said

1. Then all those royal warriors of your army all indomitable in battle, furiously rushed

against Yuyudhana's chariot, unable to brook his feats.

2. Those warriors then surrounded on all sides the Satvata hero, with duly-equipped chariots decked with gold and gems and with horsemen and elephants.

3. Having thus impaled the Satvata hero, all those mighty warriors filled the directions of the compass with the echo of their war-cries.

4. Then those mighty heroes, desirous of achieving the slaughter of that scion of Madhu's race, began to pour showers of sharp arrows on Satyaki of infallible prowess.

5. Beholding then those heroes make towards himself in fury, that slayer of hostile heroes, that mighty-armed grandson of Shini, received them with a copious discharge of arrows.

6. Then that mighty bowman, the heroic Satyaki of indomitable prowess, began to lop off the heads of his foes with fierce shafts of depressed knots.

7. That scion of Madhu's race then severed with his razor-edged arrows, the trunks of elephants, the necks of horses and the arms of warriors decked with brace-lets.

8. The earth then over-strewn with shattered yak-tails and white umbrellas, looked, O king, as beautiful as the star-bespangled firmament.

9. Thus when they were being thus slaughtered by Yuyudhana in battle, O Bharata, a tumultuous uproar was heard there like the yell or bewailing of ghosts.

10. With that terrible uproar the earth was filled and the night appeared to be more hideous and more frightful.

11. Beholding the army routed and afflicted by the arrows of Yuyudhana and hearing in that nightly darkness that tremendous and horripilating uproar.

12. Your son that foremost of car-warrior, O king, addressing his charioteer thus repeatedly spoke - "Drive, drive the steeds to the spot whence this tumult is proceeding."

13-14. Then inspired by him that charioteer proceeded those excellent horses to the car of

Yuyudhana. Then that resolute bowman that indefatigable warrior, king Duryodhana versed in various modes of warfare and endued with great lightness of hands, rushed upon Yuyudhana.

15. Thereupon the scion of Madhu's race pierced Duryodhana with twelve shafts shot from a full-drawn bow and capable of drinking the blood and mangling the skin.

16. Duryodhana then pierced as before with those arrows of Shini's grandsons, angrily pierced the latter with ten shafts in return.

17. Meanwhile the battle that was being fought between the Panchalas and your troops, presented a wonderful and harming aspect.

18. O Bharata, then the grandson of Shini, worked up with rage, pierced your mighty son with a group of eighty shafts on the chest.

19. Thereafter that slayer of foes dispatched to the abode of Death the horses of Duryodhana and he also felled quickly the charioteer of the latter.

20. O ruler of men, remaining in that steedless car, your son began to discharge sharp arrows towards the car of Shini's grandson.

21. Then like one endued with great lightness of hands, Shini's grandson, O king, cut-off the group of fifty arrows shot by your son in that battle.

22. The descendant of Madhu's race then cut-off the mighty bow of your son near the grasp, with broad-headed arrows shot with great force.

23. Deprived of his car and his bow, that lord, that ruler of all men, quickly ascended the resplendent car of Kritavarman.

24. When Duryodhana had been compelled to turn his face away from the battle, the grandson of Shini in that night began to crush your troops, O ruler of men.

25. O king, meanwhile Shakuni surrounding Arjuna on all sides with countless cars and thousands of elephants.

26. And an equal number of horses, began furiously to assault him. His troops then began to discharge many celestial weapons against Arjuna.

27-29. Those Kshatriyas then urged on by fate fought on with Arjuna. Arjuna however single-handedly checked those thousands of chariots, elephants and horses and finally compelled them to turn back. Then Subala's son with eyes coppery in rage and excited to the highest pitch of fury, pierced with twenty shafts that slayer of foes namely the puissant Arjuna. Then again he impeded the course of Arjuna's mighty car with a group of hundred arrows.

30. Him, O Bharata, Arjuna pierced in battle with a set of twenty shafts and other mighty bowmen of his division with three shafts each.

31. O monarch, baffling the countless shafts shot by his foes, Dhananjaya slew the warriors of your army with excellent shafts charged with the force of the thunder.

32. The earth then covered over with lopped-off arms and thousands of mangled bodies, appeared beautiful as if covered over with charming flowers.

33-34. Strewn over with heads of Kshatriyas— heads that were decked with diadems and graced with handsome noses and beautiful ear-rings and nether lips bit in anger and wide open eyes, heads that were graced with collars and crowned with gems and which while life was in them spoke salutary words, the earth looked beautiful as if strewn with hillocks covered with Champaka flowers.

35. Then Vibhatsu on fierce energy having achieved that dreadful feat once more pierced Sakuni with five arrows of depressed knots.

36. He then angrily pierced Uluka in that battle with his arrows. Thus having pierced Uluka even before the very eyes of Subala's son, Arjuna.

37. Uttered a mighty roar that filled the earth with its echo. Thereafter that son of the foremost of celestials, cut-off the bow of Sakuni with his arrows.

38. And dispatched the latter's four steeds to the kingdom of Death. Thereupon, O foremost of the Bharatas, jumping down from his chariot, the son of Subala.

39. Quickly ascended the car of Uluka. Then those two mighty car-warriors, sire and son, riding on the same chariot.

40. Began to shower arrows on Pritha's son, like two risen clouds showering rain on the mountain-breast. Thereafter, O mighty monarch, Pandu's son piercing them both with shafts.

41. Began to crush your troops by hundreds and thousands. Just as masses of clouds are torn as under by a violent storm.

42. So, O ruler of men, your troops were then routed and dispersed by Arjuna. O foremost of the Bharatas, then the troops of your army carnaged during that night.

43. Fled in fear in all directions looking at one another; some left behind their horses, others urged them to the top of their speed.

44. They then fled away in great fright in that darkness of night. O foremost of the Bharatas, defeating your troops in battle.

45. Vasudeva and Dhananjaya began to blow their conchs. Meanwhile Dhristadyumna, O king, piercing Drona with three shafts.

46. Quickly cut-off the latter's bowstring with a short arrow; thereupon Drona that crusher of hostile Kshatriyas, throwing that bow down on the ground.

47. Took up another bow of greater force and toughness; then Drona piercing Dhristadyumna with seven swift-flying arrows.

48. Pierced the latter's charioteer, O foremost of the Bharatas, with five arrows. Then the mighty car-warrior Dhristadyumna checking Drona by means of his arrows.

49. Began to agitate the Kaurava host like Indra agitating the Asura host. O sire when the troops of your son were thus being carnaged.

50. A dreadful river of boldly currents began to flow between the two armies, carrying with it slain men horses and elephants.

51. Like, O monarch, the river Vaitarani carrying creatures to the abode of Death. Then the puissant Dhristadyumna completely routing that army of your son.

52. Shone resplendent like Shakra in the midst of the celestial hosts. Thereafter Dhristadyumna and Sikhandin blew their mighty conchs;

So did also the twins (Nakula and Sahadeva) and Yuyudhana, the Pandu's son Vrikodara. Having vanquished thousands of energetic kings of your army.

53-54. The Pandavas ever attended with victory uttered dreadful war-cries, even before the eyes of your son and Karna and the heroic Drona and the son of Drona, O ruler of men.

## CHAPTER 173

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The fierce fight

#### Sanjaya said

1. Beholding his own army carnaged by high-souled warriors, your son, O ruler of men, was excited to the highest pitch of fury.

2. Then quickly approaching Karna and Drona that foremost of victorious heroes and burning with rage, he eloquent in speech, spoke these words–

3. Beholding the ruler of the Sindhus slain in battle by Savyasachin, you two, filled with rage, caused this battle to go on.

4. Though competent to slay the Pandava troops, still you are beholding the slaughter of my troops by them with great indifference.

5-6. If you now abandon me, you should have told me of it in the beginning. We two shall vanquish the sons of Pandu in battle even these were the words, you said to me, O you givers of honour. Hearing those words of yours, I then allowed these proceedings. Otherwise I would never have provoked these hostilities with the Parthas–hostilities that are so destructive of heroic combatants.

7. If, O foremost of men, I do not deserve to be forsaken by you, then do you fight according to the measure of your prowess, O you that are possessed of great prowess.

8. Thus pierced with the goad of speech by your son, those two heroes once more engaged in battle like two snakes poked with sticks.

9. Then those two foremost of car-warriors, the best of all human bowmen, rushed against



the Parthas headed by the grandson of Shini and others.

10. Similarly the Parthas supported by their own troops, rushed upon those two heroes, who were roaring repeatedly.

11. Then the enraged Drona that best of all wielders of weapons, quickly pierced that foremost of the descendants of Shini with ten sharp arrows.

12. Karna pierced him with ten shafts, your son with seven, Vrishasena with ten and Subala's son with seven arrows.

13. Those hosts of the Kurus together with those warriors, began to shower arrows on the grandson of Shini. Then beholding Drona slaughter the Pandava hosts.

14. The Somakas from all side began to pierce him with showers of arrows. Then Drona snatched out of the Kshatriyas their lives, O ruler of men.

15. Like the sun dispelling darkness with his rays. O ruler of men, when the Panchalas were being slaughtered by Drona.

16. A dreadful sound was heard as they challenged one another aloud. Some leaving their sons, some their fathers, some their brothers and some their uncles.

17. Some their nephews, some their companions and their friends and some their relatives, fled in all quickness, desirous of saving their own lives.

18. Others, on the other hand, were so confounded that they rushed even towards Drona himself. Indeed many warriors of the Pandava host were then dispatched to the other world.

19. Thus afflicted by that high-souled warrior, the Pandava army began to fly in all directions in that night, throwing down their blazing flambeaus.

20. Even before the very sight of Bhimsena and Achyuta and the twins and the virtuous Yudhishtira and the son of Prishata.

21. Then the troops were shrouded in darkness and nothing could be discerned. Only the flight of the foe could be determined through the light that the torches of the Kauravas shed.

22. And as the army of the Pandavas was routed, the mighty warriors Karna and Drona, O king, pursued them from behind discharging numerous arrows.

23. When the Panchala ranks were broken down and reduced in number, Janaraddana cheerless at heart addressed Phalguna saying—

24. "Let Parsata and Satyaki supported by the Panchala troops rush against the mighty Drona and Karna, shooting as they proceed numerous arrows.

25. This mighty army of ours has been broken and routed by the showers of the enemies' shafts; and though checked in their flight, they could into again be sufficiently rallied.

26. beholding their troops fly away Kesava and Arjuna then addressed them thus—'Do you not flight from fear! Discard all your fears, O Pandavas.

27. Supported by all the troops and disposing them of in perfect order, we two with weapons upraised are even now dashing against Drona and Suta's son with a view to fight with them."

28. O Dhananjaya! Do whatever you consider matching with the specific circumstance and appropriate in respect of slaughtering Karna in the battle.

29. O majesty! Arjuna in response to the advice given by Yudhishtira said to Sri Krishna! O god! King Yudhishtira, the son of Kunti is frightened of the valour shown by Karna, the son of Radha today.

30. Then Janaradana seeing Vrikodora advance, once more addressed Pandus' son Arjuna in these words as if for cheering him the while.

31. Yonder does the proud Bhima supported by the Somakas and Pandavas rush furiously against Drona and Karna, those two fierce bowmen.

32. Supported by these and by the mighty car-warrior of the Panchalas, do you proceed to the fight fore-assuring your troops, O delighter of Pandu.

33. Thereafter those two foremost of men, the son of Pandu and the scion of Madhu's race, encountering Drona and Karna, took up their station in the van of their army.

**Sanjaya said**

34. Thereupon the mighty army of king Yudhishthira once more returned to the spot where Drona and Karna were crushing their enemies.

35. A tremendous clash was then produced on that part of the field, like to that, O monarch, which takes place when two oceans swelling under the influence of the moon dash against each other.

36. Then your soldiers throwing aside the flambeaus, with both their hands fought furiously with the Pandavas, like so many mad people.

37. When the field was thus covered with nocturnal darkness and dust, the combatants fought during that dreadful battle, guided only by the names they uttered (in their challenge).

38. The names of contending kings as they challenged one another were then heard there, O king, like to what takes place during a Sayamvara.

39. Sometimes as awful silence reigned over the field; next moment there was heard a tremendous din caused by enraged contending warriors and by the victorious and the vanquished.

40. Wherever the flambeaus were seen to blaze, thither the combatants rushed, like so many insects rushing upon a flame of light.

41. Thus when the Kouravas and the Pandavas were fighting with one another the dreadful night deepened into deadness, Bharata.

## CHAPTER 174

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA) – Continued

#### The charge of Ghatotkacha against Karna

**Sanjaya said**

1. Then that slayer of foes viz., Karna beholding Prisata's son in battle, pierced the

him on the breast with ten arrows capable of penetrating to the vitals.

2. In return Dhristadyumna quickly pierced, in that battle, Karna, with five arrows and challenged him saying 'stay, stay.'

3. In that dreadful battle, they both covering each other with their arrowy showers, pierced each other with shafts shot from fully-stretched bows.

4. Thereafter Karna dispatched the four steeds and charioteer of Dhristadyumna that foremost of the Panchalas, to the dreary abode of Death.

5. He cut-off with sharp arrows the latter's excellent bow and then with a bhalla felled his charioteer from the niche on the car.

6. The puissant Dhristadyumna deprived of the use of his car and having his charioteer and his horses slain, quickly jumped down on the ground armed with a terrible mace.

7. Then through mangled with arrows of depressed knots shot by Karna, he still approached the former's chariot and slew the steeds thereof with the strokes of his mace.

8. Then quickly wheeling back, that slayer of hostile heroes viz., Prisata's son, that foremost of all car-warriors, ascended the chariot of Dhananjaya.

9-10. Then though desirous of encountering Karna once more, he was prevented from doing so by the son of Dharma. Then the highly puissant Karna created a loud din by means of his bow, which became mingled with his warcries. He then blew his conch furiously. Beholding Prisata's son vanquished in battle, those mighty car-warriors.

11. The Panchalas and the Somakas influenced by wrath, grasped their weapons with a view to compass the death of Suta's son.

12. They then rushed against Karna, making death their final goal. Meanwhile Karna's charioteer had yoked fresh steeds to his car—

13. Steeds that were of the hue of conch shells, endued with great fleetness, of the Sindhu breed and well-broken. Then the son of Radha getting the mighty warriors of the Panchalas within his range.

14. Began to afflict them with his arrowy showers, like masses of clouds afflicting the mountain breast with torrents of rain. Afflicted sore by Karna, the division of the Panchalas.

15-16. Panic-struck, began to break and fly away like a herd of deer attacked by a lion. O ruler of earth, then warriors were seen to fall down on the ground from their steeds or elephants or chariots, on all sides. In that fierce battle Karna cut-off with razor-headed arrows the arms and heads decked with ear-ring of warriors that were flying away. O ruler of men, he cut-off the thighs of other warriors riding on elephants.

17. Or on the backs of steeds or of those standing on the ground. O sire, many mighty car-warriors in the confusion of their flight perceived no.

18. Their own limbs cut-off or the injuries of their animals. The Panchalas and the Srinjayas then slaughtered with dreadful arrows.

19-20. Took even the motion of a straw for Karna. Greatly confounded; the combatants mistook their flying friends for Karna and then fled from them in great fright. Then, O Bharata, as those broken and routed divisions were flying away.

21. Karna pursued them from behind shooting his arrows in all directions. Those warriors as they were madly flying, were carnaged by thousands, in that battle.

22. Afflicted by that illustrious warrior Karna, they could not then stay on the field. O king, the Panchalas then mangled with excellent shafts by Karna.

23. As also by Drona, looked vacantly at the different quarters and then fled away. Thereupon king Yudhishtira, beholding his own army routed.

24. And considering a retreat to be addressed Arjuna thus;— 'Behold the mighty car-warriors Karna standard yonder armed with his bow.

25-29. Like a burning sun shining even during the hideous hour of night. The yells of your own partisans helplessly mangled by the

shafts of Karna are being incessantly heard. Karna does shoot his arrows so skillfully that no interval can be noticed between his fixing the arrow on the string and letting it off. He will surely fighting thus, extirpate all our friends. Do that now, O Dhananjaya, for compassing the slaughter of Karna, which according to your judgment should be done and for which the hour may have come." Being thus spoken to, Arjuna addressing Krishna said

30. "The royal son Dharma has been frightened today at the prowess of Karna. As Karna's division is repeatedly worsting that of our own, do your quickly make some arrangement that will cope with the present dangerous situation. Behold, yonder are our troops flying away. O slayer of Madhu, broken and mangled with the shafts of Drona.

31. And frightened by Karna, they have no stay or support. I see that Karna is careering dauntlessly on the field.

32. Crushing numerous illustrious car-warriors and covering them with his sharp shafts I cannot brook the sight of him careering in thick of the fight.

33-34. Under my very nose, O foremost of the Vrishnis, even as a snake cannot bear the tread of human feet. So, do you take me there where the mighty Karna is fighting. O slayer of Madhu, either I will slay him or he shall slay me.

**Vasudeva said**

35. I see, O son of Kunti, that foremost of men, of super-human prowess, viz., Karna, careering at the head of battle like the king of the celestials himself.

36. O Dhananjaya, there is none, save yourself and the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha who can encounter him in battle, O foremost of men.

37. O sinless one, I do not think that the hour has come when, O mighty armed one, you should meet the son of Suta in battle.

38. The resplendent Sakti, resembling a mighty meteor, obtained by him from Vasava is still in his possession, O mighty armed one, kept carefully to be used against yourself by this son Suta.

39. He preserves that Sakti; and therefore he has now assumed a terrible aspect. Ghatotkacha, is ever attached to your interests and is anxious for your welfare.

40-41. Therefore let the mighty Ghatotkacha charge the son of Radha. That one of prowess resembling that of an immortal, was begotten by Bhima and he is conversant with numerous celestial, Asuri and Rakshasa-weapons. I am sure, he will conquer Karna in battle.

**Sanjaya said**

42. Thus spoken to the mighty-armed Partha possessed of eyes resembling lotus petals, summoned the Rakshasa. Thereupon the Rakshasa appeared before him. Cased in armour and armed with bows arrows and a sword, O ruler of men. Then doing obeisance to Krishna and Pandu's son Dhananjaya.

43-44. He proudly said - "Here am I order me." Thereupon the descendant of the Dasarha race Krishna, addressing Hidimba's son of the complexion of clouds, of effulgent countenance and fiery eyes smilingly said these words.

**Vasudeva said**

45. Take my blessings, O Ghatotkacha, hear attentively what I now say to you. The hour for the display of your prowess and of no one else has now arrived.

46. Do you become the raft in this battle to the sinking Pandavas. You possess weapons of various kinds and the potent Rakshasi illusion.

47. Behold, O son of Hidimba, the hosts of the Pandavas afflicted by Karna in battle like a herd of kine belaboured by the keeper.

48. Yonder does the mighty bowman Karna of great intelligence and resolute prowess, burn the foremost of the Kshatriyas of the Pandava host.

49. Scorched with his fiery arrows the Pandava warrior cannot stand before that resolute bowman who is shooting numerous arrows.

50. Afflicted at the dead of night with showers of arrows shot by the son of Suta, yonder are the Panchalas flying away like a flock of deer attacked by the lion.

51. Save yourself, O you of dreadful prowess, no one else is none who can confront Suta's son in battle thus engaged.

52. Therefore, O mighty-armed one, do you now perform what will be worthy of yourself, your maternal uncles, your sires and the measure of your energy and might.

53. It is for saving them from difficulties, that men desire to have sons; O son of Hidimba, do you therefore, rescue your fathers and friends.

54. O Ghatotkacha, fathers desire to have sons, for furthering their own interests. And good sons save their fathers here and hereafter.

55. You are generous and your strength in battle is indeed terrible and matchless. While engaged in battle, there is none else equal to you.

56. O afflicter of your foes, do you become the raft for the Pandavas when they are being routed in this hour of night by the shafts of Karna and when they are sinking in the ocean identified with the Dhartarashtra troops.

57. Moreover, at night the Rakshasas become possessed of immeasurable prowess; the Rakshasas are by nature powerful, indomitable, heroic and energetic in battle.

58. With the help of your illusions do you kill the fierce bowman Karna in this nocturnal fight. The sons of Pritha headed by Dhristadyumna will slay Drona in battle.

**Sanjaya said**

59. Hearing the words of Kesava, Vibhatsu also addressing that Rakshasa, that slayer of foes viz., Ghatotkacha said, O foremost of the Kurus, these words.

60. O Ghatotkacha, yourself, the long-armed Satyaki and the Pandava Bhimasena, these, according to my opinion, are the foremost among all our troops.

61. In this nocturnal fight do you therefore challenge Karna to a duel. The mighty car-warrior Satyaki will become your protect or from behind.

62. Supported by the Satvata hero, do you slay the heroic Karna in battle, even as Indra

supported by Skanda slew Taraka in days gone by."

**Ghatotkacha said**

63. I am capable of encountering Karna and Drona, O Bharata and I am a match for all the other high-souled Kshatriyas accomplished in the use of weapons.

64. This night, I shall fight such a fierce battle with the son of Suta, of which men will talk as long as the earth will exit.

65. Following the Rakshasa mode, I shall not spare this time any body, either the brave or the coward or those that will with folded palms, solicit mercy. I shall slay all folded palms, solicit mercy. I shall slay all.

**Sanjaya said**

66. Having thus spoken, that slayer of hostile heroes namely the mighty-armed son of Hidimba, dashed against Karna, in that fierce fight, frightening your troops.

67. Then that foremost of men that son of Suta smilingly received Ghatotkacha of blazing countenance and burning locks, as the latter was furiously falling upon him.

68. Then the battle between those two roaring heroes, viz., Karna and that Rakshasa, commenced resembling O foremost of kings that between Shakra and Pralhada in days gone by.

## CHAPTER 175

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA) -

#### Continued

#### The slaughter of Alambusha

**Sanjaya said**

1. Then, O monarch, beholding the mighty-armed Ghatotkacha, rush against the car of Suta's son Karna, with a view to slaughter him,

2. Your son Duryodhana addressing Dushasana said these words - "Beholding Karna's prowess in battle, yonder does the Rakshasa

3. Rush against that mighty car-warrior, Do you check the Rakshasa's progress; supported

by mighty divisions do you go to the spot where the highly powerful.

4. Karna the son of Vikartana is fighting with the Rakshasa. O bestower of honour, putting forth your best energies in battle and supported by the troops do you protect Karna in battle.

5. Let not the dreadful Rakshasa succeed, through our negligence, in slaying Karna. Meanwhile, O monarch, the highly puissant son of Jatasura.

6-7. That best of smiters, approaching Duryodhana said these words-"O Duryodhana, with your permission, do I intend to slay the Pandava brothers and their followers who are your inveterate enemies and who are regarded as indomitable in battle. My father was Jatasura that foremost of the Rakshasas, endued with great prowess.

8. In days gone by, through some Rakshasa-slaying charms, the puny sons of Pritha slew him. I now desire to render satisfaction to his departed spirit by worshipping him with the blood of his foes.

9. As also with their flesh. O foremost of kings, it behoves you to accord me your permission." Thereupon king Duryodhana, highly gratified, repeatedly told these words to that one-

10. "Supported by Drona and Karna and others, I am competent enough to conquer my enemies. With my leave, do you go and slay the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha.

11. That Rakshasa of fierce feats, born of men, ever devoted to the interests of the Pandavas and always slaying our elephants, horses and charioteer in battle.

12. Staying himself all the while in the firmament, go dispatch him to Yama's (dreary) place." Then that huge-bodied son of Jatasura saying 'yea' to his words, challenged Ghatotkacha.

13-14. Thereafter the son of Jatasura covered the son of Bhimasena with various kind of weapons. But the son of Hidimba, single-handed, crushed Alambusha, Karna and the

unfordable ocean of Kuru soldiers, like a furious tempest agitating the clouds. Thereafter the Rakshasa Alambusha seeing the potency of the illusion of Ghatotkacha.

15. Quickly covered him with myriads of shafts. Piercing the son of Bhimasena with numerous arrows, Alambusha.

16. With his arrows, caused the Pandava armies to be routed. Routed by him the Pandavas troops, O Bharata.

17. Began to disperse in that night, like masses of clouds torn away by a furious gale. Similarly your troops mangled with the arrows of Ghatotkacha.

18-21. Fled away in that night throwing, O monarch, all their flambeaus down. Thereafter wrought up with rage, Alambusha struck Bhima's son in that fierce battle, with numerous arrows, like a guide striking an elephant with the goad. Then Ghatotkacha cut-off into small fragments the chariot, the driver and the weapons of his opponent and laughed terrible. Then like clouds showering torrents of rain on the Meru mountain, Ghatotkacha poured showers of shafts of Karna, Alambusha and all the rest of Kurus. Afflicted by the Rakshasa, the Kuru troops became greatly agitated.

22. The four kinds of forces of which your army consisted, began to press and crush one another. Then the son of Jatasura deprived of his car and driver.

23. Wrathfully struck Ghatotkacha in that battle with his bare fists. Thus struck Ghatotkacha trembled.

25. Like a mountain with its trees, creepers and grass at the time of an earth-quake. Then the son of Bhimasena furious with rage, raising his own foe-slaying arm that resembled a bludgeon, dealt a severe blow to Jatasura's son; thus furiously crushing him, the son of Hidimba quickly threw him down.

26. And then seizing him by his two arms began to press him with great force against the earth. Then the son of Jatasura freeing himself from the grasp of Ghatotkacha.

27. Once more rose up quickly and rushed furiously upon the latter. Alambusha also, throwing down and dragging the Rakshasa.

28-29. Ghatotkacha, out of rage began to press him against the earth. Then between those two roaring heroes of huge proportion, namely Ghatotkacha and Alambusha, a battle raged that was extremely terrible and horripilating. Then those highly proud heroes, each desirous of getting advantage over the other by means of their illusive powers.

30. Fought on with great fury like the puissant Indra and the son of Virochana. Becoming fire and the ocean, again Garuda and Takshaka.

31. And once a cloud and a tempest and again thunder and a mighty mountain and an elephant and a tiger and Rahu and the sun.

32. They thus exhibited a hundred different kinds of illusions, desirous of compassing each other's destruction. Indeed Alambusha and Ghatotkacha fought most wonderfully, with bludgeons and maces and lances and mallets and battle axes and clubs and crests of mountains, they then struck each other.

33. Riding on the back of elephants or horses or on their chariots, those foremost of Rakshasas both possessed of potent illusive powers, fought with each other in that battle.

34. Thereafter, O king Ghatotkacha, impelled by a desire for killing Alambusha and excited to the highest pitch of fury soared aloft and then came down even like a hawk.

35. Then seizing that foremost of the Rakshasas, namely, the huge-bodied Alambusha, he raised him high and then dashed him against the earth, like Vishnu dashing Maya against the ground.

36-37. Then with a sword of beautiful appearance, Ghatotkacha of infinite prowess cut-off, O king, from the trunk of his fierce and mighty foe, his terrible head that was even then uttering dreadful roars and that looked frightful, O mighty monarch.

38. Then holding that blood-stained head by the hair, Ghatotkacha quickly proceeded towards the chariot of Duryodhana.

39. Then the mighty-armed Rakshasa, approaching the car, smilingly threw that head

with contorted aspect and dishevelled hair in that car of the king.

40. Then like clouds during the rainy season, he uttered a tremendous roar; and then O king, addressing Duryodhana he said these words—

41. Here is your friend slain whose prowess you have witnessed yourself. You are destined to see the death of Karna and that of your ownself.

42. There is a saying, O king, that no one, desirous of keeping his morality, profit and pleasure unprejudiced should never approach a king a Brahmana and a female with empty hands (i.e., without presents.)

43. Do you live without any anxiety whatever up to the time I do not slay Karna.” Having thus spoken, O foremost of men, he rushed against Karna.

44-45. Scattering hundreds of sharp arrows and directing them at the head of Karna. Then, O mighty monarch, a battle of terrible aspect and great fierceness commenced between the human hero and the Rakshasa—battle that filled every heart with great admiration.

## CHAPTER 176

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA) – Continued

#### The combat between Karna and Ghatotkacha

**Dhritarashtra said**

1. How did that battle between Vikartarna’s son Karna and the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha rage at that dead of night when they encountered each other?

2. What appearance did that terrible Rakshasa then assume? How looked his car and his steeds and what was the nature of his weapons?

3. What was the measure of his horses, his standard and his bow? What kind of armour and head-gear did he then wear? O Sanjaya, expert as you are in the art of narration, tell me all this as I am asking you about them.

**Sanjaya said**

4. Ghatotkacha was of gigantic proportion; his eyes were crimson; the hue of his countenance was coppery; his belly was low and sunk. The hair on his body were erect, his head was green; his ears were straight like shafts; and his cheek bones were high.

5. His mouth was large, extending from ear to ear. His teeth were sharp and four of them were long and pointed. His tongue and his lips were long and of a coppery hue. His brows were long drawn. His nose was thick.

6. His body was of blue complexion, his neck was red. Tall as a mountain he was frightful to look at; of huge stature huge arms and huge head, he possessed unequaled strength.

7. His limbs were hard and ugly, the hair on his head was tied in a ugly shape upwards. His hips were spacious and his navel was deep. His proportion were gigantic although they were not so strong.

8. His arms were duly adorned and that one of potent illusive energy wore Angadas and a cuirass on his breast like a circle of fire on the breast of a mountain.

9. A bright and beautiful diadem made of gold adorned his head—diadem of which every part was proportionate and resplendent and which looked like an arch.

10. His ear-rings were effulgent like the morning sun and his garlands were of gold and exceedingly bright. His body was cased in a massive brazen armour of great effulgence.

11. His chariot of gigantic size and of the measure of a Nalva and covered with bear-skin was adorned with a hundred tinkling bells and from its standard fluttered numerous crimson banners.

12. It was well furnished with all sorts of weapons, offensive and defensive and was decked with a festoon of bannerets. It possessed eight wheels and its clatter resembled the deep rumble of rain-clouds.

13. The horses yoked thereto were stout mettled, of chequered complexion, fleet, of red eyed and like infuriate elephants.

14. Those indefatigable and spirited steeds bore the dreadful Rakshasa to battle, neighing and throwing back their thick mains repeatedly.

15. A Rakshasa of frightful eyes and decked with bright ear-rings and possessing a fierce mouth acted as his charioteer, checking the horses by the reins that were as bright as the rays of the sun.

16. Accompanied by that charioteer he came like the sun accompanied by his charioteer Arjuna (dawn). Looking like a high mountain enveloped in cloudy masses.

17. A huge standard, touching the very clouds was set upon his chariot. A dreadful vulture of crimson body and flash-eating was the device on his standards.

18. The Rakshasa then advanced, forcibly stretching his bow of which the twang resembled the rattle of Indra's thunder and the string was very tough and which measured twelve Aranis in length and one in breadth.

19. Filling all the quarters of the heaven with arrows of the measures of the Aksha of a car, the Rakshasa assailed Karna in that night that witnessed the destruction of so many heroes.

20. Proudly seated on his car, as he stretched his bow, the twang that was heard resembled the rumble of the roaring thunder.

21. Frightened at that sound, your troops O Bharata, trembled like the surging billows of the sea.

22. Beholding that one of frightful eyes and dreadful aspect rush towards himself, the son of Radha quickly withstood him in all cheerfulness.

23. Karna then advanced against the smiting Rakshasa smiting him in return from a near point, like an elephant rushing against another or a bull charging another.

24. Then the dreadful collision, O mighty monarch, that took place between Karna and the Rakshasa, resembled O ruler of men that between Shakra and Samvara (in days gone by).

25. Each then grasping a fearful bow of loud twang began to wound and cover the other with mighty shafts.

26. Then penetrating each other's brazen armours, they pierced each other with shafts of depressed knots, shot from bows drawn to the fullest stretch.

27. Then like two tigers mangling each other with claws or two elephants with their tusks, they mangled each other with their lances and arrows and javelins.

28. Mangling each other's body, aiming their shafts at each other and burning each other with myriads of shafts, they could not be gazed at.

29. Covered with arrow-wounds all over the body and steeped in torrents of blood, they both looked beautiful like two hills of red chalk with rivulets flowing down their sides.

30. Those two mighty car-warriors, though they were striving hard and each had his limbs torn open with points of shafts, could not make each other flinch or tremble.

31. That nocturnal combat between Karna and the Rakshasa, with both regarded as a game having their lives for the stake, seemed for a long time to be a equal one.

32. As Ghatotkacha placed keen shafts on his string and as he let them off, his foes and friends alike became terrified with the twang of his bow.

33. Then, O king, Karna was unable to gain any advantage over Ghatotkacha. Thereafter that foremost of all persons versed in the use of weapons, invoked into existence a celestial weapon.

34. Thereupon the king of the Rakshasas beholding a celestial weapon aimed at him, by Karna, brought into use his Rakshasa illusion.

35. Instantly he was encircled by a numerous force of dreadful looking Rakshasas armed with lances and large rocks and stones and clubs.

36. Beholding the Rakshasa come with an uplifted weapon like the Destroyer of beings armed with his fatal bludgeon, all the kings of your host were filled with terror.

37. Frightened at the war-cries uttered by Ghatotkacha the elephants discharged urine and men were sorely afflicted.



38. Then a mighty shower of rocks and stones fell on all sides, being poured incessantly by the Rakshasas, who had acquired greater strength, in consequence of the hour being midnight.

39. Iron wheels, Bhusundis, javelins, lances and spears and Shataghni and battle axes, then began to fall in torrents.

40. Then beholding that battle fierce to the extreme, your son and your warriors sorely afflicted (with terror) took to their heels.

41-42. The proud Karna alone, ever boastful of strength of his weapons, was not terrified and he continued to stay on the field, baffling with his arrows the illusions displayed by Ghatotkacha. Ghatotkacha then discharged dreadful arrows for compassing the death of Suta's son.

43. Then those arrows piercing through Karna and steeped in blood entered the earth like so many infuriate snakes.

44. Thereupon the light-handed and puissant son of Suta excited to the highest pitch of fury, prevailing over Ghatotkacha, pierced him with ten shafts.

45. Pierced in his vital parts and extremely pained by the son of Suta, Ghatotkacha took up a discus of celestial make having a thousands pokes.

46. Then the son of Bhima, desirous of slaying the son of Adhiratha, hurled at the latter that discus furnished with a razor-sharp edge, of the effulgence of the morning sun and decked with gems and jewels.

47. That discus of great impetus and hurled with great force, was cut-off into fragments with the shafts of Karna and it fell down on the earth baffled in its object, like the hopes and purposes of an unfortunate man.

48. Beholding his discus thus baffled, Ghatotkacha was highly enraged and he then covered Karna with his arrows like Rahu covering the sun.

49. But the son of Suta Karna possessed prowess equal to that of Rudra or Upendra or Indra himself dauntlessly covered Ghatotkacha's chariot with his winged arrows.

50. Thereafter a gold-decked mace was whirled and hurled at Karna by Ghatotkacha. But the former cutting it off with his arrows felled it on the ground.

51. Then soaring into the sky and roaring like destructive clouds, the huge-bodied Rakshasa poured a veritable shower of trees from the skies.

52. Then Karna pierced with his shafts the son of Bhimasena versed in illusion when he was ranging through the skies, like the sun piercing the clouds with his rays.

53. Next cutting his car into fragments and slaying all his horses, Karna covered him with arrows, like a cloud charged with rain.

54. There was not even space of two finger's breadth in the body of Ghatotkacha that was not pierced with Karna's shafts. Soon the Rakshasa appeared to be like a porcupine with its quills erect.

55. So completely was he covered with shafts that we could not in that battle, any longer see either Ghatotkacha's person or his horses or his car or standard.

56. Then the Rakshasa versed in illusion destroying by his own weapon the celestial weapon of Karna, began to fight with Suta's son, aided by his own illusive powers.

57. Indeed he fought on with Karna, aided by his illusive powers and exhibiting his great agility. Then showers of shafts began to fall from invisible quarters in the skies.

58. Then Bhimasena's son possessed of potent powers of illusion, O best of the Kurus, assumed, by the help of those powers, a dreadful appearance and began to confound the Kouravas, O Bharata.

59. The puissant Rakshasa then assuming many terrible heads, began to swallow up the celestial weapons of Karna.

60. Soon again, the huge Rakshasas with hundred of wounds on his body seemed to lie cheerlessly and like one dead, on the field.

61. The foremost of the Kouravas then considering Ghatotkacha to be dead uttered loud joyous shouts. Soon however, he was seen to assume new forms and roving in all direction.

62. Next he was seen to assume a huge form with a hundred heads and hundred stomachs and looked like the Mainaka mountain.

63. Once again he became small about the transversely or soared high like the surging billows of the ocean.

64. Tearing through the earth, he dived again into the waters. Once seen here he was next seen rising on the surface at a different place.

65. Then coming down from the welkin, he was seen standing, covered in mail, on a chariot adorned with gold, having wandered through earth and sky and all the points of the compass aided by his powers of illusion.

66. Then going near the vicinity of Karna's chariot, Ghatotkacha with his ear-rings moving, dauntlessly addressed the son of Suta, O king, in these words.

67. Wait a little, O son of Suta, whither shall you go with your life, avoiding me? Today I shall remove your itching for fight on the field of battle.

68. Having thus spoken, the Rakshasa of fierce prowess, with his eyes red in rage, soared into the sky and laughed a tremendous laugh.

69. Then Ghatotkacha assailed Karna like a lion attacking an elephant; and he then covered with his showers of arrows of the measure of the Aksha of a car.

70. That foremost car-warrior viz., Karna, like a cloud with showers of rain. But Karna repulsed that arrowy shower before it could reach him.

71. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, seeing his illusions nullified by Karna, Ghatotkacha once more put forth another illusion and rendered himself invisible.

72. He then became a huge mountain with numerous peaks, covered with tall trees. From that mountain streams of lances, spears, swords and maces began to issue out incessantly.

73. Beholding that mountain resembling a heap of antimony from which fierce weapons continuously flowed out, Karna was not at all daunted.

74. Then smiling, Karna invoked into existence a celestial weapon. Then that foremost of mountains, cut and thrown off by that weapons of Karna, was completely destroyed.

75. Thereafter the Rakshasa becoming a blue cloud decked with the rain-bow began to cover the son of Suta with a fierce shower of stones.

76. Then that foremost of all persons versed in the use of weapons, viz., Karna, the son of Vikartana, discharging the Vayavya weapon destroyed that blue cloud.

77. Then, O king, covered the quarters of the compass with his arrows, Karna baffled the weapons shot by Ghatotkacha.

78. Then the highly puissant son of Bhimasena smiling the while invoked into existence an all-powerful illusion against that mighty car-warrior viz., Karna.

79. Beholding then that foremost of car-warriors viz., Ghatotkacha, dauntlessly approach him surrounded by a large number of Rakshasa.

80. That resembled lion and tigers and infuriate powerful elephants, some mounted on elephants, some on chariots and some on horses.

81. All bearing various kinds of weapons and wearing diverse kinds of armour and ornaments indeed beholding Ghatotkacha surrounded by these fearful Rakshasas like Vasava by the Marutas.

82. The mighty bowman Karna began to fight with him fiercely. Then Ghatotkacha piercing Karna with five arrows.

83-85. Uttered a tremendous war-cry, filling all the kings with terror. Once more with an Anjalika, Ghatotkacha quickly cut-off the bow of Karna held in his hands together with the arrows fitted thereon. Thereupon Karna taking up another mighty bow capable of bearing a greater strain and looking like the bow of Indra itself, began to stretch it forcibly; thereafter, O king, Karna sped arrows.

86. Furnished with golden wings, capable of slaying foes and ranging through the welkin at

those Rakshasas. Afflicted with those shafts that host of broad-chested Rakshasas.

87. Appeared agitated like a host of wild elephants attacked by a lion. Burning with his arrows the Rakshasas and their horses, charioteer and elephant, O lord.

88. The heroic Karna appeared like the god of fire burning down creatures at the end of a Yuga. Slaying that Rakshasa host, the son of Suta appeared beautiful.

89. Like the god Maheshvara after he had destroyed Tripura in the days of yore. Among the thousands of king belonging to the Pandavas, O sire.

90-92. There was none who could then even look at Karna. O ruler of men, except the powerful Ghatotkacha, that foremost of Rakshasas who was possessed of terrible energy and mighty and who burning with wrath, then looked like the himself. Excited as he was with wrath flames of fire seemed to issue out of his eyes, like burning drops of oil from a pair of flambeaus; then striking his palms against each other and biting his nether lip.

93. The Rakshasa was seen to ride a car the creation of his own illusion to which were yoked asses looking like elephants and having the heads of Pisachas.

94-95. Then excited with rages he addressed his charioteer saying, "Take me near the son of Suta." Then that foremost of car-warriors riding on that chariot of fearful aspect.

96-97. An Asani of dreadful appearance furnished with eight wheels and manufactured by Rudra himself. Placing his bow on his car and jumping down on the earth.

98. And hurled it back at Ghatotkacha. The latter however had jumped down from his car. Meanwhile that highly resplendent weapon burning down the Rakshasa's car with its charioteer, horses and standard.

99. Entered the earth, piercing through her bowels, thereby filling the gods with wonder. Then all creatures applauded Karna.

100. Inasmuch as he succeeded in grasping the Asani of celestial make, having jumped

down from his car. Having achieved this feat, Karna again ascended his car.

101-102. Thereafter that afflicter of foes, namely the son of Suta began to shoot his arrows. O giver of honour what Karna then achieved in that battle of fierce aspect was incapable of being achieved by any other creatures. Then struck with his Narachas like a mountain by showers of rain.

103-105. Ghatotkacha of aerial from once more disappeared from the view. Fighting in this way, the huge Rakshasa, the slayer of foes, destroyed the celestial weapons of Karna, by means of high agility and illusive powers. Thus although his weapons were destroyed by the illusive powers of that Rakshasa.

106. Karna dauntlessly fought on with him. Thereupon the highly puissant son of Bhima, O king, being worked up with rage.

107. Multiplied himself many times thereby inspiring terror in to the hearts of mighty car-warriors. Thereafter from all the points of the compass lions, tigers, hyenas, fire-tongued snakes and iron-beaked rangers of the sky, began to issue out. Covered with the swiftly-flying arrows shot from Karna's bow.

108. That gigantic Rakshasa looking like the prince of mountains, disappeared then and there. Then numerous Rakshasas, Pisachas, Yatudhanas and.

109. Peaks of wolves and leopards of frightful aspects, rushed upon Karna for devouring him.

110. These then tried to frighten Karna by their fierce yells. With many dreadful weapons ready for use and steeped in blood.

111. Karna pierced each of those monsters. Then with a celestial weapons baffling that illusion of the Rakshasa.

112. He wounded the former's fierce steeds with arrows of depressed knots. Those steeds thus maimed and deprived of their limbs and with their backs lacerated with Karna's arrows.

113. Fell down on the earth, even before the eyes of that Rakshasa. The son of Hidimba seeing his illusions baffled once more made

himself invincible, speaking thus to Vikartana's son—"I will presently compass your slaughter."

### CHAPTER 177

#### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA) – Continued

#### The battle between Alayudha and the Pandavas

Sanjaya said

1. When the battle between Karna and that Rakshasa had been thus progressing, Alayudha the prince of the Rakshasa, endued with great strength made his appearance of the field of battle.

2. Supported by a large division of troops and surrounded by thousands of Rakshasas of dreadful aspect, he approached Duryodhana.

3. Indeed surrounded by many heroic Rakshasas of diverse appearances, he came there recollecting the ancient quarrel with the Pandavas. His relative, the Brahmana-devouring Vaka had been slain (by Bhima).

4. So also the highly puissant Krimira and his friend Hidimba. He waited for a long time, keeping alive the memory of his old enmity with the Pandavas.

5. Now informed of this nocturnal battle he came there desirous of compassing the death of Bhima. Then like an infuriate elephant or an enraged snake.

6-7. That one longing to engage in the fight spoke these words addressing Duryodhana – "O mighty monarch, you have heard how Bhima slew my relatives the Rakshasas Vaka, Krimira and Hidimba in battle. In days gone by, he ravished our daughter Hidimba.

8-10. Utterly disregarding ourselves and other Rakshasas. What shall I say more, O king, I have now come of my own accord here to slay him with his followers and cars and steeds and elephants as also the son of Hidimba with all his counselors. Today slaying all the sons of Kunti, headed by the son of Vasudeva, I will eat them up in company with all my followers. Prevent all your troops from battle with the Pandavas; we will fight with them."

11. Having heard those words of his, king Duryodhana was filled with delight; and surrounded as he was with his brothers welcoming the Rakshasa, he addressed these words to him.

12. Placing you and your followers in our front, we shall fight with our enemies. My troops, impelled by the enmity they bear against the Pandavas cannot be restrained.

13. "Then let it be so," replying thus to the king, that foremost of the Rakshasas, accompanied by his man-eating followers, dashed in fury against Bhimasena.

14. His person was effulgent and his chariot burnt with the splendour of the solar disc. Indeed, O foremost of kings, he looked as beautiful as Ghatotkacha himself.

15. His spacious chariot also emitted unequalled clatter and was adorned with numerous arches and covered with bear-skins and measured a Nalva.

16. His steeds were also fleet and prodigious like elephants and they brayed like asses. Living upon flesh and blood and of huge bodies, a full hundred of them were yoked to his car.

17. The clatter of his car also resembled the rumble of mighty clouds. His bow was also tough and strong with a hard string.

18. His arrows also were furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone and they resembled Akshas of cars. That hero also possessed might of arms like that of Ghatotkacha himself.

19. His standard also perched upon by hosts of vultures and ravens looked like the sun or the fire; in beauty of person he excelled Ghatotkacha and his countenance was flushed with rage.

20. He wore resplendent Angadas and effulgent diadem and garlands. His headgear and sword and floral garlands were duly tied. He was armed with maces, Bhusundis, bludgeons, ploughs and bows and he was covered with a coat of mail tough and impenetrable like the skin of elephant.

21. Then crushing the Pandava divisions with that car of his of the effulgence of the fire

and roving thither and thither he looked beautiful, like a mass of clouds in the welkin fringed with streaks of lighting.

22. The foremost royal fighters of the Pandava host also, endowed with great shields fought on delightfully, O king, on all sides (in that battle with Alayudha).

## CHAPTER 178

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The battle fought by Alayudha

Sanjaya said

1. Then beholding Alayudha of fierce deeds come to fight on their behalf, all the Kouravas, were exceedingly delighted.

2. So also your sons, headed by Duryodhana himself, were filled with joy like persons, desirous of crossing a sea, setting rafts, when there was no chance of getting it.

3. Having received Alayudha, that foremost prince of the Rakshasas, with a respectful welcome, the kings of your army considered themselves as born anew.

4. Meanwhile as that nocturnal battle raged between Karna and the Rakshasa–battle that, though terrible and superhuman and fierce, was yet delightful to the eye.

5. The Panchalas and other kings became passive spectators of it. At the same time, O king, your troops, though protected all over the field by their commanders.

6. As also Drona and Drona's son and Kripa and others uttered loud wails, saying All is lost. Indeed beholding on the field those terrible feats of Hidimba's son.

7. All your fighters were filled with anxiety; and uttering shrieks of distress they almost lost their senses. All your troops then, O king, became hopeless of Karna's life.

8. Then Duryodhana, beholding Karna hard pressed, summoned that foremost of the Rakshasas Alayudha and addressed him in these words–

9. "Yonder is Vikartana's son Karna engaged in battle with the son of Hidimba. Behold he is achieving feats worthy of his valour and strength.

10. Behold there lie the royal heroic warriors slain and wounded with various weapons by the son of Bhimasena, like so many trees crushed by a huge tusked elephant.

11. Amongst all my kindly allies, I have allotted this (Rakshasa Ghatotkacha), with your permission as your share in battle. O hero, do you bring him down displaying your prowess.

12. O slayer of foes, allow not this sinful Ghatotkacha), to crush Vikartana's son through his illusive powers before you despatch him."

13. Thus spoken to by the king, that Rakshasa, of fierce prowess, replied to former saying "let it be so"; and then that mighty-armed one rushed against Ghatotkacha.

14. Thereupon, O lord, the son of Bhimasena also, bearing alone Karna for a while, began to afflict his advancing adversary with this shafts.

15. Then the battle, that commenced between those two enraged Rakshasa chiefs, resembled that between two infuriate elephants both desirous of consorting with the same she-elephant in her season in the woods.

16. Meanwhile, left alone by the Rakshasa that foremost of car-warriors viz., Karna, rushed against Bhimasena, on his car of solar effulgence.

17. Then disregarding the rushing Karna and beholding Ghatotkacha hard pressed by Alayudha, like a bull engaged with a lion.

18. That foremost of all smiters, viz., Bhimasena, rushed against the chariot of Alayudha, riding on his own car of solar effulgence and shooting showers of sharp arrows.

19. Then, O lord, beholding Bhimasena approach, Alayudha, leaving Ghatotkacha alone rushed against the former.

20. Then, O master, that slayer of Rakshasa Bhima, furiously encountering that foremost of

Rakshasas, covered him and his followers with showers of arrows.

21. Similarly, O king, that subduer of foes namely, Alayudha, cutting off Bhima's arrows with straight going shafts of his, repeatedly covered the latter with his arrows.

22. On the other hand all these Rakshasas, armed with various weapons and dreadful-looking, assailed Bhimasena from all sides desirous of securing victory to your sons.

23. Then the highly puissant Bhimasena, wounded by those numerous Rakshasas, pierced each of them in return with five sharp arrows.

24. Those Rakshasas, of cruel minds, when thus engaged with Bhima, began to utter loud roared and to run in all the ten directions of the compass.

25. The mighty Rakshasa, then beholding the troops belonging to him fly away from fear of Bhima, rushed furiously upon the latter and covered him with arrows.

26-27. In that battle Bhimasena then shot at Alayudha many shafts of keen points. Thereupon Alayudha, in that battle, quickly put off or caught hold of several arrows shot by Bhimasena. Then Bhima of dreadful prowess, beholding that feat of the foremost of the Rakshasas.

28-29. Hurling at him with great force a mace whose fall resembled the fall of thunder. With his own mace then Alayudha struck the burning mace of Bhima, where-upon the latter flew towards Bhima. Then the son of Kunti covered that foremost of the Rakshasas with a perfect shower of arrows.

30. The Rakshasa baffled even those arrows of Bhima with his own sharp arrows. Then all the Rakshasa troops of dreadful aspect.

31. At the command of their leader, slew all the elephants of the Pandava division. The Panchalas, the Srinjayas, the horses and the excellent elephants (of the Pandava host).

32. Then could find no security being afflicted severely by the Rakshasa. Beholding then the progress of that mighty and terrific battle.

33. The foremost of all male beings addressing Dhananjaya said these words. Behold the mighty-armed Bhima succumb to the prince of the Rakshasas.

34. Do you rush to his rescue, O son of Pandu and do not hesitate. Let Dhristadyumna and Uttamanjās.

35. Accompanied by the mighty car-warriors of Droupada's division, assail Karna. let Nakula, Sahadeva and the puissant Yuyudhana.

36-37. Exert themselves in slaughtering the other Rakshasas at your command O son of Pandu. O mighty-armed one, do you hold in check this division headed by Drona, in as much as a great panic has seized our troops now." When Krishna had thus spoken, those foremost of car-warriors, as appointed.

38. Assailed Karna and the inferior Rakshasas. Then with shafts shot from full drawn bows and resembling snakes of virulent poison.

39. The highly puissant prince of the Rakshasas cut-off Bhima's bow. The again that mighty hero, with sharp arrows, slew Bhima's steeds and charioteer.

40. Even, O Bharata, before the very eyes of Bhima himself. Then deprived of his horses and charioteer Bhima, jumping down from his chariot.

41. Hurling a heavy and dreadful mace at the Rakshasa, uttering a fierce roar. Then as that mighty mace a fierce roar was flying towards him.

42. The fearful Rakshasa broke it down with his own mace and then uttered a terrible roar. The beholding that fearful and awe-inspiring feat achieved by the prince.

43. Bhima, filled with joy, grasped another fierce mace. Thereupon a terrible encounter raged between the Rakshasas and men.

44. Causing the earth to tremble repeatedly with the fall of their maces. Then again throwing aside their maces and bearing each other.

45. They began to strike each other with their fists emitting a sound like that of the thunder. With car wheels and axle and Akshas and Adisthanas and Upskaras.

46. Whatever things they could then get, with that they rushed furiously against one another shedding blood profusely and encounter each other.

47. They began to drag each other like two infuriate elephants. Then Hrishiksha, ever devoted to the welfare of the Pandavas, beholding the combat (between Bhima and Alayudha) urged Hidimva's son to the rescue of his father.

## CHAPTER 179

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)- Continued

#### The slaughter of Alayudha

Sanjaya said

1. Then beholding Bhima hard pressed in battle by the Rakshasa Vasudeva's son approaching Ghatotkacha said these words to him.

2. O mighty armed one, behold Bhima as if devoured by the Rakshasa in battle, before the eyes of all troops and before those of yours, O highly effulgent one.

3. Therefore for a time leaving alone Karna, do you quickly slay Alayudha that foremost of the Rakshasas, O mighty armed one, after which you shall slay Karna."

4. Then hearing the words of that one of Vrishni race and leaving Karna alone for a while, the highly puissant Ghatotkacha, that brother of Vaka, fought with that prince of the Rakshasas.

5. In that night the battle, that raged between the Rakshasa Alayudha and the son of Hidimba, was fierce and confused to the extreme.

6-7. Meanwhile the mighty car-warriors Yuyudhana, Nakula and Sahadeva began to pierce with keen shafts the warriors of Alayudha, viz., those grim looking heroic Rakshasas, who, wielding there bows, were rushing impetuously against them.

8. The diadem-decked Vibhatsu, O monarch, in that battle, discharging arrows on all sides, began to overthrow many foremost of Kshatriyas.

9. Similarly, O king, Karna caused many kings of fly away—including Dhristadyumna, Shikhandin and other mighty car-warriors of the Panchalas.

10. Beholding them thus slaughtered and wounded Bhimasena, of terrible prowess, quickly rushed against Karna shooting sharp arrows.

11. Then those warriors, viz., Nakula, Sahadeva and the mighty car-warrior, Satyaki, also came to the spot where Suta's son was, having slain many Rakshasas.

12. These then fought with Karna and the Panchalas fought with Drona. Meanwhile. Alayudha, excited with rage, began to strike that subduer of enemies, viz., Ghatotkacha on the head with a huge bludgeon. In consequence of that stroke the highly puissant son of Bhima.

13-16. Squatted down, overwhelmed with a partial swoon. Thereafter he hurled at Alayudha a mace, looking like a blazing flame of fire, decked with a hundred bells and adorned with gold. Hurling forcibly by that one of fierce achievements, that mace crushed into pieces the horses, the driver and the loudly rattling chariots of Alayudha. Then betaking to his illusive prowess the latter then jumped down from his car of which the horses, the wheels Akshas and standard and Kurara had all been shattered. Then through his illusive powers he showered a copious downpour of blood on the field.

17. Then sky the appeared to be over-spread with darts, masses of clouds with flashes of lightning. A thunder storm then made its appearance accompanied by rumble of clouds and claps of thunder.

18. Loud clapping sounds were also then heard in that combat, beholding that illusion created by the Rakshasa Alayudha, the cannibal Ghatotkacha.

19. Soaring high, destroyed it by his own illusive power. Possessed of potent illusive

powers Alayudha then seeing his own illusions nullified by those of his adversary.

20. Began to pour a heavy downpour of stones on Ghatotkacha. That terrible shower of stones, the brave Ghatotkacha baffled by means of a shower of arrows. They then poured on each other diverse weapons.

21-23. Such as iron bludgeons, lances, maces sharp clubs, mallets, tridents, sabres, spears, long and small, kampanas, keen shafts, both long and broad-headed and arrows and discuses and battle axes and Ayagudas and sharp arrows and weapons with heads like those of kine, Ulukhalas.

24-26. And they then struck each other tearing up many kinds of large branched trees, such as Sami, Pilu, Karira, Champaka and O Bharata, Juguda, Vadari, blossoming Kovidara, Plaksha, Arimedhas, Palasha and the Camian, the Peepul, as also with numerous crests of mountains decked with various kinds of metals.

27. The clash, produced by those trees and mountain crest, became as loud as the sound of the roaring thunder. Indeed the battle, that then raged between Alayudha and Bhima's son was, O monarch, fierce in the extreme.

28-29. Like that which took place in the days of yore between the two monkey chiefs Bali and Sugriva. They wounded each other with shafts and various other kinds of weapons as also with keen-edged swords. Then those two might Rakshasas, rushing against each other, caught hold of each other by the hair.

30. And those two huge warriors, covered with numerous wounds on their bodies and blood and perspiration trickling down, appeared beautiful like two mighty masses of clouds pouring rain.

31. Then rushing with great violence and whirling the Rakshasa on high and dashing him down again, Hidimba's son cut-off the large head of his adversary.

32. Then holding that had graced with a pair of ear-rings, the puissant Ghatotkacha uttered a terrific roar.

33. Beholding the huge-bodied brother of Vaka, that subduer of foes, slain, the Panchalas and the Pandavas uttered tremendous war-cries.

34. Thereupon on the fall of that Rakshasa the Pandava troops struck up thousands of drums and ten thousand conches.

35. That night then exclusively brought victory to the Pandavas; echoing with the sound of musical instruments and illumined with torches it then appeared highly beautiful.

36. Then the highly puissant son of Bhima threw that head of Alayudha at he face of Duryodhana who was then rendered insensible.

37. Thereupon Duryodhana, beholding the heroic Alayudha slain, became filled with great anxiety together with all his troops.

38. Alayudha, having come to Duryodhana out of his own accord, recollecting his old enmity, has said to the latter, that he would slay Bhima.

39. The Kuru king had considered the slaughter of Bhima to be certain and had considered the length of the days of his brother also to be measured.

40. Then beholding that Alayudha (on whom all his hopes rested) slain by the son of Bhimasena, Duryodhana considered Bhima's vow (about the slaughter of himself and his brothers) to be already fulfilled.

## CHAPTER 180

### (GHATOTKACHA-VADHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The slaughter of Ghatotkacha

Sanjaya said

1. Having slain the Rakshasa Alayudha Ghatotkacha was greatly delighted; and then standing at the very van of the troops he began to utter diverse kinds of roars.

2. Those loud roars of his, capable of his making an elephant tremble, entering into the car of troops, struck a great panic to their hearts, O mighty monarch.

3. Meanwhile the mighty-armed Karna, beholding the highly puissant son of Bhima engaged with Alayudha, rushed against the Panchalas.



4. He proceeded against Dhristadyumna and Sikhandin, each with ten strong and straight shafts, shot from his bow drawn to its fullest stretch.

5. Thereafter with a group of other arrows, consisting of Narachas, & c., the son of Suta caused Yudhamanyu, Uttamanjas and the mighty car-warrior Satyaki to tremble.

6. The bows of all those warriors also, O king, engaged in shooting shafts right and left, were also seen incessantly to be deawn in a circle.

7. In that night the sound of their palms and the twang of their bow-strings and the clatter of their car-wheels were so loud as to resemble and rumble of cloud at the end of summer.

8. Then, O monarch, that battle appeared to be a cloud of which the sound of car-clatter and bow-twang consisted the roar of thunder; the bows of warriors its flashes and showers of arrows it torrents of rain.

9. O foremost of kings, then Vikartana's son Karna, that crusher of his foes, immovable like a hill and equal to a hill in personal proportions, destroyed that wonderful shower of arrows.

10. Then Vikartana's son, high-souled, ever devoted to the interests of your sons, began to slay his adversaries in that battle, with Tomaras, which, in their fall, resembled the thunder-bolt and also with sharp arrows furnished with variegated wings of gold.

11. Some (of the enemy's host) then had their standards broken and torn; some had their bodies torn and mangled with sharp arrows. Some were deprived of their charioteers, some of their horses and some were soon maimed by Vikartana's son.

12. Getting no refuge, the Panchala host then fell back upon the division of Yudhishtira. Beholding these troops broken and compelled to turn away, Ghatotkacha then became excited to the highest pitch of fury.

13. Then mounting on his excellent car adorned with gold and gems, he began to roar like a lion. Thereafter approaching Vikartana's son Karna he pierced him with arrows resembling the bolt of Heaven itself.

14. They both then covered the welkin with showers of barbed arrows, Narachas, Silimukhas, Nalikas, Dandas, Asanis, Vatsyadantas, Varahakarnas and broad-headed and razor-faced arrows and shafts pointed like horns.

15. The welkin then, shrouded with that arrowy shower, appeared in consequence of these gold-winged shafts of burning effulgence flying straight through it, as if hung with festoons of beautiful flowers.

16. Of unequaled splendour, they both were each other's match and they then wounded each other with excellent weapons. None could then find any superiority of either of those two excellent heroes.

17. The battle, that was thus fought between the sons of Surya and Bhima and in which showers of arrows were discharged, looked highly charming and presented almost of unequaled aspect like what is seen in the fierce encounter between Rahu and the sun in the heavens.

**Sanjaya said**

18. When, O king, Ghatotkacha, that foremost of all wielders of weapons, found that could get no advantage over Karna he invoked into existence an exceedingly fierce weapon.

19. Then with that weapon having at first slain Karna's steed, the Rakshasa next destroyed his driver. And then the son of Hidimba quickly rendered himself invisible even then and there.

**Dhritarashtra said**

20. When that Rakshasa, after fighting by underhand measures, had thus disappeared, O Sanjaya, describe to me what befell my troops then.

**Sanjaya said**

21. Then beholding the Rakshasa disappear, all the Kurus then exclaimed aloud Saying—"Appearing next to view, the Rakshasa, fighting by underhand means, will certainly slay Karna."

22. Thereupon Karna, who was endued with extreme lightness in the use of diverse weapons,

covered all the points of the compass with his arrowy net-work. Then in consequence of the welkin being darkened by those showers of arrows, no creature could be seen distinguished.

23. So great was the lightness of hand displayed by the son of Suta that nobody could then mark when he touched his quiver with his fingers, when he placed his arrows on the bow-string and when he aimed and let them off. The whole welkin was then darkened with his shafts.

24. Then a fierce and dreadful illusion was invoked into existence in the welkin by the Rakshasa. We then beheld in the sky what appeared to be amass of red cloud resembling the terrible flames of a raging fire.

25. O ruler of the Kurus, then from that cloud were seen to issue out flashes of lightning and burning flame-beams. Tremendous roars also issued therefrom, resembling the din of thousands of drums beaten simultaneously.

26. From it also fell many gold-winged shafts, spears, javelins, heavy clubs and such other weapons, as also battle-axes, swords cleansed with oil and axes of blazing edges and darts.

27. And spiked bludgeons pouring shinning rays, charming maces made of iron, long lances of keen points, heavy maces adorned with gold and entwined with strings and Shataghnis all around.

28. Large stones drooped from it and thousands of thunderbolts with loud clap and hundreds of wheels and razors of the effulgence of fire.

29. Shooting countless arrows Karna then failed to destroy that thick and blazing shower of lances, swords, clubs, mallets, thunderbolts Asains and axes.

30. Then a tremendous uproar was caused there as horse fell struck with arrows, elephants came down being crushed with thunderbolts and car-warriors fell deprived of life by other weapons.

31. Afflicted all around with the fall of dreadful weapons of various kinds discharged by Ghatotkacha and army of Duryodhana, in

great distress, were seen to move helplessly on the field of battle.

32. Cries of Alas and Oh then arose there; and the warriors with their cheerless expression indicted as if they were on the verge of ruin. But those foremost of men, inspired as they were with honourable sentiments, did not then leave the field with faces turned round.

33. Then beholding that immensely terrible and awful shower of weapons invoked into existence by the illusive energy of the Rakshasa and seeing their own troops felled incessantly by it, your sons were seized with a great panic.

34. Jackals having tongues like the leaping flames of fire began to utter fierce howls by hundreds; the Rakshasa also uttered fierce yells. Hearing these disagreeable sounds, O king, your troops were greatly afflicted.

35. Those fierce Rakshasas having fiery tongues, blazing countenances and sharp teeth and forms huge as mountains, car-reering through the sky with lances in grasp, appeared like clouds pouring torrents of rain.

36. Wounded and crushed with those dreadful arrows, spears, darts, maces, spiked bludgeons of great lustre, thunder-bolts, trident, Asanis, wheels and Shataghnis, the Kaurava troops began to fall down.

37. The Rakshasas then went on pouring upon the warriors of your sons long spears and treacle and Shataghnis and Sthunas made of steel and covered with strings of jute and all the combatants became confounded.

38. heroic warriors with weapons broken or falling off from their gasp or deprived of heads or with maimed limbs, began to fall down on the field. Then steeds and elephants and chariots were also crushed to pieces by the shower of stones.

39. Those Yatudhanas of terrible forms created by Ghatotkacha by the help of his illusive powers, pouring that thick shower of mighty weapons, spread neither those that were frightened nor those that begged for mercy.

40. In the ruthless slaughter of Kuru heroes, brought on by Death himself, in that

extermination of Kshatriyas the Kaurava warriors suddenly broke and fled with speed, exclaiming—

41. "Fly, O Kouravas, all is lost. The gods with Indra at their head are slaying us for the sake of the Pandavas." At that time there was nobody that could save the sinking Bharata troops."

42. During that terrible uproar and shout and carnage of the Kurus, the divisions loosing their distinguishing marks the parties could not be differentiated from one another.

43. In that dreadful fight in which nobody paid any regard for any one else, every side of the field, when looked at, appeared to be said, O monarch. Karna alone was then to be seen drowned in that downpour of arrows.

44. Then Karna covered the welkin with his shafts, striking against that celestial illusion of the Rakshasas. The son of Suta, endowed with modesty and achieving the most difficult and praiseworthy feats, was not at all confounded in that battle.

45. O king, then all the Saindhavas and Valhikas looked in fear at Karna whose senses were not confounded in that fight. And they all applauded him whether they looked at the triumphs of the Rakshasa.

46. Thereafter a Sataghni, furnished with wheels, was discharged at Karna by Ghatotkacha and it detached at once the four steeds of Karna. These horses then fell down on their knees, deprived of life, teeth, eyes and tongues.

47. Then descending from his horseless chariot and seeing the Kouravas fly away and beholding his own celestial weapons repulsed by the illusion of the Rakshasa, Karna, not at all confounded, turned his mind inwards and then began to reflect as to what he should do next.

48. At that time all the Kouravas, beholding Karna and the terrible illusion of the Rakshasas, cried out saying—O Karna, slay the Rakshasa with your dart. The Kouravas and the Dhritarashtra are on the point of being exterminated.

49. What can Bhima or Arjuna do to us? Slay this wicked Rakshasa, who is consuming us all, at this dead of night. They, that will escape alive from this encounter, will fight with the Parthas tomorrow.

50. Therefore slay this dreadful Rakshasa now with that dart given to you by Vasava. O Karna, let not these great warriors, the Kouravas these royal combatants that resemble Indra himself be all exterminated in this night-fight.

51. Then Karna, seeing the Rakshasa alive at the middle of night and the Kuru army filled with fear and hearing also the loud wails of the latter, set his heart upon hurling his dart.

52. Burning with wrath like an infuriate lion and unable to brook the assaults of the Rakshasa Karna took up that foremost of victory-giving and indomitable darts, desirous of achieving the destruction of Ghatotkacha.

53. That dart, O monarch, which he had kept and worshipped through years for encompassing the slaughter of Pandu's son in battle, that excellent dart that Indra himself had given to Suta's son in exchange for the latter's ear-rings.

54. That burning and dreadful dart entwined with strings and which seemed to long for blood, that terrible missile that looked like very tongue of death or his sister, that resplendent and fearful dart Vikartana's son now hurled at the Rakshasa.

55. Thereupon seeing that excellent and glittering weapon, capable of penetrating of Suta's son, the Rakshasa fled away in fear making his body prodigious like the foot of the Vindhya hills.

56. Then seeing that dart in the grasp of Karna all creatures, in the heavens, began to utter loud wails. Fearful winds began to blow and thunder with tremendous clap began to fall on the earth.

57. Then that dart, destroying the blazing illusion and going through the breast of the Rakshasa, soared aloft and penetrated in the night into a stony constellation in the heavens.

58. Thus having fought with various kinds of weapons with numerous heroic warriors and Rakshasa, Ghatotkacha, then uttering various dreadful roars, fell deprived of life with that dart of Indra.

59. This is the most exceedingly wonderful feat that the Rakshasa achieved for the destruction of his foes viz., that at the time when his heart was penetrated by that dart he shone resplendent, O monarch, like a mighty-mountain or a mass of clouds.

60. Deprived of life, that foremost of the Rakshasas, fell down on the ground from welkin. His body was torn, deprived of speech, head and tongue Gatotkacha extended his body in a very large form.

61. Having assumed that terrible and dreadful figure, Bhimasena's son of frightful deeds fell down. When dying, O monarch, he fell upon a portion of your army and pressed those troops down by the weight of his own body.

62. Then falling down with force, the Rakshasa, with his huge and still increasing body, desirous of benefiting the Pandavas, slew a full Akshauhini of your troops, while he himself gave up his life.

63. Then a tremendous uproar composed of the war-cries of combatants, beasts, of conchs and sound of drums and cymbals arose there. The Kouravas, then beholding the Rakshasa slain and his illusion destroyed, uttered loud shouts of joy.

64. Then Karna, applauded by the Kurus, as Shakra had been by the Marutas upon the death of Vritra, ascended behind the car of your son and becoming, the object of every body's sight entered the Kuru host.

## CHAPTER 181

### (GHATOTKACHA VADHA PARVA) – Continued

#### The joy of Krishna

Sanjaya said

1. Beholding Hidimva's son slain and lying like a riven hill all the Pandavas began to shed copious tears of grief.

2. But the son of Vasudeva, overwhelmed with delight, began to utter there loud war-cries thereby causing pain to the Pandavas.

3. Indeed uttering loud shouts he then embraced the son of Pandu. Thus uttering loud roars and drawing the reins of the steeds.

4. He began to dance in joy, like a tree shaken by the tempest. Then embracing Partha once more and clapping his arm-pits.

5. That undeteriorating god, endowed with great intelligence, once more uttered loud roars standing on the terrace of his car. Then beholding those sings of joy manifested by Kesava, Dhananjaya.

6. O monarch, with a heart overwhelmed with grief, addressed the former saying—"O slayer of Madhu, you are showing delight at a time scarcely fit for it.

7. Indeed on an occasion for sorrow generated by the death of Hidimva's son our troops, beholding Ghatotkacha slain, are flying away.

8. We also are filled with great grief, at the death of Hidimva's son, O Janardana. The cause of your delight on such occasion must indeed be very serious.

9. O foremost of all truth-speaking men, therefore tell me today truly the cause of your joy. O subduer of foes, if it is not a secret, it behoves you to say it to me.

10. O Slayer of Madhu, tell me what has disturbed your patience today? O Jannaradana, I consider this fickleness of yours to be like the drying up of the ocean or the walking of the Meru mountain.

Vasudeva's son said

11. Overwhelming is the delight that has filled me now. Hear it, O Dhananjaya. What I shall tell you will immediately dispel your sorrow impart joy on your heart.

12. O you of great splendour, his sakti having been used against Ghatotkacha, regard Karna as already slain in battle.

13. No person could have confronted Karna, if like Kartikeya he would have stood in battle armed with that dart.

14. It is through good fortune that his armour had been taken away, that his ear-rings, had been taken away from him; by good luck it is that his infallible dart also had been baffled by Ghatotkacha.

15. Covered in his natural coat of mail and decked with his natural ear-rings, Karna, having his senses under thorough control, could, single-handed, defeat the three worlds with the gods therein.

16. Neither Vasava, nor Kubera, nor Varuna, the lord of the waters, nor the god of Death, could venture to confront him.

17. If that foremost of men had his natural coat of mail and ear-rings then neither yourself, wielding the Gandiva, nor myself uplifting the discus Sudarsana could have defeated him in battle.

18. For your good, Karna was deprived of his ear-rings by Indra with the aid of illusion. In the same manner that subjugator of hostile troops was deprived of his armour.

19. As Karna had given his effulgent ear-rings and armour cutting them off from his body he is designated as Vikartana.

20. Karna now appears to me to be like an infuriate snake of virulent venom stupefied by the virtue of incantation or like a fire with its flames quenched.

21-22. O mighty-armed one, since the time the illustrious Shakra gave that Sakti to Karna in exchange for the latter's earrings and armour—that Sakti, which has slain Ghatotkacha from that time, Vrisha having obtained it, had always regarded you as slain in battle.

23. But though deprived of that dart, I swear to you, O sinless one, that hero could not still be defeated by any one else save yourself.

24. Devoted to the Brahmanas, truthful, of ascetic practices and vow-observing and merciful on his foes, Karna is called Vrisha.

25. Delighting in battle, possessed of mighty arms, his bow ever ready for use, like a lion in the forest depriving leaders of elephantine heads of their pride.

26. Karna ever humiliates the pride of many mighty car-warriors and resembles the mid-day sun incapable of being looked at.

27. When fighting with all the high-souled and excellent warriors of your army, O foremost of men, Karna, discharging his showers of arrows, looks like the autumnal sun of myriad rays.

28. Just like clouds at the end of summer pouring torrents of rain, Karna, shooting incessantly showers of arrows, resembles a pouring cloud charged with celestial weapons.

29. He is incapable of being vanquished in battle by the very gods shooting showers of arrow in all directions and discharging flesh and blood profusely.

30. Deprived of his armour and his two ear-rings, O son of Pandu and having given up his Sakti given to him by Shakra, Karna today is nothing more than a mortal.

31. There will happen only one opportunity for his slaughter. When the wheels of his chariot will be sunk in the earth, availing yourself of that opportunity and exerting vigorously you should slay him, acting up to my hint.

32-33. The conqueror of Bala that excellent hero, wielding his thunder, cannot slay the indomitable Karna when he stands armed with weapons. Indeed, O Arjuna, for your welfare, by the help of numerous machinations, I have destroyed, one after another Jarasandha, the high-souled ruler of the Chedis, the mighty armed Ekalavya of the Nishada tribe, other great Rakshasas having Hidimba, Krimira and Vaka for their leaders, as also Alayudha that crusher of hostile troops and Ghatotkacha that guider of enemies and of fearful feats.

## CHAPTER 182

### (GHATOTKACHA VADHA PARVA) –

#### Continued

#### Words of Krishna

#### Arjuna said

1. How, O Janardana and by what measures were those lords of earth Jarasandha and others slain, for our welfare?

**Vasudeva said**

2. Had not Jarasandha, the ruler of the Chedis and the highly puissant prince of the Nishadas been slain before, they would have become very terrible by this time.

3. Duryodhana would then surely have invited those foremost of car-warriors to embrace his cause and they, ever hostile to us, must have chosen the Kaurava party.

4. They all were brave, fierce bowmen, accomplished in the use of weapons and firm in battle; and they would have then defended the Dhritarashtras like so many immortals.

5. The son of Suta, Jarasandha, the ruler of the Chedis and the prince of the Nishadas, these, united with Suyodhana, mighty have conquered the whole earth.

6. It was through my tactics that they were slain. Hear from me of those tactics. Indeed even the gods, without the employment of tactics, could not have defeated them in battle.

7. Each of them, individually, could have fought with entire army of the celestials, protected by the regents of the worlds themselves, O son of Pritha!

8. Once on a time, afflicted by the son of Rohini, Jarasandha, excited to the highest pitch of fury, hurled at ourselves a mace capable of slaying at creatures.

9. Sparkling like the tongues of fire, that mace flew towards ourselves dividing the welkin like the line that parts the tresses of woman and with the impetuosity of the thunder hurled by Shakra.

10. Then beholding that mace course towards us, the son of Rohini, for repulsing that mace, hurled the weapon known as Sthanukarna.

11. Repulsed by the force of Baladeva's weapon, that mace fell on the earth riving her open and causing the mountains thereon to tremble.

12. There was a terrible Rakshasi, by name Jara, possessed of dreadful mighty. She, O monarch, had put together the different parts of Jarasandha's body and therefore was the latter so named.

13. From two mothers, the two halves of his body come out separately. And in consequence of those two halves being united by that Rakshasi, he was called Jarasandha.

14. That Rakshasi, that was then within bowels of the death, was slain with her sons and relatives, O son of Pritha, by means of that mace and that weapon Sthanuharana.

15. Deprived of that mace of his Jarasandha was slain in a fierce encounter by Bhimasena even before your very eyes O Dhananjaya!

16. Had the puissant Jarasandha been then armed with his mace then, O foremost of men, even the celestials, with Indra at their head, could not have succeeded in slaying him in battle.

17. For your good also was the mighty son of the Nishadhas, deprived, by a guileful means, of his thumb, by Drona who assumed the position of his preceptor.

18. That prince of the Nishadas of resolute prowess with his finger-protectors tied round them, used to rove in the forest, swelling with his own pride, like a second Rama.

19. Retaining the use of his thumb Akalavya could not have been defeated in battle by the Danavas, the celestials, the Rakshasas and the serpents, all united together in battle.

20. Of firm grasp, accomplished in the use of weapons, incessantly shooting his weapons, he could not have been looked at by mere men?

21. For your good, he was slain by me in the van of battle. The powerful ruler of the Chedis was also slain before your very eyes.

22. He also was incapable of being conquered in battle by the celestials and the Asuras. I suffered this birth only for slaughtering him and other such molesters of the gods.

23. With your aid, in order to achieve the word's welfare, O foremost of men, Hidimba and Vaka and Krimitra had all been slain by Bhimasena.

24. Also Alayudha, possessed of potent powers of illusion, has been slain by Hidimba's son. All other Rakshasas, brave like Karna and

destroyers of the Brahma, sacrifice, have also been slain.

25. Through our tactics Karna used that Sakti of his in felling the son of Hidimba. If on the other hand, Karna had not slain this Rakshasa by his Sakti.

26. Then it would have been my (painful) duty to slay Bhimasena's son Ghatotkacha. It was only for pleasing you that I did not slay him before.

27. This Rakshasa was a contumner of the Brahmanas and a destroyer of sacrifices; this wicked-souled one was inimical to the performance of sacrifices and therefore has he been slain thus.

28. O sinless one, through our tactics the Sakti given to him by Shakra has been also rendered useless. O son of Pandu, those who destroy righteousness are all slayable by me.

29-30. This vow has been taken for establishing righteousness. Where there are the Vedas, truth, self-control, purity, righteousness, humility, prosperity, wisdom and forbearance, there I am also to be found. You need not now be at all anxious about the slaughter of Karna.

31. I shall tell you the means through which you shall be able to slay Karna. Vrikodara also will slay Suyodhana in battle.

32. O son of Pandu, I shall also tell you the means by which that one's slaughter will be compassed. But now, the tumult of the hostile cry is increasing every moment.

33. Your own troops also are flying away in all the ten directions of compass; the Kaurava warriors, having reached their aim, are now killing your troops. Yonder indeed does Drona, that foremost of smiters, consume our ranks.

### CHAPTER 183

#### (GHATOTKACHA VADHA PARVA) –

##### Continued

##### The words of Krishna

##### Dhritarashtra said

1. If Suta's son had possessed such a Sakti as was sure to slay one hero, why then excepting all others, did he not hurl it at Pritha's son Arjuna.

2. Had Arjuna been slain by that Sakti, then all the Srinjayas and Pandavas also would have been slain. Indeed, if Phalguna could have been slain, then victory certainly would have been ours.

3. "Challenged, I would never turn back" even this was the vow taken by Arjuna. The son of Suta should therefore have summoned Arjuna in battle.

4. Tell me, O Sanjaya, why then Vrisha, summoning Arjuna to a single combat, did not slay the latter by means of the Sakti given him by Indra.

5. Surely my son is a fool and has not good counsellors also to guide him; that wretch is ever outwitted by the foe, how then can be hope to obtain victory over them?

6. That Sakti which was such a powerful weapon and on which rested his hopes of victory, also even that Sakti had been made futile by Vasudeva's son through Ghatotkacha.

7. As a fruit is snatched away from the hands of a cripple with withered arms by a powerful man, even so had that mortal Sakti, of Karna, been made futile by Krishna, through Ghatotkacha.

8. Just as in a battle between a boar and a dog, the huntsman is the party to forfeit when either is slain, so, I think, O intelligent one, Vasudeva's son is to be party benefitted in that battle between Karna and Hidimba's son.

9. "If Ghatotkacha slays Karna in battle the Pandavas will be greatly benefitted; on the other hand, if Karna slay Ghatotkacha in battle there will be a great gain to the Pandavas because then Karna's Sakti will be useless."

10. Thinking in this way and for doing what was agreeable to the Pandavas that foremost of men Vasudeva, endued with great wisdom, had caused Ghatotkacha to be slain by Karna in battle.

##### Sanjaya said

11-12. Knowing perfectly well what Karna desired to do, the slayer of Madhu, the mighty armed Janaradana, O monarch ordered the foremost of the Rakshasas, viz., Ghatotkacha of

puissant might to engage in a duel with Karna for rendering, O king, the latter's death-dealing Sakti fruitless. All this, O monarch, is the outcome of your wicked policy.

13. O perpetrator of Kuru's race, we could then have surely been successful had not Karna.

14. O Dhritarashtra, Partha, with his horse, charioteer and standard, would have been completely destroyed in battle, had he been deprived of the aid of Jannardana, that lord of all yoga prowess.

15. Protected with various means and always defended by Krishna, Partha ever defeats his foes, encountering them.

16. Indeed, it was Krishna that rescued Pritha's son from that death dealing Sakti otherwise that weapon would have quickly consumed the son of Kunti like the bolt of Heaven destroying a tree.

#### **Dhritarashtra said**

17. My son in quarrelsome; his counsellors are so many fools. He is proud of his wisdom. He has thus overlooked the certain means that have given him victory.

18. Why, O Suta, did not Karna of high intelligence that foremost of all wielders of weapons discharge that fatal Sakti at Dhananjaya?

19. Why, O Gavalgani's son, did you too forget this great object, since endued as you are with great intelligence, you did not remind Karna?

#### **Sanjaya said**

20. Indeed, every night, O monarch, this used to form the subject of deliberation among Duryodhana, Sakuni, Dushasana and myself.

21. O Karna, leaving alone the rest of the warriors do you slay Dhananjaya. After that we shall lord over the Panchalas and the Pandavas as if they were mere slaves.

22. Or it may be that upon the fall of Pritha's son, he, of Vrishni's race, will appoint another among the Pandavas to act as the leader of them. Therefore let Krishna be slain.

23. Krishna is the root of the Pandavas, Partha is their risen trunk. The other sons of

Pritha and the Panchalas are like their branches and leaves respectively.

24. The Pandavas have Krishna for their shelter, Krishna for their strength and Krishna for their leader. Krishna is their main support like the moon of the constellations.

25. Therefore, O son of Suta, leave alone the leaves, the branches and the trunk of the Pandava tree. Know Krishna to be its root, ever and every where.

26. (Thus indeed did we then speak to Karna). Had he slain the scion of the Dasharha race, that delighter of the Yadavas and in that case, the whole earth, O monarch, would certainly have come under your sway.

27. If that illustrious delighter, of the Yadu race and of the Pandavas, had lain prostrate on the field being slain in battle then, O ruler of men, this earth certainly would have fallen under your sway together with all her mountains, forests and seas.

28. We rose every morning with this resolution regarding that lord of the celestials, viz., Hrishikesha of infinite prowess. But at the time of battle we forgot our resolution.

29. Keshava ever defends Kunti's son Arjuna. He never allowed Arjuna to expose himself before Suta's son in battle.

30. That undeteriorating one even made other foremost of car-warriors confront Karna, thinking how that fatal Sakti of ours might be rendered futile by us, O master.

31. When again the illustrious Krishna protected Pritha's son in this manner, why, O king, would not that foremost of kings protect his own self?

32. Upon mature thought, I see that there is no person in the three worlds who is able to defeat that subduer of foe viz., Janaraddana, that hero bearing the discus in hand.

#### **Sanjaya said**

33. That foremost of car-warrior viz., Satyaki of prowess incapable of being baffled, asked the mighty-armed Krishna about the great car-warrior Karna saying—



34. O Janardana, it had been Karna's firm resolve that he would hurl that dart of infinite energy at Phalguna. Why then did he not hurl it at him actually.

**Vasudeva said**

35. Dushasana, Karna, Sakuni the ruler of the Sindhus with Duryodhana at their head, had frequently held consultation about this subject.

36. They used to say to Karna, "Oh Karna, oh mighty bowman, O you of infinite prowess in battle, you should not hurl this Sakti at any one close, O foremost of all victorious combatants.

37. Except the mighty car-warrior Partha, that son of Kunti who had conquered the lord of wealth himself. Like Vasava among the Gods, he is the most illustrious among the Pandavas.

38. Upon his slaughter, the rest of the Pandavas and the Srinjayas will be heartless like the god deprived of the fire in his mouth."

39. Karna having agreed, saying let it be so, O foremost of the Shinis, the slaughter of the wielder of the Gandiva bow was ever the ruling through in Karna's mind.

40. O foremost of warriors, it was I who confounded the son of Radha, in consequence whereof he did not hurl that Satki at the son of Pandu owning white steeds.

41. O foremost of warriors, as long as I did not succeed in nullifying that means of Arjuna's death, I enjoyed neither sleep nor joy.

42. Beholding that dart therefore rendered fruitless through Ghatotkacha, O foremost of the Shinis, I consider Phalguna to be almost saved from the jaws of Death.

43. Neither my father nor my mother nor yourself, nor my brother, nor even my life, is so worthy of my protection as is Vibhatsu in battle.

44. If there by anything more precious than the sovereignty of the three worlds, even that I do not want to have at the cost of Dhananjaya the son of Pritha.

45. Therefore, O Yuyudhana, a great joy has taken possession of myself today, in as much as I look upon Pritha's son as returned from the dead.

46. For this reason also was the Rakshasa dispatched by me to meet Karna. No one else could have checked the latter in this nocturnal fight.

**Sanjaya said**

47. Then the son of Devaki did thus speak to Satyaki, he who was ever devoted to Dhananjaya's good and to what was agreeable to him.

## CHAPTER 184

### (GHATOTKACHA VADHA PARVA) –

#### Continued

#### The words of Vyasa

**Dhritarashtra said**

1. O sire, this act of Karna, Duryodhana, Sakuni the son of Subala and especially of yourself, has been very much against the dictates of policy.

2. Indeed when you knew that Sakti was capable of slaying only one person and that it was incapable of being borne and repulsed even by the gods with Vasava at their head.

3. Why then, O Sanjaya, was it not hurled by Karna at the son of Devaki or at Phalguna while he was engaged with these in battle before.

**Sanjaya said**

4-5. Every day returning from the field of battle, O ruler of men, we used to hold consultation in the night and speak unto Karna, O foremost of the Kurus, in the following manner. O Karna, tomorrow this Sakti should be hurled at either Karna or Arjuna."

6. When however, the day dawned, O monarch, as fate would have it, Karna as well as all the other warriors forgot all about that resolution.

7. Indeed it is destiny that is supreme to all other forces, inasmuch as Karna did not slay either Partha or Krishna with the dart that he had in his grasp.

8-9. Indeed because his intelligence had been confounded by destiny itself that he did not, stupefied by the illusion of the Gods, hurl

that death dealing dart given him by Vasava, though he held in his hand, at Krishna the son of Devaki it at Parthas of prowess equal to that of Indra, for their destruction.

**Dhritarashtra said**

10. You are destroyed by Destiny, by your own understanding and by Kesava. The fatal dart of Vasava is lost having brought about the slaughter of Ghatotkacha who was as insignificant as a straw.

11. Karna and my sons as all the other kings, through his greatly impolitic act, have already gone to the abode of wealth.

12. Describe to me how the battle raged between the Kurus and the Pandavas after the fall of Hidimva's son.

13. How did the Panchalas and the Srinjayas, arranged in order and well-skilled in smiting, fight, having rushed upon Drona in battle.

14-15. How indeed did Pandus and Srinjayas resist the striking Drona when he proceeding against them, penetrated into their host inflamed with wrath at the slaughter of Bhurishravas and Jayadratha, regardless of his very life and resembling a yawning tiger on the destroyer himself with mouth agape.

16. What also did they do in battle, O sire, viz., Drona's son and Karna and Kripa and others headed by Duryodhana that protected the preceptor.

17. Describe to me, O Sanjaya, how my combatants in that battle covered with their arrows Dhananjaya and Vrikodara who were desirous of slaying the son of Bharadvaja.

18. How indeed did those, worked up with anger at the death of the ruler of the Sindhus and those at the death of Ghatotkacha, each side unable to brook their loss, fight during that night.

**Sanjaya said**

19. Upon the destruction, that night, O monarch, of the Rakshasa Ghatotkacha by Karna, all your soldiers filled with delight uttered loud shouts.

20. In that dark hour of night they furiously assailed the Pandava troop and began to slaughter them. Seeing all this king Yudhishthira became highly depressed.

21. O chastiser of foes, the mighty armed son of Pandu then addressed Bhima and thus spoke: "O you of might arms, check the (rushing) host of Dhritarashtra's son.

22. Owing to the slaughter of Hidimva's son a great stupefaction is overwhelming me." Having commanded Bhima thus he sat down on the terrace of his car.

23. With fearful countenance and repeated sighs the monarch became highly depressed on seeing Karna's prowess.

24-25. Seeing him so afflicted, Krishna said these words, "O son of Kunti, let not such grief overtake you. This depression is not worthy of yourself, O chief of the Bharatas, as it is of an ordinary person; arise O monarch and fight and bear this heavy burden of grief.

26. If you are overtaken by depression victory becomes uncertain." Hearing these words of Krishna the very virtuous king Yudhishthira.

27. Wiping his eyes with his hands replied unto Krishna saying—O you of mighty arms, the excellent path of duty is not unknown to you.

28. The dreadful consequences of Brahmanicide are his that forgets the services he gets at the hands of others. While we were living in the woods the illustrious son of Hidimba.

29. Although then a small boy only, did us many good turns, O Jannardana. Being informed that Pandu's son Arjuna had gone to acquire weapons.

30. O Krishna, this fierce bowman went to see me in the Kamyaka forest. he there lived with us until Dhananjaya came back.

31. On the occasion of our journey to the Ghandhamadana, we crossed all difficulties with his help. He then carried the fatigued daughter of the Panchalas on his own back.

32. O master, the feats he had achieved in battle, fully prove that he was learned in all

modes of warfare. That illustrious warrior did accomplish many difficult tasks for my sake only.

33. O Janardana, the affection that I naturally bear for Sahadeva, even double that affection did I bear to that foremost of the Rakshasas Ghatotkacha.

34. That mighty armed one was devoted to me; I love him and he also loved me dearly. For all these reasons, O descendant of the Vrishni race, I am depressed being afflicted with grief caused by his slaughter.

35. Behold, O scion of the Vrishni race, my troops routed by the Kouravas! Behold the two mighty car-warriors, Drona and Karna fight, yonder, to the best of their abilities.

36. Lo! at this dead hour of night, the Pandava army is being crushed like a forest of reeds by two infuriate elephants in rut.

37. O scion of Madhu's race, the Kouravas are striving hard (for victory) setting at naught the might of Bhima's arm and the vast mastery of weapons of Arjuna.

38. Yonder joyfully roars Drona and Karna and king Suyodhana himself having slain the Rakshasa in battle.

39. How is it, O Janardana, that Hidimva's son met with death in his encounter with Suta's son, although you and ourselves are still alive?

40. Putting ourselves to shame and under the very eyes of Savyasachin, O Krishna, Karna has slain the puissant son of Bhimasena.

41. O Krishna, when Abhimanyu was slain by the sinful Dhartarashtras the mighty car-warrior Savyasachin was not at hand.

42. We also were held in check by the high-souled ruler of the Sindhus ; in the perpetration of that deed, Drona and Drona's son became instrumental.

43. Karna was informed of the means of Abhimanyu's death by the preceptor himself. While Abhimanyu was fighting with his sword, it was Drona who cut-off that sword in twain.

44. Like one heartless, Kritavarman slew the four steeds and the two drivers of Abhimanyu

when the latter was involved in a great predicament.

45-46. Then other bowmen slaughtered and felled the son of Subhadra. For trifling offense only, O Krishna, the ruler of the Sindhus was slain by the wielder of the Gandiva bow. O foremost of Yadus, this act did not afforded me much delight. If at all it is just for the Pandavas to slaughter their foes.

47. Then, I think, Drona and Karna should have been slain ere now. O foremost of men, they are the cause of all our miseries.

48. Getting these two for his supporter in battle, Suyodhana has become confident of his success. Indeed it was Drona or the son of Suta, with his followers who deserved to be slain.

49. The mighty armed Dhananjaya slew the king of the Sindhus, who indeed, was the remote cause of the slaughter of Abhimanyu. It is surely my imperative duty to crush the son of Suta.

50. Therefore, O hero, I will fight for compassing the death of Suta's son. The mighty-armed Bhima has already engaged himself with the division of Drona."

51. Having thus spoken, king Yudhishtira quickly advanced against Karna stretching his mighty bow and blowing his dreadful conch.

52. Then with one thousand cars, three hundred elephants, five thousand horses and the Panchalas and the Pravadrakas.

53. Sikhandin quickly followed the king from behind. Then the drums were beat and conchs blown by the.

54. Panchalas and Pandavas who were proceeding in Yudhishtira's van. Thereupon the mighty armed Vasudeva addressing Dhananjaya said

55. Lo! under the influence of anger does king Yudhishtira advance to battle, impelled by a desire for slaughtering Suta's son. It is not proper that you should thoroughly rely on him in this encounter.

56. Having thus spoken, Hrishikesha urged the steeds to the best of their speed and he then

followed behind the king, who had already advanced a long way.

57. At that moment, beholding the very virtuous king Yudhishtira proceed with impetuosity for bringing about the slaughter of Suta's son, Vyasa approached him and said these words to him who was then burning with the fire of grief and whose reason was clouded by it.

**Vyasa said.**

58. Indeed, O king, it fortunate that Phalguna still lives, although he had several times encountered Karna in battle. It was for compassing the slaughter to Savyasachin, that Karna preserved his Sakti.

59. O foremost of the Bharatas, it is indeed fortunate that till now Jishnu never engaged in any duel with Karna. In that case, each of them, challenging the other, would have discharged their celestial weapons on all sides.

60. Then the weapons of Suta's son would have been destroyed by those of Arjuna. Then sorely distressed the former surely would have discharged the Sakti given him by Vasava at the latter, O Yudhishtira.

61. In that case, O foremost of the Bharata, a dreadful catastrophe would have overtaken you. O bestower of honour, it is indeed fortunate that the Rakshasas has been slain (with that Sakti) in battle.

62. Death himself has slain the Rakshasa and the fatal Sakti of Vasava was only the instrument. O sire, it is for your good that he has been slain in battle.

63. Do not give way to wrath, O foremost of the Bharatas and set not your heart on sorrow. O Yudhishtira, this is the finale of all animate beings in this world.

64. United with your brother and the other high souled rulers of earth do you, O descendant of the Bharatas, give battle to the Kouravas.

65. On the fifty day, the earth will fall under your sway. O foremost of men, meditate on virtue.

66-67. With a delightful heart do you ever practise harmlessness, ascetic austerities,

charity, forbearance and truth, O son of Pandu. Victory ever follows in the wake of righteousness." Having thus spoken to Pandu's son, Vyasa disappeared then and there.

## CHAPTER 185

### (DRONA-VADHA PARVA)

#### The sleep of the soldiers

**Sanjaya said**

1. Thus spoken to by Vyasa the very virtuous king Yudhishtira, endowed with heroism, desisted himself from slaughtering Karna, O foremost of the Bharatas.

2. Upon the slaughter of Ghatotkacha during that night by Suta's son Karna, king Yudhishtira was overwhelmed with grief and wrath.

3. Then beholding your vast host resisted by Bhima himself, he, addressing Dhistadyumna said, 'Hold the pot-born Drona in check.'

4. O afflicter of your foes, it was for the express purpose of slaying Drona, that you sprang out of fire, armed with a bow and arrows and a sword and cased in a coat of mail.

5. Cheerfully assail Drona in battle. You have nothing to be afraid of. Let also Janamejaya, Sikhandin and Durmukha's son and Jasadhara.

6. Wrathfully assail the pot-born Drona from all sides. Nakula and Sahadeva, the son of Draupadi and the Pravadrakas.

7. And Drupada and Virata accompanied by their sons and brothers and Satyaki and the Kekayas, the Pandavas and Dhananjaya.

8. Let, the inspired with the desire for achieving the slaughter of Bharadvaja's son, assail him from all sides. So also, let all the other car-warriors and elephant riders and horsemen.

9. And foot soldiers strive to overthrow that mighty car-warrior Drona in battle." Thus commanded by the illustrious son of Pandu (Yudhishtira).

10. Assailed the pot-born Drona with a view to defeat him. Then as the Pandavas rushed with great impetuosity and force.

11-13. Drona, that foremost of all wielders of weapons, received them (duly) in battle. Thereupon king Duryodhana, with all efforts, assailed the Pandavas excited as he was with rage and solicitous of protecting Drona's life. Then ensued the battle between the troops of the Kurus and the Pandavas whose animals were exhausted as they challenged one another furiously. Deprived of sleep and fatigued in battle, O mighty monarch.

14. The mighty car-warriors knew not what to do. That night consisting of three Yamas, hedious and dreadful.

15. And destructive of many lives, appeared to them to consist of a thousand Yamas. While they were being thus slain and mangled by another.

16. And while their eyes were being closed in sleep, mid-night set in. Then every one became depressed and their spirits became low.

17. Your troops as well as those of the enemy had their supply of weapons exhausted by that time. Passing the time thus the combatants, of both the armies, endued with modesty and energy.

18. And observant of the duties of their order, did not desert their divisions. Others again, oppressed with sleep, left their weapons aside and laid themselves down on the field.

19. Oppressed with sleep, some again laid themselves down on the back of elephants or on that of horses or on their chariots, O Bharata and O foremost of men, they were deprived of all moving powers.

20-21. Other warriors, that were awake in that battle, dispatched these to Yama's abode; others again, deprived of their senses in sleep and dreaming, slew their own comrades as also their opponents, regarding every one as their foes. Indeed they fought on in that fierce battle uttering dreadful exclamations.

22. Many again of your army, thinking that they should continue to fight with the foe, stood, O king, on the field of battle although their eyes were heavy with sleep.

23. Some heroic warriors, during that hour of darkness, though blind with sleep, yet gliding along the field, slew one another in that battle.

24. Many of the enemy, entirely confounded in sleep, were slain without being conscious of the strokes that put an end to their existence.

25. Then, O foremost of men, beholding this plight of the soldiers, Vibhatsu exclaiming to the top of his voice, said these words.

26. "You all are fatigued and oppressed with drowsiness; and your animals also are so. Both the armies are enveloped with darkness and clouds of dust.

27. O soldiers, if you like you may desist from the fight. Close your eyes, here on the field, only for a moment.

28. Then when the moon arises ye Kurus and the Pandavas, having taken rest and shaken off your fatigue, you may again meet one another in battle for securing paradise."

29. Hearing these words of the virtuous Arjuna, the pious warriors of the Kuru army agreed to follow up the former's suggestion and addressing one another.

30. Loudly said - "O Karna, O king, Duryodhana, desist from fighting. The Pandava host has ceased to strike us."

31. Then, O Bharata, when Arjuna loudly uttered those words the Pandavas and your troop desisted from the fight.

32. Those generous words of the illustrious Arjuna were highly applauded by the Rishis, the celestials and the highly delighted soldiers.

33. Then applauding those noble words of Arjuna, O Bharata, O foremost of men, the fatigued troop laid themselves down only for a moment.

34. Then that army of yours, O Bharata, joyful at the prospect of sleep and rest, sincerely blessed Arjuna saying—

35. "In you there are the knowledge of the Vedas and the weapons. In you there are intelligence and might. In you there are virtue, compassion for all creatures, O mighty-armed and sinless one.

36. As we have been comforted by you, we wish you well, O Partha. May you reap prosperity soon and may you get, O brave hero, those objects and that are dear to your heart."

37. Thus, O foremost of men, those mighty car-warriors, while praising Partha, thus were stupefied by sleep and soon became silent, O ruler of men.

38. Some laid themselves down on the back of horses, some on the elephants, some on the car-terraces and some on the bare earth only.

39. Others soldiers, well-armed and with maces, swords, axes and lances in grasp and covered with coats of mail, laid themselves down separately.

40. Elephants, having trunks resembling the tapering bodies of serpents and adorned with the dust of the field, oppressed with sleep, began to make the earth's surface cool with breaths.

41. The elephants, as they breathed on the ground, appeared beautiful like mountains (scattered over the field of battle) on which mighty serpents hissed.

42. Steeds, in trappings of gold and with manes flowing down their yokes, began to paw and make the ground uneven with their hoofs.

43. Thus O foremost of kings, every body slept there with the animal he rode. Steeds and elephants and soldiers, O foremost of the Bharatas.

44. Exhausted with exertion, slept on the field desisting from the battle. That sleeping host, deprived of senses and plunged in sleep, appeared beautiful like a charming picture painted on canvas by a skillful artist.

45. Then those Kshatriyas all youthful and graced with earnings, mangled with one another's shaft-wounds, lying down on the back of elephants slept as if lying on the breasts of beautiful ladies.

46. Then the moon, that delighter of the eye and lord of the lilies of hue white as the cheeks of a youthful damsel, rose beautifying the quarter presided over by Indra himself.

47. Indeed like a lion of the Udaya mountain with beams constituting his manes of glittering yellow, he issued out of his cave in the east, dispelling the palpable darkness of night, resembling a large herd of elephants.

48. That lover of all lilies, bright as the body of Mahadeva's excellent bull, full-arched and radiant the bow of cupid and delightful and charming as the smile on the lips of bashful bride shone in the sky.

49. Soon that Divine Lord having the hare for the emblem showed himself reddish, shedding brighter beams around.

50. After this, the moon seemed to spread gradually a bright halo of far-reaching light that resembled the glamour of gold.

51. Then the rays of that lustrous orb, dispelling the gloom of night gradually spread themselves on the earth, the welkin and the directions of the compass.

52. Then within a moment the world was flooded with a stream of light and the palpable envelop of gloom soon fled away.

53. When the world was illumined almost to the light of day, O king, some of the night-rangers began to rove about whilst others desisted from doing so.

54. Then, O king, all the troops were awakened by the beams of the moon like lotuses blown by the rays of the sun.

55. Just as the ocean swells in consequence of the rising of the moon so that ocean of troops swelled at the rising of the moon.

56. Thereupon, O ruler of men, once more the battle between men desirous of getting heaven raged, a battle that was destructive of the world of creatures.

## CHAPTER 186

### (DRONA-VADHA PARVA) – Continued

#### The division of the troops

##### Sanjaya said

1. Then king Duryodhana, under the influence of anger, approached Drona and addressing him said these word for inspiring him with delight and wrath simultaneously.

##### Duryodhana said

2. No quarter should have been granted to our enemies when they were depressed at heart

and exhausted with fatigue and taking rest, especially as they are ever of sure aim.

3. That we showed them mercy was only from a desire for pleasing you. The fatigued Pandavas, however, have now (after taking rest) become stronger.

4. We, on the other hand, are becoming reduced in mighty and in energy, while the Pandavas, spared by you, are again and again gaining strength.

5. All weapons of celestial workmanship and all Brahma weapons are known perfectly to you.

6. Neither the Pandavas, nor ourselves nor any other bowman of the world are equal to you in battle. This I tell you truly.

7. Conversant with all kinds of weapons O foremost of regenerate ones, you are competent enough to slay with your celestial weapons, the gods, the Asureas, the Gandharvas and all this world.

8. The Pandavas are all afraid of you. Yet you always forgive them remembering perhaps that they are your disciples or owing to my unfortunate luck."

**Sanjaya said**

9. Thus reprimanded and incited by your son, Drona, O monarch, wrathfully addressed Duryodhana saying—

10-11. Although I am advanced in years, yet, O Duryodhana, I am fighting in battle to the best of my abilities. All these men are versed in the use of weapons; I am however well-versed in them. If from desire of victory, I slay these men, there can be no more impious act for me to do. However, what is in your heart, be it good or bad.

12-13. I shall accomplish, O foremost of the Kurus, at your behest. It will not be otherwise. Putting forth my prowess in battle and slaying all the Panchalas I will put off my coat of mail, O monarch. I swear this to you for sooth. You think that Kunti's son Arjuna was exhausted in battle.

14-15. O mighty-armed Kaurava, listen to what I say regarding his prowess. If

Savyasachin's anger is excited, neither the Gandharvas nor the Yakshas, nor the Rakshasas can venture to oppose him. On the occasion of the burning of the Khandava forest, he fought with the chief of the gods himself.

16. With his arrows, the high-souled Arjuna then worsted the pouring Indra. Yakshas and the Nagas and the Daityas and other creatures.

17. Proud of their strength, were then slain by that foremost of men. This also you know. On the occasion of the numbering of cattle, the Gandharvas, headed by Chitrastena and others, were defeated by him.

18. You also were set free from the bondage to the Gandharvas by that resolute bowman. The Nivtakavachas and other enemies of the gods.

19. Unslayable by the gods themselves in battle, were also vanquished by that hero. Thousands of Danavas dallying in the golden city.

20. Were defeated by that foremost of men. How it is possible for other men to resist him in battle? You have also seen with your own eyes, O king, how this host of yours, though striving hard, is destroyed by the son of Pandu, O ruler of men!

**Sanjaya said**

21. Thereupon, your son, O king highly enraged, once more thus addressed Drona who had been praising Arjuna then.

22. Dividing this Bharata army in two, today, myself, Dushasana, Karna and my uncle Sakuni will slay Arjuna in battle.

23. Hearing those words of his, the son of Bharadvaja, as if smiling, quickly turned round and said, "Good befall you!"

24. What presumptuous Kshatriya would venture to destroy that foremost of the Kshatriyas viz., the wielder of the Gandiva bow, who never suffers and reduction and who ever burns in his own effulgence?

25. When furnished with weapons, neither the Lord of wealth, nor Indra nor Yama, nor Varuna, nor the Asuras nor the Rakshasas, will be able to defeat him?

26. What you have spoken, O Bharata, is worthy of a fool only. Who ever returns safely to his own home, after having encountered Arjuna in battle?

27. Suspicious of everybody, you are cruel and of sinful purposes. You rebuke even those who are engaged in doing you good.

28. Go yourself to resist the son of Kunti, at your own risk. You are well-born and a Kshatriya too; you are again desirous of battle.

29. Why then do you cause the ruin of all these other un-offending Kshatriyas? You are the root of this hostility, so, do you yourself encounter Arjuna.

30. Here indeed is your sagacious uncle, ever devoted to the performance of the Kshatriya duties. O son of Ghandhari, let this one, addicted to deceitful gambling at dice, meet Arjuna in battle.

31. Expert in the game of dice, crooked, fond of gambling and wily and deceitful— this gamester addicted to deception will surely vanquish the Pandavas in battle!

32. Accompanied by Karna and delightful you used to brag always, out of your foolishness, within Dhritrashtra's hearing, with these empty word—

33. O Sire, myself, Karna and my brother Dussasan, united in battle, shall slay the sons of Pandu!

34. This brag of yours was heard in every assemblage of the court. Now with their help fulfill your vow and be true to your words.

35. Yonder stand your fierce enemies, the sons of Pandu, prepared to fight to the last. Do now what should be done by a Kshatriya. It is better that you did other than suffer defeat.

36. You have been charitable and enjoyed edibles to your heart's content. You have acquired wealth to your heart's content, you have accomplished all that one should do. You are debtless. Be not afraid. Encounter the son of Pandu battle.

37. Having thus spoken Drona desisted from fighting. Then the Bharata troops were divided in twain and the battle commenced.

## CHAPTER 187

### (DRONA-VADHA PARVA) – Continued

#### The fierce battle

##### Sanjaya said

1. When three fourths of the night had passed away, O ruler of men, once more the battle, between the delighted Kurus and Pandavas, commenced.

2. Soon after Arjuna (the sun's charioteer) robbing the effulgence of the moon, appeared on the sky, spreading a coppery hue over it.

3. The eastern quarter was soon rendered crimson by the myriad rays of the sun and the solar disc looked like a circle of gold.

4. Thereupon all the warriors of the Kuru and Pandava hosts, descending from their chariots, steeds, elephants and vehicles borne by men, turned their faces towards the sun and with folded palms uttered the Sandhya (prayers of the first twilight).

5. The host of the Kauravas having been divided into two parts, Drona, having Duryodhana in front of him, advanced (supported by one of this divisions) against the Somakas, the Panchalas and the Pandavas.

6. Then beholding the Kuru army divided in twain, the scion of Madhu's race, Krishna addressing Arjuna said - "Keeping the other division of the enemy to your left, place Drona's division to your right."

7. Obedient to the counsel of Madhava, regarding everything about the Kurus. Dhananjaya wheeled round so as to keep Drona and Karna, those two might bowmen, to his right.

8. Then seeing through the purposes of Krishna, that subduer of hostile cities viz., Bhimasena, addressing Arjuna then stationed at the van of the troop, said these words.

##### Bhimasena said

9. Ho, Arjuna, Arjuna, O Vibhatsu, hear these words of mine! The hour, for the realisation of that object for which Kshatriya ladies bring forth their sons, has now arrived.



10. If at this opportune season you do not exert yourself to attain good, then you shall act meanly like a perfect wreath.

11. With the assistance of mighty do you, today, pay off your debt to Prosperity and Fame! O foremost of warriors, penetrate into this army and keep this to your right.

**Sanjaya said**

12. Thus urged on by Bhima and Kesava, Savyasachin, disregarding Karna and Drona, began to resist the foe on all sides.

13. Then as that puissant one advanced at the head of battle, leaving the foremost of Kshatriyas, these last, putting forth all their prowess.

14. Could not check him even as men cannot check the raging conflagration. Thereupon Duryodhana, Karna and Subala's son Sakuni.

15-16. Began to shower thousands of arrows on Kunti's son Arjuna. That foremost of all, versed in excellent weapons, baffling all the weapons hurled by his opponents, poured on them, O foremost of king's a veritable shower of arrows. Of controlled senses and endued with great lightness of hand, he repulsed the weapons shot at him by those of his own.

17. Then he pierced each of his foes with ten sharp shafts. The welkin was shrouded in a cloud of dust and showers of arrows fell thick.

18. Impenetrable darkness set in and dreadful tumult prevailed on the field of battle. When such was the condition of things, neither the sky nor the earth, nor the points of the compass, were recognised.

19. Confounded with the dust the troops became blind. Neither the foe, O monarch, nor we could distinguish one another.

20-23. For this reason, the royal combatants fought on guided by conjecture and the challenges they uttered. Destitute of chariots, the car-warriors, O monarch, encountering one another, lost all order and became a confounded mass. Their horses slain the charioteer killed, many, becoming incapacitated, saved their lives and looked highly frightened. Staughtered

steeds, with their riders slain, were seen to lie over elephants as if prostrate on mountain tops. Then Drona, moving towards the northern quarter of the field.

24. Stood like fire free from smoke. Then beholding him move away from the field (towards the North).

25-26. O ruler of men, the Pandava troops began to tremble. Beholding Drona exceedingly handsome and attended with prosperity and burning in his own effulgence, the soldiers of the enemy were affrighted, depressed and routed, O Bharata.—Challenging the hostile host as he stood, like an infuriate elephant in rut.

27. None ventured to conquer him even as the Danavas could not conquer Vasava. Some were depressed at heart and some intelligent warriors became inspired with rage.

28. Some were filled with wonder and some could not bear him. Some rubbed their hands.

29. Others, overwhelmed with rage, began to bite their lips, with their teeth. Others began to hurl missiles at him and others to rule their arms.

30. Other warriors, of controlled passions and great might, fell upon Drona. Specially the Panchalas, though afflicted with the shafts of Drona.

31. And suffering extreme pain, O king, fought on with Drona. Thereafter Virata and Drupada, both rushed against Drona in battle.

32. Who, invincible as he was in battle, was roving freely on the field. Then O ruler of men, the grandsons of Drupada, in three number.

33. And the Chedis, all fierce bowmen, assailed Drona in battle. Of those three grandsons of Drupada, with sharp arrows.

34. Three in number Drona robbed the vital breaths, whereupon they fell down dead on the ground. Thereafter Drona vanquished in battle, the Chedis the Kaikayas and the Srinjayas.

35. That mighty car-warrior the son of Bharadvaja then also conquered the Matsyas. Thereafter Drupada, worked up with rage, poured a shower of arrows.

36. On Drona, O mighty monarch. Virata also did so in that battle. Then that crusher of foes, viz., Drona, destroying that shower of arrows.

37. Covered the two, Drupada and Virata with his own arrows. Thus covered by Drona and inflamed with wrath at the head of battle.

38. Those two heroes began to afflict Drona wrathfully in that battle. O mighty monarch, therefore, Drona filled with rage and fury.

39. Cut off the bows of them both with a couple of broad headed shafts of great sharpness. Thereupon, filled with rage, Virata hurled ten tomaras.

40-41. As also ten shafts at Drona, with a view to encompass his slaughter. Drupada also, equally enraged, hurled at the car of Drona, a dreadful dart made wholly of iron and decked with gold and effulgent like the body of a excellent snake. Then cutting off with a well-sharpened bhalla those tomaras.

42. Drona cut-off the dart adorned with gold and lapises shot at him with his own arrows. Then that crusher of foes., viz., Drona with a couple of well-tempered bhalla.

43. Dispatched both Drupada and Virata to the region of Death. Upon the slaughter of Virata and Drupada and the Kaikayas also.

44. As also the Chedis and the Panchalas and the Matsyas and upon the slaughter of the three heroic grandsons of Drupada.

45. And beholding these cruel deeds accomplished by Drona, the high-souled Dhristadyumna, filled with rage and grief, swore amidst the car-warriors saying—

46. "Let that man lose the merits of his Isha, Purth, Kshatra and Brahmanya, whom Drona shall escape or shall defeat in battle."

47. Thus having sworn in the midst of all bowmen, that slayer of foes, viz., the Panchala prince rushed upon Drona, supported by his own division.

48. The Panchalas attacked Drona from one side whilst the Pandavas attacked him from the other. Then Duryodhana, Karna, Subala's son Sakuni.

49-50. And his other principal uterine brothers began to protect Drona in battle. Then the Panchalas, though striving hard, could not even look at Drona who was then being thus protected in battle by those high-souled warriors. Thereupon, O sire, Bhimasena became enraged with Dhristadyumna and then addressed that foremost of men in these harsh words.

**Bhimasena said**

51. What man is there who, being regarded as a Kshatriya and who being born in the Dynasty of Drupada and who being foremost of all men possessing knowledge of weapons, would only thus passively look at his foe, stationed before him?

52. What person, having seen his father and son slain by his foes and having also sworn such a terrible oath in the assemblage of kings, would thus suffer his foe to stand before him?

53. Yonder stands Drona like a fire swelling with its own energy; indeed with bow and arrows constituting fuel he is consuming all the Kshatriyas with his energy.

54. Soon will he completely destroy the Pandava army; stand here passively as spectators of the feat I am going to perform; I myself assail Drona.

**Sanjaya said**

55. Having thus spoken, Vrikodara, worked up with rage, penetrated into Drona's division; and he then routed your troops with arrows shot from his bow drawn to the fullest stretch.

56. The Panchala prince Dhristadyumna also, pushing into the heart your mighty troops, approached Drona; whereupon a confused and terrible encounter commenced.

57. We never saw nor heard of such a battle before as, O king, was fought during that hour of sun-rise.

58. O sire, the chariots were then entangled with one another; thousands of corpses of slain creatures were also seen lying on the field of battle.

59. Some, when going to other parts of the field, were assailed by their foe on the way.

Some, in flying away, were wounded on their backs and others on their sides.

60. Thus then that general engagement raged furiously. Soon however the morning sun made its appearance of the sky.

## CHAPTER 188

### (DRONA-VADHA PARVA) – Continued

#### The battle between Nakula and Duryodhana

Sanjaya said

1. The warriors then, O monarch, clad as they were in coats of mail, worshipped the sun of thousand rays as he made its appearance on the morning sky.

2. Upon the rise of the thousand-rayed sun of the effulgence of heated gold and upon the illumination of the world, battle raged anew.

3. The same soldiers, that were engaged with one another before sun rise, once more fought with each other, O Bharata, after the sun rise.

4. Horsemen fought with car-warriors and elephants with horsemen and foot-soldier with elephants and horsemen with horsemen and infantry with infantry.

5. Car-warriors with car-warriors elephants with elephants, horsemen with horse men O foremost of the Bharatas, Sometimes, in a body and sometimes individually, the warriors assailed one another in battle.

6. Having fought hard during the previous night many combatants, worn out with toil and weak with hunger and thirst, lost their senses in a swoon.

7-8. The noise, O foremost of the Bharata race, created by the blowing of conchs, the bear of drums, the roar of elephants and the twang of bows stretched with force, reached the very heavens, O monarch. The tumult, made also by running foot-soldiers and falling weapons.

9. And neighing steeds and rattling chariots and shouting and challenging warriors, became tremendous.

10-11. That tremendous din, momentarily increasing, touched the very heavens. The

moans and groans of pain, uttered by falling and fallen foot-soldiers and car-warriors and elephants, became exceedingly loud and pitiable as they were heard on the field.

12. When the divisions were inter-mingled and confused, both sides slew each other and also their own men.

13. Swords, hurled by the hands of heroic warriors upon combatants and elephants, in large heaps, were seen on the field, like cloths on the washing ground.

14. The whizz, of lifted and descending swords, wielded by the arms of heroes, resembled that of clothes thrashed for wash.

15. Then that general engagement, in which the warriors encountered one another with swords and scimitars and lances and battle, axes, became extremely terrible.

16-17. The brave warriors then caused a river to flow there towards the region of the departed; the blood of elephants and steeds and human beings constituted its currents. Weapons constituted the large number of blood and flesh. Wails of grief and pain constituted its murmuring sound. Banners and cloths constituted its foam.

18. Afflicted with shafts and arrows, tired with fatigue, worn out with exertion of the previous night and robbed of their strength, elephants and horses, stood on the field utterly incapable of moving their limbs.

19. Heroes, with pale countenances and with head graced with charming ear-rings and armed with the implements of war, appeared extremely resplendent.

20. On the field infested with carnivorous animals and obstructed with the dead and the dying there was no space for the cars to move.

21. The wheels of cars being thus entangled, the steeds, yoked thereto, with great effort dragged them although they were tired and trembling and afflicted with arrows.

22-23. Those steeds moreover were of good breed and were endued with mettle and strength and resembled elephants in seize. Then the Bharata troops, resembling the ocean for its

vastness, became affrighted and terrible agitated, save and exert Drona and Arjuna. They both then became the refuge and the protectors of the warriors of their respective sides.

24. Meeting them both their opponents went to regions of Death. Then the mighty host of the Kurus became greatly agitated.

25-26. And the Panchalas being intermingled with them, none could be distinguished. During the progress of that terrible carnage of the Kshatriyas on that field of battle, enhancing the fear of the cowards and resembling a crematorium, neither Karna, nor Drona, nor Arjuna, nor Yudhishtira.

27. Nor Bhimasena, nor the twins Nakula and Sahadeva, nor the Panchala prince, nor Satyaki nor Dushasana, nor Drona's son, nor Duryodhana, nor Subala's son.

28. Nor Kripa nor the ruler of the Madra, nor Kritavarman, nor others, nor my own self, nor the earth, nor the different quarters of heaven.

29. Could be discerned, O king, in consequence of all of them being mingled with troops and covered by clouds of dust. During the progress of that dreadful and fierce battle, when that dust-cloud arose.

30. Every body thought that night had once more set in. Neither the Kōuravas, nor the Panchalas, nor the Pandavas could be distinguished.

31-33. Nor the quarters of heaven, nor the welkin, nor the earth, nor the undulations of land. The warriors, impelled by the thought of victory, slew friends and foes indiscriminately, in fact all whom they perceived by their touch. The dust that had arisen was very soon driven away by the winds that began to blow then and it was quenched by the blood that shed profusely. Elephants, steeds, car-warriors and foot-soldiers.

34-35. Steeped in blood, appeared beautiful like the celestial forest of the Parijata flowers. Thereafter Duryodhana, Karna, Drona and Dushasana engaged in battle with four Pandava

warriors. Duryodhana and his brothers encountered twins (Nakula and Sahadeva).

36. Radha's son encountered Vrikodara and Arjuna engaged with the son of Bharadvaja. All the soldiers then began to look on those marvelous and terrible encounters from all sides.

37-38. The car-warriors of both sides, beheld that wonderful battle, that super-human engagement between those furious and excellent car-warriors all versed in the different modes of war, mounted on their respective chariots, that moved in various charming motions. Possessed of great prowess, exerting their best and each anxious to defeat the other.

39. They then poured on each other showers of shafts, like clouds pouring rain at the end of summer. Those foremost of men, mounted on their cars of solar effulgence.

40. Appeared beautiful like vast masses of clouds in the autumnal sky. Then those warriors, O mighty-monarch, inspired with rage and thought of revenge.

41. All proud and mighty bowmen, putting forth their greatest effort, rushed upon one another, like infuriated leaders of the herds of elephants.

42. Indeed, O king, corporeal creatures do not forsake their corpus, until the proper hour comes, inasmuch as, O monarch, all those mighty car-warriors, though fighting hard, were not slain all together.

43. With lopped-off arms and legs with heads graced with charming ear-rings, with bows and arrows and lances and swords and axes and Pattis.

44. With Nalikas, Ksharvas, Narachas, nails, darts and Tomaras, with diverse other kinds of excellent weapons, of various shapes and well cleansed.

45. With wonderful cuirasses of different shapes, with charming chariots shattered, with slain horses and elephants.

46. With brave combatants slain, with standless and warriorless chariots looking like large cities, with vehicles dragged hither and

thither by affrighted steeds having none to restrain them.

47. In speed more then that of the wind, with countless warriors adorned with ornaments, with fans, with coats of mail, with overthrown standards .

48. With umbrellas, with ornaments, garments and perfumeries with chains and diadems and crowns and headgears and with tinkling bells.

49. With jewels that had adorned the breast of heroes with Niskhas and with jewels that had decorated the crowns of combatants, the field of battle, strewn over, looked resplendent like the star-bespangled firmament.

50. Thereafter an encounter took place between Duryodhana and Nakula when both were filled with feelings of wrath and revenge.

51. Then the son of Madri, delightful shooting hundreds of shafts, kept your son on his right side. At this, loud sounds and applause arose there.

52. Though placed on the right by his enraged cousin, your son, inflamed with rage, began to resist him from even from that disadvantageous position of his.

53. Your son the king Duryodhana then began to fight wonderfully. O mighty monarch. Then as your son endeavoured to counteract Nakula even from his sight.

54. The latter (Nakula) endued with energy and versed in the diverse courses of a chariot, restrained your son. But your son again, resisting Nakula on all sides and afflicting him, with his arrowy showers.

55. Compelled Nakula to turn back. Your troops then applauded that feat of your son. Then Nakula, keeping alive the memory of the wrongs inflicted on them by your wicked counsel, addressed your son saying - 'Wait, wait.'

## CHAPTER 189

### (DRONA-VADHA PARVA) – Continued

#### The fierce fight

Sanjaya said

1. Filled with rage, Dushasana then assailed Sahadeva causing the earth to quake with the fierce clash of his chariot.

2. While Dushasana was thus rushing at the son of Madri, that subduer of foes, quickly cut-off with a broad-headed shafts, the head, protected with helmet of the former's charioteer.

3. Owing to the quickness with which the charioteer's head was cut-off, neither any one among the troops nor Dushasana himself perceived him to have been decapitated by Sahadeva.

4. The reins being no longer held by any body, the horses ran at their free will. It was only then that Dushasana came to know that his driver had been slain.

5. Himself an expert in managing steeds he restrained his horses; and that foremost of car-warriors then fought on lightly, beautifully and skillfully.

6. Then as he covered dauntlessly on the field that driverless car of his, his friends and foes alike applauded his feat.

7. Sahadeva, however, soon covered Dushasana steeds with sharp arrows and these, afflicted with those arrows, began to run away wildly.

8. For holding the reins Dushasana once laid his bow aside, again, for using the bow he took up the reins. (Thus did he then fight).

9. During these opportunities, the son of Madri pierced him with numerous arrows. Then desirous of rescuing your son Karna rushed between those two combatants.

10. Thereupon Vrikodara, with due caution, pierced Karna on the breast and the arms, with three broad-headed shafts shot from a full-drawn bow.

11. Thereupon like a snake struck with a stick Karna wheeled back and covered Bhima by scattering sharp arrows by thousands.

12. Thereupon a tremendous combat commenced between Bhima and the son of Radha. Both the combatants then roared like two bulls and their eyes rolled in fury.

13. Filled with rage and rushing at one another, they challenged one another furiously. Those two foremost of combatants, in consequence of their being too near each other.

14-15. To use bows and arrows, began to fight with their maces. Then Bhimasena succeeded in crushing Karna's car terraced with his mace; O king, that indeed looked wonderful. Then the puissant son of Radha grasping a mace.

16. Hurling it at Bhima's car. But the latter broke it down with a mace of his own. Thereafter once more Bhima threw with force a heavy mace at the son of Adhiratha.

17. Then Karna struck that mace with numerous shafts furnished with beautiful wings and duly sped and also with other shafts. The mace then was thrown back on Bhima.

18. Being repulsed by the arrows of Karna, like a snake charmed with incantations. At the re-bound of that mace the mighty standard of Bhima.

19. Broke and fell down and his charioteer, also struck with that mace, became insensible. Thereupon furious in rage, Bhima discharged eight shafts at Karna.

20-22. And his standard and bow and his leathern fence, O Bharata. The mighty Bhimasena, that slayer of hostile heroes, with the greatest heedfulness, cut-off with those sharp arrows, O Bharata, the standard, the bow and the leathern fence of Karna's chariot. Thereupon the son of Radha, grasping another tough and gold-decked bow, sped a large number of shafts and therewith quickly dispatched Bhima's steed of the hue of bear and then his two flank protector.

23. When his chariot was thus rendered useless, that subduer of foes, viz., Bhima,

quickly jumped into the chariot of Nakula like a lion leaping upon a mountain chest.

24. Meanwhile Drona and Arjuna those two most of car-warriors preceptor and pupil, both accomplished in the use of weapons, O monarch, fought on with each other in battle.

25. Confounding the eyes and minds of men with the celerity with which they used their weapons and the sureness of their aims and the motions of their chariot.

26. Beholding that battle between the preceptor and pupil, of which no equal was seen before, the other warriors desisted from fighting and began to tremble.

27. Then those two heroes, displaying various motions of cars on the field of battle, tried to leave each other to their right.

28. Then seeing their prowess, the warriors were filled with delight. Thereafter a mighty battle raged between Drona and that son of Pandu.

29. Like that, O mighty monarch, between two hawks in the heavens for a piece of meat. Whatever efforts Drona made for conquering the son of Kunti.

30. Were overcome by Arjuna who also strove vigorously. When Drona failed to obtain any advantage over the son of Pandu.

31. Then that foremost of all knowers of weapons, began to invoke into existence, Aindra, Pasupata, Sashtra, Vayavya and Varuna weapons.

32. But as soon as those weapons issued out of the bow of Drona, Dhananjaya destroyed them quickly. Then Pritha's son duly destroyed all those weapons with his own weapons.

33. Thereafter Drona covered Pritha's son with excellent and celestial shafts. Whatever weapon then he shot at Partha, desirous of obtaining victory.

34. Arjuna destroyed it by due measures. Upon the destruction even of his celestial weapons.

35-36. By Arjuna, Drona applauded him in his mind. Then that afflicter of foes, viz., Drona, O Bharata, regarded himself to be

superior to all knowers of weapon on earth in consequence of his having Arjuna for his pupil. Thus checked by Pritha's son in the midst of all those high souled warriors.

37. Drona, vigorously striving cheerfully resisted Arjuna (in his turn) being filled with wonder all the while. Then in the welkin, thousands of celestial and Gandharvas.

38. And sages and hosts of Siddhas, were seen on all sides. Thronged with Apsaras and Yakshasas and Rakshasas.

39. The welkin once more appeared to be darkened by gathering masses of clouds. An incorporeal voice repeatedly spoke.

40. In praise of Drona and the high-souled son of Pandu. when in consequence of the weapons discharged by Drona and Pritha' son, all the directions were illumined with their effulgence.

41-42. The Siddhas and the sages present then said - "This is neither a human, nor an Asura, nor a Rakshasa, nor a celestial, nor a Gandharva battle; certainly this is a high Brahma battle; this encounter is exceedingly charming and greatly wonderful. We have never seen nor heard of its like before.

43. At times the preceptor obtained advantages over the son of Pandu and at times the latter again prevailed over the former. None then was able to mark any difference between them.

44. If Rudra, dividing himself in twain, fights with himself, then an example may be obtained that may match it.

45. In the preceptor there is the knowledge of science. The knowledge of sciences and the means to be applied are in the son of Pandu. Heroism exists in Drona whereas both heroism and mighty exist in the son of Pandu.

46. None of these two combatants could be resisted by the foe in battle. At their will they can destroy the universe with the gods themselves.

47. Seeing those two foremost of men, O mighty monarch, the visible and invisible creatures said these words.

48. Thereafter, Drona of great intelligence, invoked into existence the Brahma weapon thereby afflicting Partha and the invisible creatures.

49. Thereupon the earth, with its mountains, forests and trees, began to tremble. Conflicting winds began to blow and the oceans were agitated.

50. When that weapon was raised by high-souled Drona for use, the Kuru and the Pandava troops as also all the other creatures were stricken with panic.

51. Thereupon, O foremost of kings, Pirthas' son, with the other Brahma weapons, destroyed that weapon of Drona and then all things were again pacified.

52. At last when none of them was able to vanquish his opponent in a single combat, a general engagement commenced between the two hosts, creating a terrible confusion on the field.

53. During the progress of that terrible encounter between Drona and Pandu's son, O king, once more nothing could be distinguished.

54. The firmament being covered with networks of arrows, as if with masses of clouds, no ranger of the air was then seen to course through it.

## CHAPTER 190

### (DRONA-VADHA PARVA) – Continued

#### The fierced fight

Sanjaya said

1. When that battle, destructive of men, horses and elephants, thus progressed, O mighty monarch, Dushasana fought on with Dhristadyumna.

2. The latter, then mounted on a golden chariot and afflicted with rage and began to cover the animals of your son with his own arrows.

3. Then, O mighty monarch, covered with the arrows the car of Prisata's son; soon did the car of Dushasana, its standard and charioteer became invisible.

4. Then, O foremost of kings, Dushasana, being afflicted with the arrows of Panchalas, could not stay before that illustrious warriors.

5. Thus the son of Prisata, having repulsed Dushasana with his arrows, assailed Drona shooting thousands of shafts as he proceeded.

6. Then Hridika's son Kritavarman, with his three uterine brothers, encountered him and tried to resist him.

7. The twins, Nakula and Sahadeva, those two foremost of men, then protected Dhristadyumna from behind as he rushed upon Drona like a blazing fire.

8. Then all those mighty car-warriors, possessed of strength and inspired with wrath, fell to smite one another, keeping death in their view.

9. Of pure souls and pure behaviour, O king, those warriors, keeping the hope of paradise before their mind's eye, fought on fairly, impelled by a desire for conquering one another.

10. Of stainless extraction and of spotless deeds and gifted with keen intelligence those rulers of men, keeping paradise in view, fought on fairly with one another.

11. In that battle there was nothing unfair or nothing against the rules of military science. In that battle, neither Kanies nor Nalikas, nor poisoned arrows nor Vastikas.

12. Nor Suchikopisas, nor those made of the bones of bulls and elephants, nor those having two heads, nor those having fusty beards, nor those that were not straight flying, were used by any body.

13. O king Arjuna! The son of Kunti did not assert the opinion but being it a trick, all other present there had preferred it. Only Yudhishtira, the son of Kunti could agree to the matter after a lengthy and tough discussion.

14. All then used straight and pure weapon and those three of the Pandava side, the battle, that occurred, was highly terrible, but free from all unfairness.

15. Then Dhristadyumna, very quick in the use of weapons and beholding those brave and

mighty car-warriors of your army, resisted by the twins (Nakula and Sahadeva), rushed upon Drona.

16. Resisted by those two foremost of men, those four brave warriors encountered the former like the winds assailing a pair of mountains.

17. Each of the twins, both mighty car-warriors was engaged with a couple of opponents. Meanwhile Dhristadyumna poured showers of arrows on Drona.

18-19. Then seeing the indomitable prince of the Panchalas advance upon Drona and those warriors of his army engaged with the twins, Duryodhana, O king, rushed to that part of the field, discharging myriad's of blood-sucking arrows. Beholding thus Satyaki approach the Kuru king in great speed.

20. Those two foremost of men, the two scions of the Kuru and Madhu race respectively nearing each other, were filled with the desire for smiting down each other.

21. Recollecting their conduct towards each other in their early days and reflecting with pleasure on the same, they looked at each other and smiled repeatedly.

22. Then king Duryodhana, blaming his own conduct, addressed his ever dear friend Satyaki and said

23. Fie on wrath, O friend and fie on vindictiveness, fie on Kshatriya urge and fie on might and prowess.

24. Inasmuch as you aim weapons at me and I am directing mine at you, O foremost of the descendants of Sins's race. In the days of childhood, you were dearer to me than my very life and I also was so to you.

25. Alas! all those deeds of boyhood that I recollect of both yourself and mine, become as nothing on the field of battle.

26-27. Alas! impelled by rage and covetousness, we are here today for fighting with each other, O scion of the Satvata race. Then O king, Satyaki conversant in the use of great weapons, taking up some sharp arrows smilingly replied to king Duryodhana who was



thus speaking to him, "This is no assembly, O prince, nor the house of our preceptor where in days gone by, we sported smiling together."

**Duryodhana said**

28. O foremost of Shini's race, where have those sports of our childhood vanished and alas, how has this battle come upon us. It appears that the influence of time is irresistible.

29. Urged though we are by a desire for wealth, what use have we of wealth that meeting each other, we now engage in battle, urged by avarice.

**Sanjaya said**

30. Satyaki then replied unto king Duryodhana who had thus spoken – "That they have to fight even with their preceptors has always been the duty of Kshatriyas.

31. If I am indeed believed of you, O king, slay me without delay. O foremost of the Bharatas, them through your instrumentality I shall be launched upon the regions of the righteous.

32. Bring into play, as soon as possible, all your might and prowess, against myself. This carnage of my friends, I do not wish to behold any longer.

33. Having thus replied to king Duryodhana and said his say, O king, Satyaki dauntlessly and reckless of his life, rushed furiously upon Duryodhana.

34. Beholding him thus advance your son received him. Indeed, O king, your son then poured upon him a veritable shower of arrows.

35. Then ensued a dreadful battle between those two foremost of Kuru's and Madhu's race, that resembled an encounter between a lion and an elephant.

36. Then filled with rage Duryodhana pierced the indomitable Satyaki with numerous keen arrows shot from the bow drawn to its fullest stretch.

37. Satyaki quickly pierced Duryodhana in return with fifty keen shafts in that battle and then with twenty and next with another ten shafts.

38. Then in that battle your son smilingly pierced Satyaki in return with thirty arrows shot from his bow-string drawn back to the ear.

39-40. Discharging then a Kshurapra (razor-headed arrow) he cut-off in two, Satyaki's bow with arrows fixed thereon ; Satyaki, thereupon with great lightness of hands, grasped a tougher bow and began to shoot a shower of shafts at your son. As those lines of arrows flew for bringing about Duryodhana's death.

41-42. The latter, O monarch, cut them into pierces, whereupon the troops uttered a loud shout. Then quickly he afflicted Satyaki with seventy three shafts, furnished with golden wings, whetted on stone and shot from a bow drawn to its fullest stretch. Then all these arrows and the bow with shafts thereupon.

43-44. Satyaki cut-off and covered Duryodhana with a fresh shower of arrows. Thus deeply pierced and afflicted with the shafts of that scion of the Dasarha race, Duryodhana, O mighty monarch, took shelter in another car. Then recovering a little your son once more rushed upon Satyaki.

45-46. Shooting myriad's of arrows at the chariot of the latter. Similarly Satyaki discharged arrows at Duryodhana's car; whereupon, O king, the battle became extremely fierced. Then in consequence of those shafts thus discharged and in consequence of their falling on all sides.

47. Loud clashing sounds arose there, resembling that produced by a raging conflagration consuming a large forest. The surface of the earth was then covered with those thousands of shafts shot by both of them.

48. Clouded therewith, the sky became invisible. Then beholding that foremost of car-warriors, namely, him of Madhu's race, prevail over Duryodhana.

49. Karna quickly advanced to rescue your son. But the mighty Bhimasena did not allow him to do so.

50. And he in his turn assailed Karna, quickly shooting numerous arrows. Thereupon Karna smilingly destroyed all those sharp arrows of Bhima.

51. Cut off his bow and arrows and wounded his driver with numerous shafts. Thereupon Pandu's son Bhimasena, burning with rage, took up a mace.

52. And therewith crushed the bow, the standard and the charioteer of his opponent in that battle. That mighty hero also shattered one of the wheels of Karna's car.

53. Then staying on his chariot of which one wheel was broken, Karna did not tremble (in fear) but was as firm as the prince of mountains. That chariot of his which had now only one wheel left was drawn by his horses.

54. Like the single-wheeled car of the Sun borne by the seven celestial steeds. Then not tolerating the feats of Bhimasena Karna fought on which latter.

55. Using different groups of arrows and diverse kinds of other weapons. Bhimasena similarly worked up with rage, fought on with the son of Suta.

56. When then the battle became thus confused and general, king Yudhishtira, the son of Dharma, addressing the foremost of heroes of the Panchalas and the Matsyas said

57. "They who are like our lives, they that are our heads, they that are our heads, they that are possessed of immense strength those foremost of men are now all engaged with the Dhritarashtra hosts.

58. Why are you then standing as if stupefied and with you, senses confounded? Hie there where my warriors are valorously fighting.

59. Keeping in view the duties of the Kshatriya order and dismissing your fears, engage in the battle; for then conquering or slain, you will obtain desirable ends.

60. If you conquer you may celebrate numerous sacrifices, giving away profuse Dakshina to the Brahmanas : If on the other hand you are slain, then becoming equal to the gods, you will attain regions of blessedness.

61. Urged on by the king in the above manner. Those brave and mighty car-warriors engaged on the field, quickly rushed upon

Drona, keeping in view the duties of the Kshatriyas.

62. Then the Panchalas, from one side began to assail Drona with their arrows, whilst those headed by Bhima began to check him on the other said.

63. Three of the mighty and war-like sons of Pandu were crooked-minded. They were the twins (Nakula and Sahadeva) and Bhimasena. These then addressing Arjuna loudly said

64. Rush, O Arjuna, upon the Kurus and separate them from Drona. Then the Panchalas will be able to slay him easily when he will be deprived on their protection.

65-66. Thereupon Pritha's son, all on a sudden attacked the Kaurava troops, while Drona too marched against the Panchala troops headed by Dhristadyumna. O Bharata, in that the fifth day of Drona's command, the brave combatants were slaughtered in quick succession.

## CHAPTER 191

### (DRONA-VADHA PARVA) – Continued

#### The utterance of the untruth by Yudhishtira

#### Sanjaya said

1. Then Drona effected a fierce carnage in the ranks of the Panchala troops, like the enraged Shakra causing a great slaughter amongst the Danava troops in days gone by.

2. O mighty monarch, the enemies of Drona all mighty car-warriors and possessed of great strength, though thus slaughtered by his arrows, did not shrink in fear from him.

3. Then those mighty car-warriors, the Panchalas and the Srinjayas, engaged in that battle, O king, rushed upon Drona's self.

4. Slaughtered with arrows and darts and trying to encompass Drona on all sides, the yells they uttered were terrible and loud.

5. Then beholding the slaughter of the Panchalas by the high-souled Drona and seeing his weapons enshroud all sides, the Pandavas became frightened.

6. Beholding the profuse destruction of horses and foot-soldiers in the battle, the Pandava troops, O king, became hopeless regarding their victory.

7. "Is not Drona that warrior well-versed in the use of excellent weapons going to consume us all, like a raging conflagration consuming a heap of straw at the expiration of the winter season?"

8. None can now even look at him in battle. Knowing the rules of fair combat even Arjuna will not now fight with him." (Even thus did they talk with each other).

9. Then beholding the sons of Kunti dismayed and afflicted by the arrows of Drona the intelligent Kesava ever solicitous of the welfare of the Pandavas, addressed Arjuna thus—

10. This foremost of all wielders of bows and arrows is incapable of being vanquished in battle by any one, one excepting the gods with Vasava at their head.

11. When he lays aside his weapons in battle, he may be slain even by men. O you sons of Pandu, abandoning virtue, do you therefore now betake yourself to contrivances for securing victory in battle.

12. Before Drona drawn by horses of golden colours succeeds in slaying us all. I think, if Ashvatthaman be killed, he will desist from fighting.

13. Let some one among us therefore tell him that Ashvatthaman has been slain in the battle, But O king, Kunti's son Dhananjaya did not accept this advice of Krishna.

14-15. Others approved of it. Yudhishtira accepted it with much reluctance. Then the mighty-armed Bhima, O monarch, slew with his mace, a terrible prodigious and foe-crushing elephant called Ashvatthaman belonging to Indravarma the ruler of the Malavas.

16. Then Bhimasena approaching Drona with a little bashfulness began to exclaim to the top of his voice "Ashvatthaman is slain."

17. The elephant known by the name of Ashvatthaman having been slain, Bhima spoke

of Ashvatthaman's death. Knowing the true fact in his mind, Bhima then spoke what was false.

18. Drona having heard this very disagreeable words of Bhimasena and he having reflected upon them in his mind, his limbs as if began to dissolve like sand in water.

19. But knowing fully the prowess of his own son, he soon came to regard that news as false and therefore hearing of his slaughter he did not become unmanned.

20-21. Soon recovering his senses he became comforted, as he recollected that son was incapable of being assailed by the enemy. Rushing upon the son of Parshata and impelled by a desire to slay that brave warrior who was destined to be his slayer, he covered the former with thousands of sharp arrows furnished with wings of the Kanka feather.

22. Thereupon twenty thousand illustrious car-warriors of the Panchala clan, covered him, thus careering on the field, with numerous shafts from all sides.

23. O ruler of men, covered as he then was with those arrows, we could not see that mighty car-warrior Drona, even as men cannot see the sun covered when it is with clouds during the rainy season.

25. Then blowing off all those arrows of the Panchalas and with a view to effect the death of these heroic Panchala warriors, the mighty car-warrior Drona, the afflicter of hostile troops, invoked into existence a Brahma weapon. At this time he looked resplendent like a blazing fire without a streak of smoke.

26. He then cut-off, in that great battle, innumerable heads of Panchala warriors as also their mace-like arms wearing golden ornaments.

27. Thus slaughtered by the son of Bharadvaja the royal warriors began to fall down on the earth, like so many trees up-rooted by the force of the tempest.

28. Mired with the flesh and blood of all the elephants and horses fallen in the battle, O Bharata, the earth appeared to be impassable.

29. Having slain twenty thousand car-warriors of the Panchalas, Drona stood on the

battle-field like a blazing fire free from even a single curl of smoke.

30. Thereafter filled with rage, the puissant son of Bharadvaja, lopped off the head of Vasudana from his trunk, by means of a bhalla.

31. He then slew five hundred Matsyas, six thousand Srinjayas and then again ten thousand elephants and ten thousand steeds.

32. Then beholding Drona stay on the field for the extermination of the Kshatriya race, the following Rishis headed by the God of Fire approached him.

33-34. They were, Vishvamitra, Jamadagni, Bharadvaja, Goutama, Vasistha, Kasyapa and Atri, the Sikatas, the Prisnis, Garga, the Valikhilyas, the Marichipas, the Vrigus, the Angiras and other mighty sages of subtle forms; these all were desirous of taking Drona to the region of Brahma.

35. All these then addressed Drona, that ornament of battle, into these words—'You are fighting wrongly, the hour of your death has come.

36. Cast away your weapons, O Drona and look at us standing before you. Hence-forward it behoves you not to perform cruel acts like these.

37. You are learned in the Vedas and their auxiliaries and devoted to truth and righteousness specially you are a Brahman, so these acts do not become you.

38. Lay aside your weapons, shake off the pale of error that hangs over you and betake yourself to the eternal path (of virtue). Today, the days of your earthly habitation have been numbered.

39. You have today consumed with your Brahma weapon many men who are ignorant of the use of weapons. This act which you have done is not at all praise-worthy.

40. O Drona, quickly lay you weapons aside in this battle; do not hesitate : O twice-born one, you should not perpetrate such sinful acts any longer.

41. Having heard these words of the sages, as also the words of Bhimasena and also

beholding Dhristadyumna stand before him in battle, Drona was dejected at heart.

42. Burning with grief and extremely pained, he then inquired of king Yudhishtira the son of Kunti whether his son was really slain or not.

43. Drona knew it for certain, the Pritha's son would never tell a lie, not even for the sake of getting the earth of the three worlds.

44. For that reason, that foremost of the regenerate ones questioned Yudhishtira in exclusion of every body else. Since the days of the latter's boyhood, Drona had hoped to hear truth from him.

45. Meanwhile, O king, Govinda knowing that Drona, that foremost of all combatants, could sweep away the Pandavas off the face of the earth, was very much dejected and then addressing Yudhishtira he said

46. "If influenced by rage Drona fights only for half a day, then I tell you truly, your troops are sure to be destroyed.

47. Save us from Drona; under the circumstances as the present falsehood is better than truth. Speaking falsehood for the sake of saving a life one does not become a sinner.

48. When they both were thus speaking with each other, Bhimasena said - "As soon as, O king, I heard of the means by which the illustrious Drona might be slain.

49-50. Putting forth my prowess in battle, I immediately slew a mighty elephant resembling that of Shakra, belonging to Indravarman, the Chief of the Malavas who were standing in your army. I then went to Drona and told him, 'Ashvatthaman has been slain, O Brahman; desist from fighting.'

51. Indeed, O foremost of men, the preceptor Drona did not believe in the veracity of my assertion; desirous of victory as you are, accept the counsel of Govinda.

52. O monarch, inform Drona that the son of Saradvat's daughter is dead. Thus spoken by you that foremost of the Brahmanas will cease to fight.

53. O ruler of men, you are well-known in the three words for your truthfulness." Having heard these words of Bhima and influenced by the counsel of Krishna.

54. And owing to the inevitability of Fate, O king, Yudhishtira decided to say, what he was called upon to say. Afraid of speaking lies, but anxious to obtain victory, Yudhishtira.

55. Clearly said that Ashvatthama was dead, adding indistinctly the word elephant after the name Ashvatthama. Ere now the chariot of Yudhishtira had remained at a height of four fingers' breadth from the earth's surface;

56. After he had uttered that lie his steeds touched the earth. Hearing these words from the lips of Yudhishtira, Drona that mighty car-warrior.

57-59. Overwhelmed with grief on account of the supposed death of his son, gave way to despair. Hearing the words of the sages, great offender against the illustrious Pandavas. Now hearing that his son had been slain he became completely senseless and filled with anxiety at the sight of Dhristadyumna, O monarch, the chastiser of foes was not able to fight as before.

## CHAPTER 192

### (DRONA-VADHA PARVA) – Continued

#### The battle between Drona and Dhristadyumna

Sanjaya said

1. Then beholding Drona, exceedingly anxious and depressed at heart in consequence of grief, the son of the Panchala king, viz., Dhristadyumna assailed him.

2. That hero had, for the slaughter of Drona, been obtained by Drupada, that ruler of men, at a great sacrifice, from the God of Fire.

3-5. Impelled by the desire of slaying Drona, he grasped a victory-giving and strong bow, of which the twang resembled the rumble of clouds, of which the string was very tough and which was irrefragible and of celestial make. He then fixed on the bow-string a formidable arrow resembling a snake of virulent

poison and endued with the effulgence of fire. That arrow resembled a fire of fierce tongues, while inside the circle of his bow appeared like the autumnal sun of great splendour within an effulgent circle.

6. Beholding that resplendent bow bent by the son of Prisata, the soldiers considered that the last hour of the world had come.

7. Seeing then that arrow directed at him, the mighty son of Bharadvaja considered that the last day of the corporal existence had arrived.

8. The preceptor then did not endeavour to baffle that shaft, nor did also the celestial weapons of that high-souled hero appear at his command.

9. His weapons had not been exhausted although he had used them for four days and one night; on the expiration of the third part of the fifth day, his stock of arrows was exhausted.

10. Beholding then the exhaustion of his shafts and pained with grief on account of his son's death and in consequence also of the reluctance of the celestial weapons to appear at his command.

11. He desired to lay his weapon aside urged to do so by the words of the sages. Though still charged with great energy, he was unable to fight as before.

12. Then taking up another bow of celestial make, presented to him by Angiras and several arrows resembling the curses of Brahmanas, he went on fighting with Dhristadyumna.

13. Then he covered Dhristadyumna with a thick shower of arrows and filled with rage began to mangle his vindictive antagonist.

14. Then with his own arrows Drona cut-off those of Dhristadyumna in hundred pieces and then with sharp arrows he felled the standard, the bow and the charioteer of the latter.

15. Thereupon Dhristadyumna smilingly taking up another bow, pierced Drona in return with a sharp arrows in the centre of his breast.

16. Thus deeply pierced the mighty bowman (Drona) seemed a little flurried in that combat.

But once more with a keen-edged bhalla he cut-off his opponent's bow.

17. Then indomitable Drona cut-off all the weapons, O king and all the bows of his antagonist, except only his mace and sword.

18. Then, O subduer of foes, filled with rage, he pierced the wrathful Dhristadyumna with nine sharp arrows capable of putting an end to the life of every body.

19. The mighty car-warrior Dhristadyumna of immeasurable soul then invoked into existence the Brahma weapon and thereby caused the horses of his own chariot mix with those of his opponents.

20. Possessed of the fleetness of the wind, these steeds of the crimson and pegin colours, O foremost of the Bharatas, thus mingled together, appeared highly beautiful.

21. Like roaring clouds surcharged with flashes of lightning at the commencement of the rainy season, O mighty monarch, those steeds mingled together.

22. Then that regenerate one of immeasurable soul, destroyed the wheel-joints, the shaft-joints and other car-joints of Dhristadyumna.

23. With his bow cut-off, his car rendered useless, his elephants and driver slain and thus involved in a perilous situation that hero began to whirl his mace.

24. Then that truly valiant and mighty car-warrior the enraged Drona, destroyed with his sharp arrows that mace hurled by Dhristadyumna.

25. Beholding that mace of his cut-off by Drona by means of his arrows, that foremost of men, that prince of the Panchalas, quickly took up a clean sword and a resplendent shield with its ground decked with hundred moons.

26. Undoubtedly, under these circumstances, the Panchala prince resolved to make an end of that foremost of preceptor, that most illustrious warrior.

27. Then jumping down from the terrace of his chariot and riding on the car-shaft he with his sword and bright shield uplifted, tried to approach the latter seated on his chariot.

28. Then that mighty car-warrior Dhristadyumna, out of foolishness and for achieving a difficult feat, wished to tear open the breast of Bharadvaja's son in battle.

29. Sometimes he stood on the yoke of Drona's car and sometimes under the haunch's of his red steeds. These motions of his were then greatly praised by all the troops.

30. While he thus stood upon the yoke or underneath the haunches of those red steeds, Drona saw no opportunity for striking him. That indeed appeared wonderful.

31. Then in that battle the movements of both Drona and the son of Prisata resembled those of a hawk flying through the sky in quest of a piece of meat.

32. Thereafter the puissant Drona inflamed with rage, slew one after another the blue-hued steeds of his adversary and then destroyed his car, with a powerful shaft.

33. The steeds of Dhristadyumna, thus slain fell down on the ground, whereupon the red steeds of Drona himself were set free from the entanglement in the trappings, O ruler of men.

34. Beholding those horses slain by that foremost of regenerate ones, that son of Prisata, that foremost of all warriors, born in virtue of a sacrifice, that mighty car-warrior, did not tolerate it.

35. Then that foremost of sword-men, deprived of his car, took up his sword and rushed upon Drona, O king, like Vinata swooping down upon a snake.

36. Solicitous of slaying the son of Bharadvaja, O king, his appearance then resembled that of Hari when, in days of yore, he was going to slay the Daitya king Hiranyakasipu.

37. He then coursed in various tracks. Indeed, O foremost of the descendants of Kuru, Prisata's son careering in that battle, displayed the well-known twenty-one kinds of evolution's.

38-40. Armed with his sword and his buckler in grasp the son of Prisata, wheeled about, whirled his sword in the air, made side thrusts, rushed forward, ran sideways, jumped

up, assailed the sides of his foes, fell backwards, ran into close quarters with his enemy and pressed them hard. Having practised them well he also exhibited the movements, known as Bharata, Kousika and Satvata, as he coursed in battle for bringing about Drona's death. Beholding those charming movements of Dhristadyumna, as he coursed, armed with shield and sword in battle.

41-42. All the warriors present as also the celestials, were filled with amazement. The twice-born Drona then discharging a thousand arrows in the press of the battle, cut-off Dhristadyumna's sword and shield covered with hundred moons. The arrows that Drona shot in that fight in close quarters were of the length of a span.

43. Those arrows were only to be used in a fight in close quarters. No one else had arrows of that kind, except Saradvata's son Kripa, Arjuna, Ashvatthaman and Karna.

44-45. Pradyumna and Yuyudhana possessed such arrows and also Abhimanyu had them. The preceptor then desirous of making an end of his pupil who was to him like his own son, placed on his bow-string, a strong shaft possessed of great violence. Satyaki however cut-off that shaft with ten arrows of his own.

46. Before the eyes of your son and of Karna of high-soul, he then thus saved Dhristadyumna who was on the point of falling a victim to Drona.

47-49. Thereafter O Bharata, Kesava and Dhananjaya, both of illustrious soul, beheld Satyaki of prowess incapable of being thwarted, in the track of the Kurus and thus within the range of the shafts of Drona, Karna and Kripa. Then both of them applauded Satyaki of undiminishing fame saying 'excellent,'—him who was then destroying the celestial weapons of all his foes. Then Kesava and Dhananjaya dashed upon the Kaurava warriors.

50. Thereafter Dhananjaya addressing Kesava said - "Behold, O Kesava, that perpetuator of Madhu's race, sporting amidst the hostile warriors headed by the preceptor and other foremost car-warriors.

51. Truly valiant Satyaki is thereby affording great delight to me, the twins, king Yudhishtira and Bhima.

52. That Satyaki, the enhancer of the glory of the Vrishnis, well-practised in the use of weapons and free from insolence, is thus careering in the midst of the fight, sporting with mighty car-warrior.

53. The Siddhas and the troops filled with delight, are praising him, saying 'excellent, excellent,' as they find that one of the Satvata race invincible. The warriors of both armies are applauding him, O monarch, in consequence of his feats.

## CHAPTER 193

(DRONA-VADHA PARVA) – Continued

### The slaughter of Drona

Sanjaya said

1. Then beholding those feats of that one of the Satvata race, Duryodhana and others, filled with rage, quickly encompassed the grandson of Shini on all sides.

2. Kripa and Karna and your sons, O sire, quickly assailing Shini's grandson in the battle, began to pierce him with sharp arrows.

3. Thereupon king Yudhishtira, the two sons of Madri begotten by Pandu and the mighty Bhimasena rushed to protect him of the Satvata race.

4. Karna and the son of Gotama, that mighty car-warrior and Duryodhana and others, then covered Shini's grandson with their shafts.

5. Then fighting, O king, (fearlessly) on with those warriors, that scion of Shini's race checked that awful shower of pouring arrows which had been begun so suddenly.

6. In that great battle, with his various celestial weapons, he duly baffled the celestial weapons of his high-souled opponents, that were aimed at him.

7. The field of battle looked dreadful during the progress of that encounter between royal combatants and it resembled the scene of the

field where in days of yore Rudra, filled with rage, had slaughtered all creatures.

8. Human arms and heads and bows and torn umbrellas and chamaras, O Bharata.

9. Where seen in heaps on that field of battle. With broken-wheeled cars, with fallen arms.

10. And with heroic horsemen lying slain, the earth became impassable. O foremost of the Kurus, the warriors lacerated with the falling shafts:-

11. Were seen to roll in various movements on the ground in that great battle. During the progress of that terrible battle resembling that between the Gods and the Asuras in days of yore.

12. The very virtuous king Yudhishtira addressing the Kshatriyas said - "You mighty car-warriors, rush unitedly upon the pot-born Drona.

13. Yonder is the heroic son of Prisata engaged with the son of Bharadvaja; he is trying to the best of his endeavours to encompass the death of Drona.

14. Judging from the appearances of his mighty battle, it may be inferred that filled with rage the son of Prisata will today over-throw in battle the son of Bharadvaja.

15. Therefore do you unitedly rush upon the pot-born Drona. Thus commanded by Yudhishtira, the mighty car-warriors of the Srinjayas.

16-17. Impelled by a desire for slaying the son of Bharadvaja, assailed him. The mighty car-warrior the son of Bharadvaja, then received those advancing hosts in fury, knowing death to be inevitable. When Drona of unfailing aim thus advanced, the earth began to tremble.

18. Fierce winds began to blow filling the troops of the enemy with fear. Mighty meteors began to drop down, seeming to issue out of the solar disc.

19. In their fall they illumined the welkin and foreboded great danger. O sire, the weapons of Bharadvaja's son began to blaze forth.

20. Cars emitted loud clatters and horses began to shed tears. The mighty car-warrior Drona the son of Bhardvaja, appeared to be devoid of his energy.

21. His eyes and his left arms began to tremble. And beholding Prishata's son before him, he became cheerless.

22. Coincide to this a memory to take a departure in the abode of Brahma as stated by Rishis, well-known to Brahman, decided to abandon leave their lives through fighting in the battle field with chivalry.

23. Then desirous of the compass were covered with the troops of Drupada's son. Consuming hosts of Kshatriyas Drona then careered on the field of battle.

24. Then that crusher of foes having slain twenty thousand Kshatriyas, slew another hundred thousands with whetted shafts of keen points.

25. Then exerting himself with care he remained in the battle-field and appeared like a blazing fire without even a curl of smoke. For the destruction of the Kshatriyas. he then grasped the Brahma weapons.

26. Then the self-controlled Bhima beholding the prince of the Panchalas carless and weaponless, quickly rushed to the rescue of that high-souled warrior.

27. Then beholding the prince of the Panchalas strike Drona from a near point Bhima, that subduer of foes, took him up on his car and thus spoke to him-

28. Except yourself there is none who can fight with the preceptor in such close quarters; therefore be quick in compassing his slaughter, inasmuch as the burden rests wholly on you.

29. Thus spoken to by Bhima, the mighty-armed Dhristadyumna, quickly took up a strong and new bow of very superior make and capable of bearing a great strain.

30. Worked up with rage and discharging his arrows in that battle at the indomitable Drona, Dhristadyumna covered the preceptor with arrows with a desire to withstand him.



31. Those two ornaments of battle, those two superior warriors, filled with rage, then resisted one another and invoked into existence many celestial and Brahma weapons.

32. Then, O mighty monarch, Dhristadyumna covered Drona in that battle with many weapons. Destroying all those weapons of Bharadvaja's son, the prince of the Panchalas.

33. That warrior of unfading renown, began to consume the Vasatis, the Shinis, the Valhikas and the Kurus who were then engaged in protecting Drona.

34. O king, discharging numerous shafts on all sides, Dhristadyumna at that time appeared beautiful like the sun of myriad rays.

35. Drona however once more cut-off the prince's bow and pierced the vitals of the prince himself with large number of shafts. Thus wounded the prince was greatly pained.

36. Thereupon Bhima of great fury holding the chariot of Drona, distinctly spoke those words to him—

37. If vile Brahmanas dissatisfied with the duties of their own order but versed in the use of weapons, did not fight, then the Kshatriya order would not have become reduced in numerical strength.

38. Sparing life has been declared to be most excellent of all virtues. The Brahmana is the toot of that virtue. You are again the foremost of all men conversant with Brahma.

39-40. Like a Chandala, slaying numerous Mlechchas and diverse other warriors, who however are all engaged in performing the duties of their order, moved to the deed by folly and ignorance, O Brahmana and by the desire of benefiting your family and son, indeed for the sake of your only son indeed slaying all like one ignorant of his duties and disregarding your own avocation why do you not feel ashamed?

41. He for whose sake you have taken up arms and for whom you live, he, deprived of life, today lies on the field of battle, unknown to you and behind your back.

42. It behoves you not to doubt the words the very virtuous king Yudhishtira has told you. Thus addressed by Bhima, Drona, laid his bow aside.

43. Then desirous of laying all his weapons aside, Bharadvaja's son of illustrious soul, said aloud—"O Karna, O Karna, O great bowman, O Kripa, O Duryodhana.

44. Exert your best in the battle: this I tell you repeatedly ; may no injury befall you from the Pandavas; I am going to lay aside my weapons.

45. Having spoken thus, O mighty monarch, Drona began to cry out the name of Ashvatthaman at the top of his voice; and laying aside his weapons, he then sat down on the terrace of his car.

46. Then betaking to yoga, he assuredly gave safety to creature. Taking advantage of that opportunity. Dhristadyumna collected all his energies.

47. Then placing his dreadful bow with arrows fixed on its string on his car, he jumped down from it armed with a sword and then rushed furiously upon Drona.

48. Then men and other creatures beholding Drona on the point of falling a victim to Dhristadyumna, began to utter loud cries of Oh and Alas.

49. They bewailed piteously and they cried alas and oh and said fie. Meanwhile Drona, having laid aside his weapons, was peacefully seated on his car.

50. Having spoken as before, Drona, had betaken to yoga. Endued with great splendour and possessed of ascetic merit, he had set his heart on that ancient and paramount being viz., Vishnu.

51. Slightly bending down his face and throwing his breast forward and shutting his eyes and reposing on the quality of goodness and directing his mind on meditation.

52. And thinking on the monosyllabic Om representing Brahma and recollecting the mighty, paramount and indestructible god of gods and effulgent Drona of great ascetic merit.

53. The preceptor of the Kurus and the Pandavas, went to heaven, which is so difficult of being attained even by the virtuous. Indeed when Drona proceeded to heaven, it appeared to us that there were two suns in the sky.

54. The whole welkin was ablaze and appeared to be one vast sheet of equal light when the sun-like Bharadvaja, of solar splendour, proceeded towards heaven.

55. But within an wink of time however, that light disappeared and then tumultuous noise of the delighted celestials were heard there.

56. When Drona thus ascended to heaven, Dhristadyumna was standing beside him stupefied; only we five amongst mortal creatures beheld.

57. The illustrious Drona, lost in yoga and meditation, ascend to the highest regions of blessedness. These five were, myself, Pritha's son Dhananjaya, Ashvatthaman, the son of Drona.

58-59. Vasudeva of the Vrisni race and king Yudhishtira the virtuous son of Pandu. All else could not see the halo of glory that surrounded the intelligent son of Bharadvaja as he ascended, rapt up in yoga, to the Brahma regions, which are mysterious even to the gods and which is the highest of all celestial regions.

60-61. In fact all human beings were then unaware of the fact that Drona had attained to the highest mode of existence. None of them could then descry the preceptor, that subduer of foes, ascend to the region of Brahma, devoted to yoga, in company with the best of sages, his body mangled with arrows and steeped in blood after he had set aside his weapons.

62. Prisata's son meanwhile, though all creatures cried fie on him, yet casting his eyes on the lifeless Drona's head, began to drag it (by the hair.)

63. Then with his sword he lopped that head off the trunk of his foe who remained silent all the while. Then upon the slaughter of Bharadvaja's son he was filled with delight.

64. Dhristadyumna began to send up loud war-cries whirling his sword all the while in the

air. With his hoary locks flowing down his ears, of a dark complexion that old man of eighty-five years.

65. For your sake used to career on the field of battle, like a boy of sixteen. The mighty-armed Dhananjaya, that son of Kunti, had said (before Drona's head was looped off—

66. "O son of Drupada, bring the preceptor alive. Do not slay him. He should not be slain, he should not be slain." Even thus did you troops also.

67. Cry out; especially Arjuna had exclaimed aloud melting with compassion for his preceptor. But unmindful of the cries of Arjuna and those of other rulers of the earth.

68-69. O foremost of men, Dhristadyumna slew Drona in the terrace of his own car. Then that indomitable subduer of foes, his body stained with blood, jumped down from the car on the earth, looking red like the (newly-risen) solar disc. Thus the soldiers behold Drona slain in the battle.

70. Thereafter, O king, that furied bowman Dhristadyumna, threw that large head of Bharadvaja's son at the front ranks of your troops.

71. Then the troops beholding that head of Bharadvaja's son, felt inclined to fly and O king, without much hesitation they took to their heels.

72. Meanwhile Drona proceeding to the heavens entered the stellar path. I only saw the (true circumstances of the) death of Drona.

73-74. Through the grace of the sage Krishna-Dvaipayana, the son of Satyawati. I then beheld that effulgent one proceeding, after his ascension to the sky, like a blazing flame-beam free from even a curl of smoke flying through the welkin. Upon the slaughter of Drona, the Kurus, the Pandavas and the Srinjayas, all became depressed.

75. And every body fled in great haste. The army then broke away. Many had been slain and many wounded with keen arrows.

76. Upon the death of Drona, your troops appeared to be senseless. Having suffered a

defeat and being inspired with fear about the future.

77. The Kurus lost the benefit of this as well as of the next world. Really they lost all self-control. The rulers of earth then searching for the body of Bharadvaja's son.

78. Could not find it out in consequence of the field being covered over with numerous headless trunks. The Pandavas on the other hand, having obtained victory here and prospects of fame in the future.

79. Began to make loud sounds with their arrows and conches and they uttered tremendous war-cries. Then Bhimasena and Prisata's son Dhristadyumna.

80. Embraced each other in the midst of the Pandava host which looked upon them both. Then that afflicter of foes Bhima addressing Prisata's son said

81. "O son of Prisata, I will again embrace your victorious self, when the sinful sons of Suta and Dhritarashtra will be slain in the battle.

82. Having spoken thus much and filled with joy, Pandu's son Bhima, caused the earth to tremble with the sound of his arm-strokes.

83. At that sound your troops, panic stricken, began to fly away; and disregarding the duties of Kshatriyas they exerted themselves in flying away.

84. The Pandavas, having obtained victory were transported with joy, O ruler of men; and great was their happiness at the destruction of their foes in battle.

## CHAPTER 194

### (NARAYANASTRAMOKSHA PARVA)

#### Communication of the intelligence of Drona's death to Ashvatthama

Sanjaya said

1. Upon the slaughter of Drona, O king, the Kurus, afflicted with the weapons of their enemies, their foremost warrior slain and themselves confounded-began to indulge copiously in grief.

2. Beholding their enemies then elated with joy and success, they repeatedly trembled in fear. O ruler of men, they were panic-stricken and depressed and their eyes were filled with tears.

3. They were distracted (with sorrow), their courage gone and themselves reduced in splendour under the burden of grief. Uttering piteous wails, they then surrounded your son.

4. Covered with dust, trembling (in every limbs), gazing (vacantly) at the ten points of the compass, their eyes flooded with tears, they looked like the Daityas upon the fall of Hiranyaksha in days of yore.

5. Surrounded by those panic-stricken troops of his, who then looked like puny animals, your son could not stay on the field and went away from it.

6. Those warriors of yours, O Bharata, worn out with hunger and thirst and scorched by the burning rays of the sun were exceedingly dejected.

7-8. Beholding that unthought-of over-throw of Bharadvaja's son, that was like falling the sun on the earth or the drying up of the ocean or the transplantation of Meru mountain or the defeat of Vasava himself, your troops, O king, began to fly away, panic lending speed to their legs.

9. Beholding him of the golden car slain, Sakuni the king of the Gandharvas, with his terrified and affrighted followers fled in all haste.

10. Taking with him his numerous divisions that were flying with all their standards, Suta's son also, out of fear, fled away.

11. The ruler of the Madras viz., Salva gathering together his divisions abounding in cars, elephants and steeds and looking vacantly on all sides, fled away, out of fear.

12. Kripa the son of Sharadvata also fled, saying Alas, Alas and taking with him his divisions consisting mostly of elephants and infantry, of which the greater part had been slaughtered.

13. Kritavarman, surrounded by the Bhoja division and the remnants of the Kalingas,

Asratta and Valhikas, fled away borne by his swift steeds.

14. Beholding Drona slain, Uluka, filled with fear and with his infantry divisions, fled away in great speed.

15. Handsome, youthful in years and well-known for his bravery, Dussassana inspired with great fear, fled away being surrounded by his elephant division.

16. Beholding Drona overthrown Vrishasena fled in haste, taking away with him ten thousand chariots and three thousand tusked elephants.

17. Your son the mighty car-warrior Duryodhana also, O king, then fled from the field attended by cars, elephants and steeds and surrounded by foot-soldiers.

18. Beholding Drona overthrown, O king, Susarman fled away, taking with him the remnants of the Samshaptakas, slain by the diadem-decked Arjuna.

19. Beholding him of the golden car slain, men began to fly on all sides, riding on their elephants and cars and urging on their steeds.

20. Some urging on their sires, others their brothers and others their uncles and others their sons and other companions, the Kurus fled away in haste.

21. Some exhorting their troops to make haste and others their nephews and other kinsmen, fled away in all directions.

22. Their hair dishevelled and their accouterments falling off, no two persons were seen to fly together; their courage gone and their splendour destroyed, men then thought that the Kuru army was completely annihilated.

23. Others among your troops fled, O lord, throwing off their coats of mail. O foremost of the Bharatas, then your troops addressing one another loudly said

24. "Wait, Wait"; but none of them who thus spoke remained a moment on the field. Abandoning their vehicles and chariots decked with ornaments.

25. Warriors, mounting on the steeds or using their legs, fled in all possible haste. While

the troops, with their splendour lost and filled with fear, were thus flying away.

26. Only Drona's son Ashvatthman advanced towards the foes, like a huge alligator swimming against the current. He had recently fought a terrible fight with the hostile division headed by Sikhandin.

27. As also with the Prabhadrakas the Panchalas and the Chedis accompanied by the Kekayas. Having slain numerous indomitable troops of the Pandavas.

28. And with difficulty extricating himself from his perilous situations, that one of the gait of an infuriated elephant, beholding the troops flying away.

29. Approached Duryodhana; and then that son of Drona said these words to the latter—"Why O Bharata, are the troops flying away, as if in fear?

30. Why, O king, do you not try to rally them when they are thus flying away? O ruler of men, you also are not in your usual mood.

31. In consequence of the slaughter of what foremost of warriors of your army have the troops been reduced to this plight? O foremost of the Kurus, tell me all truly.

32. O king, even these division headed by Karna and others are not staying on the field. In no previsions battle was the army thus broken and routed.

33. O Bharata, has any great catastrophe, O mighty monarch, overtaken your army? Thereafter Duryodhana hearing the words of Drona's son.

34. Hesitated to communicate that most terrible and disagreeable intelligence to him. Your son, that foremost of kings, was then sunk deep in the ocean of grief, even like a splintered boat in the sea.

35. At the sight of Drona's son seated on his chariot, the eyes of the king were flooded with tears. Thereafter, O king, your son suffused with shame, said these words to the son of Sharadvata—

36. "May good betide you. Do you first inform Ashvatthaman of the cause of this flight

of our troops. Thereupon O king, Saradvata's son, repeatedly over-whelmed with sorrow, said to Drona's son how Drona had been slain.

### Kripa said

37. Ourselves, placing that foremost of car-warriors on earth viz. , Drona before us, commenced the battle with the Panchalas only.

38. During the progress of the battle the Kurus and the Somakas became mingled together and then challenging one another they mangled one another a body with their weapons.

39. When the battle thus raged and when the Dhartarashtra troops were being reduced in number, your father, filled with rage, invoked into existence a celestial weapon.

40. Then, O foremost of men, Drona using that Brahma weapon, slew his enemies by hundreds and thousands.

41. Impelled forward by Fate the Pandavas, the Kaikayas, the Matsyas and the Panchalas, O foremost of the regenerate ones, approaching the vicinity of Drona's car, were slaughtered (indiscriminately).

42. Then with his Brahma weapon Drona dispatched a thousand foremost heroes and two thousand tusked elephants to the abode of Death.

43. With his hoary locks flowering down to his ears and of a dark complexion and full eighty-five years of age, Drona then careered on the field with the agility of a boy of sixteen.

44. Their troops fatigued and their kings slain, the Panchalas although burning with rage, were compelled to turn back.

45. When the enemy's rank was partly broken and when they were compelled to turn their faces away from the field, that conqueror of foes, exhibiting his celestial weapon, looked beautiful like the rising sun.

46. Penetrating into the centre of the Pandava rank, the puissant hero, your father, shooting his ray-like shafts, became incapable of being looked at like the sun shining in the centre of the heaven.

47. Our enemies, then scorched by Drona who then appeared beautiful like the sun, were reduced in their energy, deprived of courage and depressed at heart.

48. Thereupon the slayer of Madhu ever solicitous of the victory of the Pandavas, beholding the troops afflicted by Drona with his shafts spoke these words—

49. This leader of the leaders of car-hosts, this foremost of all wielders of bow is incapable of being vanquished in battle even by the slayer of Vritra himself.

50. Therefore disregarding the rules of fair combat do you strive for the sake of giving victory to the Pandavas, in such a manner that he of the golden car may not slay you all.

51. I think, he will never fight if he hears that Ashvatthaman has been slain in battle. Let therefore some one tell him this falsehood that Ashvatthaman has been slain in battle.

52. These words did not sound agreeable to the ear of Kunti's son Dhananjaya. Others again approved of their words. King Yudhishtira accepted them after much hesitation.

53. Then Bhimasena suffused with blushes of shame said to your father—"Ashvatthaman has been slain." But your father believed him not.

54. Your father affectionate to his son then doubting the veracity of Bhima's words, questioned very virtuous king Yudhishtira, whether you were really slain or not.

55. Afraid of tell lies but interested in securing victory, Yudhishtira, then beholding a mighty elephant by name Ashvatthaman slain in battle.

56. By Bhima an elephant belonging to Indrarman the ruler of the Malavas and that was huge as a hill, approached Drona and loudly spoke these words—

57. "He for whom you are wielding your weapons and looking on whom you live, that dearly-loved son of yours by name Ashvatthaman has been slain.

58-59. Slain he lies prostrate on the field like a lion-calf in the woods. Cognisant of the

evils of falsehood that king clearly spoke these words to the foremost of Brahmanas, adding indistinctly the word elephant after them. Hearing that you have been slain and consequently afflicted with great grief.

60. Withdrawing his celestial weapons he ceased to fight. Beholding him greatly anxious and overpowered with grief.

61. The son of the Panchala king, that perpetrator of vile deeds, assailed him. Beholding that prince who had been destined to be the cause of his death, Drona, conversant with the truths about men and things.

62. Abandoned his celestial weapons and betook to the Praya Joga. Then grasping his hair with his left hand.

63. The son of Prisata lopped off his head disregarding the expostulating cries of the heroes. From all sides they then said - "He should not be slain, He should not be slain.

64. Similarly Arjuna also, jumping down from his chariot quickly rushed towards Dhristadyumna, with his arms raised and repeatedly saying—

65. "Bring the preceptor alive; conversant with the rules of fair fight, you should not slay him." Although thus prevented by the Kauravas and Arjuna.

66-67. Your father, O foremost of men, suffered death at the hands of that most heartless warrior (Dhristadyumna). It is for this reason that the troops afflicted with fear are flying away. Similarly, O sinless one, we are depressed upon the overthrow of your sire.

**Sanjaya said**

68. Then Drona's son, hearing that account of the slaughter of his father in battle, became filled with fury like a snake trembled under feet.

69. Then, O sire, filled with wrath Drona's son appeared to burn on the field, like fire that blazes forth furiously having obtained heaps of fuel to feed it.

70. Squeezing one of his hands with the other and grinding his teeth and breathing like a snake his eyes became coppery (in rage).

## CHAPTER 195

### (NARAYANASTRAMOKSHA PARVA)–

#### Continued

#### The wrath of Ashvatthaman

**Dhritarashtra said**

1. Hearing of the slaughter of his aged and Brahma-knowing sire by Dhristadyumna in an unfair battle, O Sanjaya, what did Ashvatthaman say.

2. He who is puissant and in whom human and Varuna and Agneya and Brahma and Aindra and Narayana weapons are always present?

3. Hearing that the pious preceptor has been slain in battle by unfair means by Dhristadyumna what did that Ashvatthama say?

4. The illustrious Drona having mastered the science of bowmanship had imparted its knowledge to that son of his desirous of seeing the latter accomplished in every way.

5. There is only one person in the world whom people can desire to be superior to themselves in accomplishments and that person is one's own son.

6. This is the mystery about all illustrious preceptors, that they impart the knowledge of their respective sciences of their sons or to their beloved pupils.

7. O Sanjaya, the heroic son of Saradvata's daughter, being the disciple of his own sire has obtained all that knowledge in every detail and has become a second Drona.

8. In knowledge of weapons, Ashvatthaman is like Rama himself; in battle he is like Purandar, in prowess he equals Kartavirya and in wisdom he matches Brihaspati.

9. Youthful in years, he resembles a mountain in endurance and fire in energy. In gravity he is equal to the ocean and in anger to a snake of virulent poison.

10. He is the first car-warrior in the world and indefatigable and resolute bowman. He equals the wind in speed; and in the thick of fight he careers like the Destroyer in person.

11. Shooting his arrows in battle he had afflicted the earth herself. Brave and of great prowess, he is never exhausted in battle.

12. Purified by the recital of the Vedas and by the observance of the vows, he has thoroughly mastered the science of bowmanship. He is incapable of being ruffled and resembled in this direction the mighty ocean or the Dasaratha's son Rama himself.

13. Hearing that the righteous preceptor has been slain in battle by unfair means by Dhristadyumna what indeed did Ashvatthaman say?

14. Ashvatthaman was destined to become the slayer of Dhristadyumna the son of Yajnasena, even as this latter was ordained to be the slayer of Drona.

15. What, alas, did Ashvatthaman say, hearing that the Preceptor has been slain by that sinful, cruel and mean Dhristadyumna of little foresight?

## CHAPTER 196

### (NARAYANASTRAMOKSHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The wrath of Ashvatthaman

Sanjaya said

1. Hearing that his father has been slain by underhand means by Dhristadyumna of sinful deeds, Drona's son became filled, O foremost of men, with tears as well as with (extreme) rage.

2. Inflamed as he was with rage, his body, O monarch, appeared to burn like that of the Destroyer himself when at the expiration of a Yuga, he engages himself in slaughtering created beings.

3. Then repeatedly wiping off his eyes shedding copious tears and breathing in rage, he said these words unto king Duryodhana.

4. I have been apprised of the fact, how my father was slain after he laid his weapons aside; I have also known how a sinful act has been committed by those who boast of hoisting the standard of virtue.

5-6. I have also heard of the vile and ruthless act of the very virtuous king Yudhishthira. Surely either victory or its reverses will fall to the lot of those who engage in fight. Death in battle is ever esteemed. The death overtaking one engaged in fight under fair rules of combat.

7. Should not become a source of grief, as been observed by the sages. My father, without doubt, has gone to the posthumous regions of the heroes.

8. I should not lament for that foremost of men as he had undergone the most excellent from of death. But when fighting fairly, he was seized by the hair.

9. Before the eyes of all the troops; this humiliation that he sustained is biting me to the very quick. Whilst I live, my sire was seized by the hair.

10. Why then should sonless men wish to obtain sons (who can help them in no way)? Moved by lust or wrath or ignorance or hatred or levity.

11. Men perpetrate acts opposed to morality or to humiliate others. This most sinful act has been committed by the son of Prisata.

12. Of wicked soul and ruthless heart, in utter disregard of myself. Dhristadyumna shall behold the dreadful consequences of his act.

13. As also the prevaricating sons of Pandu, who have perpetrated a sinful act. He that caused, by an underhand measure, the preceptor to lay aside his weapon.

14. The blood of that son of Dharma the earth shall drink today. I swear by my truth, O foremost of the Kurus, as also by the religious merits acquired by my Isha and Purtha acts.

15. That I shall drag on my burden some existence without slaying the Panchalas to the last men. Having re-course to all measures, I shall contend against the Panchalas in great battle.

16. Either by hook or crook or by violent or mild measures I will achieve the slaughter of Dhristadyumna of evil deeds in battle.

17. O ruler of the Kuru, exterminating the Panchalas, I shall regain my peace of mind. O foremost of men, people desire to have children.

18. In order that these latter may free them from great danger here and hereafter. But my sire was reduced to a woeful plight like one helpless.

19. While myself his son and disciple, equal to a mountain (in mighty) am still alive. Fie on my weapons of celestial make, fie on my arms, fie on my prowess.

20. Inasmuch as getting me for his son, Drona had to suffer the indignity of being seized by the hair. O foremost of the Bharatas, I shall therefore so exert myself that.

21. I may be free from the debt I still owe to my sire who has proceeded to Heaven. A noble person never indulges in his own praise;

22. But incapable of tolerating the slaughter of my sire, I shall today utter my own praises—Let the Pandavas with Janardana at their head today behold my prowess.

23. As I grind all creatures like the Destroyer himself at the hour of Dissolution. Neither the gods, nor the Gandharvas, nor the Asuras, nor the reptiles, nor the Rakshasas.

24. Will be able today to conquer me as I shall ride on my car, O foremost of men. There is none in the world superior to me or Arjuna in the knowledge of weapons.

25. Today at the heart of the hostile troops, like the sun in the midst of scorching rays, I shall discharge my celestial weapons.

26. In today's mighty battle, shafts shot furiously from by bow will crush and mangle the Pandavas, showing their great energy.

27. My troops shall today behold the quarters of the compass, shrouded with sharp-winged shafts, as if O king, by shower of rain.

28. Shooting on all sides shafts of dreadful whirl, I shall fell my foes like the mighty tempest uprooting the trees.

29-30. Neither Vibhatsu, nor Janardana, nor Bhimasena, nor the twins, (Nakula and Sahadeva), nor king Yudhishtira, nor Prisata's son of wicked soul, Sikhandin, nor Satyaki,

even know the weapon which I possess, O foremost of the Kurus, with the mantras for hurling and withdrawing it.

31. Formerly on one occasion, disguised as a Brahmana, Narayana, came to my father; whereupon my father bowing down unto him presented him offerings in due course and from.

32. Accepting those offerings that possessor of the six illustrious qualities (the Bhagas) desired to accord a boon to my sire. Thereupon my father asked the boon of getting that most excellent weapon called Narayana.

33. Thereupon that foremost of all gods, that possessor of the six divine qualities said unto him, O king, "No man shall ever be a match for you in battle.

34. But, O Brahmana, this weapon should not be used without sufficient deliberation, for it never returns without dispatching the foe at whom it is hurled.

35. O Lord, I know not whom it may not slay. It will even effect the death of him who is unslayable. Therefore it should not be used hastily.

36. When one abandons his car on weapons in battle or implores for mercy or surrenders himself.

37. O afflicter of your foes, these are the occasions when this mighty weapon, should not be used. He that wants to afflict the unslayable by this weapon himself becomes afflicted by it.

38. My puissant father then received that weapon. The lord then thus spoke to me also. "You shall destroy many showers of celestial weapons.

39. By means of this weapon and you shall blaze forth in effulgence by its virtue." Having thus spoken that Divine Lord ascended to heaven.

40-41. This is history how my father obtained the Narayana weapon from the god. With the aid of this weapon, I shall crush the Pandavas, the Panchalas, the Matsyas and the Kaikayas in battle like the husband of Sachi crushing the Asuras. Assuming those particular forms which I shall desire them to assume, my arrows.



42. Will fall upon my foes contending vigorously in battle. Staying in battle I shall shower weapons as it lists men to do.

43. I will rout the foremost of car-warriors with sky-ranging arrows furnished with iron tips. I will certainly hurl battle axes, bludgeons and various other kinds of weapons.

44. An afflicter of foes as I am, with the aid of that Narayana weapon, I shall destroy the foes, completely crushing the Pandavas.

45. That disgrace to the Panchala race, that contemner of his friends, the Brahmanas and his preceptor, that odious fellow of vilest conduct, shall not escape me alive today.

46. Hearing those words of Drona's son, the army rallied; all foremost of warriors therein blew their mighty conches.

47. Delightedly they began to strike up the Bheris and Dindimas by thousands; the earth then struck with the hoops of horses and wheels of car, rang out loudly.

48. That tremendous din resounded through the welkin, the heavens and the earth. Then hearing that sound that resembled the rumble of rain-clouds, the Pandavas.

49-50. Those foremost of car-warriors, uniting together began to consult. The son of Drona also, O Bharata, having spoken in the above manner, washed his mouth with water and then invoked into existence that celestial weapon known by the name of Narayana.

## CHAPTER 197

### (NARAYANASTRA-MOKSHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The words of Arjuna

##### Sanjaya said

1. When that Narayana weapon had been invoked into existence, the wind began to blow from opposite directions and peals of thunder were heard though the sky was cloudless.

2. The earth quaked and the oceans became agitated. The ocean-going stream began to flow in contrary directions.

3. The crests of mountains, O Bharata, began to split up. Diverse animals then passed keeping the son of Pandu to their right.

4. The veil of darkness spread over the earth. The sun became dimmed in splendour. Diverse kinds of flesh-eating animals began to alight on the field of battle.

5. O Ruler of men, celestials, the Danavas and the Gandharvas all became filled with fear. Seeing then that tremendous agitation in nature, they began to question one another saying, what is the cause of all this?

6. All the kings became filled with anxiety and inspired with terror, O ruler of men, at the sight of that dreadful weapon of affrighting aspect, belonging to Drona's son.

##### Dhritarashtra said

7. When unable to brook the slaughter of his sire and overwhelmed with grief, Drona's son did rally the troops.

8. Tell me, O Sanjaya, what consultation then the Pandavas held for protecting Dhristadyumna, as they saw the Kurus return to the charge.

##### Sanjaya said

9. At first having seen the Dhartarashtras routed and again beholding them return to the attack Yudhishtira addressing Arjuna said

##### Yudhishtira said

10. Upon the slaughter of the preceptor Drona by Dhristadyumna like the slaughter of the mighty Asura Vrita by the wielder of thunderbolt.

11. O Dhananjaya, the enemy depressed at heart, gave up all hopes of victory. They fled from the field, intent on saving themselves.

12-13. Some rulers of men fled on chariots borne along irregular courses, with parshni drivers slain, deprived of standards, streamers and umbrellas, with their boxes and Kuvaras shattered and all their decorations displaced. Others again, panic-struck and deprived of reason, goading the steeds of their chariots with their toes, fled in all haste.

14. Others overwhelmed with fear, fled on their cars having their axles, wheels and yokes broken. Others fled, hanging half way from their saddles.

15. Others again displaced from their seats and riveted with shafts on the necks of elephants, were precipitately borne away by those animals. Others were crushed down by flying elephants, mangled and pierced with arrows.

16. Others with their armours taken off and weapons exhausted fell down on the earth from the back of their animals. Others again were mutilated by car-wheels or crushed by steeds of elephants.

17. Some loudly calling their sires and their sons fled away in fear, without recognising one another and reduced in energy by grief.

18. Some causing their sons, fathers, friends and brothers sit (on their vehicles) and doffing their coats of mail were seen to wash them with water.

19. After the slaughter of Drona, the enemy's host, falling into great distress, fled away in haste. Who hath rallied it now? Tell me if you know it.

20. The sound of neighing steeds and roaring elephants mangled with the clatter of car-wheels in heard aloud.

21. These terrible sounds in the ocean of Kuru army, are swelling every moment and causing my troops to tremble.

22. This tremendous sound that is assailing our ears, causing our hair to stand erect, Meseems, will devour up the three worlds with their lords.

23. I think this to be the tremendous roar of the wielder of the thunder, viz., Vasava, who enraged at the slaughter of Drona is coming to fight on behalf of the Kauravas.

24. O Dhananjaya, hearing this loud and terrible sound our hairs stand erect and our best car-warriors are becoming filled with anxiety.

25. I ask you who is this mighty car-warrior that rallying this terrible and agitated host like the lord of the celestials themselves, is leading it to the charge.

#### Arjuna said

26. He depending upon whose prowess the Kauravas, having addressed themselves to the accomplishment of fierce deeds, are blowing their conches and facing us with firmness.

27. He about whom you entertain doubts as to who he may be who, having rallied the troops of the son of Dhritarashtra, that had fled from the fall of the weaponless Drona, is now uttering terrible roars.

28. He who is possessed of bashfulness and mighty arms, who has the gait of an infuriate elephant, who possesses a face like that of tiger, who achieves fierce feats and gives assurances of safety to the Kurus.

29. He, upon whose birth Drona distributed a thousand kine among Brahmanas of high-worth, he, O king, is Ashvatthaman who is thus roaring.

30. As soon as he was born that hero neighed like Uchhaisravas and thereby caused the three words to tremble.

31. Having heard that sound, an invisible being, O master, ascribed to him the name Ashvatthman, (horse-voiced). That brave warrior, O son of Pandu, is roaring today.

32. He, who has been slain like one helpless by the son of Prisata, by a cruel and deceitful means, yonder stands the protector of that one.

33. The Panchala prince dragged my poor preceptor by the locks of his hair. Certainly Drona's son will not forgive that act of his, aware as he is of his own manliness and resources.

34. You also, O king, has spoken a lie to the preceptor, being driven to it by the desire for obtaining the kingdom. Conversant with the rules of morality and of pious nature, you have indeed perpetrated a great sin.

35. Like that hanging in Rama on consequence of his slaying Bali, the infamy hanging on you in consequence of the slaughter of Drona will be eternal in the three worlds with their mobile and immobile creations.

36. 'The son of Pandu is accomplished in all virtues; moreover he is my disciple, he will

never tell me a lie.' Thinking this Drona believed what you then said.

37. You have spoken an untruth veiled in the garb of truth, to the preceptor, adding the word elephant thereto.

38. Thereupon the Puissant Drona, laid his weapons aside and became indifferent to every earthly concern. He was senseless and as you have seen was overwhelmed with a swoon.

39. It was then that his disciple, transgressing all morality, slew his preceptor, filled with affection for his son and unwilling to fight and possessed by grief.

40. Having slain by a deceitful means your preceptor who had laid his weapons aside, now do you with your counsellors, protect the son of Prishata, if indeed, you are equal to the task.

41. Today all of us conjointly will not be able to protect the son of Prishata, who has been as it were devoured by the son of Drona, filled with fury on account of his sire's slaughter.

42. He, who ever treated all creatures with exceeding compassion, even he, hearing that his sire was dragged by the hair will today consume us in battle.

43. Setting at naught all dictates of morality, the pupil has slaughtered his preceptor, although I exclaimed at the top of my voice, protesting that the preceptor should not be slain.

44. We have already passed away the greater part of our lives; the lease of life left to us is indeed very short; even that short period is blotted by his sinful act (perpetrated in the maturity of our years).

45. Drona, in consequence of the affection he cherished for us, was indeed like our father. By the ordinances of the holy texts, he was also our father. Yet such a preceptor of ours has been slain by ourselves, for the sake of enjoying sovereignty for a short period.

46. Dhritarashtra, O monarch, gave the earth to Bhishma and Drona and what was more, he entrusted them with the lives of his sons.

47. Though thus esteemed and endowed with such an honourarium by the foe, yet the preceptor looked upon us like his own son.

48. The preceptor, incapable of suffering any reduction in strength and energy, was only slain in battle, when he believing in your words laid his weapons aside. While engaged in fight even Indra the performer of hundred sacrifices could not have defeated him.

49. Even such a preceptor, venerable in years and devoted to our welfare, has been injured by ourselves, who have betaken to mean conduct for securing sovereignty.

50. Alas, alas, what a heinous sin and a ruthless act have we perpetrated, for, tempted by the desire for enjoying the pleasures of sovereignty, we have slain our venerable preceptor.

51. My preceptor had all along been under the impression, that I, Vasava's son, could abandon all, my sires, brothers, sons, wives and even life itself, for his sake, in consequence of the affection I bear for him.

52. And yet, alas, longing for sovereignty, I have neglected him when he was on the point of being slaughtered. For this act, O king, I have already been condemned to hell, being covered with great ignominy.

53. It is better that I should die then live, inasmuch as I have today, out of a desire for obtaining sovereignty, suffered my old preceptor to be slain, who was a Brahmana and a great Muni and who moreover had laid his weapons aside at the time.

## CHAPTER 198

### (NARAYANASTRA-MOKSHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The words of Dhristadyumna

#### Sanjaya said

1. Hearing the words of Arjuna O mighty monarch, the mighty car-warriors of the Pandava host spoke neither agreeable or disagreeable words in reply to Dhananjaya.

2. But the mighty Bhimasena filled with wrath, spoke, O foremost of the Bharatas, these words for reproaching Kunti's son Arjuna.

3. 'You are preaching the rules of morality, like a Muni living in the woods or like a

Brahmana of austere observances who has cut-off all connections with this world.

4. Saving others from injuries, defending himself against wounds and injuries and showing forgiveness to women and the pious, a Kshatriya soon obtains the (rule of the) earth, as also religious merit, fame and prosperity.

5. Yourself endowed with all the desirable qualifications of a Kshatriya, O perpetrator of your race, it looks odd that you should speak like one ignorant of the duties of your order.

6. O son of Kunti, your prowess resembles that of Shakra the lord of Sachi. You never pass beyond the limits of morality even as the ocean never transgresses its banks.

7. What person is there, who will not applaud you, you who, having forgotten the animosity fanned and kept alive for the last thirteen years, are solicitous for observing the precepts of morality?

8. Surely it is fortunate, O sire, that your heart today bends towards virtue. It is also fortune that your understanding today inclines towards showing compassion, O you of undeteriorating fame.

9. Although you are so eager to observe the dictates of righteousness, yet your kingdom was snatched away from you most unrighteously. Your wife Draupadi having been dragged into the open court, was insulted by your foe.

10. We were exiled, with barks of trees or skins of animals for our cloth and cover. Through undeserving of such a wretched plight, yet we were compelled to wear out thirteen long years in that condition.

11. You, O sinless one, have overlooked all these crying causes that call for revenge. Devoted as you are to perform the duties of Kshatriyas, you have quietly tolerated all these.

12. Keeping alive the memory of all these wrongs inflicted on us, we have come here today with you, to avenge them. (But as you are so righteous) I myself will slay all these mean fellows who snatched away our kingdom.

13. You had said before "Addressing ourselves in battle, we shall exert to the utmost

of our abilities." But now you are reproaching us.

14. You are now seeking virtue. So you have falsified the words you had said before. Afflicted as we are with fear, you take this opportunity for cutting us to the quick with your harsh words.

15. Like one applying salt on the sores of wounded men, O grinder of your foes. Afflicted with your dagger-like words, my heart is on the point of bursting open.

16. Pious as you are, you do not know the nature of impiety, for you do not offer us applause though we are worthy of it.

17. When Vasudeva himself is here, praise you the son of Drona, who, O Dhananjaya, is not a match for even a sixteenth part of yourself?

18. Disclosing your own weakness, it is strange that you fell no shame! I can rend this earth open in rage and split the very mountains.

19. Whirling that heavy and terrible mace of fierce aspect decked with garlands of gold. Like a violent tempest, I can break down trees resembling huge mountains.

20. I can with my arrows rout and crush the assembled host of the celestials led by Indra himself, O Partha, assisted though they be by the Rakshasas, the Asuras, Snakes and human beings.

21. Knowing, O foremost of men, me your brother, to be such, you should not, O you of infinite prowess, entertain any fear from the son of Drona.

22. Or, O Vibhatsu, stay here with all these foremost of men and behold me, alone and armed with the mace, conquer him in fierce battle.

23. Like the Daitya king Hiranyakasipu addressing the roaring and enraged Hari, the son of the king of the Panchalas addressed Partha thus—

**Dhristadyumna said**

24. O Vibhatsu, the intelligent sages of yore have prescribed these—viz., conducting

sacrifices on behalf of others, teaching, charity, celebration of sacrifices and acceptance of gifts to be the duties of the Brahmanas.

25. The sixth duty is study. To which of these six was that Drona who has been slain by me devoted? Wherefore then do you reproach me, O son of Pritha ?

26. Transgressing the duties of his own order and observing those of the Kshatriyas that perpetrator of wicked deeds used to slaughter us with his celestials weapons.

27. Professing himself to be Brahmana, he used to injure us deceitfully; he has now been slain by deceitful means; O son of Pritha, what is there wrong in this?

28. Upon the punishment of Drona, (which he richly deserved), if his son, out of anger, utter such loud roars, what do I lose by them?

29. There is nothing wonderful in the fact that Drona's son leading the Kauravas in battle, will cause their destruction, being himself unable to protect them.

30. Now you have turned a virtuous person and are accusing me with the slaughter of my preceptor; but do you now know that it was for this purpose that I was born as son of Panchala king, having sprung out of fire.

31. How, O Dhananjaya, can you designate him a Brahmana or a Kshatriya, who when engaged in fight used to look upon fair and unfair acts with an equal eye?

32. He, who furious in rage, used to slay with his Brahma weapons even those who are unacquainted with the use of weapons, O foremost of men, why should he not be slain by us by every means in our power?

33. One fallen off from the duties of his order, has been said, by the righteousness, to be equal to poison. Knowing this, you who are conversant with the precepts of morality, why do you blame me, O Arjuna.

34. That ruthless warrior, being assailed by me, has been overthrown and slain by me. O Vibhatsu, why do you not then congratulate myself on whom actually no blame hangs?

35. O Partha, I have lopped off Drona's dreadful head, resembling the All-destroying Fire or the burning Sun or the most virulent poison. Why do you not then applaud an act that is worthy of applause?

36. He who used to slay my kinsmen exclusively in battle and of no one else, lopping off his head, have I not been freed from a terrible fever (of revenge) that used to burn me without remission.

37. This fact that I have not thrown his head, like that of Jayadratha, into the omissions of the Nisadhas, is corroding the core of my heart.

38. It has been heard, O Arjuna, that, without slaying one's enemies one incurs sin. The duty of a Kshatriya is to slay or to be slain.

39. O son of Pandu, Drona was my enemy; and therefore it is righteous that I have slain him; and thus you have slain your father's friend, king Bhagadatta.

40. When you slew your aged grandsire, you thought it your duty to do so. But when I have slain my wicked foe, why should it not be regarded as my duty?

41. It behoves you not to speak to me in this way—me who can raise my hand against you in consequence of the relationship I bear to you and who am therefore like prostrate elephant with ladder against its body, for helping puny creatures to get on its back.

42. I forgive your abusive language, O Arjuna, for the sake of Draupadi and her sons and not for any other cause.

43. It is well-known that the hostility I bore to the preceptor was bequeathed to me by my sire. Every one in the world knows it but you sons of Pandu feign to be ignorant of it.

44. The eldest son of Pandu is not a liar nor am I a sinful wretch, O Arjuna. The wicked Drona used to injure his pupils. He has been slain by me. Now fight and victory will be yours.

**CHAPTER 199****(NARAYANASTRA-MOKSHA PARVA)-  
Continued****The rage of Dhristadyumna and Satyaki****Dhritarashtra said**

1. That high-souled person who had duly studied the Vedas and their auxiliaries, he who had mastered this entire science of arms and who possessed modesty.

2. That Drona son of mighty sage, who had been insulted by the low-minded, cruel and mean Dhristadyumna the slayer of his preceptor.

3. That Drona through whose grace the foremost of men still achieve superhuman feats difficult of being achieved even by the gods and the Asuras.

4. When that Drona suffered such an insult at the hands of that most sinful Dhristadyumna under the very eyes of all the warriors present, was there no Kshatriya who was then inspired with wrath? Fie on the Kshatriya order and fie on wrath itself!

5. Tell me, O Sanjaya, what did the Parthas or the other kings of the earth, all illustrious warriors, say, having heard the words of the Panchala prince?

**Sanjaya said**

6. Hearing those words of the ruthless son of Drupada, O king, all the rulers of the earth remained silent. But Arjuna only casting side glances at Prisata's son and sighing and shedding copious tears said 'fie, fie.'

7. Yudhishthira and Bhima and the twins (Nakula and Sahadeva) and Krishna himself were overwhelmed with shame, O king. Then Satyaki spoke these words—

8. Is there nobody that will quickly dispatch this sinful, low and cursed wretch, even when he is thus speaking?

9. Like the Brahmanas blaming a Chandala, all these Pandavas are reproaching you for your having perpetrated his sinful act.

10. Having perpetrated the most sinful act and condemned by the pious, do you not feel ashamed to open your lips in this august assemblage?

11. O despicable wretch, why did not your tongue and your cursed head go off into thousand fragments, when you were on the point of slaying your preceptor? Why were you not smitten down by that sinful act?

12. You richly merit the condemnation of the Parthas and all the Vrishnis and the Andhakas inasmuch as perpetrating this sinful act, you are boasting of it in the presence of this august assembly.

13. Having committed the most heinous act of sin, you further reveal your hatred for the preceptor. For this you deserve to be slain; there is no use in sparing your life even for a moment.

14. What other sinful wretch, except yourself, will dare cause the virtuous preceptor's death, holding him by his hoary locks?

15. Having obtained you—the disgrace to their race—for their descendant, seven generations before you and seven after, in your race, have sunk in hell, being deprived of their glory.

16. You have accused Partha that foremost of men with the slaughter of Bhishma. But this latter illustrious personage has himself caused his own destruction.

17. Indeed that vilest of wretches viz., your uterine brother Sikhandin, was the cause of Bhishma's death. Really there is no one more sinful on the face of the earth, than the sons of Panchala king.

18. Your father had begotten Sikhandin for the slaughter of Bhishma. As regards Arjuna he only protected your brother when he caused the death of the high-souled Bhishma.

19. The Panchalas have gone astray from the paths of rectitude and like despicable wretches they are injuring their friends and their preceptors, only for having obtained yourself and your brother, hated by the pious, among themselves.

20. If you again speak such words before me, I shall knock down your head with a mace resembling the bolt of heaven.

21. Stained as you are with the sin of Brahmanicide, people looking at you the slayer of a Brahmana, have to look at the Sun for purifying themselves.

22. Ill-mannered wretch of a Panchala, villifying my own preceptor in the first instance and then my preceptor's preceptor, why don't you feel ashamed?

23. 'Wait, Wait.' Bear but this single stroke of my mace. I will bear many strokes of that of yours."

24. Thus reproached by that scion of the Satvata race, Prisata's son inspired with wrath, addressed these harsh words to the enraged Satyaki.

#### **Dhristadyumna said**

25. O you of Madhu's race, I have heard you speak. But I forgive you; yourself sinful and impious, you desire to throw odium on the righteous?

26. Forgiveness is a praise worthy virtue, but sinful wretches do not deserve it. A wicked fellow regards him who shows forgiveness as powerless (lit : conquered).

27. Ill-behaved, of low mind and sinful resolutions, you are condemnable from the end of your hair to the tip of your toe. Yet do you desire to censure others?

28. What act can be more unrighteous than that perpetrated by you when, repeatedly prevented, you slew Bhurisrava, whose arm was lopped off and who had betaken to the Praya Yoga?

29. Arranging his troops in order Drona was fighting with his celestial weapons he laid aside his weapons and I slew him O crooked one, what is there improper in this?

30. How can he, O Satyaki, censure such as act, who himself has slain his opponent, desisted from battle an opponent that was sitting in Praya Yoga and whose arm was cut-off by another.

31. That puissant opponent of yours, careered on the field having thrown you down with the stroke of his feet. Foremost if you were of all male beings why did you not then slay him?

32. When Partha had already vanquished him, it was only then that by an unfair means you slew the puissant son of Somadatta.

33. In whatever quarter Drona had sought to rout the troops of the Pandavas, in that quarter I proceeded, shooting myriads of shafts.

34. Having yourself perpetrated an act worthy of a Chandala only, it is strange that you desire to censure me in such a vile language.

35. You are the perpetrator of vile acts and not I, O vilest of the Vrishni race. You are the hot-bed of sin. Do not again blame this deed of mine.

36. Hold your tongue. It is improper that you shall move after this. I give you this reply from my own lips, you should not address me any longer.

37. If again, out of folly you speak such harsh words to me, I shall dispatch you to the abode of Death with my own arrows.

38. Once cannot overcome his foes, O fool, solely through fair means. Hear how our opponents also acted unfairly.

39. Pandu's eldest son Yudhishtira was a few years back cheated unfairly (out of his own kingdom) and O Satyaki, Draupadi was also most vilely insulted.

40. The Pandavas with Krishna their wife were also exiled to the woods and O fool, all their possessions were robbed out of them by unrighteous means.

41. The king of the Madras was again weaned away from our side by an act of unrighteousness by the foe, unfairly also was the tender son of Subhadra slain.

42. Now for the Pandavas, the grand-father of the Kurus, Bhishma was slain by an act of unrighteousness. Bhurisrava was unfairly slain by your very justicel-oving self.

43. Thus, O you of the Satvata race, the heroic Pandavas and the Kurus have both acted

sinfully for victory in battle, although they are all conversant with the rules of morality.

44. Thus morality is a mystery, as also immorality is difficult of being ascertained. Fight on with the Kauravas and do not return to the home of your fathers.

**Sanjaya said**

45. Addressed in such ruthless and harsh words, the handsome Satyaki trembled from head to foot.

46. Hearing those words Satyaki with his eyes coppery in rage, laid his bow aside on the car and breathing like a snake he grasped his mace.

47. Then advancing furiously upon the Panchala prince he said - "I shall not waste my harsh words on you any longer, but I shall crush you, as you richly deserve to be slaughtered."

48. Beholding the puissant Satyaki rush, from wrath and desire for revenge, at the Panchala prince, like Death against a match of his.

49. The mighty Bhima urged by Vasudeva, quickly jumped down from his chariot and caught hold of him by the arms.

50. The puissant Satyaki, who was then furiously rushing (at Dhristadyumna) advanced a few steps, dragging after him the mighty son of Pandu, who was trying to withhold him.

51. Then Bhima firmly planting his feet, succeeded in stopping that foremost of all beings endowed with strength viz., that illustrious scion or Shini's race.

52. Then, O king, Sahadeva jumping down from his car, addressed Satyaki held in check by the strong arms of Bhima, in these soothing words—

53. O foremost of men, we possess not friends dearer to ourselves, then the Andhakas, the Vrishnis and the Panchalas, O descendant of Madhu's race.

54. Similarly the Andhakas and the Vrishnis, specially Krishna among the latter, cannot have any friend dearer than ourselves.

55. The Panchalas also, O scion of the Vrishni race, will not be able to find friends

dearer to themselves than the Vrishnis and the Pandavas, even if they search the whole earth to the very boundaries of the seas.

56. You are a dear friend to this prince and even such is he to you. You are to us even as we are to you.

57. Versed in the rules of duty, restrain your anger having the prince of the Panchalas for its object, remembering the duties that you owe to you friends.

58. Forgive the son of Prisata, let him also forgive you. We will also practise forgiveness. What other virtue can be equal to forgiveness!

59. When, O sire, Sahadeva was thus pacifying the grandson of Shini, the son of the Panchala king thus smilingly spoke:-

60. Bhima, let the grandson of Shini, so proud of his prowess in battle, he released. Let him encounter me like the wind encountering the mountains.

61. I shall smother his wrath with my sharp arrows, as also his itching for battle; O son of Kunti, let me deprive him of his life in battle.

62. I am alone competent to achieve the mighty task the sons of Pandu have undertaken, heavy though it may be. Yonder come the Kauravas.

63. Or Phalguna himself will hold all of them in check. Let me cut-off this one's head with my arrows.

64. He takes me for Bhurisravas with his arm lopped off. Leave him, Either I will slay him or he shall slay me

65. Hearing the words of the Panchala prince the mighty Satyaki breathing like a snake, began to swell even within the embrace of Bhima's arms.

66. When those strong-armed and mighty heroes were thus roaring at each other like two bulls, O sire, Vasudeva and the son of Dharma Yudhishthira,

67-68. With great difficulty restrained those two heroes. Thus restraining those two mighty bowmen, whose eyes were red in rage, the foremost of the Kshatriyas advanced desirous of meeting the foe in battle.



**CHAPTER 200****(NARAYANASTRA-MOKSHA PARVA)-  
Continued****The laying aside of weapons by the  
Pandava troops****Sanjaya said**

1. Thereafter the son of Drona began to crush his foes like the Destroyer at the end of the Yuga slaughtering all creatures.

2-3. Slaying his foes with his broad-headed shafts, he caused a mountain by corpses, whose trees were constituted by standards, peaks by weapons, stones by slain elephants; which teemed with Kimpurusas formed by slain horses, which was covered with creepers constituted by bows, whose cranes were constituted by flesh-eating animals; and which was full of birds formed by the ghosts.

4. Then, O foremost of the Bharatas, once more exclaiming aloud with great force, Ashvatthaman made your son to hear his vow.

5. "Inasmuch as Kunti's son Yudhishtira, disguised in the garb of righteousness, has spoken to the fighting Preceptor, saying 'lay you weapons aside.'

6. For that reason I shall crush his army even before his very eyes. Shattering the ranks of the hostile army I will slay the sinful son of the Panchala king.

7. I will slay them all in battle if they only face me in battle. This I speak to you for sooth. Let the army be rallied and return to the charge.

8. Hearing those words of Drona's son your son rallied the troops, having dispelled their fear by uttering a loud leonine shout.

9. Thereupon O king, once more a terrible encounter took place between the armies of the Kurus and the Pandavas, resembling the dashing of two oceans at full tide.

10. The Kouravas were rallied and incited with revenge by Drona's son, the Pandavas and Panchalas were also excited to fury by having slain the Preceptor Drona.

11. The violence of the collision was indeed very great collision that then took place on the

field of battle between those warriors all of whom were filled with joy and rage and inspired with hopes of victory.

12. The collision between the Kurus and the Pandavas was like that between a mountain against a mountain or an ocean against an ocean.

13. Then the Kuru and the Pandava troops filled with delight struck up ten thousand Bheris and blew a thousand conches.

14. Like the deep roar of the ocean when it was churned, a tremendous din was then heard in those troops.

15. Thereafter Drona's son invoked into existence the Narayana weapon and he aimed it at the armies of the Panchalas and the Pandavas.

16. Then thousands of arrows with blazing tips appeared in the welkin looking like snakes of fiery mouth, that continued to agitate the Pandavas.

17. Those arrows, O king, like the rays of the Sun, in that terrible battle, covered all the quarters of heaven, the sky and the Pandava soldiers.

18. Then, O ruler of earth, countless iron balls appeared there like lustrous orbs in the cloudless firmament.

19. Shataghnis of four or two wheels and a large number of maces and sharp-edged discs, effulgent like the sun also appeared there.

20. Then beholding the firmament densely covered by those weapons, O foremost of the Bharatas, the Pandavas, the Sanjaya and the Panchalas became exceedingly anxious.

21. The weapon showed its exceeding strength in all those places, O ruler of men, where the great car-warriors of the Pandava hosts contended furiously.

22. Slaughtered by the Narayana weapon, as if burnt down by a raging fire, the troops of the Pandavas were greatly distressed in battle.

23. O lord, as fire consumes a heap of dry grass in summer, even so did that weapon begin to consume the army of the Pandavas.

24. The very virtuous king Yudhishtira was filled with fear, as his army became reduced in number and that weapon swelled in its fury.

25. Then beholding the army broken and deprived of its senses and seeing the indifference of Partha, the very virtuous king Yudhishthira thus spoke—

26. “Fly, O you Dhristadyumna, taking with you all the Panchala divisions; you also, Satyaki, go away with all Vrishnis and the Andhkas.

27. The high-souled son of Vasudeva will look after his own safety. Indeed he is competent to protect all the worlds; what to speak of his own self; it is useless to give him advise.

28. Ye soldiers, I command you to desist from the battle. I with my uterine brothers, am going to enter into a burning fire.

29. In this war so dreadful to the timid, having crossed the oceans represented by Bhima and Drona, I shall now sink in the water contained in the vestige of a calf-foot represented by the son of Drona.

30. Let king Duryodhana today attain the fruition of his desires for I have slain the preceptor who used to treat us so mercifully and like a friend.

31. Indeed this preceptor with the help of other cruel warriors, slew and did not spare the son of Subhadra of tender years, who was unacquainted with the modes of warfare.

32. This preceptor with his son remained indifferent, when Krishna, dragged into the open court and about to be made a slave, asked him to speak the truth in answer to her question.

33. This preceptor gave an impenetrable armour to Duryodhana, when all other warriors were worn out with fatigue, in order that the latter may slay Phalguna and effect the protection of Jayadratha.

34. Indeed this preceptor with his Brahma weapon exterminated that whole Panchala division under Satyajit, who had been entering to bestow victory on me.

35. Indeed this preceptor did not withhold his permission though solicited to do so by our friends, when despoiled of our kingdom we were on the point of being exiled into the woods.

36. Alas, such a well-wishing friend of ours who did us many good turns has been slain by us. For his sake I shall with all my relatives embrace death.”

37. When the son of Kunti was thus speaking, the scion of the Dasaratha race, Krishna, forbidding the troops with the waive of his hand from flying away, said these words—

38. “Quickly throw aside your weapons and come down from your vehicles; even this is the means ordained by the high-souled Narayana, for baffling this weapon.

39. All of you quickly alight from the elephants, horses and chariots in the ground. Thus when you stand in earth laying aside your arms this weapon will not slay you.

40. Whatever you shall contend in battle for checking the force of this weapon, in all those places the Kouravas will become more powerful than yourselves.

41. Those men, on the other hand, who will thrown down their weapons and alight from their vehicles, will not be slain by this weapon.

42. Those who will even think of contending against this weapon will be slain by it, even if he takes shelter within the bowels of the earth.”

43. Hearing those words of Vasudeva, O Bharata, all the Pandava warriors laid their weapons aside and discarded all thoughts of battle from their mind.

44. But Bhimasena the son of Pandu, beholding the Pandavas about to abandon their weapons had thus spoken, O king, gladdening the hearts of all.

45. None should throw his weapons aside. I shall check the weapon of Drona’s son with my swift-flying arrows.

46. Or armed with this heavy mace adorned with gold I shall career on the field of battle like Death himself, quelling the weapons of Drona’s son.

47. Just as no luminary is equal to the Sun in effulgence, so there is no man equal to me in prowess and strength.

48. Look at my strong arms like the trunks of the foremost of elephants. They are capable

of pulling down the crests of the Himavat mountain.

49. Among men, I am the only person possessed of the strength of ten thousand elephants, Like Shakra among the gods in heaven, I am known to be matchless on earth.

50. Today you shall behold the strength of my arms and my expanded chest, when I shall exert in resisting the effulgent and burning weapon of Drona's son.

51. If there is none who can venture to contend against the Narayana weapon, let then the Kurus and the Pandavas behold how I shall quell that weapon.

52. O Arjuna, O Arjuna, O Vibhatsu, it befits you not to lay aside your Gandiva-bow; then from yourself the halo of glory will be gone, like that of moon leaving it."

**Arjuna said**

53. O Bhima, my great vow is that I shall not use the Gandiva-bow against Brahmanas the kine and the Narayana weapon and against these I shall lay it aside.

**Sanjaya said**

54. Thus spoken to, Bhima, that subduer of foes, rushed against Drona's son on a chariot whose clatter resembled the roll of thunder and whose effulgence out-vied that of the Sun.

55. Endued with great activity and prowess, the son of Kunti possessed as he was of extreme lightness of hands; succeeded in covering Drona's son with a net-work of arrows, within the twinkling of the eye.

56. Thereupon Drona's son smilingly eyeing the rushing Bhima, challenged him and then covered him with arrows of keen points and inspired with Mantras.

57. Then Pritha's son shrouded with those shafts, of blazing points like the mouths of snakes, capable of penetrating to the very vitals, looked as if covered with spears of gold.

58. Then O king, the appearance of Bhimasena became like that of a mountain surrounded by the fire-flies at the close of day.

59. That weapon of Drona's son directed against Bhimasena, swelled in fury like a conflagration assisted by the wind.

60. Beholding that weapon of great energy increasing in its fury, the troops of the Pandavas were filled with fear with the exception of Bhima.

61. Thereupon laying aside their celestial weapons on the ground they alighted on all sides from their cars and their horses.

62. Thus when they had thrown their weapons down and when they had alighted from their vehicles and horses, that weapon of immense energy flew towards the head of Bhima.

63. All creatures cried Oh and Alas and specially the Pandavas did so, at the sight of Bhimasena wrapt in the effulgence of that weapons.

## CHAPTER 201

### (NARAYANASTRA-MOKSHA PARVA)-

#### Continued

#### The display of Ashvatthaman's prowess

**Sanjaya said**

1. Beholding Bhimasena completely shrouded by that weapon, Dhananjaya for quenching the fire produced by it shot the Varuna weapon.

2. The lightness with which Arjuna shot the weapon and also the fiery energy of the Narayana weapon, rendered it impossible for any body to perceive that Bhima was also protected by the Varuna weapon.

3. His steeds, charioteers and horses covered by the effulgence of the weapon of Drona's son, Bhima then was incapable of being looked at like a blazing fire within another blazing fire.

4. Just as at the close of night, all the luminaries fly towards the western hills, so, also the shafts of Drona's son flew towards the car of Bhima.

5. Then thus shrouded with shafts by Drona's son, Bhima, his horses and charioteer, O sire, looked as if wrapt in the flames of a blazing fire.

6. Just as at the hour of the universal annihilation the All-destroying. Fire having burnt down the mobile and immobile creation

proceeds to enter the mouth of the Creator, so also that weapon Proceeded to enter the body of Bhima.

7. Just as the fire penetrating into the Sun or the Sun penetrating into the fire, cannot be perceived by any body so also that weapon entering into Bhima's body could not be perceived.

8. Beholding then that weapon swelling in fury near Bhima's chariot and also Drona's son career unopposed on the field of battle.

9. And seeing that all the warriors of the Pandava army had laid their weapons aside and that all the mighty car-warriors headed by Yudhishthira had turned their faces away from the field.

10. Those two brave heroes of great effulgence viz., Arjuna and Vasudeva, then jumping down from their chariot, ran towards Bhima.

11. Those two puissant persons then plunging into the energy born of the might of Ashvatthaman's weapon, betook to their power of illusion.

12. The fire of that weapon failed to burn them down in consequence of their having laid aside their weapons, as also in consequence of their great personal prowess and the energy of the Varuna weapon.

13. Then Nara and Narayana began forcibly to take off all weapons from Bhima and to drag him out of the fire of that weapon.

14. Thus dragged the puissant son of Kunti (Bhima) began to roar aloud, where-upon the invincible weapon of Drona's son also swelled in its fury.

15. Then the son of Vasudeva, addressing (Bhima) said - "O delighter of Pandu, what do you mean? Why don't you desist from fighting though repeatedly for bidden to do so.

16. Had it been possible now to vanquish the Kouravas in battle, then we as well as all these forest of men would have fought against them.

17. All your troops have alighted from their chariots, so you also, O son of Kunti, quickly come down from your chariot.

18. Having thus spoken, Krishna dragged him down on the earth, him who was breathing like a snake with eyes coppery with rage.

19. When he was thus dragged down from the car, when he was thus compelled to lay his weapons aside, the Narayana weapon, capable of burning down the foe, became pacified.

**Sanjaya said**

20. When the unbearable energy of that weapon was pacified by this means, all the quarters, subsidiary and cardinal, became clear.

21. Auspicious winds began to blow and animals and birds became quiet. The steeds and elephants as well as the warriors themselves became cheerful, O ruler of men.

22. O Bharata, when that dreadful energy was thus stilled, the intelligent Bhima shone like the Sun at the close of night.

23. Then the remnant of the Pandava troops, beholding the subsidence of the energy of that weapon, again stood ready in order to slay your sons.

24. When the Pandava army was rallied and rearranged and when the Narayana weapon was thus counteracted, your son Duryodhana, O king, addressing Drona's son said these words—

25. O Ashvatthaman, once more discharged that weapon quickly, for the Panchalas, desirous of victory, have again rallied.

26. Thus spoken to your son, Ashvatthaman, O sire, depressed and sighing heavily, replied to the king saying—

27. That weapon never comes back, neither, O king, can it be used twice. If invoked back it will slay the person invoking it.

28. The son of Vasudeva counter acted the weapon by what means you have seen. For this, O ruler of men, the extermination of the foe has not been accomplished in battle.

29. The worst in battle is either defeat or death. Death is better than defeat. The enemy compelled to lay aside their weapons are vanquished and more than dead.

**Duryodhana said**

30. O son of my preceptor, O you foremost of those versed in the science of weapons, if this

weapon cannot be used twice, then slay those slayers of their preceptor with other mighty weapons.

31. Like the three-eyed Mahadeva of infinite energy, you possess all the celestial weapons; even the enraged Indra cannot escape you alive if you wish it not.

**Dhritarashtra said**

32. When Drona had been slain with underhand measures and when that weapon of his son had been baffled, what did Ashvatthman, urged on by Duryodhana do?

33. Beholding the Parthas, rally for the fight and freed from the influence of the Narayana weapon and career at the head of their divisions.

**Sanjaya said**

34. Remembering the unfair slaughter of his sire, Drona's son, having the lion's tail as a device on his banner, casting off all fear and filled with fury rushed upon the son of Prisata.

35. Thus assailing him, that foremost of men, at first pierced his enemy with twenty small arrows and then again with five others, with great force.

36. Thereupon, O king, Dhristadyumna pierced Drona's son looking like a blazing fire, with four and sixty winged arrows.

37. He pierced the latter's charioteer with twenty shafts furnished with golden wings and whetted on stone and the four horses with four very sharp arrows.

38. Repeatedly piercing the son of Drona and making the earth trembling with his roars, Dhristadyumna appeared to be engaged in taking away the lives of every body on the face of earth in that dreadful battle.

39. O king, the son of Prisata was endued with prowess and accomplished in weapons and of resolute purposes. He rushed upon the son of Drona making death to be the final goal.

40. Then that foremost of car-warriors, that prince of the Panchalas, of unmeasurable depth of soul, poured a veritable shower of arrows on the head of Drona's son.

41. Thereupon Drona's son covered that enraged hero with innumerable winged shafts

and remembering the slaughter of his sire, pierced him with ten shafts.

42. Cutting down the bow and the standard of the Panchala prince with two well-directed razor-headed arrows, the son of Drona began to afflict the former with numerous other shafts.

43. Drona's son deprived his opponent of his horses, chariot and driver; and he, worked up with rage, covered the latter's followers with myriads of arrows.

44. Thereupon, O ruler of men, the troops of the Panchalas broke and fled away; their appearance reflected fear and they were greatly distressed and mangled with shaft-cuts.

45. Then beholding the troops turning back and Dhristadyumna greatly afflicted, the grandson of Shini, directed his chariot to be driven in haste towards that of Drona's son.

46. With eight sharp arrows afflicted Ashvatthman; they once more he pierced his revengeful adversary with another twenty shafts of diverse shape.

47. He pierced his opponent's driver and the four horses with four arrows; and then like one endued with great lightness of hand, he cut-off his bow and standard with well-armed shafts.

48. He consumed the horses of his antagonist and shattered his car of golden effulgence; then he pierced the latter on the centre of his breast with twenty shafts.

49. Thus afflicted and enshrouded in a network of arrows, the puissant Ashvatthaman, O king, knew not what to do.

50. When the preceptor's son was involved in such a perilous position, your son, that mighty car-warrior, supported by Kripa, Karna and others, began to cover that scion of the Satvata race with numerous arrows.

51. Then Duryodhana with twenty Saradvata's son Kripa with three, Kritavarman with ten, Karna with fifty.

52. Dushasana with hundred and Vrishasena with seven sharp arrows pierced Satyaki quickly and from all sides.

53. Thereupon, O king, the puissant Satyaki deprived all those mighty car-warriors of their

cars and compelled them to turn away from the field of battle, within a moment's time.

54. Meanwhile Ashvatthaman having regained his senses, began, O foremost of the Bharatas, to reflect, distressed with grief and sighing repeatedly.

55. Thereafter that afflicter of foes, namely, Drona's son, riding on another car proceeded to oppose Satyaki and shot hundreds of arrows.

56. Then beholding that son of Bharadvaja's son once more advance against him in battle, the mighty car-warrior Satyaki once more compelled him to turn away and deprived him of his car.

57. Thereat the Pandavas beholding the prowess of Satyaki, O king, loudly blew their conches and uttered deafening war-cries.

58. Then Satyaki of infallible prowess, thus rendering Drona's son carless, slew the three thousand mighty car-warriors engaged in supporting Vrishasena.

59. He also slew ten thousand tusked elephants that accompanied Kripa, as also fifty thousand horses that constituted Skuni's division.

60. Then once more, O king, the valorous son of Drona, mounting on a fresh car and excited to the highest pitch of fury assailed Satyaki for slaughtering him.

61. But the grandson of Shini that subduer of foes seeing him once more proceed against him, ruthlessly pierced him with numerous sharp arrows.

62. But this time, though thus deeply pierced by Yuyudhana with arrows of diverse descriptions, that mighty bowmen, that son of Drona, worked up with rage, addressing his foes, smilingly said these words—

63. O grandson of Shini, I know the partiality you bear for the murderer of his preceptor (viz., Dhristadyumna), but you shall not succeed in slaying him and your own self when assailed by me.

64. By my truth and by my ascetic austerities, I swear before you, that I shall enjoy no rest without slaying the whole Panchalas race.

65. You may unite together the troops of the Pandavas as well as those of the Vrishnis, yet I will exterminate the Somakas inspite of all their endeavours.

66. Having thus spoken, Drona's son hurled at that scion of the Satvata race an excellent arrow of the effulgence of the solar rays, like Hari (Indra) hurling the thunder-bolt against Vritra.

67. That arrow hurled by him, penetrating through the armour and the body of Satyaki, entered the earth like a hissing serpent entering its hole.

68. Then like an elephant afflicted with the goad-stroke, with his armour pierced through and shedding copious blood from the wound, that hero Satyaki left his bow and arrows.

69. And steeped in blood and loosing strength he squatted down on the terrace of his car. His driver then quickly drove him away from the vicinity of Drona's son.

70. Then that afflicter of his forces namely the son of Drona, pierced Dhristadyumna between his bows with another shaft of depressed knots furnished with beautiful wings.

71. The Panchala prince had ere this been much wounded and now deeply hierced, he lost all his strength and caught pold of his flag-staff for supporting him.

72. Then fierce heroic warriors of the Pandava army rushed quickly to the rescue of Dhristadyumna, who then resembled an elephant assailed and afflicted by an enraged lion.

73. Those warriors were the diadem decked Arjuna, Bhimasena, Vrihat Kshatra of Puru's race, the youthful prince of the Chedis and Sudarsana the ruler of the Malavas.

74. Then all these brave warriors crying Oh and Alas and grasping their bows and arrows surrounded Drona's brave son on all sides.

75. Advancing twenty paces, each of these warriors shot with great care, five arrows at the revengeful son of Drona.

76. But Drona's son, almost at the same time cut-off those twenty-five arrows shot at

him with twenty-five sharp arrows of his own, resembling snakes of virulent poison.

77. Then Drona's son afflicted the scion of the Puru race with seven sharp arrows, the Malava king with three, Partha with one and Vrikodara with six.

78. Thereupon, O king, all those mighty car-warriors, simultaneously and separately began to pierce the son of Drona with gold-winged arrows whetted on stone.

79. The youthful prince of the Chedis pierced Drona's son with twenty winged shafts, Partha with eight and all the rest with three arrows each.

80. Thereupon the son of Drona pierced Arjuna with six and Vasudeva's son with ten and Bhima with five and the youthful Chedi prince with four and the ruler of the Purus and the Malavas with couple of shafts.

81. Piercing Bhima's charioteer with six and cutting off his bow and standard with two other arrows and once more piercing Partha with a shower of arrows, the son of Drona uttered a dreadful war-cry.

82. Then as Drona's son shot his well-tempered, well-sharpened arrows, the earth, the welkin, the firmament, the cardinal and subsidiary quarters, all in his front and rear became covered with arrows of dreadful look.

83. Possessed of fierce energy and matching Indra himself in prowess, Ashvatthaman with three arrows, almost at the same time cut-off the two arms, like Indra's poles and the head of Sudarsana, as the latter was seated on his car.

84. Then piercing Paurava with a lance and cutting off his chariot into smaller fragments, by means of his shafts, Ashvatthaman severed the two sandal-smeared arms of his opponent; and then with a bhalla he severed his head from his trunk.

85. Endued with agility, he then pierced with numerous arrows resembling blazing flames of fire in energy, the young and the puissant prince of the Chedis of complexion like that of a blue lotus and then detached him to Death's domain, together with his steeds and driver.

86. Then beholding the king of the Malavas, the Paurava prince and the youthful ruler of the Chedis slain under his very eyes by the son of Drona, Pandu's son.

87. Bhimasena of mighty arms became filled with terrible rage; then with hundreds of sharp arrows, looking like enraged snakes.

88. That scorcher of foes covered the son of Drona. Then the highly powerful son of Drona baffling that shower of arrows.

89. Wrathfully pierced Bhima with sharp arrows. Then the mighty armed Bhima, possessed of great mighty in battle.

90. Cutting off the bow of Drona's son with a razor-headed arrows pierced him with a winged shaft. Thereupon the high-souled son of Drona, throwing off that severed bow.

91. Took up another and pierced Bhima with winged shafts. Then Drona's son and Bhima, both valourous and possessed of might, in that battle.

92. Showered upon each other their arrowy showers like two clouds discharged with rain. Shafts, equipped with golden wing and bearing the name of Bhima and whetted on stone.

93-94. Covered Drona's son like masses of clouds covering the Sun, Similarly Bhima also was quickly covered over with hundreds and thousands of arrows of depressed knots, shot by Drona's son. Covered in battle by Drona's son accomplished in battle.

95-96. O Mighty monarch, Bhima was not at all pained; and that looked indeed wonderful. Then the mighty-armed Bhima discharged ten gold-decked arrows of great keenness resembling the darts of Death himself, at his adversary. Those shafts, O sire, falling upon the shoulder of Drona's son.

97. Quickly pierced her body like snakes entering into an ant-hill. Thus deeply pierced by the lustrous son of Pandu, Drona's son.

98. Caught for support his flag-staff and shout his two eyes (in pain). But in a moment regaining his consciousness that on of Drona, O king.

99. Became excited to the highest pitch of anger, steeped as he was with profuse blood. Wounded deeply and firmly by the high-souled son of Pandu.

100-101. That mighty armed hero rushed furiously upon the chariot of Bhimasena. Then, O Bharata, he sped a group of hundred arrows, all endued with fiery energy, shot from a string drawn back to the car and resembling snakes of virulent poison. Ever boastful in battle and in utter disregard of the prowess of his adversary Bhima.

102. That son of Pandu, soon discharged dreadful arrowy showers in Drona's son. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, cutting off with sharp arrows the bow of his foe, Drona's son.

103. Wrathfully struck Pandu's son on the breast with extremely keen darts. Thereat filled with a eager desire for revenge Bhimasena took up another bow.

104. And with fine sharp arrows pierced Drona's son in battle. Like two clouds at the expiration of summer, those two warriors, pouring showers of arrows.

105-106. And looking at each other with eyes coppery in rage soon covered each other. Thus covering each other and both filled with rage they fought on with each other producing sounds with their palms and desirous of counteracting each other's feats. Then stretching his mighty bow decked with gold.

107. Drona's son cast burning glances on Bhima who was shooting arrows at him from his vicinity. Ashvatthaman then appeared like the Sun shining in the meridian in a day of Autumn.

108. So quickly did he then shot his arrows that people could not mark when he took them out of his quiver, placed them on his bow-string, drew the string back and let them off.

109. Then as he shot those shafts, O mighty monarch, the bow of Drona's son looked like a circle of fire.

110. Arrows shot from his bow then, in hundreds and thousands, were seen to range through the welkin, like flights of locusts.

111. Those arrows discharged from the bow of Drona's son and decked with gold and dreadful, feel incessantly upon Bhima's car.

112. We then behold the wonderful prowess, energy, mighty, perseverance and strength of Pandu's son Bhima, O Bharata.

113. Inasmuch as considering that dreadful showers of arrows, thick as a dense mass of gathering clouds falling round him, to be nothing more than a shower of rain at the close of summer.

114. Bhima of terrible prowess, desirous of slaughtering the son of Drona, in return poured his arrowy showers upon his foe, like a cloud in the season of rains.

115. Then the mighty and formidable bow of Bhima, of golden staff stretched continuously in that battle appeared beautiful like another bow of Indra (rainbow).

116. Issuing out of it, hundreds and thousands of shafts covered, in that battle, that ornament of battle namely Drona's son.

117. The arrowy showers discharged by them were so thick that the very wind, O sire, could not find space for blowing through them, O king.

118. Thereafter Drona's son, O king, shot at Bhima, desirous of slaying him, arrows of keen points, washed with oil.

119. Then exhibiting his superiority over his adversary Bhimasena cut each of those shafts into three fragments, before they could reach him. And the latter then said 'Wait, Wait.'

120-121. Thereupon, Drona's son, acquainted with the use of the most excellent weapons, soon destroying that arrowy shower by the illusive force of his own weapons, cut-off Bhima's bow in that battle.

122-126. Inflamed with fury he then pierced Bhima himself with numerous shafts. Then the highly puissant Bhima, when his bow was cut-off, having whirled with impetuosity a lance hurled it at Ashvatthaman's car. But the son of Drona, displaying his great lightness of hands, cut-off by means of his keen-arrows that lance as it flew towards himself, burning like a flame-



beam. Meanwhile the formidable Bhima taking up a very strong bow smilingly began to wound the son of Drona with innumerable arrows. Then the son of Drona, O king, pierced the forehead of Bhima's driver with a straight-flying arrow. The latter then thus deeply pierced by the mighty son of Drona.

127-128. Was overwhelmed with a swoon and the reins of the horses fell off from his hands. Then when the charioteer of Bhima was overwhelmed with a swoon the horses, O king, no longer restrained, fled away in great speed in the presence of all bowmen. Then seeing Bhima borne away from the field by those steeds.

129. The victorious Ashvatthaman cheerfully blew his large conch. Beholding Bhimasena carried away from the field, the Panchalas.

130-132. Filled with fear, abandoned the car of Dhristadyumna and fled in all directions. Then Drona's son discharging his arrows with great fury, pursued those routed troops spreading a terrible carnage in their ranks. Thus carnaged by the son of Drona those Kshatriya fled away in all directions from fear of that illustrious warrior.

## CHAPTER 202

### (NARAYANASTRA-MOKSHA PARVA)- Continued

#### The words of Vyasa

##### Sanjaya said

1. Beholding the troops broken and routed Kunti's son Dhananjaya of illustrious soul, rallied them from a desire of slaying the son of Drona.

2. Rallied with effort by Arjuna and Govinda. O king, the troops stayed on the field of battle.

3. Then Vibhatsu, supported by the Somakas, Matsyas, Andhas and Kouravas returned to the charge.

4. Then the fierce bowman Savyasachin, rushing quickly upon Ashvatthaman having the lions tail as the device on his banner, spoke these words to the latter.

5. All your might, your energy, your knowledge, your manliness, you partiality for the sons of Dhritarashtra, you hostility against us.

6. And all your fiercest prowess do you now display to me. Even that son of Prisata who has slain Drona, your sire, will also humiliate your pride.

7. Encounter now the prince of the Panchalas, who is like the fire at the universal destruction or like the Destroyer of his foes, as also me accompanied by Kesava. Today in battle I shall humiliate the pride of your haughty self.

##### Dhritarashtra said

8. The son of the preceptor is, O Sanjaya, worthy of honour and possessed of prowess; he loved Dhananjaya and enjoys the love of that high-souled warrior.

9. Ere this Vibhatsu had never addressed such words to him; why then did the son of Kunti address his friend in that harsh language.

##### Sanjaya said

10. Upon the slaughtering of the youthful Chedi prince, of Vrihatkshatra of Puru's race and O king, of Sudarshana the chief of the Malavas, who was accomplished in the use of all weapons and conversant with the rules of military science.

11. Upon the defeat of Dhristadyumna, Satyaki and Bhima and cut to the quick by those words of king Yudhishtira.

12. And agitated at heart and remembering all his former woes, O lord, Vibhatsu was possessed by an anger engendered of brief, the like of which had never possessed him before.

13. For this reason it was that like a mean fellow, he then addressed Ashvatthaman, the son of his preceptor and worthy of his respect in such a vale, cruel, disagreeable and undeserving language.

14. Thus wrathfully addressed, O king, by Partha in that indecent and harsh language, that foremost of all best bowmen.

15. Namely the son of Drona, became extremely angry with Dhananjaya and specially with Krishna. Then that highly puissant hero, staying carefully on his car ruiced his mouth with water.

16. And then invoked into existence this Agneya weapon incapable of being resisted even by the gods. Aiming that weapon at this visible and hidden foes the preceptor's son.

17. That slayer of hostile heroes, filled with extreme raged, let go with due Mantras that shaft that looked resplendent like fire without a curl of smoke.

18. Then from the welkin a thick shower of arrows began to fall and wrapt up in fiery flames those arrows then surrounded Pritha's son on all sides.

19. Meteors dropped down from the concave dome and the points of the compass did not any longer shine; and suddenly a dreadful gloom enveloped the army in its sober folds.

20. The Rakshasa and the Pisachas, joining together to utter fierced yells; inauspicious winds began to blow and the Sun ceased to shine and give heat.

21. Ravens fiercely croaked on all sides; on the sky clouds emitted roars of thunder and showered torrents of blood.

22. Birds, breasts, kine, sages of illustrious vows and tranquil soul, could not then find any peace.

23. The very elements became perturbed and the Sun appeared to evolve in an opposite course. The triune world seemed as if afflicted in consequence of being under the influence of a corroding fever.

24. Afflicted with the energy of that weapon elephants and other creatures of the land fled with precipitation, breathing heavily and desirous of saving themselves from that fierce energy.

25. The watery expouses being heated, the aquatic creatures, scorched with the heat, O Bharata, could not find any ease.

26. Showers of shafts, swift-flying as Garuda or the wind itself, fell from all points of

the compass, cardinal and subsidiary from the welkin and out of earth.

27. Wounded with those arrows of Drona's son, arrows endued with the energy of the thunder, his foes, scorched and consumed began to fall down like trees consumed by fire.

28. Dreadfully scorched mighty elephants fell on the ground uttering terrible roars resembling the rumble of clouds.

29. Other huge elephants scorched with the burning heat fled and careered in fear in battle-field as if in a forest set on fire.

30. O Sire, divisions of steeds and hosts of cars were seen there burnt like the tops of trees during a forest conflagration.

31. Thousands and thousands of car divisions then fell on that field; and O Bharata, the illustrious God of fire then consumed that army of the Pandavas.

32. Like the Samvartaka fire consuming all creatures at the end of a Yuga. Beholding the Pandava troops consumed in that terrible battle.

33. Your warriors became filled with joy and they uttered loud and defiant war-cries. Then O Bharata, thousands of drums of various sorts.

34. Were quickly struck up by your troops when victory then appeared sure. The complete host of the Panavas and Sabyasachin himself O king.

35-36. Could not be seen in that dreadful battle in consequence of the darkness that then enveloped the world; O king, we neither heard of, nor beheld the like of the that weapon that the revengeful son of Drona then invoked into existence. Thereupon, O mighty monarch, Arjuna invoked into existence the Brahma weapon.

37. That had been created by lotus-born Brahma for baffling all weapons. Then in a moment only that darkness was dispelled.

38. Cold breeze began to blow and the points of the compass became clear and bright. We then beheld a wonderful sight, namely, a Askshouhini of the Pandavas laid bow.

39. Their forms could not be distinguished, so horribly were they scorched by the energy of

Ashvatthaman's weapon. Then the two heroic bowmen, Kesava and Arjuna, freed from that darkness.

40. Appeared like the two dispellers of darkness, the Sun and the Moon, rising in conjunction. The wielder of the Gandiva and Kesava were not at all wounded or injured.

41. Freed from that fire with their car, their banners and flags and steeds and excellent weapons, they the shone resplendent inspiring terrors at the heart of your troops.

42. Then from among the Pandava troops filled with delight, various confused sounds of life mingled with the sounds of drums and the blast of conchs.

43. Both the armies had thought Kesava and Arjuna to be destroyed. Beholding Kesava and Arjuna (freed from that fire of the weapon and that darkness) and seeing them quickly reappear.

44. Both uninjured and cheerful and blowing their excellent conches, the Pandava troops were filled with delight whilst those of yours were greatly pained.

45. Then Drona's son also beholding those illustrious warriors free and un-injured, became cheerless and O sire, for a moment only he thought. 'What is this?'

46. Thus reflecting, O king and overwhelmed with grief and anxious contemplation and sighing hot and heavily, he became cheerless in mind.

47. Then Drona's son throwing aside his bow and leaping down with agility from his car, fled from the field of battle—saying—"O Fie, O fie, everything is un-true.

48. Then as he was flying, he came across the sinless Vyasa, that compiler of the Vedas, that receptacle of Sarasvati, that habitation of the Vadas, who possess the hue of rain clouds.

49. O perpetuator of the Kuru race, then Drona's son beholding him stand before him, saluted and then in a voice choked in grief addressed him thus like one greatly distressed—

50. O sire, O sire, is this an illusion or a caprice (on the part of the weapon)? I do not

know what this may be? Why has this weapon been repulsed? What has been my fault in the method of its invocation?

51. Or is it something beyond the natural order of things or is it the defeat of the three worlds, inasmuch as the two Krishnas are still alive. Time indeed, is irresistible.

52. Neither Asuras, nor Gandharvas, nor Pisachas, nor Rakshasa, nor Snakes, nor Jakshas, nor insects, nor men.

53. Dare baffle this weapon invoked by me. This weapon however has become pacified having slain only one Akshauhini of troops.

54. I discharged this fierce weapon capable of slaying all things but why and how then did it not slay Kesava and Arjuna both possessed of attributes of the human kind.

55. O you possessor of the six qualities the Bhagas, explain to me all this truly as I have questioned you on the matter. O great sage, I want to hear the truth about the subject.

**Vyasa said**

56. What you have asked me from curiosity is a matter of great significance. I shall speak to you everything. Hear me attentively.

57. He that is called Narayana is the most ancient of the ancient; that creator of the worlds took his birth as the son of Dharma for accomplishing a certain mission.

58. On the Himalaya hills, he performed severe austerities; possessed of great energy and resembling the Sun or the fire, he stood there with his arms upraised.

59. Endowed with eyes like lotus petals he reduced his bodily strength, by the observance of austerities for six and sixty thousand years living all the while upon air only.

60. Again undergoing severe austerities of another kind for twice that period, he filled the space intervening between heaven and earth with his energy.

61-62. When in virtue of those austerities, O son, he became equal to Brahma; he then obtained a sight of that master, origin and Protector, of the universe, the Lord of all the gods, the paramount Deity, who is highly

difficult of being looked at; who is smaller than the smallest and larger than the largest;

63. Who is denominated the Rudra, who is the Lord of all the superior ones, who is called Hara and Shambhu; who wears matted locks on his head; who imparts vital energy to the all beings, who is the primordial cause of all the mobile and immobile things.

64. Who is incapable of being resisted and of dreadful aspect, who possesses fierce anger and magnanimous soul, who is the all-destroyer and of generous heart, who bears the celestial bow and a pair of quivers, who is covered in a golden coat of mail and whose energy.

65. Who wields the Pinaka, who is armed with the thunderbolt, the blazing trident, the battle axe, mace and a large sword. Whose eyebrows are fair, whose locks are matted, who wields the heavy bludgeon, who bears the moon on his forehead, who is clad in tiger-skin and who is armed with the heavy short club.

66. Who is furnished with beautiful Angadas, who has got snakes round his neck in the shape of the sacred thread, who is surrounded by various creatures and numerous ghosts of the universe, who is the One, who is the receptacle of ascetic rites and who is greatly admired by persons of venerable age.

67. Who is water, heaven, sky, earth, sun, moon, wind and fire and who is the measure of the duration of the universe. Beings of evil mode of life can never obtain a sight of that unborn one, that slayer of all contemners of Brahmanas, that origin of immorality.

68-69. Only Brahmanas of pious mode of life, when purged of their sins and liberated from the influence of griefs obtain a sight of him, in their mind. Through the merits of his severe ascetic austerities Narayana beheld that undeteriorating, that most venerable one, that Being having the universe for his form. Beholding that best receptacle of all kinds of splendour, that divinity with a garland of Akshasas round his neck, Vasudeva with gratified soul became filled with delight, which he tried to express by his words, heart and understanding and body. Then Narayana

worshipped that divine Lord, that primordial cause of the universe.

70. That giver of boons, that lord of illustrious soul engaged in sporting with the beautiful-limbed Parvati and surrounded by hosts of ghost.

71. That unborn one and paramount lord, that unmanifest one, that essence of all causes and that undeteriorating one ; then Narayana of eyes like lotus petals, having saluted Rudra, that slayer of Andhaka, reverentially began to praise that god of three-eyes.

**Narayana said**

72. O most adorable one, O first of all the gods, the creators (the Prajapatis) who are protectors of the world and who having entered the earth, your first creation—had, O lord, protected it before, having all sprung from you.

73. The celestials, the Asuras, the Nagas, the Rakshasas, the Pisachas, human beings, birds, the Gandharvas, Yakshas and all other creatures, with the whole of this universe, we know have all originated from you.

74. All acts done for gratifying Indra, Yama, Varuna, Kubera, the Pitris and Tashtri and the Moon, all are done to propitiate you. Form and light, sound and the etherial space, wind and touch, taste and water, scent and earth.

75. Time, Brahma and the Vedas and the Brahmanas and all the mobile and immobile creatures have all sprung from you. Vapours rising up from expanses of water are turned into rain drops and which falling upon the earth, are separated from one another. When the hour of the universal dissolution comes, those separated individual drops once more unite together and make the earth one vast sheet of water.

76. He who is conversant with the nature of things, thus observing the origin and destruction of all things from you, comprehends your unity and oneness. Two birds (Isvara and Jiva), four Ashvathas with their branches (the Vedas and the auxiliaries), the seven guardians (the five elements and the heart and the understanding).

77. And the then others (the ten senses) that constitute the city, the body) have all been

created by you; but you are separate from and independent of them all; the past, the present and the future, beyond the sway of any body, have all originated from you, as also the seven worlds and this universe.

78. Out of a desire for paying homage O you, I am eulogising you, with a view to ascertain your real nature, O you that are beyond the comprehension of all gods. Worshipped by me, accord me the boons I desire to have, although they may be difficult of being acquired. Do not allow your illusion to shade you from me.

**Vyasa said**

79. Then that god of inconceivable soul, possessed of blue throat and the wielder of the Pinaka bow, that divinity always eulogised by the sages, accorded boons to Vasudeva, who deserved then all.

**The auspicious Lord said**

80. O Narayana, through my grace, among human beings, among the celestials and the Gandharavas, you shall be one whose soul and strength will be immeasurable.

81. The celestials, the Asuras and the mighty serpents the Pisachas, the Gandharvas, men and Rakshasas, none among these will be able to withstand you (in battle).

82. Neither Suparna, nor any Naga, nor any other creature born in the universe, nor even any of the gods shall be able to vanquish you in battle.

83-84. By weapons or thunder-bolt or fire or wind or with any object that is wet or dry or with any mobile and or immobile things.

85. None will be able to cause you pain, in consequence of my grace. You will be superior in battle even to me, if perchance you ever fight with me.

86. From the ascetic observances of the great Narayana, a mighty sage, called by the name of Nara was born. This latter is equal to the god Narayana himself. Know that Nara to be Arjuna.

87. These two sages, said to be older than the older gods, take their births in every Yuga for carrying on the easy rule of the universe.

88. You endued in energy and wrath also, O you of generous heart, have sprung from a portion of Rudra, through the merits of all your pious deeds and as a consequence of high ascetic austerities.

89. Being embodied, your intelligent self considered the world to be pervaded by Mahadeva; and then for propitiating that god you emaciated your body by the observance of hard vows.

90. Creating a white image of that foremost of male beings, O Bestower of honour, you adored him with homage, offerings and reiterating prayers.

91. Thus adored by you, the god became gratified on you in your previous life; and he then accorded to you, O learned one, excellent boons that you cherished in your heart.

92. In him are eternally present Atma Yuga and the undeteriorating Sashtra Yoga. The celestials, the Sidhas and the foremost sages all adore him.

93-94. With a view to obtain that highest object in the world viz., Sthanu or Mahadeva; He is the creator of all. The eternal Krishna ought to be adored in all sacrifices.

95-96. Knowing the Phallic from of Siva to be the origin of all forms, the lord Kesava adores him. The god having the bull for him emblem entertains great respect for Kesava.

**Sanjaya said**

97. Hearing those words of his, that mighty car-warrior viz., the son of Drona, saluted Rudra and conceived a great regard for Kesava.

98. That one of controlled soul bowed also to that mighty sage (Krishna) and had the downs of his body erect. Then looking at his own divisions he withdrew them from the field of battle.

99. Thereupon, O ruler of men, the Pandava and the Kaurava troops were both withdrawn, the latter highly defeated in consequence of the overthrow of Drona.

100. Fighting only for the days and spreading carnage among the Pandava troops, O king, that Brahmana Drona, conversant with the

contents of all the Vedas, attained to the posthumous region of the Brahmanas.

### CHAPTER 203

#### (NARAYANASTRA-MOKSHA PARVA)- Continued

**Dhritarashtra said**

1. When that Atiratha, viz., Drona had been slain by the son of Prisata, O Sanjaya, did my troops and those of the Pandavas do afterwards?

**Sanjaya said**

2. When that Atiratha Drona had been slain by the son of Prisata and when the Kaurava ranks were broken and routed, Kunti's son Dhananjaya.

3. Beholding a wonderful sight indicative of his victory, questioned, O foremost of the Bharatas, the mighty sage Vyasa who had gone there at his own pleasure.

**Arjuna said**

4. When slaying my foes in battle with myriads of resplendent darts, I saw a male being of the effulgence of fire proceeding before me.

5. Raising his blazing trident wherever he turned, my foes in that direction, O mighty sage, he routed and scorched.

6. People think that I rout my foes whereas they are really routed by him. I only pursue from behind the troops already broken and routed by him.

7. O illustrious possessor of the six qualities the Bhagas, tell me who is that excellent of all male beings, whom I see armed with the trident and who resembles the Sun himself in effulgence.

8. He never touches the earth with his feet nor does he hurl his trident; but in consequence of his energy, thousands of arrows issue out of that trident of his.

**Vyasa said**

9-10. O son of Pritha, you have seen Sankara, that first of all the creators of the world, that lord of all energies, primary male being, he that is the embodiment of heaven,

earth and sky, the divine Lord, the saviour of the universe, the paramount master, the bestower of boons, also called Ishana. O, do you seek the refuge of that boon-giving deity, that lord of the universe.

11. He was the Paramount Divinity, of illustrious soul, also called Ishana, the wearer of matted locks and the origin of all auspiciousness. He possesses three eyes and mighty arms and fierce energy; and his locks are tied as a crown of his head and he clad in deer skin.

12. That supreme god, called Hara or Sthanu, is the lord of the universe and the giver of boons. He is the foremost of all beings in the universe and incapable of beings vanquished. He is the afforder of joy to the universe and it is his paramount ruler.

13. The origin, the light and the refuge of the universe, he is ever attended with victory. He is the soul and the creator of the universe; and the universe is his from and he is ever-glorious.

14. That Lord of the universe and its ruler, that great one is the lord of all action. Known by the name of Shambhu he is self-born, he is the lord of all creatures and the origin of the past, present and future.

15. He is the Yoga and the lord of Yoga. He is called Sarva and is the lord of the lords of the world. He is superior to everything. He is the most excellent of all things in the universe and the highest of all and is called Paramesthin.

16-17. He is the ordainer of the three worlds and the sole refuge of them all. He is pure souled, universe himself, dreadful, holder of moon on head, eternal, the protector of the universe, the foremost of all deities among the gods of speeches, incapable of being vanquished, lord of world and is beyond the reach of birth, decline and death.

18. The essence of knowledge and incapable of being comprehended by the understanding and the best of all knowledge, he is unknowable. Out of his grace he gives to his worshippers the boons they desire.

19. That great one has for his companions, celestial beings of various forms, some of whom are dwarfs, some with matted locks, some with bald heads, some with short necks, some with large stomachs.

20. Some with huge bodies, some endued with great mighty and some with long ears. All of them have, O son of Pritha, distorted faces, mouths and legs and strange dresses.

21. That great lord Mahadeva, O Partha, is adored by even these kinds of followers. That Siva, O son, possessed of energy, goes in advance of you through kindness only.

22-23. In that dreadful battle, O son of Pritha, capable of causing the hair to stand erect, who else, O Arjuna, except the divine Maheshvara, that foremost of all bowmen, could even in his mind, dare defeat that host that was protected by those great smiters and bowmen, viz., Ashvatthaman, Karna and Kripa.

24. Nobody can venture to withstand the fighter, in whose front walks Mahadeva himself. There is no creature in the triune worlds who is a match for him.

25. At the very smell of the enraged Mahadeva, the enemy trembles and drops down senseless in large numbers in battle.

26. For this reason the gods in heaven ever adore and bow down to him. The men of this world as also others that have attained to heaven.

27. If they devoutly worship the boon-giving, auspicious and divine Rudra, the lord of Uma, obtain happiness here and the highest felicity hereafter.

28. O son of Kunti, bow down to him who is peace incarnate, to him called Rudra (of the fierce), who is of blue throat, exceedingly subtle and of great effulgence.

29-31. To him known as Kapardin, him that is dreadful, him who possesses twany eyes, him that is boon giving; to that great ordainer or red locks and righteous conduct, to him who is ever-engaged in the performance of auspicious acts. to him who is an object of desire with all beings; to him who is of tawny eyes; him that is

called Sthanu; him that is called Purusha; to him of tawny hair; him that is bald and him that is extremely subtle and of great splendour, to him that is the giver of light, him that is the embodiment of all holy waters, him that is the god of gods, him that is possessed of great impetuosity; him that is of various forms; him who is called Sarva and is vested in pleasant garments.

32. To him that possesses an excellent turban, a handsome face and a thousand eyes; him that is the giver of rain, him that has the mountains for his habitation; him that is peace, him that is the protector, him that has the barks of trees for his cloth.

33. To him whose arms are adorned with ornaments of gold, him who is furious; him who is the lord of all the different quarters; him who is the master of clouds and of all created beings.

34. To him who is the lord of all trees and of kine; him that has his body covered with trees; him who is the general of the celestial armies; him who is the inspirer of all thoughts.

35. To him who has the sacrificial ladle in his hands; him who is effulgent, him who wields the bow; him who is Rama himself, him who has numerous semblance's; him who is the lord of the universe; him who has the Munja grass for his attire;

36. To him who has a thousand heads; him who has a thousand eyes; and him who has a thousand arms and a thousand legs.

37. O son of Kunti, seek the refuge of at lord of the universe, who bestows boons, who is the lord of Uma, who possesses three-eyes and who is the destroyer of Daksha's sacrifice;

38. Who is the protector of all created beings; who is ever-cheerful; who is the favour of all; who is undeteriorating in his glory; who is called Kaparddin and whose gait is like that of the bull; whose lavel is like that of the bull and whose emblem is the bull.

39. Who is proud like the bull, who is the lord of the bull, who is known by the horns of the bull and who is the bull of bulls, whose banner-devise is the bull; who is generous like the bull; who has eyes like those of the bull;

40. Whose weapons are all of superior make; whose arrows is the Vrisha (Krishna) and who is righteousness incarnate; who is called the Great Lord, whose seat is the leopard's skin.

41. Who is the lord of the words, who is the giver of boons, who is bald, who is devoted to the Brahmanas and who behoves the Brahmanas, who is armed with the trident, who is boon-giving; who wields the sword and the buckles; and who is the lightly auspicious one:

42-43. Who use the bow Pinaka, who is shorn of his battle-axe and who is the sovereign and the saviour of the universe. I totally consign myself to the care of that divine lord, that giver of protection, that god versed in deer's skin; salutation to that lord of the gods who has Vaisravana for his friend, salutation to him of illustrious vows, to him whose companions are all best bow-men.

44. To him who himself wields the bow, to that great Divinity with whom the bow is a favourite weapon; who is himself the arrow hurled by the bow; who is the bow-string and the bow and the preceptor instructing others in the use of the bow.

45. Salutations to that deity whose weapons are terrible and who himself is the foremost of all gods; salutations to him whose semblances are various and who has got diverse bowmen as his attendants.

46. Salutations to Sthanu, to that best of all wielders of bow, salutations even to the destroyer of 'Tripura,' and the slayer of Bhaga.

47. Salutations to the lord of the Vanaspatis (Trees & c) and to the lord of men; salutations to the lord of the celestial mothers and to the lord of the Ganas.

48. Salutations ever to him who is the lord of kine and the master of all sacrifices. Salutations to the lord of waters and of the celestials;

49. Salutations to him who is the destroyer of Surya's teeth, who is of three eyes, who is the giver of boons, who is called Hara, who is blue-throated and who is of golden locks.

50. I shall now relate to you, according to my knowledge and as I have heard them related,

all the divine deeds of the supremely wise Mahadeva.

51. If Mahadeva is worked up with rage, neither the gods, nor the Asuras, neither the Gandharvas, nor the Rakshasas, even if they conceal themselves in deep caves, can enjoy any peace.

52. In days of yore when Daksha had collected all the necessary objects for the celebration of his sacrifice, Mahadeva excited with rage destroyed them all; indeed then he became unusually stern.

53. Shooting an arrow with his bow then, he uttered a tremendous roar. The celestials, who always perform acts beneficial to the world, the were filled with anxiety.

54. When the sacrifice was destroyed and when Maheshvara was enraged, the gods were greatly frightened at the sound produced by his twanging bow and his palm-strokes.

55. The gods and the Asuras all succumbed and fell down and O son of Pritha, the waters were agitated and the earth trembled with everything on it.

56. The mountains split and the quarters of heaven and the Nagas became stupefied. Enveloped in a pall of gloom the universe was lost to view.

57-58. The splendour of the luminaries as also of the Sun was destroyed. The Rishis filled with fear became agitated and desirous of their own good and that of all other creatures, performed propitiatory rites. Then Sankara, smilingly rushed upon Pushana.

59. Who was eating the sacrificial oblations and the tore out his teeth. The gods then, bowing down to him, fled away trembling.

60. Once more Mahadeva aimed at the gods a shower of burning and sharp arrows resembling tongues of fire mixed with smoke or clouds with lightning.

61. Beholding that arrowy shower, all the gods, bowing down to Maheshvara, assigned to Rudra a substantial share in sacrifices.

62. Afraid, the gods sought his protection, O prince. His anger having subsided the great god re-established the sacrifice.



63. The gods that had fled away returned. Indeed they are afraid of Maheshvara even to this day. Formerly the puissant Asuras had three cities in heaven.

64. One was made of gold, another of silver and the third of iron; each of them was excellent and large. The golden city belonged to Kamalaksha, the silver city to Taraksksha.

65. The third, made of iron, belonged to Vidyutmalin. Using all his weapons, failed to capture those cities.

66. Thereupon all the celestials, afflicted as they were, sought the refuge of Rudra. The gods then, with Vasava at their head, said these words to that high-souled one.

67. The denizens of the three cities, having obtained boons from Brahma and proud in consequence of those boons, are excessively oppressing the worlds.

68. O Lord of the gods, O supreme Divinity, save yourself, there is none capable of slaying the Daityas. Do you slay those injurers of the gods.

69. O Rudra, then creatures immolated in every sacrifice will be yours. Do you therefore, O lord of the universe, over-throw those Asuras.

70. Thus addressed by the gods and moved by the desire for benefiting them, Mahadeva said 'yea' to their proposals. Then he made the two mountains, viz., Gandhamadan and Vindhya the two bamboo poles of his car.

71. And the earth with all the oceans and the forests his chariot and the snake Sesa the Aksha of his chariot.

72. The Sun and the Moon then became the wheels of the car of that god of gods, that wielder of the Pinaka bow. The three eyed Divinity then made Elapatra and Puspadanta the pins of his car.

73. The puissant Mahadeva then made the Malaya mountains the yoke and the great Takshaka the chord for fastening the yoke to the poles and the other creatures about him the bounds of his steeds.

74. The mighty god then made the four Vedas the four steeds of his chariot; the lord of the three worlds made the auxiliaries of the Vedas the bridle-bits of his steeds.

75. Mahadeva then made Gayatri and Savitri the reins, the mystic monosyllable in the whip and Brahmana the driver.

76. Then making the Mandar mountains the bow, Vasuki its string, Vishnu its excellent arrows, Fire the arrow-head.

77. And Vayu the two wings of that arrows, Yama the feathers in its tail lightning the whetstone and Meru his standard.

78-79. The god Siva, riding on that wonderful car composed of all the excellent celestial forces proceeded for the destruction of the tripple city. Indeed Sthanu, that foremost of Smiters, that destroyer of Asuras, that most beautiful-looking warrior of infinite energy, adored by the gods and Rishis, possessed of the wealth of asceticism, O Partha.

80. Created an excellent and unequalled array called after his own name and then stood firm for a thousand years.

81. Then when the three cities came together on the firmament, he pierced them with that shaft of his having three knots.

82. The denizens of those cities, the Danavas, then could not look at that arrow composed of the Fire of Dissolution and of Vishnu and Soma.

83. When the tripple city began to burn, the goddess Durga went to see the sight, with a child on her lap having only five clumps of hair on its head.

84. Uma then asked the gods who that child was. The malevolent Indra then tried to strike him with the thunder bolt.

85. Thereupon the all-powerful Lord of all the worlds, possessed of the six excellent qualities the Bhagas, smilingly paralysed the arm of the enraged Indra wielding the thunder bolt.

86. Then with his arm paralysed Shakra, surrounded by the celestials, quickly proceeded to the undeteriorating Brahma.

87. Then the gods bowing their heads down to Brahma addressed him, with folded arms, thus—"O Brahma, what wonderful creature is now lying on the lap of Parvati?

88. As he appeared to be a mere boy we did not offer salutations to him. But we have been defeated totally by him. It is therefore that we want to ask you about him.

89. With Purandra to head us, we were easily defeated by that boy though he did not at all fight with us." Hearing those words of theirs, that foremost of all conversant with Brahma's viz., Brahma.

90. Reflected for a while and then decided that boy of infinite prowess to be a manifestation of Shambhu himself, that possessor of the six illustrious qualities, the Bhagas. The almighty Brahman addressing Shakra and other foremost of celestials, thus spoke—

91. He is the almighty lord Hara, the Master-ruler of the mobile and immobile creation. There is nothing superior to that foremost of gods known by the name of Maheshvara.

92. That boy of immeasurable effulgence whom you have seen with the goddess, is Siva himself, assuming the boy-like appearance for gratifying Parvati.

93. Let therefore yourselves with me seek his refuge, that god who is the ruler of all the worlds and the possessor of the six illustrious qualities, the Bhagas.

94-95. O gods, you could not recognise that lord of the worlds. Thereafter the celestials with the Prajapati approached that boy of the radiance of the rising Sun. Then Brahma beholding the mighty lord and the grandsire knowing him to be the paramount master, began to adore him thus—

#### **Brahma said**

96. You are the sacrifice, you are the refuge of this world and you are its sole stay. You are Bhava, you are Mahadeva, you are the abode of all things and you are the most supreme of all things.

97-98. Yourself pervade the whole universe with its mobile and immobile creatures. O lord of the past and the future, O lord of the Lokas, O master of the universe, be propitious on Shakra afflicted as he is with your wrath.

#### **Vyasa said**

99. Hearing the words of the lotus-sprung Divinity, Maheswara then became propitiated and desirous of showering his grace, he then laughed aloud.

100. Then the celestials gratified both Uma and Maheswara with eulogies. Then the arm of the wielder of the thunderbolt once more regained its natural state.

101. Then that illustrious Divinity whose emblem is the bull and who had destroyed the sacrifice of Daksha, together with his batter half, became gracious on the gods.

102. He is Rudra, he is Siva, he is Agni, he is all and the knower of all. He is Indra, he is Vayu, he is the twin Asvins and he is lightning.

103. He is Bhava, he is Parjanya, he is Mahadeva and he is sinless. He is the Moon, he is Ishana, he is the Sun and he is Varuna.

104. He is Time, he is Destroyer, he is death, he is Yama and day and night; He is a month, a fortnight, as well as the seasons, the twilight's and the complete year.

105. He is Dhata and Vidhata, the soul of the universe and the doer of all acts of the universe. Himself formless, he is thousand and he is hundreds of thousands.

106. He is eulogised by all the gods. He is one and many. He is hundred, he is thousand and he is hundreds of thousands.

107. Brahmanas versed in the Vedas, say that he two forms, one is dreadful and the other peaceful—These two again are divided in numerous portions.

108. His terrible forms are Fire, Vishnu and Bhaskara (the Sun); and his peaceful forms are, water, the luminaries and the moon.

109. Whatever there is highly mysterious in the Vedas, their auxiliaries, in the Upanishads, in the Puranas and in Metaphysics, is identical with the god Maheshvara.

110. Such is the Lord Mahadeva, that Divinity without birth and that possessor of the six illustrious qualities the Bhagas. It is beyond my power to enumerate all the qualities of that lord.

111. Even, if, O son of Pandu, I were to recount them for a thousand years. On those who are under the malicious influence of evil stars, on those who are stained with every sin.

112-113. That great protector is pleased and grants them salvation, if indeed they seek refuge in him. He grants and takes away, life, health, prosperity, wealth and all other kinds of desirable objects. The prosperity seen in Indra and other gods is really his.

114. He is present in both the evils and good that exercise influence over the human kind. He gets by a fiat of his will whatever prosperity he desired. Therefore, is he called the Lord Paramount.

115. He is called Maheshvara and he is the supreme lord superior creatures. In multifarious forms of many kinds, he pervades the universe.

116. What is known as the mouth of that god is the ocean; and it is well-known that assuming the form of the sea-fire it drinks the libations in the shape of water.

117. This Divinity ever dwells in the places of cremation. Men worship this god there where only the braves can go.

118. The effulgent forms of this lord are many and marvellous; those forms are worshipped in the worlds and are praised and spoken of by men.

119. Many also are the names of truthful import of the this Divinity. Known in the worlds. Those names are all founded upon his supremacy, omnipotence and his acts.

120. In the Vedas, the excellent hymn called Shatarudriya has been sung in his praise, he who is the great Lord called the infinite Rudra.

121. That divinity is the Lord of all wishes both human and heavenly. He is the Lord Paramount and the supreme ruler and pervades this extensive universe.

122. The Brahmanas and the sages call him the most ancient of beings. He is the first-born of all the gods and fire came out from his mouth.

123. As he always and by every means protects the creature of the universe and always

find pleasure in their company and as he is the lord of them all, he is truly called Pasupati.

124. As his Phallic form is ever present in the observance of the Brahmacharya vow and as it adds to the glory of the world, he is called Maheshvara.

125. The Rishis, the celestials, the Gandharvas and the Apsaras, worship the Phallic emblem of this god, that ever remains erect.

126. When his Phallic unblem is worshipped Maheshvara becomes glad and is pleased and delighted and transported with joy.

127. As in the past, the present and the future, the god has many forms, both mobile and immobile, he is truly called Vahurupa.

128. With one of his eyes blazing forth, he appears to have eyes on all sides of his body; and as in his wrath, he possesses the worlds, he is called Sarva.

129. As his form is like that of smoke he is called Dhurjati; and as the Devas in the world are present in him he is called Vishvarupa.

130. As three goddesses viz., the sky, the firmament and the water, ever worship that lord of the worlds, therefore he is truly called Tryambaka.

131. As he ever helps in the accomplishment of all acts and increased the wealth of men and is engaged in doing good to them, therefore he is called Siva.

132. Possessed of thousand or ten thousand eyes or eyes on all sides of his body, as he ever protects the universe, he is called Mahadeva.

133. As he is Great and Ancient and is the fountain of life and the cause of its continuance and as his Phallic form is eternal, he is called Sthanu.

134. They rays of light that proceeding from the Sun and Moon, are seen in the worlds, are said to be the hair of his head and therefore is he called Vyomakesa.

135. Since he is the Past, the Future and the Present and in fact, everything in the universe and since he is the origin of the past, the future and the present, he is for that reason called Bhava.

136. The word Kapi is said to mean supreme and Vrisha to mean righteousness; therefore that god of gods, the possessor of the illustrious qualities the Bhagas, is called Vrisha Kapi.

137. As he destroys Brahma, Indra, Varuna, Kubera and Yama, after having afflicted them greatly, therefore he is called Hara.

138. Shutting his two, eyes, that Potent Lord created a third on his forehead by sheer force; and therefore is he called the Three-eyed.

139. Whatever of soundness or unsoundness there is in the bodies of men, is said to be his manifestation. He is the Pana and Apana breaths in embodied creatures.

140. He that ever worships the Phallic emblem of that illustrious god, attains great prosperity even by such worship of his.

141. Below his two thighs the forms are fiery, the other half of his soul is fire and half the moon.

142. His auspicious form surcharged with energy is more blazing than all the forms of the other gods. Amongst men his blazing and dreadful form is called Fire.

143. With his auspicious form he practices the vow Brahmacharya, whereas with the dreadful form he has, he devours everything.

144. As he burns, as he is keen and fierce and endued with the great prowess and as he devours flesh, blood and marrow, he is called Rudra.

145. It is this god of gods, the paramount lord, the wielder of the Pinaka bow, O Partha, whom you have seen go before you slaying your enemies.

146. After you had vowed to slay the ruler of the Sindhus, O sinless one, Krishna showed your this god, in your deam, seated on the top of that best of mountains.

147. He is that illustrious god, who comes first in the battle field, who provided all weapons by which the Danavas were slain by you.

148. O Partha, thus the hymn approved of Vedas and called Sata-rudriya in honour of that god of gods has been explained to thee which is excellent glorious, life-enhancing and sacred.

149-150. The hymn of four divisions capable of accomplishing all desired object, destructive of all sins, sacred and able to drive away all stains and to undo all sorrow and all fears. He who listen to this hymn always is succeeds in defeating all his enemies and is highly respected in the region of Rudra.

151-152. A man who always attentively reads or heard the recitation of this account (Satarudriya) belonging to war of this great deity and who worships devotionally that illustrious lord of universe (Vishveshvara) obtaineth all excellency objects of desire, in consequence of the three-eyed God being gratified with him.

153. O son of Kunti, Go and fight, defeat is not for thee that hast Janardana on your side for thy adviser and protector.

**Sanjaya said**

154. O best of Bharata! O chastiser of foes! Having addressed Arjuna in these words, the son of Parasara (Vyasa) went away to the place he had come from.

155. O king, having warred savagely for five days, the Brahmana (Drona) endued with great strength, fell and repaired to the region of Brahma.

156. The fruits that arise from a study of the Vedas, arise from the reading of this Parvan also. The great achievements of brave Kshatriyas have been described here.

157. He, who reads or hears the recitation of this Parvan everyday is released from a great sins and the most wicked acts of his life.

158. By reading it a Brahmana reaps the fruits of sacrifice, a Kshatriya obtains victory in fierce battle. The other orders (Vaishyas and Sudras) attain desirable sons and grandsons and all wishful objects.

## END OF DRONA PARVA

\*\*\*



## **PARIMAL PUBLICATIONS**

27/28, Shakti Nagar  
Delhi - 110007 (INDIA)

Ph. 27445456

E-mail : [parimal@ndf.vsnl.net.in](mailto:parimal@ndf.vsnl.net.in)